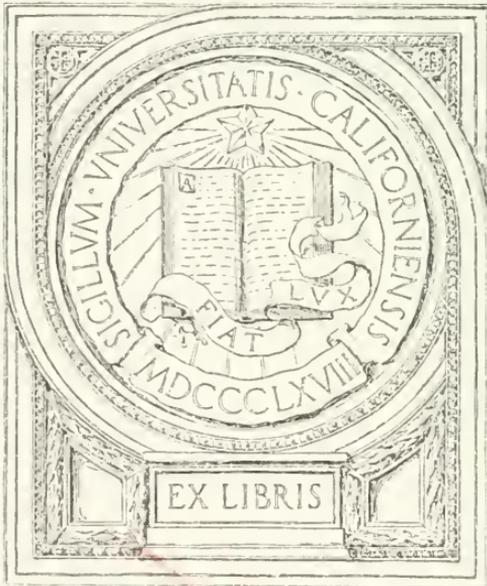


UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
LOS ANGELES



EX LIBRIS



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







The Vision of William

concerning

Piers the Plowman,

TOGETHER WITH

Vita de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest,

Secundum Wit et Resoun,

BY WILLIAM LANGLAND.

(1377 A.D.)

EDITED FROM MS. LAUD MISC. 581, COLLATED WITH MS. RAWL. POET. 38, MS. B. 15. 17.  
IN THE LIBRARY OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, MS. Dd. 1. 17. IN THE CAMBRIDGE  
UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, THE MS. IN ORIEL COLLEGE, OXFORD,  
MS. BODLEY 814, ETC.

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

THE "CROWLEY" TEXT; OR TEXT B.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLXIX.

53520

ANNOUNCEMENT  
OF THE

17E  
2010  
S62  
v.2

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
PREFACE II. § 1. The five shapes of the Poem. § 2. Completion of the A-text. § 3. Date of the B-text. § 4. Anachronisms. § 5. Description of MSS. XII. Dublin D 4. 12 (described in the foot-note); XIII. MS. L; XIV. MS. R; XV. MS. W; XVI. MS. Y; XVII. MS. Ashburnham 129; XVIII. MS. O; XIX. MS. C2; XX. MS. Ashburnham 130; XXI. Camb. Univ. Lib. Gg. 4. 31; XXII. MS. C; XXIII. MS. B; XXIV. Addit. 10574; XXV. Cotton Calig. A. xi; XXVI. Corpus (Oxford) 201; XXVII. Caius 201. § 6. Description of the printed editions. § 7. Character of the B-text. § 8. Allusions in the B-text. § 9. Dialect of the B-text. § 10. Method of printing the Text. § 11. Method of printing the foot-notes. § 12. Explanation of the side-notes. § 13. Argument of the poem (B-text) ... ..	i
PROLOGUE TO PIERS THE PLOWMAN (230 lines) ... ..	1
PASSUS I. (207 lines) ... ..	11
PASSUS II. (236 lines) ... ..	21
PASSUS III. (349 lines) ... ..	32
PASSUS IV. (195 lines) ... ..	48
PASSUS V. (651 lines) ... ..	57
PASSUS VI. (332 lines) ... ..	93
PASSUS VII. (200 lines) ... ..	111
PASSUS VIII., OR PROLOGUE TO DOWEL (126 lines) ... ..	125

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PASSUS IX., OR PASSUS I. DE DOWEL (206 lines) ...	132
PASSUS X., OR PASSUS II. DE DOWEL (474 lines) ...	143
PASSUS XI., OR PASSUS III. DE DOWEL (431 lines) ...	168
PASSUS XII., OR PASSUS IV. DE DOWEL (293 lines) ...	192
PASSUS XIII., OR PASSUS V. DE DOWEL (460 lines) ...	210
PASSUS XIV., OR PASSUS VI. DE DOWEL (332 lines) ...	235
PASSUS XV., OR PROLOGUE TO DOBET (601 lines) ...	254
PASSUS XVI., OR PASSUS I. DE DOBET (275 lines) ...	288
PASSUS XVII., OR PASSUS II. DE DOBET (350 lines) ...	303
PASSUS XVIII., OR PASSUS III. DE DOBET (431 lines) ...	322
PASSUS XIX., OR PROLOGUE TO DOBEST (478 lines) ...	344
PASSUS XX., OR PASSUS I. DE DOBEST (384 lines) ...	367
CRITICAL NOTES ... ..	387
"A SHORT GLOSSARY" ... ..	421

## PREFACE II.

### TEXT B.

---

§ 1. I HAVE said (Pref. I. § 2) that the poem of Piers the Plowman assumes five different shapes in the various MSS. Three of these are due to the author himself, who altered, added to, and re-wrote the poem twice over, so that we find MSS. of the "Vernon" type, or Type A, which is the earliest version; of the "Crowley" type, or Type B, the second version; and of the "Whitaker" type, or Type C, the latest. The fourth shape is the mixture of A- and C-texts, as exhibited in the Trinity MS. R. 3. 14 (described in vol. i. p. xviii.), Harl. 6041 (described at p. xx. of the same volume), and MS. Digby 145 (described at p. xxiv.), and has already been commented on in describing the Trinity MS. The fifth shape is a combination of B- and C-texts, and will be discussed presently; see the description of MS. No. xxiii. in §5, below. Besides these, certain MSS. present forms of the poem which can be reduced to no particular class, but are simply the result of still further confusion and corruption. It is unnecessary to specify them here, because the descriptions of the various MSS. enter fully into such details.

§ 2. I much regret that the former volume, as published, was incomplete. No MS. of the A-class had at that time been observed to contain more than eleven Passus; with the single exception noted at p. 154 of that volume, where a fragment of eighteen lines of what seemed to be a twelfth Passus was printed from the MS. in University College, Oxford. But fortunately this note of mine led to the discovery by Mr Geo. Parker, assistant in the Bodleian library, of another MS. (Rawl. Poet. 137), which contained the whole of the

twelfth Passus and rendered the A-text complete. This is now printed, on the pages numbered 137\* to 144\*, in such a manner that these pages can be easily inserted between pp. 136 and 137 of vol. i., thus completing that volume at last. A full description of the Rawlinson MS., together with remarks upon this final Passus, will be found on p. 142\*.

## DATE OF THE B-TEXT.

§ 3. It will be well, perhaps, to say a few words here about the date of the B-text, in addition to what has been said already (vol. i. p. xxxii.); for I believe that I now see some reason for placing the date even a little later than I have placed it already. I now prefer the date 1377 to 1376, and proceed to adduce my reasons. In the first place, I must say a few more words about the passage which mentions John Chichester.<sup>1</sup> The argument that this refers to the year 1370 is now vastly strengthened. It is not only the Laud MS. which has the reading “twis<sup>2</sup> *thretty* & ten” in Pass. xiii. 270, but we find the same reading in the Rawlinson MS.; and since these two, and the one printed by Mr Wright, are alone of the first authority, we have thus two witnesses as against one. But there is another point which is of great weight. In contrasting Langland’s statement, that Chichester was mayor in 1370, with Fabyan’s statement, that he was mayor in 1369, I unfortunately concluded that it was Langland, not Fabyan, who was in error. I am rejoiced to find, after more careful examination, that the error lies exactly the other way. There is a singular fault in Fabyan’s numbering of the regnal years of Edward III., which seems not to have been hitherto noticed. He actually omits the sixth year of Edward’s reign altogether, making the seventh year follow the fifth; and hence arises a confusion throughout the whole of the remainder of the reign, resulting in his being always a year wrong.<sup>3</sup> One singular consequence is that he talks of the fifty-second year of that King’s reign,

<sup>1</sup> See p. 225 of this volume.

<sup>2</sup> *Sic* in MS.; “twis” is a better spelling. The line, as quoted in note 2, p. xxxii. of vol. i., is not spelt exactly as in the MS.

<sup>3</sup> See Fabyan’s *Chronicles*, ed. Ellis; pp. 441, 442, &c. Sir H. Ellis should have corrected this blunder. See my letter in “Notes and Queries,” 4th S. iv. 152.

when it is well known that he only reigned fifty years and a few months. After applying this correction, the result is that Chichester was not elected mayor till October, 1369, so that in April, 1370, he was of course mayor still. And this fact is corroborated by a statement in Riley's Memorials of London (p. 344), where we read—“Afterwards, on the 25th day of *April* in the year above-mentioned [1370], it was agreed by John de Chichestre, Mayor,” &c. Besides which, Chichester was never re-elected, nor was there at any time whatever another mayor of the same name. And, since Langland thus turns out to be quite right in his date, we may take it upon his authority that the said April was “a dry April.” For though it is not recorded as having been such, it is very probable that it was so, when we consider the excessive rains of the preceding autumn. “And in this yere [1369] was the thirde mortalytie, wherof dyed moche people, and suche a morayne fyll also amonge beestes that the lyke therof was nat seen many yeres before; and vpon y<sup>t</sup> ensuyd suche excessyvenes of rayne that corne was therwith drowned in y<sup>e</sup> erthe, and so bukkyd with water, that *the yere ensuyng* [1370] whete was at .xld. a busshell.”<sup>1</sup>—Fabyan's Chronicles, ed. Ellis, 1811; p. 480. Langland is clearly right about the date of the mayoralty and the dearth; and the previous excessive rains render it probable that he is right about the drought also. Further than this, Tyrwhitt has shewn that the fable of the cat and the rattons in the prologue points to a date at least as late as 1376,<sup>2</sup> “when Richard was become heir-apparent;” but I would place it a year later, for these three reasons.

*First*, the fable is of still more force if we suppose Richard to have already ascended the throne, and there is a direct allusion to his accession in the very curious line—

“Ac resoun shal rekene with ȝow · ȝif I regne any while :”

Pass. iv. 177—

which line, it is very important to observe, is not in the A-text, for the sufficient reason that Edward III. had already reigned a long while when that former version was composed.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. “þere was a carful comune · whan *no carte come to toun*  
*With bake bred fro stretforth, &c.;*” Pass. xiii. 256.

<sup>2</sup> See p. xxxiii. note 1, in Preface I.

*Secondly*, the introduction of the extraordinary passage (Pass. iii. 299—349), about a time of jubilee or millennium, seems to me to have been directly suggested by the proclamation of a jubilee by Edward III. in February, 1377, because he had more than completed fifty regnal years. It is not often that a monarch has the chance of making such a proclamation, and it must have excited much interest. This passage, be it also noted, is *not in the A-text*.

*Thirdly*, in the fable of the cat and the rattons, we have to make out who is meant by the cat. The kitten is clearly Richard II., and history tells us that the cat, i. e. the powerful lord against whom the commons were so enraged, was John of Gaunt, who was said to have exercised undue influence over the young king. It was in 1377 that public opinion first expressed itself strongly on this point, and the outcry was so great that the duke had to clear himself how he could, and this he did in a speech the substance of which is still preserved, and which was spoken on the 13th of October in that year. See Lingard's *History of England*, ed. 1825; vol. iv. p. 224.

There are two other allusions that require a short notice. There are several references to pestilences, and we know that the allusion to "pise pestilences" in Pass. v. 13 (both in A-text and B-text) is to the pestilences of 1349 and 1362; but when "the pestilence" is mentioned in B. xiii. 248 in close connection with a reference to the mayoralty of Chichester a few years previously, we may fairly conclude that the pestilence meant is that of 1376. Sometimes only three great pestilences are reckoned, viz. those of 1349, 1362, and 1369; but some writers reckon a fourth, in 1376, and it seems to have been a severe one. Thus Fabyan says of it—"In this .i. yere [*read* xlix yere], fyl many wonderfull sykenesses amonge the people, whereof y<sup>e</sup> people dyed wonderly faste as well in Italye as in Englande; amonge the whiche dyed sir Edwarde called the lorde Spencer, a man of great fame, whose body was enteryd at Teukesbury. And for this mortalytie was so sharpe and sodayne, pope Gregory beforenamed graunted of his goodnesse to suche as were contrite and confessyd, clene remyssiion of theyr synnes; the whiche indulgence contynued in Englande by the terme of .vi. monethes."—Fabyan, ed. Ellis, p. 485. This grant of the pope's seems to be the very thing

alluded to in the line discussed, and in l. 246 just above it, where Haukyn says that all that the pope sent him was “a pardoun with a peys of led.”

The other allusion is in Pass. xv. 80, 81.

“Go to þe glose of þe verse · 3e grete clerkes ;

If I lye on 3ow to my lewed witte · ledeth me to brennynge !”

On this Dr Whitaker remarks, at p. xxxii. of his preface to the poem, that this is “an allusion to the statute empowering the diocesan alone to commit heretics to the flames, which was enacted in the second of Henry Fourth.” I cannot admit this for a moment ; it is contrary to all the other evidence, and it is almost certain that at least *some* of the MSS. which contain the passage are absolutely older than 1400. Langland’s expression is a very natural one, if he thought that his being burnt for heresy was a not impossible event. It is quite startling enough to find your neighbour’s house on fire, still more so to find that your neighbour himself is being burnt. They did such things in France long before the year 1400. Two Minorite Friars were burnt at Avignon A. D. 1354, “pro quibusdam erroneis opinionibus, prout Domino Papæ et Cardinalibus suis videbatur.”—Thomæ Walsingham *Historia*, ed. Riley, i. 278.

On the other hand, I would not place the date of the B-text later than 1377 (or at the very latest, 1378). It is something to have shewn that it was written fifteen years later than the date commonly received, and it seems unnecessary to go further. The argument which most weighs with me is this, viz. that if it had been in hand in September, 1378, or a little after that, I cannot see how Langland could possibly have refrained from at least one allusion to the schism of the popes, the event which so animated Wycliffe. Instead of which, the nearest and only approach to a hint of anything of the kind is in Pass. xiii. 174—“Can nouzt confourmen a pees · bytwene þe pope and his enemys”—which is too mild an expression for the occasion.<sup>1</sup> Hence I assume 1377 as the *exact* date.

§ 4. ANACHRONISMS. It must be remembered that one effect of

<sup>1</sup> I do not think it follows that we are to find an allusion to the “schism” in the C-text ; that may have been written when the novelty of it had worn off. Whether the C-text contains such an allusion or not, I cannot as yet positively say.

the double revision of the poem by its author has been to introduce occasional anachronisms. Thus, when the poet speaks of Reason being set on the bench between the king and his son (A. iv. 32), he of course refers to Edward III. and the Black Prince, as the remark was made in 1362; but when the line is allowed to stand without change in the later versions, as occurring in a part of the poem which was not very much altered, the allusion is lost, and it can only be taken as a general expression signifying that Reason was placed in a seat of dignity. Again, the allusion to the accession of Richard II. in the words “*ȝif I regne any while*” is of less force when retained in the C-text than when first composed and inserted in the B-text. Hence, in considering the chronology of any passage, we must be careful to ascertain in which version of the poem the given passage *first* appeared.

#### § 5. DESCRIPTION OF THE MSS.

XIII.<sup>1</sup> MS. Laud Misc. 581, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford; denoted throughout this volume by the letter L, and used to form text

<sup>1</sup> Eleven MSS. have been already described. The descriptions of MSS. I.—X. are in vol. i. pp. xv.—xxiv.; and the description of MS. XI. in vol. i. also, at p. 142\*. The twelfth MS. must be described here in a footnote, as it turns out to belong to the A-class.

XII. MS. D. 4. 12 in Trinity College, Dublin. This is a paper MS., the size of the page being about 8¾ inches by 5, and each page contains about 30 lines. The margins of some of the leaves are a good deal worn, and in some places slips have been inserted on which the text (apparently the same) has been rewritten. A fragment of the Romance of Alexander the Great is in the latter part of the volume. The last fragment resembles the Alliterative Romance printed by Mr Stevenson for the Roxburghe Club, 1849; in a note to which edition, at p. ii., Mr Stevenson thus describes the Dublin MS. “It is a small quarto volume, written upon paper towards the end of the fifteenth century. It contains a copy of the Visions [*read* Vision] of Piers Plouhman, which ends imperfectly in the Seventh Passus. The Romance of Alexander then follows, commencing with l. 678 of our text [i. e. of the text in MS. Ashmole 44], and ends with the line 3426. This fragment consists therefore of 2748 [2749?] lines. I am indebted for my acquaintance with it to the kindness of Sir F. Madden.” The copy of Piers the Plowman in this MS. ends at l. 45 of Pass. vii., and is contained on 26 leaves. An analysis of the Prologue shows that it bears a tolerably close resemblance to MS. U (A-text), and a still closer resemblance to MS. Rowl. Poet. 137, described at p. 142\* of vol. i. But it has certain variations and additions which extend the Prologue to 124 lines. After l. 54 of the Prologue it inserts the four lines following:

*Persons with þair prouianses · permutyn þair cherches,  
With al þe besynes of þair body · þe better to hauc,*

B. This MS. is of strong vellum, and contains 94 leaves, of which one at the beginning and two at the end are blank. The remaining 91 leaves are entirely occupied by the poem here printed. The size of each leaf is about  $10\frac{1}{2}$  by  $7\frac{1}{2}$  inches, and it contains about 40 lines on each page. The poem is divided into sections or paragraphs, each of these being separated from the one following it by a blank space. At the beginning of each section is the mark ¶, painted blue. The initial letters of each *Passus* are also painted blue, and neatly flourished with red. The ink is of a pale light brown, in some places faded, but always distinctly legible. There are a few marginal notes by the scribe, such as “*nota*” opposite *Pass.* i. 146, a red hand opposite iii. 323, the names of the seven deadly sins in *Pass.* v., the words “*Indulgentia Petri*” opposite vii. 111, the words “*quid est caritas*” opposite xv. 145, and the quotation beginning “*Fumus, &c.*,” quoted in the footnote on p. 319. There are also a few glosses over words, which have been printed wherever they occur. Besides these, there are several marginal notes by later hands, none of which are of any value, excepting the remark opposite xv. 148—“*nota. the name of thauetour.*” Nearly all the Latin words and quotations have a red line drawn round them. Just above the first line of the poem we find in red letters, nearly obliterated, the title “*Incipit Liber de Petro Plowman.*”<sup>1</sup> At the bottom of the first page is written—“*Liber Gulielmi Laud, Archiep̄i Cantuar: et Cancellarij Vniuersitatis Oxon. 1633.*” At the top of the first page is loosely scribbled—“*. . Robart Langeland, borne by malverne hilles.*” At the end are the names of former owners—“*Raffe Coppynge. Mem. y<sup>t</sup> I haue lent to Nicholas brigham the pers ploughman w<sup>ch</sup> I borowed of M. Le of Addyng-*

Viears on fele halue · fandyn þaim to Done,  
Leders þai beñ of lovedays · & with þe lawe mellyth.

The first pair of lines I do not remember to have seen before; the last pair agree with the extra lines in MS. Rawl. Poet. 137. There are two extra lines also after l. 83, resembling B. prol. 112, 113; and ten extra lines after l. 95, answering to the passage in B. prol. 92—99, but in some places bearing a closer resemblance to the C-text. Line 58 is omitted, and ll. 96 and 97 transposed so as to follow l. 89. For the information enabling me to give this analysis, I am indebted to Professor Dowden of Dublin.

<sup>1</sup> The Bodleian Catalogue says “*Petre Plowman*” merely, but the whole title can be read, in strong sunlight.

ton.”—“Liber Ric. Johnson.”—“In desire spede is tariance. Jon Thynne.”—“T. Long of Dorchester.” On the back of the last fly-leaf is scribbled—

“Amongest all other take hede of one thinge,  
In othere mennes matters make lyttle medling.”

I also subjoin a list of catchwords, as they sometimes differ in spelling from the words in the text.

- Fol. 8 *b.* As auoutrie and deuoses (*sic*).  
 Fol. 16 *b.* 3if 3e bidden boxomnesse.  
 Fol. 24 *b.* Ne none of here *seruantz*.  
 Fol. 32 *b.* To purchace 3ow pardoun.  
 Fol. 40 *b.* But þus it bilongeth to bileue.  
 Fol. 48 *b.* And as I cast vp myn eyen.  
 Fol. 56 *b.* For eche a mayde þat he mette.  
 Fol. 64 *b.* For I haue seyne hym in silke.  
 Fol. 72 *b.* And as we went þus in þe weye.  
 Fol. 80 *b.* And I þat am kynge.  
 Fol. 88 *b.* That couetise were cristene.

I look upon this MS. as of the very highest importance. My original reason for printing it was that it seemed to me, after a short examination, much upon a par with the MS. printed by Mr Wright, and I considered that, supposing the MSS. to be of nearly equal value, it would be a great gain to print the unprinted one, in order to have two complete copies of the poem in type. I began my collation with no very great respect for the MS., and was ready to amend it wherever it seemed to have inferior readings. But when, in several instances, after making some such alterations, larger knowledge compelled me to alter them back again, the case was altered. The conviction was gradually *forced* upon me that the MS. is of the highest order of excellence, and the chief authority upon all difficult points. When, in certain somewhat doubtful places, after consulting the other MSS. of the B-class, the A-text, Whitaker's text, Crowley's text, the Cotton MS. of the C-text, &c., I found this Laud MS. helping me out of the difficulty for about the twentieth time, I felt compelled to pay to it all due respect. But the circumstance that most attracted my attention was the occurrence of numerous little crosses made by a cor-

rector's hand in the margin. Wherever a word is misspelt or some other error, even of quite a trivial nature, occurs in the text, so surely (except very rarely) do we find the corrector's mark. In a few cases the correction has been actually *made* (in one case in *red* ink or paint), but not in general. Sometimes it is very difficult to make out why the cross is there, and the corrector seems to have been very particular. But these small crosses are not all. There are also some large crosses made by very fine thin lines, in the same faded ink as the text, the meaning of which I believe to be that they *mark passages which the author intended to alter, and, in every case, actually did alter*, viz. in the C-text. There are also very small ticks against some lines, for what reason I cannot explain.<sup>1</sup> On the whole, I cannot see any reason why we should not attribute these marks to the author himself, as this seems by far the simplest solution. There is no doubt about the age of the MS.; it may have been written at any time between the years 1377 and 1410. Indeed, it may be an autograph copy, as Langland was very probably himself a poor professional scribe, and speaks with scorn of those who could not write out things properly (B. xi. 299); and this MS. is a good specimen of caligraphy. But, in order that the reader may see this the more clearly, let me enumerate the principal lines against which a small cross is found, giving at the same time the reasons for its presence in those instances where the reason is not indicated in the footnotes.

ProL. 67 (*mychief* for *myschief*); I. 81; I. 178 (*a chaste*, altered to *as chaste*); II. 91, 116, 227 (*r* omitted in *mystralles*); III. 98, 132, 227; IV. 27, 54 (*fethynge* altered to *ferthyng*); IV. 67 (possibly *wan* should be *wente*); IV. 136 (*a*, altered to *as*); IV. 147 (for no apparent reason); IV. 152 (*me* altered to *mede*); V. 265 (*rsue*, altered to *ysue*); V. 272, 347, 357, 447, 600, 616 (*childe* badly written so as to look more like *clilde*); VI. 195, 214; VII. 94; VIII. 12 (why?); VIII. 43, 53, 67 (*me* inserted afterwards); VIII. 69, 125; IX. 67, 97, 139, 160 (*comely* written above the line), 167 (*an* for *and*); X. 172, 361, 416, 426, 434 (*or* altered to *ſ*); XI. 53, 125

<sup>1</sup> Unless they mean that alteration is necessary. Thus, there is one opposite Pass. ii. 35, where, for *caritatis*, Whitaker has *trewe charite*, and another opposite l. 8, which in Whitaker is completely different.

(*gon* added above the line), 130, 194 (*of* altered to *on*), 250 (*after* added at end of line), 331, 388, 427 (*hin* altered to *him*); XII. 69, 76, 253; XIII. 46, 338, 356, 374, 385, 430; XIV. 16 (it should have been against l. 18), 171 (perhaps *ben* should be omitted), 176 (why ?), 179 (why ?), 184, 186, 263 (*an* for *and*), 311; XV. 19, 122 (*placebo* not underlined with red), 164, 194, 530, 581 (*an* for *and*); XVI. 209, 249; XVII. 164, 258; XVIII. 19 (*iouste* written above the line), 109, 201; XIX. 184, 247 (why ?), 344, 360, 461; XX. 118, 242, 288.

The reader who actually refers to every one of these passages will scarcely think my supposition extravagant, if he is at all conversant with MSS. and their frequent errors.

It has been objected, that the spelling is faulty;<sup>1</sup> but is there any reason for supposing that Langland could or would have spelt better? It may also be objected that there are a few mistakes not marked for correction; but let any one try the experiment of writing out 7000 lines of poetry, and reading it once over afterwards. It is quite as correct as any autograph MS. can fairly be expected to be, and in any case, it is (as far as the *sense* and *metre* are concerned) by far the best MS. of the B-text extant.<sup>2</sup>

The following is a list of the lines marked with a *large* cross; viz. VI. 261; VII. 75, 116, 121, 155; IX. 66, 145; X. 393, 442; XI. 165; XII. 300. I will only discuss one of these, viz. VII. 155, where the mistake is very obvious. Here Langland makes Daniel interpret Nebuchadnezzar's dream where the reference should have been to Belshazzar. The "correction" of this, in the C-text, is curious, being incorrect still.

"How Daniel dyuinede<sup>3</sup> · and undude þe dremeles  
Of king Nabugodonosor · þat no peer hadde,  
And suthe after to hus sones · seide hem what þei thoughte."

Whitaker's edition, p. 163.

For remarks upon the method of printing this MS., see § 10.

<sup>1</sup> See further remarks upon the spelling in § 9.

<sup>2</sup> That is, as far as I know at present. I am not at all sure that my list of MSS. is complete.

<sup>3</sup> Whitaker prints *dymnede*; but this, with him, is a trifle.

XIV. MS. Rawlinson Poet. 38, in the Bodleian Library (of which a fragment is in MS. Lansdowne 398, in the British Museum), denoted throughout this volume by R.

This is an imperfect MS. upon vellum, written in a clear bold hand, divided into sections by blank spaces at the end of each, the mark ¶ at the beginning of each paragraph being painted red and blue alternately. At the end is the mark of ownership—"William Butte;" and on a flyleaf at the beginning—"Suum cuique. Tho. Hearne, Sept. 20. 1732. An imperfect MS. of Pierce Plowman." Each leaf, where perfect, has a wide margin, and measures about  $11\frac{1}{2}$  by  $8\frac{1}{4}$  inches. But it has been at some time shamefully maltreated by some one who, apparently for the purpose of theft, cut off the margins of several of the leaves at the beginning, reducing them to about 9 inches by  $5\frac{1}{4}$ . The first eight leaves were then abstracted, but they are not all lost, as I found four of them in the British Museum, bound up with several other pieces in MS. Lansdowne 398! There they were, with the margins cut off; and careful measurement proved them to be exactly of the same size as the cut leaves at Oxford; besides which, the handwriting and general appearance of the pages exactly tallied, each page containing about 31 lines. I have therefore marked the collations with the Lansdowne MS. also by the letter R, to avoid confusion. The leaves there preserved are the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth, containing the portion from ProL. 125 to Pass. i. 137. The first, second, seventh, and eighth leaves are lost altogether, as also eight consecutive leaves near the end of the poem, from Pass. xviii. 411 to Pass. xx. 27. The piece at Oxford consists of 101 leaves, beginning at Pass. ii. 40. All the existing portion has been carefully collated, and the collation yields some curious results.

Wherever it agrees with MS. L, it agrees with it very closely, the resemblance frequently extending even to peculiarities of spelling. Yet it has certain peculiarities of its own, such as *kende* for *kynde*, and the persistence with which it exhibits the prefix *I-* or *y-* (generally the former) before past participles. It agrees with the text, for instance, in giving the right date of Chichester's mayoralty, and generally corroborates the readings of the text in difficult passages. It is

therefore to be classed with the Laud MS. as regards its general character. But close collation shews that it abounds in *omissions* and *additions* of no insignificant kind, although the mere *variations* are but few. It is necessary to account for them, and a comparison of these passages with the C-text clearly reveals their exact significance. The omissions (amounting to more than 150 lines) are mostly due to mere carelessness; a few coincide with the briefer narrative in the A-text; and some of them occur at points where the B- and C-texts vary. The additions (amounting to about 160 lines) almost invariably occur at points where the C-text is fuller than the B-text, and it is easily seen that the Rawlinson MS. really exhibits the poem in its transition stage between these two forms, and the best idea of it is formed by calling it a copy of the B-text *with later improvements and after-thoughts*. On this account, nearly all the additional lines which it furnishes have been inserted in the text, distinguished from the rest by the use of square brackets.<sup>1</sup>

The principal *omissions* are these:—

R omits V. 481, accidentally; VIII. 14—17, not in A-text; VIII. last half of 99, 100—103, and first half of 104, owing to the repetition of *kyng*; IX. last half of 113, 114, 115, and first half of 116, owing to repetition of *wedloke ywrouzte*; IX. 158, 159, 166, 177—185, 199—202, none of them in A-text; X. 425; XI. 45—48, altered in C-text; XII. 13, 141—148, 170, 186; XIII. 14—20, half of 373 and of 374; XIV. 155—159, 251, 252; XV. 239—243, see C-text; XV. 70, 395, 396, 495—531; XVI. half of 27 and of 28; XVII. 36—46, altered in C-text, 112—123, 217—243, 314; XVIII. 178, 197, 250, 251, the last two slightly altered in the C-text; and XX. 237, 238.

The principal *additions* are these:—

R adds a line, probably spurious, after V. 283, being perhaps the only addition in the course of the first nine Passus; two lines after X. 77, see C-text; X. 291—303, cf. both A-text and C-text; X. 381, 411—413; a line after XI. 105, see C-text; parts of lines XI.

<sup>1</sup> The only additional lines admitted into the text (as far as I remember) from *other* MSS. are five, viz. V. 273, 338, 569, VI. 49, and XV. 224. Their genuineness is doubtful, and I now think they should have been excluded.

126 and 127, much wanted ; XI. 154—164, perhaps not to be found elsewhere ; a line, perhaps spurious, after XI. 190 ; XI. 374—384, some of which lines are in the C-text ; XI. part of 419, 420, and part of 421, see C-text ; XII. 57—59, see C-text ; XII. 78 ; XII. 118—127, see C-text ; XII. 152, 153, see C-text ; XIII. 164—171, cf. the C-text ; XIII. 293—299, also in the C-text, but transferred to a very different part of the poem ; XIII. 400—409, partly in the C-text, but in quite another place ; XIII. 437—454, also in the C-text, but transferred elsewhere ; XIV. 227—237, in the C-text ; XV. 239—243, 298, 299 ; after l. 388, a superfluous line ; 464—477, a very curious passage, which may be called the “whistling” passage ; 539—556, also in the C-text ; half of 564, 565, 566, and half of 567 ; XVII. 68, also in the C-text ; half of 176, 177, and half of 178, also in the C-text ; 307, 308, also in the C-text ; XVIII. half of 310 and half of 311 ; and a C-text line after XX. 36.

The chief passages wherein MS. R merely *varies* from the text are in III. 51—63, where it approaches the A-text ; IX. 168—170, where it is surely corrupt ; and XVI. 270—273, where it also seems to be corrupted.

XV. A MS. in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, marked B. 15. 17 ; being the one printed by Mr Wright in his well-known and convenient edition, and therefore denoted in this volume by the letter W. It contains three pieces in the same handwriting throughout, viz. (1) *Piers the Plowman* ; (2) *A Treatise on Sin*, in prose, beginning—“In euery synful man or womman þat is bounden in dedly synne ben þre wrecchednesses”—and ending—“If it do þee good and profite to þee, þanke god and pray for me. þe grace of Ihesu crist be wiþ þee and kepe þee. Amen ;” (3) a short poem of 44 lines, beginning—“Crist made to man a fair present,” which is printed in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, vol. i. p. 166, with the title of “Love.” There is no doubt about the antiquity and value of this MS., and it is an excellent thing that we have it in print. It is on stout vellum, the size of each leaf being about  $11\frac{1}{2}$  by  $7\frac{1}{2}$  inches, much resembling MS. L in shape. The handwriting is bold and firm, and the letters large. It is divided into sections by breaks, and the mark ¶ occurs at the beginning of each paragraph. These breaks are denoted in the

printed edition by setting the first line of the paragraph a little backward. It will readily be seen that the paragraphs are much more numerous and shorter than in MS. L. It is, of course, written in long lines; the printing of the poem in short lines being a mere matter of taste and convenience. I hold it to be somewhat inferior to the Laud MS., and to exhibit a slightly varied form of the poem; but the difference between them only comes out after verbal collation of the whole poem. In many passages it agrees with the text very closely indeed, and it does not contain a single line which is not also in the Laud MS. It has, however, a few faults of omission, and that too where the omitted lines are sometimes indispensable. The chief omissions are these, viz. :—ProL. 170, i. e. after l. 338, p. 11 of Wright's edition; last line of Prologue, supplied in Mr Wright's edition from MS. T (A-text); Pass. I. half of 37 and half of 38, which so many MSS. omit, and which should follow l. 535, p. 17<sup>1</sup>; I. 145, to follow l. 752, p. 23; II. 186, to follow l. 1255, p. 39; V. 90, to follow l. 2652, p. 82; XII. 105, to follow l. 7650, p. 234; XV. 367, to follow l. 10371, p. 317; XVII. 209, to follow l. 11785, p. 360; XVIII. 361, to follow l. 12809, p. 391; XIX. 86, to follow l. 13132, p. 401; and XX. 299, to follow l. 14526, p. 443; of which twelve lines MS. L omits but one. I do not include in this list XIII. 49, because it is not really omitted in the MS., but only in the printed copy. For further remarks concerning MS. W, see § 6. I should add that the various readings which it supplies are *peculiar*, and frequently unlike those of any other extant MS.; but they pair off very well with the readings of Crowley's edition. It has been collated throughout.<sup>2</sup>

XVI. A MS. in the possession of H. Yates Thompson, Esq., of Liverpool; denoted by the letter Y, and partly collated, viz. throughout the passages XVI. 56—91, XVII. 96—340, XVIII. 411—XX. 27. Several readings are also cited from it in the latter part of Pass. XVI. and in other parts of Pass. XVII. and XVIII. This MS. is

<sup>1</sup> All these references to *lines and pages* are to the lines and pages of Mr Wright's edition.

<sup>2</sup> XV\*. I ought here to mention the MS. used by Crowley, now lost. For remarks upon it, see § 6; and for numerous citations from Crowley's edition, see the Critical Notes at the end of this volume; and, in particular, the note to Pass. v. 168.

neatly written on vellum, all the titles and Latin quotations being in red. The poem is divided into sections by breaks, and it is a fair copy. Each leaf measures about  $11\frac{1}{2}$  by 7 inches, and each page contains about 37 lines. The MS. consists of 110 leaves, of which the first 104 (13 quires of 8 leaves each) contain Piers the Plowman, terminating on fol. 104 *recto*. It is followed, on the reverse of the leaf, by a poem on the Mass, about 358 lines long, beginning—

man or woman þat wol lere  
A masse deuou[t]ly for to here—

and ending— For godis low sey nocht nay.

And that hey holi god · he queyte the thi mede  
Of whom we spek of · when we say oure crede.

This is immediately followed by an Old English *Gra:e* :—

*gratias.* God that his brede brake.  
at his maw[n]de whanne he sate.  
Amonge his postyllis twelue.  
He bles oure brede and oure ayl.  
þat we haw and haw schal.  
and be with vs him-selwe.

*In nomine patris & filii & spiritus sancti. Amen.*

In several places the scribe has drawn a crest, viz. an eagle displayed, standing on a light green tuft, with the letter L painted in red on the breast. The readings of this MS. do not greatly differ, upon the whole, from the text here printed; most of the variations resemble those MSS. in O and C, described below; nos. XVIII. and XXII. My thanks are due to Mr Thompson in an especial manner for his kindness in lending me this MS., and so enabling me to become thoroughly acquainted with its contents at my leisure.

XVII. MS. No. CXXIX., in the possession of Lord Ashburnham. Of the MSS. here described which are written *with breaks between the paragraphs*, this is the fifth and last. It is a very fair copy of the B-text, but written in a variable hand, perhaps by more hands than one. It has been read over by a corrector, who has written *cor.* or *correc.* at the end of every quire. The Latin words have red lines

drawn round them, and are written somewhat larger than the rest, as in MS. W. Several final *ees* have been added, and several erased. It preserves l. 170 of the Prologue in the form—

And hangen it vpon þe Cattis hals · þanne here we mowen—  
which only differs from our text in a single letter. In Pass. i. 37, 38, it originally had but one line; but it now has—

Ne lifode to þi likam · þat lief is to the soule  
leue not þi likam · for a liere hym tech . . .  
þat is þe wrechede world · wolde þe bitraye—

where *þat lief is to þe soule* is written over an erasure, and the next line added in the margin. The following lines may also be compared with the text:—

Al þis seiþ I slepinge · and seuen sythes more; Prol. 230.

And now persons han perceiued · þat Freres parte with hem;  
v. 143.

þay hadde þanne ben *infamis* · þai can so euele hele conseilte;  
v. 168.

And in a wynkyng wraþe · wex I aslepe; xi. 4.

The word “faunteltee” (xi. 41) is glossed by *youth*. The name “longe wille” (xv. 148) is underlined with red. On the whole, it agrees very closely with the text here printed, and frequently uses similar spelling; but we find occasional plurals in *-us*, as in

With suche wyse wordus · to wyssen any sottus; x. 8—

also such forms in *-ul* as *clepud*, *wikkud*, and even *-un* for *-en*, as in

Of alkyng libbyng laborers · lopun forþ summe; prol. 222.

My thanks are due to Lord Ashburnham for kindly allowing me to examine fully and to describe both this MS. and No. XX. below.

XVIII. MS. No. 79 in the library of Oriel College, Oxford; represented in the footnotes by the letter O. This is much the neatest, and probably altogether the best, of the MSS. which are written *continuously*, i. e. without a break at the end of each paragraph. It is a small MS. on vellum, about  $8\frac{1}{2}$  by  $6\frac{1}{2}$  inches in size. It has lost the first half of the first quire, the first four leaves being held in merely at their edges; then follow eight complete quires of eight leaves each;

an incomplete quire of only five leaves (the fifth, sixth, and seventh being lost); one more complete quire; and one more incomplete quire of seven leaves (the first being lost). The rest of the MS. is on paper, of a much later date, and will be described presently. On the first page now left to us, is the tag-end of a Latin poem of small merit, consisting of only eight lines, the last being

*Hoc tibi det munus · qui regnat trinus & vnus. amen.*

Then follows "Pers Plowman," which, owing to the loss of leaves, is defective from XVII. 96 to XVII. 340, and from XIX. 276 to XIX. 355. It is very neatly and closely written in a regular hand, with about 40 lines on each page. The dialect is Midland, almost without admixture, the endings *-en* in the present indicative and *-eden* in the past indicative plural being kept up with much regularity. A large number of the plural substantives end in *-is*. It almost invariably has *wijf* for *wyf*, *shal* for *shal*, and the like; also the singular spellings *sehe* for *se* (sea), and *schel* for *sele* (seal). It commonly follows the text pretty closely, but, where it differs, frequently agrees with MSS. C and B, so that the collocation of letters C O B is of frequent occurrence in the footnotes. But it is clearly superior to both of those MSS., and, as it frequently offers *peculiar* readings, and is, as it were, an independent witness, it was very necessary to collate it throughout; which, thanks to the liberality of the Provost and Fellows of Oriel, I have been enabled to do. It preserves a great number of the lines which are lost in MSS. C and B, and omits comparatively few lines, such as ii. 65, iii. 96, v. 176, vi. 315, &c. There is one variation in it which must not be passed over, as it seems to be peculiar to this MS. and the one next described, viz. the allusion to Sir Philip the Sparrow in the line—

"Schulden go synge *seruysesles · wijf sire philip þe sparwe—*"

which, as explained in the footnote to xv. 119, is totally different from the corresponding line in the other copies.

This is the very MS. which was lent to Dr Whitaker when preparing his edition of the C-text of the poem, and the first thing which I discovered in it was a piece of paper marking the passage which he printed at p. xxxv. of his Preface. His quotation is printed with such

great carelessness, that the only way of giving the reader a fair idea of what the MS. is like is to print it again. It begins at l. 134 of Pass. v.

Now awakip wraþþe · wiþ two whyte yen,  
 And nyuelynge wiþ þe nose · & his necke hangynge.  
 “ I am wraþþe,” quod he · “ I was sum tyme a frère,  
 And couentes gardener · for to graffen impes. 137  
 On lymytouris & legistreis · lesyngys I Impede,  
 Til þei bere leues of lowe speche · lordis to plese ;  
 And siþen þei blosmeden abrode · in boure, to here schryftes. 140  
 And now is fallen þerof a fruyt · þat folk han wel leuere  
 Schewen her schryftes to hem · þan schryue hem to her persouns.  
 And now han persouns perceyued · þat freres parten wiþ hem,  
 þeise possessioners prechen · & deprauen freris, 144  
 And freris fynden hem in defaute · as folke beren witnesse,  
 þat whanne þei prechen þe peple · in many places aboute,  
 I, wraþþe, walke wiþ hem · & wisse hem of my bokis.  
 þus þei speken of spiritualte · þat eiþer dispiseþ oþer, 148  
 Til þei been boþe beggers · & by my spiritualte libben,  
 Or ellis alle riche · and riden aboute. 150  
 I, wraþþe, reste neuere · þat I ne muste folewe  
 þeise wickide folk · for swich is my grace.  
 I haue an aunte to nunne ; &c.<sup>1</sup>

The rest of the MS. is of later date, and on paper, and the paper leaves seem to have been thrust in to fill a gap where something has been taken out. What if a good copy of the poem on the *Deposition of Richard II.* has thus been lost to us? It is not altogether a wild guess; see the description of the next MS.

The paper leaves contain 4 Latin distichs on the complexion of man, viz :—

<sup>1</sup> Dr Whitaker prints *whyte* for *whyte*, & for *I* (l. 136), *graffen* for *graffen*, *han* for *han*, *leue* for *leuere*, *schryftes* for *schryftes*, *dispereþ* for *dispiseþ*, &c.

This investigation is useful, as affording a measure of his inaccuracy throughout the work.

*Sanguineus.*

Largus, amans, hillaris, ridens, rubeique coloris,  
 Cantans, carnosus, satis audax, atque benignus :  
     multum appetit, quia calidus ;  
     multum potest, quia humidus.

*Colericus.*

Hirsutus, fallax, irascens, prodigus, audax,  
 Hastutus, gracilis, cupidus, croceique coloris :  
     multum appetit, quia calidus ;  
     parum potest, quia siccus.

*Pleumaticus.*

Hic sompnolentus, piger, spucamine plenus,  
 Est ebes hic sensus, pinguis, facie color albus :  
     multum potest, quia humidus,  
     parum appetit, quia frigidus.

*Malencolicus.*

Solicitus, tristis, cupidus, dextreque tenacis,  
 Non expers fraudis, tumidus, luteique coloris :  
     parum appetit, quia frigidus.  
     parum potest, quia siccus.<sup>1</sup>

Next follow : (1) a list of the London wards, with their ratings ; (2) a list of London churches ; (3) "This is the privilege of Westminster ;" (4) "Litill John," or the "book of curtesye." The last article has its lines singularly misplaced,<sup>2</sup> but it is nevertheless the best known copy of the poem which Mr Furnivall called "Caxton's Book of Curtesye," edited by him for the Extra Series of the E. E. T. S. in 1868, in which volume the Oriel text is printed at length, from my own transcript of it. As I am now describing the MS., I may repeat here my statement concerning it, which Mr Furnivall has

<sup>1</sup> Cf. The Babees Book ; ed. Furnivall, 1868 ; pp. 169, 170.

<sup>2</sup> Hence the description in Mr Coxe's Catalogue gives no clear idea of what it is.

printed in his Preface, at p. vi. The first two leaves of the Oriel copy are misplaced inside out at the end; but this is not the only misarrangement. The poem has evidently been copied into this MS. from an older copy having a leaf capable of containing *six stanzas at a time*; which stanzas were out of order. Hence the poem in the Oriel MS. is written in the following order, as now bound up: Stanzas 11 (l. 5)—18, 25—30, 37—42, 19—24, 49—54, 31—36, 43—48, 55—76, 8—11 (l. 4), 4 (l. 5)—7, 1—4 (l. 4).

In the MS. are the former owners' names—"A. S."—"W. Smethwick."—"Joseph Ames." It afterwards belonged to Francis Page, Esq., commoner of Oriel, who presented it to the college A.D. 1788.

XIX. MS. Ll. 4. 14 in the University Library, Cambridge, occasionally quoted in the footnotes, and denoted by C2. A somewhat late MS. on paper, but neatly written, with wide margins, each page containing about 37 lines; size about 11 by 8 $\frac{3}{4}$  inches. It consists of five parts, of which the *first* contains Piers the Plowman, fol. 1—107*a*; and an alliterative poem on the Deposition of Richard II., fol. 107*b*—119*b*, ending abruptly in the middle of a page, which has been twice printed by Mr Wright, viz. for the Camden Society, 1838, and in Political Poems and Songs, 1859, vol. I. p. 368.<sup>1</sup> The *second* part contains a treatise on Numeration in English prose, fol. 127*a* to fol. 148*b*. The *third* part contains The wyse boke of Philosophie and Astronome, fol. 153*a* to 156*b*, and þe tretis of þe booke of Phisonomye, imperfect, fol. 156*b* to 159*b*. The *fourth* part contains Tabula Psalmorum, fol. 161*a* to 163*a*; and Sententiæ Doctorum, fol. 164*a* to 167*a*. Lastly, A doctrine of Fisshynge and foulynge, in verse, by Piers of Fulham, fol. 173*a* to 174*b*, incorrectly printed from another MS. in Trinity College, Cambridge, in Hartshorne's Ancient Metrical Tales, p. 117.<sup>2</sup> The three first parts are in the same handwriting. On a previously blank page (fol. 170*a*), a former owner of the book has written a Short Glossary to "Piers the Plowman." This "Short Glossary" is of little value, but is printed here, for completeness' sake, in the Appendix.

The copy of "Piers the Plowman" in this MS. seems to be com-

<sup>1</sup> See my remarks upon this poem in Preface I., vol. i. p. xxxvii.

<sup>2</sup> There are two other MSS. of this poem, both in the Bodleian Library.

plete. It bears so striking a resemblance to the Oriel MS. as to suggest the notion that it has been copied from it, although in a few places it rightly preserves one or two little words which the Oriel MS. has dropped; but these words are, for the most part, only such as can be supplied by one's own common sense. There is also a great similarity in the spelling, the most curious alteration being the frequent substitution of the ending *-yn* for *-en* in the plural indicative of verbs. However this may be, it is, for all practical purposes, a duplicate of the Oriel MS., and hence extremely useful for filling up the two gaps mentioned above. It has therefore been collated in Pass. xvii. ll. 96—340, and in Pass. xix. 276—355, where the reader may look upon the symbol C2 as occupying the place of the symbol O in the footnotes. It has also been occasionally consulted in other passages, and a few readings from it will be occasionally met with. It agrees, moreover, with the Oriel MS. in reading—

Shulden go synge seruysces · with sir phelip þe sparwe (xv. 119).

XX. MS. No. CXXX. in the possession of Lord Ashburnham; bought in June, 1854, at Mr Loscombe's sale. Formerly it was in the possession of Dr Adam Clarke, and is described at p. 69 of the catalogue of his library by J. B. B. Clarke, published in 1835; at which time it was No. CXXIX. It afterwards passed into the hands of W. Loscombe, Esq., of Pickwick House, Corsham, Wilts; and, while in his possession, the poem of "How the good wife taught her daughter" was printed from it by Sir F. Madden.<sup>1</sup> The MS. contains (1) Hampole's "Prikke of Conscience;" (2) A Fragment of Piers the Plowman; (3) a piece in Latin, with the rubric—*Dominica prima adventus domini · sequencia.* (4) a complete copy of our poem; (5) an alliterative poem of 1242 lines, with the rubric—Here begynneth þe sege of ierusalem · & how it was destroyed. Begins—

In tyberyes tyme · the trewe emperowr— and ends—

And hool reedyn to rome · yblessyd be god almyȝty. AmeN.

This piece is written in a very small, close handwriting. Cf. MSS.

<sup>1</sup> The right answer to my question in Pref. to Text A, p. xii, as to what became of Dr Clarke's two MSS. is this. His MS. No. CII. is now MS. Addit. 10574 in the Brit. Museum, and his MS. CXXIX. is now MS. Ashburnham CXXX.

Cotton Calig. A. 2, Camb. Univ. Libr. Mm. 5. 14, & Laud 656. (6) How the good wife taught her daughter; printed by Sir F. Madden; with which compare the copy printed in the *Babees Book*, ed. Furnivall, 1868, p. 36.

The *second* article, viz. the Fragment, is an entirely distinct thing from the *fourth* article. Being, moreover, wrongly bound up, it looks at first like *two* fragments; for the passage beginning with

than drede went wyztly · and warnede fals (ii. 208),

and ending with

woldest thow glase that gable · and grauen . . . . (iii. 49),

is on the *second* of these leaves; while the rest of the passage, from iii. 50 to “*faciat dextra*” (iii. 72) is on the first half of the *first* leaf, the rest of that leaf being blank. It is a fragment belonging to the B-text, but too short to be of any importance; which is my reason for not numbering it *separately*, as theoretically it ought to be. With regard to the other copy (article 4), it is a faulty copy of the B-text, having been much spoilt by attempted corrections. These are written over erasures, and are almost always alterations for the worse. Thus, in l. 1, the last part of the line has been erased and rewritten, to introduce the reading “set” instead of “softe.”<sup>1</sup> Again, in the passage about Chichester’s mayoralty (xiii. 270), it has—“a thowsand and thre hundryd · syxty and nyno”—where the three last words are over an erasure; and we also find “1369” in the margin. In Prol. 14 it has the false reading “rychely y-maked.” It omits Prol. 170; but I am not aware that any portion of the poem, except a few stray single lines, is missing. It is of later date than the other Ashburnham MS., and altogether inferior to it.

It contains, however, one note of considerable importance. Inside the cover is written, in a hand of the *fifteenth* century, the remark—“Robert or william langland made pers plonghman.” I was not before aware of this, as it is not mentioned in Lord Ashburnham’s

<sup>1</sup> Which seems to prove that the alteration was made after Crowley’s edition was published. It is incredible that any MS. should have had *set*, when the time referred to is early morning; nor have I seen *set* in any other MS. whatever. Nor do I believe that Crowley’s MS. had *set*; it must have been his mistake; cf. note 1, p. xxxiii.

catalogue; but it now appears that John Bale's note (printed in my Pref. to Text A, p. xxxv.) is squeezed in between this older note and the lower margin of the cover. It is older testimony than Bale's, and it is worth remarking that it does not mention *Robert* only, as Bale does, but offers us the alternative of *William*.

XXI. MS. Gg. 4. 31 in the University Library, Cambridge. A MS. of the sixteenth century on paper, loosely written in a running hand; size, about 9 by  $6\frac{3}{4}$  inches. It has 105 written leaves, and contains (1) *Piers the Plowman*, fol. 1a to 101a; (2) a Table, entitled "here ynsueth e y<sup>r</sup> table off pyers plowman," fol. 101b to 103a; (3) "A goodly preacer" (fol. 104a to 105b), in 15 stanzas of 7 lines each, beginning—"blessed god: sovereange goodnes"—and ending—"sanctus, sanctus, sanctus, lord god withoute end." It is in the same handwriting throughout.

There are no paragraph-marks or breaks, but all the Latin words are written in red. It is an unpromising MS. to look at, but is considerably better than it appears to be, having been transcribed from a very fair and tolerably complete older copy. It follows our text pretty closely, its chief variations seeming generally to agree with the readings of MSS. Y and O. The "Table" is merely a sort of abstract, made to serve the purpose of a brief index, and is of no value. The "goodly preacer" is also a miserable production, scarcely permitting itself to be scanned.

XXII. MS. Dd. 1. 17, in the University Library, Cambridge, collated throughout, and represented in the footnotes by C. Of this vast folio MS., the leaves of which measure about 18 by 12 inches, I must say but little, for brevity's sake. A slight sketch of its contents may be found in Halliwell's *Manuscript Rarities of Cambridge*, p. 3; but it is described at large in vol. i. of the *Catalogue of the MSS.* It is known as the "*Liber Glastoniensis*," having once belonged to Glastonbury Abbey. It is chiefly written in double columns, and may be considered to consist of three parts, of which the first two are in Latin, the last chiefly in English. The first part contains the *Polyehronicon* (imperfect), the *Historia Britonum* of Geoffrey of Monmouth, the *Gesta Karoli*, the *Chronica Martini Poloni*, the *Hist. Trojana* of Guido de Colonna, the *Hist. Hierosol.* of Jac. de Vitriaco,

the *Consolatio Peccatorum* of Jac. de Theramo, and a few smaller pieces. The second part contains the *Testamenta xii. Patriarcharum*, Marianus Scotus, Marco Polo, Hayton, *Gesta Machometi*, Gildas de *Excidio* (which last was employed by Josseline for his edition of Gildas, published in 1568), and a few shorter pieces. The third part contains (1) *Piers the Plowman*; begins on fol. 1, and ends at fol. 31*a*, col. 1. (2) A prose treatise, headed "How men that ben in hele sholde visite sike folk;" begins at fol. 31*a*, col. 2, and ends at fol. 32*a*, col. 2; (3) *Mandeville's Travels*, fol. 32*b*, col. 1, to fol. 53*b*, col. 2; (4) "*Seuene Saggis*," fol. 54*a*, col. 1, to 63*a*, col. 3, written in treble columns; printed by Mr Wright from this MS. for the Percy Society, 1845; (5) in Latin, *Clementis Lantoniensis Ecclesie Presbiteri Concordia Quatuor Evangelistarum*," fol. 63*b* to the end; see Wright's *Bibliog. Britan. Anglo-Norman Period*, p. 265.

Each column contains about 60 lines, and the whole of *Piers the Plowman*, except 49 lines, is contained on 30 leaves; but when allowances are made for the space occupied by titles and Latin quotations, it is easily calculated that the poem is imperfect. This is, in fact, the best copy of the MSS. which, besides missing several single lines, unaccountably omit a passage near the beginning of the Sixteenth Passus, viz. ll. 56—91, an omission which produces complete nonsense. Other lines omitted are prol. 103, 196; I. 117; IV. 32, 54, 57, 189; V. 428, 520; VI. 3, 8, 84, 222, 223, 283, 303, 308—311, 315, &c. On the other hand, it furnishes a few additional lines, some of which, viz. V. 273, 338, 569, VI. 49, and XV. 224, I have admitted into the text, though few of them seem to be properly alliterated.<sup>1</sup> Yet in many places this MS. follows the text very closely, much more so than MS. W, and it was altogether necessary to collate it carefully throughout. The scribe seems to have taken pains never to let the line run beyond the breadth of the column, so that, if he had a long line to write, and could not get it all in, nor find room for it just above or below, he simply omitted the last word or a part of it! Thus in Pass. xx. 16, having *cheuisaunce* to write, he had only room for *che*, and so left it. There are several similar examples. One very striking point about the MS. is the dialect. Coming from Glaston-

<sup>1</sup> See footnote on p. xii. above.

bury, we should expect to find in it Southern forms, but we find numerous examples of a much more northern-looking character than are exhibited by any other MS. Examples are, *brade*, broad, *mare*, more, *capas*, copes, *fram*, from, *hilk* or *elke*, each, *hauntys* in the indie. plural, *hase* in the indie. plural, *arises* and *kisses* in the imper. plural, &c. On this account, I have frequently given the readings from C when the only variation is in the inflexion or spelling. Almost all through the poem it wrongly has *and* instead of *ae*, so that it seemed at last unnecessary to record it, though I have done so in a very great number of instances. I believe that the form *ae* occurs only about twice or three times throughout, as, e. g. in xx. 35. An instance of singular spelling is the scribe's use of *th* for *t*, as in the "Romans of Partenay;" so that we meet with *thecheth* for *techeth*, *thour* for *tour* (tower), *thel* for *tel*, *with* for *wit*, and the like. Notwithstanding all its defects, corruptions, and peculiarities, it is a MS. of early date and considerable importance; a fact which should be borne in mind.

XXIII. MS. Bodley 814, Oxford; represented in the footnotes by the letter B. This is the most disappointing MS. of the whole series. To all appearances, it is of an early date, and neatly written, though without breaks at the end of each paragraph. It might well be expected to rank as third or fourth best, but its real value is but small. It is on vellum, closely resembling the Laud MS. in size and shape, being  $10\frac{1}{4}$  by 7 inches; it has 94 leaves, of which the last two are blank, the poem ending on fol. 92*a*. Each page contains 40 lines. Former owner's name, "Thomas Hobsone." The point about it most worthy of remark is that it does not wholly follow the B-type. It presents a combination of texts, the point of junction being somewhere about l. 121 of Pass. ii. Before that point, it closely resembles Whitaker's (C-text) edition, but afterwards approaches the B-text, with which, soon after the beginning of Pass. iii., it agrees very closely down to the end of the poem. The exact nature of its variations is clearly shewn in the Critical Note to P. ii. 121, and the notes immediately following it. Whence this form of the poem arose it is not easy to tell. As MS. R represents the B-text, with amendments in the *latter* part of the poem, it may be that MS. B represents the

same, with amendments near the *beginning*. But this is not very likely, and when we further observe that this MS., during the latter part of Pass. II., actually approaches the A-text, we may feel tolerably sure that it is, in fact, a corrupt version, the misarrangements of which are due to the scribe only, who pieced together the Prologue and three first Passus as well as he could, and then followed a B-text copy throughout the rest of the poem. This is rendered more probable when we further observe the extreme corruptness of many of the readings which it furnishes, such as *sobrid* for *herberwed* (V. 233), *amendement* for *a mendynaunt* (XIII. 3), *clerkis* for *cherles* (XVI. 121), *he* for *his manye* (XVIII. 81), *a pilgrym* for *apierynge* (XIX. 88), and the like; many of these variations being of a most senseless character. Besides this it omits many necessary lines, such as III. 18, 307, 308, 345; IV. 32, 54, 57; V. 150, 223, 428, 473, &c.; some of which, but not all, are also omitted in MS. C. In many respects it follows MSS. C and O, so that the collocation of letters C O B often occurs, but it is invariably the worst of the three. Still I have carefully collated it throughout, not because it is of much value, but because there are two other MSS. (Addit. 10574 and Calig. A. xi, to be described presently) which so closely resemble it, that to collate one of these is practically the same as collating all three; and to collate *three* MSS. at a time is a thing worth doing. At the same time, I have considered myself at liberty *not* to give a few of the most ridiculous and unmeaning variations. Moreover, the collation is of some use from another point of view; it shews how corruptions arise, and where to expect them, and even helps to establish the correctness of the text by mere force of contrast. I may add that it commonly has the endings *-id*, *-is*, and *-iþ*, instead of *-ed*, *-es*, and *-eþ*.

XXIV. MS. Additional 10574, in the British Museum; formerly No. CII. in the collection of Dr Adam Clarke. It is on vellum, neatly and closely written, and apparently of early date, and contains 91 leaves, being imperfect at the end. It terminates at Pass. xx. 352, but the 32 missing lines are supplied in Dr Clarke's handwriting. The state of the text and the spelling of the words agree so minutely with those of MS. B, that one is the mere duplicate of the other; and,

as far as I can judge, they are *in the same handwriting*, and written in the same year. Of course it therefore resembles the C-text at first, and approaches the B-text at Pass. iii. 121; see the Critical Note to that line for further information. See also p. 60 of the Catalogue of Dr Clarke's MSS., by J. B. B. Clarke; 1835. At the end is the note—"brought from kelsey [Lincolnshire] xxvj<sup>o</sup> octobris anno xxxiiij<sup>o</sup> He. viij<sup>mi</sup> [1542] per me Ion Thynne." This is in the same hand as the signature "Ion Thynne" in the Laud MS.

XXV. MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi. (B. M.). This closely resembles the two last, being probably a copy of one or other of them. It is of later date than those, on vellum; size, about  $8\frac{3}{4}$  by 6 inches. It contains (1) an imperfect copy of Robert of Gloucester's rimed Chronicle; (2) Piers the Plowman, beginning at fol. 170, and ending at fol. 284; and (3) De Vita Monachorum per sanctum Aldelhumum .anno 709; foll. 287, 288; also some Latin verses on fol. 169*b*, &c. Three leaves (foll. 274—276) are blank, giving the impression that something is lost, but the last line on fol. 273*b* is Pass. xix. 272, and the first line on fol. 277 is Pass. xix. 273. For further information, see the description of the two last MSS., and the Critical Note to Pass. iii. 121.

XXVI. MS. No. 201 in Corpus Christi College, Oxford; given to the college by W. Fulman, M.A., formerly a fellow of this college. On vellum, measuring about 12 inches by 7, and containing 93 leaves, with about 42 lines on each page. Writing rather loose and hurried. All the Latin quotations in red. Each paragraph has prefixed to it the mark ¶, painted red. This MS. is of the B-type, but frequently, as it appears to me, corrupt. It contains several lines not in other copies, but their genuineness is doubtful. The most curious point about it is the method of division into Passus, which resembles that of *no* other MS. of any class whatever. It would seem as if the scribe had endeavoured to divide it into Passus how he could, without any guide, and had added a few lines by way of conclusion and introduction to each, for it is just at the points of division that the readings seem to be the wildest. The account of its divisions will therefore give the best idea of its peculiarities.

- PASSUS I. *begins*—<sup>1</sup>In somer sesoun · whan softe was the sunne ;  
*ends*—Or Rochel or Romeneȝ · þe roost to diffyȝe.  
*Explicit passus Primus Petri Plouhman. Incipit Passus Secundus.*
- II. *begins*—What þis Mownteyn menep · & þe derke<sup>2</sup> dale [i. 1] ;  
*ends*—I may no lenger lenge þe with · oure lord looke þe euere [i. 207].  
*Explicit Passus Secundus de visione Petri Plouhman. Incipit Passus Tercius.*
- III. *begins*—I Covrbet ȝyt on my knees · & gradde hire of grace [ii. 1] ;  
*ends*—& also wepte & weylede · for she was a-tachid [ii. 236].  
*Explicit Passus Tercius. Incipit Passus Quartus.*
- IV. *begins*—Now is Meede þe Mayd · & no mo of alle [iii. 1] ;  
*ends*—To heryn Matyns of þe day · & a Messe after [v. 2].  
*Explicit Passus Quartus. Incipit Passus Quintus.*
- V. *begins*—Off wynkyng y waked þo · & wo was y with alle [v. 3] ;  
*ends*—At þe daye of dome · we dide þat we hym hyȝhte [vii. 200].  
*Explicit Passus Quintus. Incipit Passus Sextus.*
- VI. *begins*—And wanne y awaked was · y wondred werȝ y were,  
 Tyl þat y be-þowhte me · what þyng y dremede,  
 & y-Robet<sup>3</sup> in russet · gan rome a-bowhte [viii. 1] ;  
*ends*—& dryveþ away dowel · oonly þoru dedly synne [ix. 206].  
*Explicit Passus Sextus. Incipit Passus Septimus.*
- VII. *begins*—Sire wit hadde a wif · was klepid dame stodye [x. 1] ;  
*ends*—þanne scripture skornede me · & a skele me tolde,  
 For me lakkede latyn · lyght by me he sette,  
 & seyde, *multi multa sciunt, & se ipsos nesciunt.*  
 þo for sorwe y wepte · & was wrothȝ of hire speche,  
 & of myn wynkyng y a-wook · & wondrede þanne  
 Of alle þe dremes þat y drempte · so daungerous þei were,  
 & turned me on þe oþer syde · for to take myn ease [xi. 1—3] ;<sup>4</sup>  
*Explicit Passus Septimus de Douel. Incipit Passus Octauus.*

<sup>1</sup> By a mistake, the initial letter is a capital *A*, inside which is a rude drawing of the poet, dozing and dreaming in an uncomfortable sitting attitude.

<sup>2</sup> Over an erasure. It probably had *merke* originally.

<sup>3</sup> The MS. has "Robt," with a stroke through the *b*. Perhaps it means "& y, Robert, in russet," &c. If so, it may be from this misreading that the fiction arose which gave to the author the name of *Robert*.

<sup>4</sup> I consider the last three lines to be spurious.

VIII. *begins*—And as y lay & lookede · vpon þe launde grene,  
 I þouhte on þe Metelis · hou merveylous þei were,  
 Tyl sodynly hevynesse · on slepe brouht me þanne.  
 Anon a merveylous metelys · me tydde to dreme ;  
 For y was ravissid · & Fortune me fette, & in-to þe lond of  
 longynge, &c. [xi. 4—7] ;  
*ends*—þe wiche y preyse þere pacyence is · more perfyzt þan is  
 rycchesse [xi. 310].

& þus y fel in þowhtis feele · flappyng in myn herte,  
 þat alle myn spiritys weryn sore stoned · & þerwith y wakned,  
 & as manye & feele þowhtis · felle flappyng in myn herte,  
 Alle myn spiritys weryn stoned · & þerwith y a-waked,<sup>1</sup>  
 & ful sore syzhede · þe syghte was so merveylous,  
 & streyhte me & turned me · & to my-selue y seid,  
 þis ys a myghil merveyle · what menyng it menep,  
 & in þis þowht stille y lay · a long tyme after.

*Explicit Passus Octauus. Incipit Passus Nonus.*

IX. *begins*—As y lay & lokede forþ · lowe vpon þe greene,  
 I fel in a slumbryng · & sone to me cam keende,  
 & nempnyd me by my name · & bad me nemyn hede,  
 Of þe worchyng of þis world · wit for to take,  
 & on hey3 Mounteyn · þat Mydlerd hette [xi. 312—315] ;  
*ends*—& myche merthe & manhed · & with þat word he vanshede  
 [xii. 293].

*Explicit Passus Nonus. Incipit Passus Decimus.*

X. *begins*—Awake y gan þerwith · witles neer-honde [xiii. 1] ;  
*ends*—& wepte & wey3lede · & þerwith y awakede [xiv. 332].

*Explicit Passus X<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XI<sup>us</sup>.*

XI. *begins*—After my wakyng · it was longe after [xv. 1] ;  
*ends*—*vitam eternam. amen.* [xv. 601].

*Explicit Passus XI<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XII<sup>us</sup>.*

XII. *begins*—AGeyn y gan to sleepe softe · & my sy3de y gan to turne,  
 & a-noon y sey3, as y sey3 erst · & spak to hym with mowþe,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> These lines are thus repeated. I do not admire the “flappyng in myn herte.” It is surely spurious.

<sup>2</sup> Again two spurious lines.

Now, fayre falle 3ow, quod y þo · for 3oure fayre schewynge [xvi. 1];  
*ends*—þan y waknede þerwith · & wipyd boþe myn ey3es [xvi. 167],  
 & for y hadde so soore y-slept · sory was y þanne,  
 & on þe dremynge y drempte · euery doynge y þowhte.

*Explicit Passus XII<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XIII<sup>us</sup>.*

XIII. *begins*—And whan y hadde longe leyn · y lawhte to me herte,  
 & after Pers plowhman · y pry3ede & starede [xvi. 168];  
*ends*—& wente away as þe wynd · & þerwith y waknede [xvii. 350].

*Explicit Passus XIII<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XIII<sup>us</sup>.*

XIV. *begins*—An wellowerd [*sic*] & wetschod · y wente forþ þanne  
 [xviii. 1];

*ends*—þat þere ne may no grisly goost · glyde þere it schadwep  
 [xviii. 431].

*Explicit Passus XIII<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XV<sup>us</sup>.*

XV. *begins*—Anon y wakned & þan y wroot · what þat y dremede [xix. 1];  
*ends*—& y wroot as y mette [xix. 478].

*Explicit Passus XV<sup>us</sup>. Incipit Passus XVI<sup>us</sup>.*

XVI. *begins*—And wan y was wakned · y wente forþ aloone,  
 Sy3ghenge & evycheryd [*sic*] · & elenge in herte [xx. 1, 2];  
*ends*—So sore he gradde after grace · þat [I]<sup>1</sup> began a-wake.

*Explicit.*

In the date-passage (xiii. 270) it has—

“A thowsand & þre hundred 3eere · & two & xx<sup>ty</sup> & ten”—

which is utterly wrong. It is evidently an inferior MS.; yet it may be worth consulting in a case of difficulty. Thus in xiv. 188 it reads—“& if þe *powke* plede,” &c.—which is unquestionably right.

XXVII. MS. No. 201 in the library of Caius College, Cambridge. This is a mere transcript, and not altogether an accurate one, of Rogers's printed edition of 1561. At the end is a copy of the stanza which is found prefixed to the early editions of the “Crede,” and several blank leaves are left, evidently for the purpose of transcribing the “Crede” also. It is obviously of no value.

*Comparison of the MSS., and their sub-classes.* I would here add, by way of recapitulation and a more complete exhibition of the rela-

<sup>1</sup> The MS. has had *he*, but it has been erased.

tion of the MSS. to each other, that they are divisible into *sub-classes*, each of which possesses certain characteristics. The agreement of those in the same sub-class is very close.

- (a) 1. Laud Misc. 581 (L). Here printed.  
 2. Rawl. Poet. 38 (R); has later additions.
- (b) 1. Mr Yates Thompson's MS. (Y). A fair text.  
 2. Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 1. 17 (C). Imperfect, having lost a passage in Passus xvi.  
 3. Bodley 814 (B). Similarly imperfect, and frequently corrupted.  
 4. Addit. 10574. Almost a duplicate of the last.  
 5. Cotton Calig. A. xi. Practically a later copy of B.
- (c) 1. Oriel 79 (O). A fair copy, but has lost four leaves.  
 2. Camb. Univ. Lib. Ll. 4. 14 (C2). Practically a later copy of O, but contains the whole text.
- (d) 1. Trin. Coll. Camb. B. 15. 17 (W). Printed by Mr Wright.  
 2. The MS. printed by Crowley.

To the remaining MSS. I cannot certainly assign the right sub-class.

Hence it appears that Mr Wright's text is, as regards its sub-class, more remotely distant from our text than any other; that is, its differences of reading are *wider* differences. Nevertheless, by reason of its exhibiting a *very pure* text, it frequently comes *very near* to our text, and is *apparently* closer to it than many others in many passages. If the reader will reflect upon it, he may see that a first-rate MS. of the fourth sub-class may be greatly preferable to inferior MSS. of higher sub-classes. Such is certainly the fact in this instance.

#### § 6. DESCRIPTION OF THE PRINTED EDITIONS (B-TEXT).

Of the earliest printed editions by Robert Crowley, there are certainly three different impressions, all printed in one year, viz. in 1550.

(a) The first impression has on the title-page—"THE VISION OF Pierce Plowman, now fyrste imprinted by Roberte Crowley, dwelling in Ely rentes in Holburne. Anno Domini. 1505.<sup>1</sup> Cum priuilegio

<sup>1</sup> An evident mistake for 1550. Neither Lowndes nor Hazlitt seem to have observed this singular misprint; but see Ames, *Typogr. Antiq.* ii. 758.

ad imprimendum solum." It contains 117 leaves, not including the title or the leaf on which is the printer's address to the reader, or 119 leaves in all. The signature of Fol. cxvii. is Gg 1. Copies are rather scarce; there are, however, two in the British Museum, of which the one, on paper, was once the property of Thomas Tyrwhitt, and the other, on vellum, is in the Grenville collection. The most interesting part of it is Crowley's address, which is worth reprinting here. It is as follows.

"The Printer to the Reader.

**B**Eynge desyerous to knowe the name of the Autoure of this most worthy worke (gentle reader) and the tyme of the writynge of the same: I did not onely gather togyther suche aunciente copies as I could come by, but also consult such mē as I knew to be more exercised in the studie of antiquities, then I my selfe haue ben. And by some of them I haue learned that the Autour was named Roberte langelande, a Shropshire man borne in Cleybirie, aboute viii. myles from Maluerne hilles.<sup>1</sup>

For the time when it was written: it chanced me to se an auncient copye, in the later ende wherof was noted, that the same copye was written in the yere of oure Lorde .M.iiii.C. and nyne,<sup>2</sup> which was before thys presente yere, an hundred & xli. yeres. And in the seconde side of the .lxviii. leafe of thys printed copye, I finde mētion of a dere yere, that was in the yere of oure Lorde, M.iii. hundred and .L.<sup>3</sup> Iohn Chichester than beyng mayre of London. So that this I may be bold to reporte, that it was fyrste made and wrytten after the yeare of our lord .M.iii.C.L. and before the yere .M,iiiiC, and .ix which meane spase was .lix yeres. We may iustly cōiect therefore y<sup>t</sup> it was firste written about two hundred yeres paste, in the tyme of Kynge Edwarde the thyrde. In

<sup>1</sup> Without doubt, Crowley's authority was John Bale. I consider the distance from Cleobury Mortimer to the Malvern Hills to be rather a long "eight miles."

<sup>2</sup> An important statement, and a very probable one. MS. Dou. c 104 (C-type) is dated in the sixth year of Henry VI., i. e. 1427 or 1428.

<sup>3</sup> Crowley's MS. was wrong, as has been explained; Chichester was mayor in 1370.

whose tyme it pleased God to open the eyes of many to se hys truth, geuing them boldenes of herte, to open their mouthes and crye oute agaynste the worekes of darckenes, as did Iohn wicklefe, who also in those dayes translated the holye Bible into the Englishe tonge, and this writer who in reportynge certaine visions and dreames, that he fayned him selfe to haue dreamed: doeth moste christianlye instruct the weake, and sharply rebuke the obstinate blynde. There is no maner of vice, that reigneth in anye estate of men, whiche this wryter hath not godly, learnedlye, and wittilye, rebuked. He wrote altogither in miter: but not after y<sup>e</sup> maner of our rimers that write nowe adayes (for his verses ende not alike) but the nature of hys miter is, to haue thre wordes at the leaste in euery verse whiche beginne with some one letter. As for ensample, the firste two verses of the boke renne vpon .s. as thus.

In a somer season whan sette<sup>1</sup> was the Sunne,  
I shope me into shrobbes, as I a shepe were.

The next runneth vpon .H. as thus.

In habite as an Hermite vnholoy of werkes. &c.

This thinge noted, the miter shal be very pleasaunt to read. The Englishe is according to the time it was written in, and the sence somewhat dareke, but not so harde, but that it may be vnderstande of suche as will not sticke to breake the shell of the nutte for the kernelles sake.

As for that is written in the .xxxvi. leafe of thys boke concernynge a dearth thē to come: is spokē by the knoweledge of astronomie as may wel be gathered bi that he saith, Saturne sente him to tell<sup>2</sup> And that whiche foloweth and geueth it the face of a prophye: is lyke to be a thinge added of some other man than the fyrste autour. For dinerse copies haue it diuerslye. For where the copie that I folowe hath thus.

<sup>1</sup> A conuincing proof to me that Crowley's MS. had *softe*, which he misread. The old form of the past participle was *set*, not *sette*.

<sup>2</sup> See Pass. vi. 327—329.

And when you<sup>1</sup> se the sunne anisse, & two<sup>2</sup> monkes heades  
 And a mayde haue the maistrye, and multiplie by eyght.<sup>3</sup>  
 Some other haue

Three shyppes and a shefe, wyth an eight folowyng  
 Shall bryng bale and battell, on both halfe the mone.<sup>4</sup>

Nowe for that whiche is written in the .i. leafe, cōcerning the suppression of Abbaies: the scripture there alledged, declareth it to be gathered of the iuste iudgment of god, whoe wyll not suffer abomination to raigne vnpunished.<sup>5</sup>

Loke not vpon this boke therefore, to talke of wonders paste or to come, but to amende thyne owne misse, which thou shalt fynd here moste charitably rebuked. The spirite of god gyue  
 the grace to walke in the waye of truthe,  
 to Gods glory, & thyne owne  
 soules heathe.  
 So be it."

The first impression has a few marginal notes, but these are far less numerous than in the later impressions.

(b) The second and third impressions are both said to be "nowe the seconde time imprinted," so that it is not easy to say which was printed first, nor can we be always sure that the copies are always bound up rightly. Indeed, it is clear that quires of one impression are sometimes supplemented by quires from the other. But it is certain that the true *second* impression is that which resembles the first most nearly, and the right title-page runs as follows. "The vision of Pierce Plowman, nowe the seconde time imprinted by Roberte Crowley dwellynge in Elye rentes in Holburne. Whereunto are added certayne notes and cotations in the mergyne, geuyng light to the Reader.

<sup>1</sup> Of course his MS. had *ye* in the *nominative*; accordingly, in the text itself, he printed *ye*.

<sup>2</sup> The second impression reads *thre* here, but both impressions read *two* in the passage as it stands in his text.

<sup>3</sup> In the text itself, the first impression has *eight*, but later impressions have *hight*.

<sup>4</sup> A clear proof that Crowley also had access to a MS. of the C-type; see Whitaker's edition, p. 146. It is odd that he noticed only this one variation.

<sup>5</sup> Pass. x. 317—327.

And in the begynning is set a briefe summe of all the principall matters spoken of in the boke. And as the boke is deuided into twenty partes called Passus: so is the Summary diuided, for euery parte hys summarie, rehearsynge the matters spoken of in euery parte, euen in suche order as they stande there. Imprinted at London by Roberte Crowley, dwellyng in Elye rentes in Holburne. The yere of our Lord .M.D.L. Cum priuilegio ad imprimendum solum." And on the last page, we find in the third line (Pass. xx. 381) the words *Fryers* and *finding*, as in the first impression, and the colophon begins with "Imprinted." There is a copy of this description in the British Museum, marked 1077 g 2, and another is in Heber's Catalogue; Part IX. no. 1717.

(c) In that which is really a *third* impression, the title-page is almost exactly the same, but the name of the printer is spelt "Crowlye" where it first occurs. On the last page, we find *Friers* and *findinge* instead of *Fryers* and *finding*, and the colophon begins with "Imprynted," spelt with *y*. There is a copy of this description in the British Museum, marked 11623 c, and another in the library of King's College, Cambridge;<sup>1</sup> see also Heber's Catalogue; Part IX. no. 1716.

But all three impressions are much alike. The chief differences are, that the two later impressions have many more marginal notes, a few additional lines,<sup>2</sup> and also 6 extra leaves between the printer's preface and the poem itself, containing a brief argument or abstract of the prologue and of each of the Passus.<sup>3</sup> The first impression is the most correct; also the third impression is much less correct than the second, and considerably inferior to it.

(d) The next edition was by Owen Rogers, in 1561. The title is—"The Vision of Pierce Plowman, newlye imprynted after the

<sup>1</sup> I have a copy of my own, which differs from the Museum copy in the title-page, and throughout quire D. I take my copy to have a wrong title-page, but in quire D it is the B. M. copy that is at fault.

<sup>2</sup> Some are from an A-text (see Critical Note to prol. 215), and some from a B-text of subclass *b* (see Critical Note to v. 273). By observing these, and note 4 on the last page, we see that Crowley had access to *four MSS. at least*.

<sup>3</sup> The only thing that calls for remark here is that Crowley, in making an abstract of Pass. viii., identifies "Pierce" with the dreamer, a blunder which has lasted ever since, and may last a long while yet.

authours olde copy, with a brefe summary of the principall matters set before every part called Passus. Wherevnto is also annexed the Crede of Pierce Plowman, neuer imprinted with the booke before.<sup>1</sup>

¶ Imprynted at London, by Owen Rogers, dwellyng neare vnto great Saint Bartelmewes Gate, at the sygne of the spred Egle.

¶ The yere of our Lorde God, a thousand, fyue hundred, thre score and one. The .xxi. daye of the Moneth of Februarye. Cum priuilegio ad imprimendum solum." This is a careless reprint of Crowley's *third* issue, and is almost worthless. It omits some lines, as e. g. Pass. i. 39, which Crowley retains. The "Crede," though mentioned in the title-page, is not always found in the volume.

(e) "The vision and the creed of Piers Ploughman; newly imprinted." Edited by Thomas Wright, M.A., F.S.A., &c. In two volumes. London: William Pickering. 12mo; 1842.

(f) The same; second and revised edition. London: J. R. Smith. 12mo; 1856.<sup>2</sup>

Tyrwhitt has expressed an opinion (note 57 to Essay on the Language of Chaucer) that Crowley's edition was "printed from so faulty and imperfect a MS. that the author, whoever he was, would find it difficult to recognize his own work." On the other hand, Mr Wright observes (Introd. to P. Pl. 2nd ed. p. xxxvi) that "it is clear that Crowley had obtained an excellent manuscript." Yet the two statements are easily reconciled, for the "faultiness and imperfection" which Tyrwhitt justly attributes to Crowley's edition are clearly the result of his inability, in numerous instances, to read the text correctly. After collating Crowley's edition throughout (many of the results of which collation will be found in the Critical Notes), it becomes manifest that the frequent blunders are Crowley's own, and his MS. must have been extremely good, even better at times, I venture to think, than the one which Mr Wright has printed. For instance, it preserved Prol. 170, II. 186, V. 90, XVIII. 361, XIX. 86, and XX. 299, which MS. W. omits, although it had, in common

<sup>1</sup> It had been imprinted by Wolfe in 1553, but not "with the booke."

<sup>2</sup> It may seem superfluous to say anything here concerning Mr Wright's well-known and excellent edition; but it would hardly be just not to confess my *very great* obligations to it. Without its help my work would, at the least, have been doubled.

with that MS., lost I. 145, XII. 105, and XV. 367. It is therefore to be regretted that Crowley's MS. has not yet been found. In one passage (V. 116) it has a most singular addition.

“ Saint Gregory was a good pope, & had a good forwyte  
That no priores were priest, for y<sup>t</sup> he provided<sup>1</sup>  
Lest happeli they had had no grace, to hold harlatry in,  
For they are ticle of her tonges, & muste al secretes tel.”

The two last lines are in no other copy, yet I do not think Crowley invented them, as there is no other instance, at least, of his having added to his text.<sup>2</sup> By this extra line, and by the list of lines above which it has preserved and lost, it may easily be identified, if found.<sup>3</sup>

Having had occasion to read Mr Wright's *second* edition many times over, at the same time that I have been consulting the MS. which he used, I have observed a few trivial misprints, and I here give a list of them, rather for the sake of completeness than because they are of any importance. I refer to the *lines*, as numbered in his editions, and mark with an asterisk those lines which are *correctly* printed in his *first* edition.

935\*. Read *fructum*. 1341. For *pennes* read *theunes* (*pennes* in MS.). 1465. Insert *a* after *is*. 1957. Read *sergeant*. 2045. For *Leve* read *I leve*. 2257. For *nowe* read *mowe*. 2418. For *at* read *al*. 2505. For *the* read *ye*. 2701\*. Read *herof*. 2865. Read *al to-torn*, 3233. Read *And*. 3383. Read *no gilt*. 3387. Read *avow* (MS. *uow*). 3522. After *tuam* add *deus*. 3555\*. Read *Synay*. 3559. For *and* read *in*. 3619. For *helpe* read *helthe* (MS. *helpe*). 3807. After *in* insert *a*. 3949. Read *Quia*. 4008. For *his* read *this* (MS. *pis*). 4242. Read *portate*. 4272. Read *pro*. 4465\*. For *her* read *her-of*. 5064. Read *is not dronkelewe*. 5108\*. For *the* read *be*. 5158\*. Read *is it*. 5384\*. Read *minuentur*. 5553. For *or* read *on*. 5684\*. Read *for*. 6168. Read *To salve* (MS. *to salue*). 6186. Read *mansede*

<sup>1</sup> This word *provided* is perhaps a better reading than is furnished by any other copy. It keeps up the alliteration, and strikes one as being right.

<sup>2</sup> In three instances only, he falsifies his text of set purpose; see Critical Notes to vii. 196, xii. 87, and xiii. 159.

<sup>3</sup> Crowley has also two lines in Passus iii., viz. after l. 30 and l. 161 respectively (given in the Critical Notes), which appear nowhere else.

(as directed in Mr Wright's note). 6188. After *That* insert *al.* 6234. Read *Be hemself.* 6378. Read *gaf.* 6561. For *And* read *But.* 6654. For *and* read *quod.* 6667. For *Ne* read *No* (MS. *no*). 6781. Read *The defaute* (MS. *pe defaute*). 7134\*. For *ne* read *no.* 7141. Read *discerne.* 7292. For *and* read *I.* 7625. Read *Nolite judicare, et non.* 8103\*. Read *Edentes.* After l. 8127 (ending *penitentiam*) insert—And siththe he broughte us drynke *Dia perseverans.* [See note to XIII. 49.] 8776\*. For *Of* read *Or* (MS. *or*). 8801\*. For *Nor* read *For* (MS. *for*). 8915. Read *God or.* 8936. After *wasshen* insert *it.* 9192\*. For *many* read *may.* 9207. Read *De deliciis.* 9566. Omit *no* after *do.* 10233\*. Read *Founde.* 10265\*. For *Fo* read *To* (MS. *to*). 10515. For *now* read *mov.* 11451\*. Omit the third *to.* 12854\*. Omit *the.* 13082. For *so* read *se.* 13946\*. Read *And nede ne.* 13966. Read *So Nede at.* 14311\*. For *hande* read *hadde.*

In most of the Latin quotations, Mr Wright has purposely made the spelling conform with the usual mode, printing *sed* for *set*, *comodat* for *comodat*, *scintilla* for *sintilla*, and the like. There are also a few places where a question of editing arises. Thus, I should be inclined to read *bonched*, not *bouched* (147), *y-houtel*, not *y-honted* (1318), *wjuen*, not *wynen* (2530), *solue*, not *solne* (3319), *lenen*, not *leven* (3826), *lene*, not *leve* (4240), *meue*, not *mene* (5836), *meustow*, not *menestow* (6149), *engreynen*, not *engreyven* (8941). The MS. can, of course, be read either way. It is the old difficulty of having to decide between *n* and *u*.

It is sometimes a little difficult to find one's place in Mr Wright's book. The following table may be of service in this respect.

Pass.	I. p.	15	Pass.	VIII. p.	151	Pass.	XV. p.	294
„	II. „	28	„	IX. „	159	„	XVI. „	330
„	III. „	43	„	X. „	173	„	XVII. „	348
„	IV. „	65	„	XI. „	202	„	XVIII. „	369
„	V. „	77	„	XII. „	228	„	XIX. „	396
„	VI. „	117	„	XIII. „	246	„	XX. „	425
„	VII. „	138	„	XIV. „	273			

If sixteen lines be allowed to every page, this will generally give the place very nearly. Thus, to find Pass. XV. 400: Divide 400 by 16,

and the result is 25; add 25 to 294 (on which page Pass. XV. begins) and we have 319 as the page on which XV. 400 occurs, which is quite right. Another method is to keep an eye on the *nearest Latin quotation*, which being in italics, is easily noticed.

#### § 7. CHARACTER OF THE B-TEXT.

The remarks I have now to make have reference only to the *form*, not the *matter*, of the text printed in this volume. The A-text (vol. i.) shewed the poem as originally sketched, and the MSS. of it were found to be in most cases imperfect either at the beginning or end, and there were a considerable number of various readings. But the B-text, though nearly three times the length, is frequently found in a perfect state, and the numerous MSS. of it agree together in a way which is sometimes astonishing. It is not uncommon to find five consecutive lines alike in all the MSS. as far as arrangement of the words is concerned, and this likeness sometimes prevails even to minute correspondences of inflections and spelling. Hence there is a certainty, a firmness, and a conclusiveness about the text which is very satisfactory. There are probably more doubtful points in a single Canterbury Tale or in a single Act in some of Shakespeare's plays than in the whole of the B-text of Piers the Plowman. The alliterative form of it has conduced to this; for, on the one hand, the alliteration greatly assists the memory, so that I find, for instance, that it is easy to retain thousands of lines of it by heart, and, on the other hand, there has been no temptation to scribes to "improve" it by the addition or subtraction of syllables, because a syllable more or less makes no such difference as it does in Chaucer. I wish especially to draw the reader's attention to this, that he may remember, once for all, that any "conjectural emendations" are, in general, entirely out of the question. Wherever the reading has been doubtful, I have consulted either the A-text, or the C-text, or else more MSS. of the B-type, so that the resulting text has almost always plenty to support it. A glance at the footnotes will shew that, though more MSS. have been collated than were collated for the A-text, the footnotes occupy less space, and that I have frequently found room for giving variations of a somewhat minute

character, such as the spellings of uncommon words, or examples of dialectal forms. I shall only add here that, regarding each of the three forms of the poem in its integrity, the B-text is the best of the three.

§ 8. ALLUSIONS IN THE B-TEXT.

Without giving a full account of all the very numerous allusions to places and events in the B-text, I collect here a few of the most useful ones.

*Allusions to himself.* The author says he was nicknamed "Long Wille," XV. 148. Allusions to his name "Wille," V. 62, VIII. 124. His wife Kitte and daughter Kalote, XVIII. 426. He is forty-five years old, XI. 46 [observe *jifte = fifth*], XII. 3. His character and bearing, XV. 1—10. He thinks little of those who know only Latin and English, and not French, XV. 369. His knowledge of how to draw up a legal document, XI. 296—299.

*Allusions to places.* Malvern hills, pr. 5, 214; VII. 141. Norfolk, V. 239; Walsingham, pr. 54, V. 230; Bromholm, V. 231. Winchester fair, V. 205; pass of Alton, XIV. 300. Hertfordshire, V. 362; Buckinghamshire, II. 109; Rutlandshire, II. 110. Canterbury, XV. 437; St Thomas's shrine, V. 566; XV. 551. Abingdon, X. 326. Dunmow, IX. 168. Chester, V. 402, 467. London, pr. 85, 91; V. 129, XIII. 264, &c.; Stratford, XIII. 267; Cock Lane, Smithfield, V. 319; Cheapside, V. 322; Garlickhithe, V. 324; Tyburn, XII. 190; Southwark and Shoreditch, XIII. 340; Westminster, II. 160, III. 12, XX. 285, &c.; Westminster Hall, XX. 132; Court of Arches, II. 60, XX. 135; river Thames, XII. 161, XV. 332. *Places abroad.* Normandy, III. 188; Calais, III. 195; Avignon, XIX. 420; Roquemadour, XII. 37; Lucca, VI. 102; also Rome, Gallicia, Bruges, Prussia, Babylon, Alexandria, &c.

*Allusions to circumstances.* Deposition of Edward II., III. 126. Coinage of nobles, III. 45. Battle of Crécy, XII. 107. Treaty of Brétigny, III. 188. Second great pestilence (1361 and 1362), V. 13. Storm of wind, V. 14. Chichester mayor of London in April, 1370, XIII. 271. Fourth pestilence (1375 and 1376), XIII. 248. Jubilee in the last year of Edward's reign, III. 297. Accession of Richard II., IV. 177. Wycliffe's translation of the Bible, VIII. 90.

These are the references most often wanted. A complete table will be given in the fourth volume. The numerous allusions to London should be noticed.

§ 9. DIALECT OF THE B-TEXT.

From a careful comparison of the various MSS. of the poem, I arrive at the conclusion that the text here printed represents the probable dialect of the author with great fidelity, as, indeed, might be expected when we remember that it is probably an autograph copy. I have been told that the spelling and grammar of my text are faulty, and that the Vernon MS. (or A-text), printed in vol. i., is far better. To this I can only reply that, as a matter of fact, the Vernon MS. seems to be, as far as the spelling and grammar are concerned, an "improved" text, and very unlike the majority of the rest. Indeed, I know of none that agree with it. It is a very great mistake to suppose that the MS. which exhibits the best grammatical forms, is therefore the best MS. It is obvious that, if the author had small regard for grammar, then the MS. which is very correct in that respect, does in effect, in that same respect, represent him least. The Vernon MS. was chosen for the A-text because it seemed, upon the whole, to give the best sense, and satisfactory MSS. of the A-text are somewhat scarce. The Laud MS. has been chosen for the B-text because it is, also as regards the sense, by far the best. It has been suggested to me that the MS. printed by Mr Wright is more correct from a grammatical point of view. I have examined this point, and hardly find it to be true. The truth that results from the comparison is a very curious and significant one. It is, namely, that the coincidences between the Laud MS. and the Trinity MS. are frequently startling. They agree in many instances with a most singular minuteness. And when it is remembered that the two MSS. are quite independent of each other (except in so far as they are due to the same author), and belong to different sub-classes, I think their frequent resemblances corroborate and confirm the general genuineness of both in a very remarkable way. It is none of our business how Langland *ought* to have written; we merely have to ascertain how he probably *did* write; and for this reason I think it a great gain to have the

Laud MS. in print, exactly as it stands, without any improvements or alterations except such as can be fairly justified by other MSS. and by other passages in the MS. itself.

Thus, I read in Mr Morris's Specimens of Early English, that the third person singular of a weak verb such as *to loven*, ends in *-ede*, as *lovede*, and that the third person plural ends in *-eden*, as *loveden*. Now such is decidedly not the general practice of the (B-text) MSS. of "Piers the Plowman," the Oriel MS. being the sole and striking exception. And to illustrate this, I give instances in which *Mr Wright's text and my own agree*, in order that there may be no need to raise the question as to which is the better. We find that the third person singular generally ends in *-ed*, and the third person plural quite as often in *-ed* as in *-eden*. The following examples are from the Prologue. *Loked*, 9, *slombred*, 10, *sweyed*, 10, *preched*, 68, *bonched*, 74, *blered*, 74, *parecyued*, 100, *lowed*, 129, *grewed*, 139, *possed*, 151, *reherced*, 184, *costed*, 203. Plurals in *-ed*; *apparaided*, 23, *glosed*, 60, *construed*, 61, *lenced*, 72, *pleyned*, 83, *presumed*, 108, *contreued*, 118, *ordeygned*, 119, *assented*, 175, *honed*, 210; all of which, except *glosed* and *honed*, occur before a vowel or *h* in certain words,<sup>1</sup> or at the end of a line. Plurals in *-eden*; *lyueden*, 26, *fayteden*, 42, *serueden*, 211, *plededen*, 212, *crieden*, 225, all of which, except *serueden*, occur before consonants or an *h* such as resists elision. In l. 151, the Laud MS. has *pleyde*; so has the Trinity MS. In l. 56, the Trinity MS. has *clothed*, but the Laud MS. has the full form *clothedden*. In both MSS., the ending *-ede* is very rare; *lenede* occurs however in the Trinity MS. in l. 9. The net result is, that *-ed* is the most usual form, both in the singular and plural. It is important to observe, moreover, that the existence of the spelling *-ede* proves very little, for the final *-e* may have lingered on in the written language long after it ceased to be pronounced; whereas, the existence of *-ed*<sup>2</sup> proves a great deal, it being inconceivable that words should be so spelt unless the final *-e* were really

<sup>1</sup> The words *he, his, him, hem, hire, hath, hadde, have, how, her, heer* (here) are enumerated by Mr Morris as words before which elision may take place.

<sup>2</sup> Frequently written *-id* or *-ud*. Thus, in III. 36, MS. C has *melled*, MS. B has *mell'id*, and MS. L *mellul*, before a consonant.

frequently suppressed or elided. A few examples of the latter spelling are more significant than ten times the number of the former.

Beyond a doubt, Langland used a mixed dialect. One great peculiarity of it is that the endings *-en* and *-eth* both occur in the plural indicative. But they occur with very different frequency, the ending in *-eth* being used very sparingly, and most usually at the end of a line. I again select examples in which *both* MSS. agree. Plurals in *-en*; *holden*, 28, *coueiten*, 29, *geten*, 34, *feynen*, 36, *risen*, 44, *marchen*, 63, *geuen*, 76, *parten*, 81, *liggen*, 91, *seruen*, 92, *tellen*, 92, *chalengen*, 93, *syttten*, 96, *demen*, 96. Plurals in *-eth* (all ending lines), *destryueth*, 22, *thryueth*, 32, *conneth*, 33. In l. 224, where the Laud MS. has *dryuen*, the Trinity MS. has *dryueth*; on the contrary, where MS. W has *folwen*, l. 40, MS. L has *folweth*. Of course the ending *-en* sometimes becomes *-e*, as in *holde*, l. 9; but the same word is *holdeth* at the end of a line, l. 44 (unless *men* be taken there as equivalent to the French *on*, thus making *holdeth* singular). But the agreement of the MSS. is much more striking when several of them are taken together. Take the passage (III. 76—86) which has been printed in the "Parallel Extracts," and which is represented by 18 MSS. of the A- and B-type. The plural verbs are (1) *beoþ* in the Vernon and one other MS., where 3 MSS. have *be*, and 13 have *ben*; (2) *be* in the Vernon MS., where the line is lost in one other, but the remaining 16 have *arn* or *aren*; (3) *worchen* in the Vernon MS. and 5 others, where 1 MS. has *werkyn*, 1 *worches*, 1 *wirche*, but 8 have *worcheth* or *worchith*; (4) *buggen* or *biggen* in 14 MSS., *byze* or *bigge* in 2, *biggeth* in only 1; (5) *recheþ* in the Vernon MS., but *richen* or *risen* in all the rest; (6) *buggeþ* in the Vernon MS., but *biggen* or *byen* in nearly all the rest. From which we should certainly conclude that the Vernon MS. differs from most others, that the MSS. allow both forms, *-en* and *-eth*, in the same sentence, and that the verbs *ben* and *arn* are both employed. It should be remembered, however, that *ben* is chiefly used in the future tense or in the conditional mood, whereas *arn* is more emphatic.

If, instead of considering all the MSS., we observe only the MSS. of the B-class, I think it will be found that most of them amply confirm the readings of the Laud MS. The chief exceptions are the

Oriel MS., which so often has *-eden* in the past plural; MS. Bodley 814, which has *-id* and *-ip* in place of *-ed* and *-ep*, and the Cambridge MS. Dd. 1. 17, which is utterly unlike the rest, and obviously does *not* represent the dialect of the author. This latter MS. frequently has verbal plurals in *-es*, and instead of *han* generally employs *hase*, and even *hases*, though the last is probably an error. Some of its more remarkable variations are given in the footnotes. Compare also the description of this MS. above.

The important Rawlinson MS. frequently agrees with the text most minutely. It shews a like confusion of the endings in *-en* and *-eth*, as in the expression “*folweþ men þat whistlen*,” XV. 467; the ending *-ed* even in the plural, as in *wilwed*, XV. 546; and the frequent suppression of the final *-e* in the third person singular of the preterite, as in *sent* for *sente*, XV. 539.

There is one peculiarity of spelling in the Laud MS. which must not be passed over. It ought not to be considered *wrong*; it is merely, as I said, *peculiar*. The scribe adds an *-e* at the end of some words merely with a view of lengthening the preceding vowel; thus, instead of *fect*, he writes *fete*, and in other cases consistently carries out the same principle. The scribe of the Trinity MS. doubles his vowels for the same purpose; and hence we get the equivalent forms following. *Shope* L = *shoop* W; *ouerlepe* L = *ouerleep* W; *stroke* L = *strook* W; *stode* L = *stood* W, *done* L = *doon* W, and so on. It would be a great mistake to imagine that the final *-e* in these strong preterites was intended to be sounded: for there is no instance of the kind in English of any date or dialect, as far as I am aware. We should also observe the contracted forms *ritt* (better spelt *ryt*, as in W) for *rideth*, *rest* for *resteth*, both of which occur in prol. 171; also *fet* for *fedeth* in prol. 194, where MS. W actually has the fuller form. Both MSS. agree in the use of verbs in *-ie* or *-ye*, such as *tilie*, 120, *lonye*, 126, *shonye*, 174; observe also *cracchy*, 186, where MS. W has *cacchen*. The present participles generally end in *-yng* or *-ing*, but we (very rarely) find some other form, such as *dry-ucude*, XX. 99. The prefix *I-* or *y-* is found, not only before past participles, but sometimes with past tenses, as in *yriyled*, V. 234 (*Iriyled* in MS. R, *rifled* in WCOB); and in *yspilte*, V. 380. There

is also an indication of confusion of dialect in the use of pronouns, since both *heo* and *sche* are used for *she*, and *hij* or *hy* and *þei* for *they*. As an instance of plural adjectives in *-es*, I may mention *cardinales vertues*, prol. 104. There is one grammatical error which occurs so frequently that we may safely attribute it to the author. I allude to the use of *is* or *was* with plural nouns, a clear instance of which occurs in V. 99. In some cases I have ventured to correct *was* to *were*, on the strength of some other MSS., but I now wish I had let the Laud MS. alone, as there are quite enough instances of the use of *was* to justify retaining it; and it is still a not uncommon vulgarism. As to the part of England which the dialect of the text represents, I do not offer an opinion. The author has been said to have been born in Shropshire; his father is said to have had a farm in Oxfordshire; he himself mentions Malvern in Worcestershire as one place of his abode, and Cornhill in London as another; and most of his allusions are to London. We may, however, feel confident that his conversation is more that of the lower and less educated classes than of the upper classes. I think it very likely that grammar was a thing about which he troubled himself but very little, and he certainly makes some singular mistakes. He twice quotes *Michi vindictam* instead of *michi vindicta* (in this all the MSS. agree); he at one time translates *non mecaberis* by "thou shalt not kill," though at a later period he came round to the more correct view, that the true Latin phrase is *non occides*. He quotes passages from the Bible which cannot be found there; he cites St Matthew when he means St Luke, and St Gregory when he means St Jerome. He seems to have had a hazy notion that the word *Christ* means a conqueror, and many more such blunders might be mentioned. Yet with all this, he was none the less a great poet, a man of genius, and the author of a marvellous work.

#### § 10. METHOD OF PRINTING THE TEXT.

The Text is, as has been explained, mainly from MS. Laud Misc. 581, but has a few alterations and additional lines from other MSS., inserted between square brackets. The rejected readings of MS. L. will be found in the footnotes. The chief additions are from MS. R.

The Laud MS. has very few contractions ; those that occur are denoted by italic letters. All the Latin words are printed in italics, but the contractions are not expressed by any alteration of type, as there can never be the least doubt of the readings.<sup>1</sup>

The metrical dot which appears in the middle of each line in the MS. is denoted by an inverted full-stop. It marks the place for a slight pause in reading, and is frequently equivalent to a comma. It is, in a very few instances, wrongly placed in the MS. I have taken the liberty of putting it always, as I believe, in the right place.

The lines of each Passus are numbered separately. But I have not reckoned in the Latin quotations in the counting, except where they are in verse. When they are not to be reckoned in, they are "set back ;" if reference is made to them, they are denoted by the number of the English line preceding them. The punctuation of the text is my own ; it differs sometimes from Mr Wright's, but not often.

I may here remark that the scribe of the Laud MS. has frequently made a distinction between the two sounds of *th*. The sound of *th* in *thin* he commonly denotes by writing *th* at length, as in *precheth*, *thinketh*, and the like. The sound of *th* in *thine* he expresses by the *thorn-letter*, as in *þe*, *þat*, *þanne*, and the like. In MS. C we find the thorn-letter used much more sparingly, the words *the* and *that* being of frequent occurrence. In MS. W, on the other hand, the thorn-letters are far more numerous, so that we there find *þinkeþ*, *precheþ*, &c. But the scribe of MS. W makes one curious exception ; he evidently disliked this letter *at the beginning of a line*, so that, in such a position, he writes *That*, not *þat*. As a rule, the thorn-letters are more numerous in the *later* than in the *earlier* MSS.

I am much indebted to Mr Geo. Parker for his accurate transcript of the Laud MS., and for much help in the work of collation with MSS. R and B.

#### § II. METHOD OF PRINTING THE FOOTNOTES.

The list of MSS. quoted in the footnotes may be briefly repeated. They are L (Laud Misc. 581, the text) ; R (Rawl. Poet. 38) ; W

<sup>1</sup> The only Latin word that admits of the least doubt is the one which I read as *repugnat*. This is remarked upon in the Note to Pass. xvi. 47.

(Trin. Coll. Camb. B. 15. 17, printed by Mr Wright); C (Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 1. 17); O (Oriel 79); B (Bodley 814); Y (Mr Yates Thompson's); C<sub>2</sub> (Camb. Univ. Lib. Ll. 4. 14). Of these, W, C, O, R have been collated throughout, as far as they go; B is cited in the footnotes to Pass iii. 1—86, and afterwards is more closely collated. MS. C<sub>2</sub> fills up the gaps in O, and Y is useful towards the end of the poem. The readings of R and W are more important than those of the rest. The principles upon which the various readings are expressed in the footnotes have been already carefully detailed, in vol. i., p. xxix.

### § 12. EXPLANATION OF THE SIDE-NOTES.

The numbering of the folios in the margin refers to the Laud MS. The thick numbers (Clarendon-type) in the margin refer to the *pages* of vol. i., and will be found exceedingly useful for comparing the A- and B-texts. If, for instance, it be required to compare Pass. iii. 76 with the A-text, the number **31** just above shews that it will be found on p. 31 of the former volume. Conversely, if it be required to compare any line on p. 31 of vol. i. with the B-text, the place is easily found by looking for **31** in the margin of vol. ii. Wherever the B-text is fuller than the older one, and contains some extra lines, an obelus (†) will be found prefixed to the side-note. Thus, on p. 35 of vol. ii. the side-note "For Christ knows thy conscience" is thus marked. Hence ll. 67 and 68 (against which this side-note is written) will not be found in the A-text. The side-notes in vols. i. and ii. are in general *exactly alike*, wherever the texts agree closely, and this greatly helps to find the place. Thus, on p. 35, opposite l. 69, is the side-note—"Cease, lords, to write," &c.; and opposite l. 72 is the side-note—"But remember ye," &c. Both these side-notes occur in vol. i., but in a *different order*. The former of them is half-way down p. 31, but the latter at the *top*, in the A-text, owing to a different arrangement of the text. Thus the side-notes and thick numbers furnish a rough collation of the two texts at once; a more exact comparison of the two can easily be made by the reader for himself. The obeli and thick numbers of course cease after the end of Passus X.

## § 13. ARGUMENT OF THE POEM. (TEXT B.)

The poem is distinctly divisible into two parts, the "Vision of Piers the Plowman," and the "Vision of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best." Of these, the former is again divisible into two distinct visions, which may be called: (1) The Vision of the Field Full of Folk, of Holy Church, and of Lady Meed, occupying the Prologue and Passus I.—IV.; and (2) The Vision of the Seven Deadly Sins and of Piers the Plowman, occupying Passus V.—VII. The latter consists of three parts, viz. The Visions of Do-well, of Do-bet, and of Do-best. The Prologue to Do-well is Passus VIII.; Passus I.—VI. of Do-well form Passus IX.—XIV. The Prologue to Do-bet is Passus XV.; Passus I.—III. of Do-bet form Passus XVI.—XVIII. The Prologue to Do-best is Passus XIX.; it consists of but one Passus, viz. Passus XX. But some of these contain more than one vision, the number of visions in the whole poem amounting to *eleven*.

## 1. Piers the Plowman.

I. VISION OF THE FIELD FULL OF FOLK, OF HOLY CHURCH, AND OF LADY MEED.<sup>1</sup> In the PROLOGUE, the author describes how, weary of wandering, he sits down to rest upon the Malvern Hills, and there falls asleep and dreams. In his vision, the world and its people are represented to him by a field full of folk, busily engaged in their avocations. The field was situated between the tower of Truth, who is God the Father, and the dungeon which is the abode of the evil spirits. In it there were ploughmen and spendthrifts, anchorites, merchants, jesters, beggars, pilgrims, hermits, friars, a pardoner with his bulls, and priests who had deserted their cures. [There<sup>2</sup> was also a king, to whom an angel spake words of advice. Then was seen suddenly a rout of rats and mice, conspiring to bell the cat, from doing which they were dissuaded by a wise mouse.] There were also law-serjeants, burgesses, tradesmen, labourers, and taverners touting for custom.

*Passus I.* Presently, he sees a lovely lady, of whom he asks the

<sup>1</sup> See the argument of the A-text, vol. i. p. xxxix.

<sup>2</sup> The passages within square brackets are not in the A-text.

meaning of the tower. She tells him it is the abode of the Creator, who provides men with the necessaries of life. The dungeon is the castle of Care, where lives the Father of Falseness. He next asks her name, and she tells him she is Holy Church, and instructs him how great a treasure Truth is, how Lucifer fell through Pride, [that Love is the treacle of heaven,] and that the way to heaven lies through Love.

*Passus II.* He asks how he may know Falsehood. She bids him turn and see Falsehood and Flattery. Looking aside he sees, not them alone, but a woman in glorious apparel. He is told she is the Lady Meed (i. e. Reward) who is going to be married to Falsehood on the morrow. Holy Church then leaves him. The wedding is prepared, and Simony and Civil read a deed respecting the property with which Falsehood and Meed are to be endowed. Theology objects to the marriage, and disputes its legality; whereupon it is agreed that all must go to Westminster to have the question decided. All the parties ride off to London, Meed being mounted upon a sheriff and Falsehood upon a 'sisour.' Thus all come to the King's court, who vows that he will punish Falsehood and his crew if he can catch them. On hearing this, Liar flees to the friars, who pity him and house him for their own purposes.

*Passus III.* Lady Meed is arrested and brought before the king. The justices assure her all will go well. To seem righteous, she confesses and is shriven, offering to glaze a church-window by way of amendment; and immediately afterwards, advises mayors and judges to take bribes. The king proposes she shall marry Conscience, and she is willing to do so; but Conscience refuses, and exposes her faults. She attempts to retaliate and to justify herself; but Conscience refutes her arguments, quotes the example of Saul to shew the evil of covetousness, and declares that Reason will one day reign upon earth, and punish all wrongdoers. [Then shall men think that Messiah has come, and the reign of Peace shall begin. Conscience concludes by advising Meed always to read texts in connection with the context.]

*Passus IV.* Acting upon the advice of Conscience, the king orders Reason to be sent for; who comes, accompanied by Wit and

Wisdom. At this moment, Peace enters, with a complaint against Wrong. Wrong, knowing the complaint is true, gets Wisdom and Wit on his side by Meed's help, and offers to buy Peace off with a present. Reason, however, is firm and will shew no pity, but advises the king to act with strict justice. The king is convinced, and prays Reason to remain with him for ever after.

II. THE VISION OF THE SEVEN DEADLY SINS AND OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN. *Passus V.* The king goes to church, and afterwards to meat, and at this point of the vision the dreamer awakes. But it is not for long; he soon falls asleep again, and has a second vision, in which he again sees the field full of folk, and Reason<sup>1</sup> preaching to the assembled people, reminding them that the late storm and pestilence were judgments of God. Repentance seconds the efforts of Conscience, and many begin to repent. Of these the first is Pride, who makes a vow of humility. The second is Luxury, who vows to drink only water. The third is Envy, who is described with much particularity, and who confesses his evil thoughts and his attempts to harm his neighbours. [The fourth is Wrath, a friar, whose aunt was a nun, and who had been both cook and gardener to a convent, and incited many to quarrel.] The fifth, Avarice, who confesses how he lied and cheated, and taught his wife to cheat; [and who, not understanding the French word *restitution*, thought that it was another term for stealing.] The sixth, Gluttony, who (on his way to church) is tempted into a beer-house, of the interior of which the author gives a life-like and perfect picture. He too repents, though not till he has first become completely drunk and afterwards felt the ill effects of drinking. The seventh is Sloth, [a priest who knows rimes about Robin Hood better than his prayers, and can find a hare in a field more readily than he can read lives of saints.] Robert the robber too repents, and prays earnestly for forgiveness, [and Repentance makes intercession for all the penitents.]<sup>2</sup> Then they all set out in search of Truth, but no one knows the way. Soon they meet with a palmer, who has met with many saints, but never with one

<sup>1</sup> In the A-text, it is *Conscience* who preaches.

<sup>2</sup> In all MSS. of the A-class, *Passus VI.* begins here, at l. 520 of the present text.

named *Truth*. At this juncture Piers the Ploughman "put forth his head," declaring that he knows Truth well, and will tell them the way, which he then describes.

*Passus VI.* The pilgrims think the way long, and want a guide. Piers says he will come himself and shew them, when he has ploughed his half-acre. Meanwhile, he gives good advice to rich ladies and to a knight. Before starting, Piers makes his will, and then sets all who come to him to hard work. Many shirk their work, but are reduced to subordination by the sharp treatment of Hunger. Next follow most curious and valuable passages respecting the diet of the poor, striking for higher wages, and the discontent caused by prosperity. [A mysterious prophecy is appended.]

*Passus VII.* At this time Truth (i. e. God the Father) sends Piers a bull of pardon, especially intended for kings, knights, bishops, and the labouring poor, and even for some lawyers and merchants, in a less degree. A priest disputes the validity of this pardon, and wants to read it. The dispute between this priest and Piers becomes so violent that the dreamer awakes, and the Poem of Piers the Plowman (properly so called) ends with a fine peroration on the small value of papal pardons, and the superiority of a righteous life over mere trust in indulgences, at the great Day of Doom.

## 2. Vita de Dowel.

### III. THE VISION OF WIT, STUDY, CLERGY, AND SCRIPTURE.

*Passus VIII.* In introducing a new poem,<sup>1</sup> the "Vita de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest," the author begins by describing a dialogue that passed between himself and two Minorite friars concerning the doctrine of free-will. After this, he again falls asleep, and perceives in a dream a man named Thought. He asks Thought where Do-wel, Do-bet, and Do-best live, and Thought gives him some account of these, but says that the best person to give him further information is Wit. After wandering for three days, the dreamer and Thought meet with Wit.

<sup>1</sup> Though this latter portion is, in its form, altogether a new poem, the author no doubt intended it from the first to be the sequel and completion of the former portion.

*Passus IX.* Wit tells the dreamer that Do-wel dwells in a castle called *Caro*, wherein also is enclosed the Lady *Anima*, and they are guarded by the constable Inwit (Conscience), and his five sons (the senses). [Here follows a discourse upon the duty of the church to protect idiots and helpless persons, and upon the right distribution of alms.] Next follow discussions upon the good that there is in well-assorted and lawful wedlock, and the evil of mercenary or ill-advised marriages, and of adulterous connections.

*Passus X.* The dreamer applies to yet one more adviser, viz. Dame Study, the wife of Wit. [She laments that wicked men most frequently obtain this world's wealth.] She inveighs with great justice and force against the way in which shallow would-be theologians cavil about the mysterious things of God, and unworthily amuse themselves with vain quibbles. [She laments the lack of charity, now that the rich eat in private parlours.] At last, she commends the dreamer to Clergy and Scripture, from whom he may hope to learn yet more. Accordingly, he seeks these, and is favourably received. [Clergy explains the nature of Do-wel, Do-bet, and Do-best, quotes the fate of Hoplni and Phinchas, and utters the remarkable prophecy that a king would come and reform Religion, when the abbot of Abingdon should receive from him a knock, and incurable should be the wound.] A dispute arises between Clergy and William on the subject of predestination, which gives the latter the opportunity of declaring the insufficiency of mere wisdom to obtain admittance into heaven, and the greater likelihood which honest but ignorant men have of attaining to the life eternal.

IV. THE VISION OF FORTUNE, NATURE, AND REASON. *Passus XI.* In a new vision, William sees Fortune, with her attendant damsels named Lust-of-the-flesh and Lust-of-the-eyes, who bid him rejoice in his youth. But at the approach of old age, he finds that the friars, once his friends, avoid him, because he wished to be buried in his parish church. Loyalty and Scripture give him good advice, and he is told why Trajan was released from hell. Loyalty cites Christ's example of humility, declares poverty to be like a walnut, and says that priests unfit for their office are as bad as a notary who knows not how to draw up a charter. His dream continues, and he sees Nature,

who shews him how all animals except man follow Reason. He asks why this is ; Reason rebukes him, and he awakes.

V. THE VISION OF IMAGINATIVE. The dreamer beholds one who rebukes him for his impatience. He asks the stranger's name.

*Passus XII.* The stranger says he is Imaginative, who exhorts him not to despise learning, instructs him as to the relative chances of salvation of the learned and the ignorant, and tells him why wealth is like a peacock's tail. After distinguishing between three kinds of baptism, Imaginative suddenly vanishes.

VI. THE VISION OF CONSCIENCE, PATIENCE, AND HAUKYN THE ACTIVE-MAN. *Passus XIII.* In the sixth vision, Conscience, Patience, and the dreamer go to dine with Clergy. At the high daïs is seated a doctor of the church, who astonishes all by his gluttony. After dinner, the doctor, being well primed with wine, is ready to expound theological subtleties. Conscience and Patience bid farewell to Clergy, and set out as pilgrims in company with the poet. Soon they meet with one Activa-Vita, or Haukyn the Active-Man, who is a minstrel and seller of wafers. Haukyn's coat is covered with spots of dirt, significant of his sins ; and the dreamer notices amongst them the spots of Pride, Wrath, Envy, Lechery, Avarice, Gluttony, and Sloth ; [cf. Pass. V.] Conscience asks Haukyn why he has not brushed his coat.

*Passus XIV.* Haukyn explains that he has but one coat, and it is difficult to keep it clean. Patience instructs Haukyn in his duties, explains the value of Contrition, Confession, and Satisfaction, laments that riches should rob man's soul of God's love, praises poverty, and enumerates its nine advantages. Haukyn's repentance and sorrow for his sins awake the dreamer.

### 3. Vita de Dobet.

VII. THE VISION OF THE SOUL AND OF THE TREE OF CHARITY. *Passus XV.* After a few remarks about his own behaviour, William again dreams, and beholds Soul or Reason, of whom he inquires the nature of Charity. Soul answers him, quoting the Lives of the Saints, and shews him that the friars are now far from being charitable. He alludes to the story of Mahomet's pet dove, to the fatal gift

of Constantine, and to the miracles of Christ, ending with the charitable wish that Saracens and Jews may be saved.

*Passus XVI.* He is then shewn the tree upon which Charity grows, supported upon three props, the meaning of which is explained by Piers the Plowman Himself, who is *now* identified with the human nature of Christ. Next follows a part of the history of Christ, His incarnation, miracles, and betrayal by Judas Iscariot. At this point the dreamer suddenly awakes. In his anxious search after Piers the Plowman, he meets with Abraham or Faith.

VIII. THE VISION OF FAITH, HOPE, AND CHARITY. Faith (Abraham) explains how he became God's herald, and shews William the leper (Lazarus) lying in his lap.

*Passus XVII.* Next William beholds *Spes*, or Hope, who, like Abraham, is in search of Piers. *Spes* and William journey towards Jerusalem, and behold a Samaritan riding near them. Soon they find a wounded man lying in the way. Faith and Hope pass by him, but the Good Samaritan (i. e. Charity or Christ Himself in the garb of Piers the Plowman) has compassion upon him, and takes care of him, leaving him at an inn called *Lex Christi*. The dreamer offers to become the Samaritan's servant, and learns from Him how the Holy Trinity is symbolized by a man's hand, or by a blazing torch. Once more the dreamer awakes.

IX. THE VISION OF THE TRIUMPH OF PIERS THE PLOWMAN. *Passus XVIII.* This, the finest *Passus* in the whole poem, is entirely occupied with the history of Jesus. With growing power and vividness, the poet describes the crucifixion, the struggle between Life and Death and between Light and Darkness, the meeting together of Truth and Mercy, Righteousness and Peace, whilst the Saviour rests in the grave; a triumphant description of His descent into hell, and His victory over Satan and Lucifer, till the poet wakes in ecstasy, with the joyous peal of the bells ringing in his ears on the morning of Easter day.

#### 4. Vita de Dobest.

X. THE VISION OF GRACE. *Passus XIX.* But alas! the poem of Dobest reveals how far off the end yet is. The Saviour leaves

earth, and Antichrist descends upon it. Piers *henceforth* denotes the whole Christian body, upon whom Grace or the Holy Spirit bestows various gifts. Grace makes Piers His ploughman, and gives him four oxen (the four evangelists), and four “stots” (the four chief Latin “fathers”); also four seeds, which are the cardinal virtues. Pride and his host attack the Church of Unity. All men are invited by Conscience to partake of the eucharist, but an impenitent brewer refuses to do so, and an ignorant vicar reviles the cardinals whom the pope sends from Avignon. A lord and a king are introduced, who justify their own exactions. Then the dreamer awakes.

XI. THE VISION OF ANTICHRIST. *Passus XX.* Before falling asleep once more, William encounters Need, who rebukes and instructs him. He then dreams once more how Antichrist assails the Church of Unity, which is defended by Conscience against Pride and all his host. Diseases assail all mankind; Death “pashes” to the dust kings and knights, emperors and popes, and many a lovely lady. Life, with his mistress Fortune, indulges in all kinds of excesses. He becomes the father of Sloth, who marries Wanhope. Old-age appears as the enemy of Life. The dreamer takes refuge in the castle of Unity, which is beleaguered by many foes, especially by Envy and Hypocrisy. At last one Flattery, a friar, gains admission to the castle, offering to salve Conscience of all hurts with soothing but deadly remedies, till Conscience, hard beset by Pride and Sloth, cries out to Contrition to help him; but Contrition slumbers, benumbed by the deadly potions he has drunk. With a last effort Conscience arouses himself, and seizes his pilgrim’s staff, determined to wander wide over the world till he shall find Piers the Plowman. Again the dreamer awakes, and here ceases the still unfinished history of the religious life of man.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> For a more detailed and exact analysis of the poem, see Professor Morley’s *English Writers*, vol. i. p. 758.

## ERRATA.

- P. 5, l. 93. *Dole* stop at the end of the line.
- P. 5, l. 95. *For seruant; read seruantz.* So also in Pass. ii. 13, ii. 206, ii. 212, iii. 89, iii. 161, iii. 214, iii. 216, iii. 225, the plural nouns ending with *z* should rather end with *z*, though the MS. has *z*.
- P. 217. Insert marks of quotation at the end of l. 118, and the beginning of l. 119, and correct "Conscience" to "Clergy" in the sidenote.
- P. 398. In note to l. 168, in the quotation from Crowley, read "tel" for "tell."

THE VISION OF WILLIAM CONCERNING

“PIERS THE PLOWMAN.”

Incipit liber de Petro Plowman.

[Prologus.]

In a somer seson · whan soft was the sonne,  
 I I shope me in shrones · as I a shepe were,  
 In habite as an heremite · vnholy of workes,  
 Went wyde in þis world · wondres to here.  
 Ac on a May mornynge · on Maluerne hulle  
 Me byfel a ferly · of fairy me thouȝte ;  
 I was very forwandred · and went me to reste  
 Vnder a brode banke · bi a bornes side,  
 And as I lay and lened · and loked in þe wateres,  
 I slombred in a slepyng · it sweyued so merye.  
 ¶ Thanne gan I to meten · a merueilouse sweuene,  
 That I was in a wilderness · wist I neuer where,  
 As I bihelde in-to þe est · an hiegh to þe sonne,  
 I seigh a toure on a toft · trielich ymaked ;  
 A depe dale binethe · a dongeon þere-Inne,  
 With depe dyches & derke · and dredful of sight.

(Page of A text) 1  
 [MS. L; fol. 1.]  
 One summer  
 season, clothed as  
 a hermit, I went  
 abroad in the  
 world to hear  
 wonders.

4  
 On Malvern hills,  
 a strange thing  
 befel me. Being  
 tired of wander-  
 ing, I rested me  
 by a bourne's  
 side, where I  
 soon fell asleep.

8  
 Then dreamt I a  
 wondrous dream,  
 that I was in a  
 strange wilder-  
 ness, and saw on  
 the east side of it  
 a tower on a toft,  
 and beneath it a  
 deep dale with a  
 dungeon.

16

OBS. L=MS. Laud 581; W=MS.  
 printed by Wright; O=MS. Oriel;  
 R=MS. Rawlinson; C=Camb. MS.  
 Dd. 1. 17; C2=Camb. MS. Ll. 4. 14.  
 Readings from the last of these are  
 given only occasionally.

2. in] into W. shepe] sheep W;  
 scheep C2; but C has schepe (with a  
 final e).

5. Ac] And CC2.

9. in] on W.

10. in] in-to W. sweyued] sweyed W.

11. to] so in W (but not printed).

12. a] WO om.

13. As] And as W; And C. an  
 hiegh] on hy; O; on hie C2.

14. seigh] saw; O. trielich] rie-  
 liche (with t crased) C; triedliche O.

2

There was also a fair field, full of all manner of folk.

Some of them ploughed, sowed, and worked hard;

but some were clad in gay apparel.

Others prayed, and led an austere life, like anchorites.

Some chose merchandise, whilst some were minstrels.

Some were jesters and slanderers, against whom St Paul preaches.

3

A faire felde ful of folke · fonde I there bytwene,  
Of alle maner of men · þe mene and þe riche,  
Worchyng and wandryng · as þe worlde asketh.

Some [putten] hem to þe plow · pleyed ful selde, 20  
In setting and in sowyng · swonken ful harde,  
And wonnen that wastours · with glotonye destruyeth.

¶ And some putten hem to pruyde · apparailed hem  
þere-after,

In contenance of clothyng · comen disgised. 24

¶ In prayers and in penance · putten hem manye,

Al for loue of owre lorde · lyueden ful streyte,

In hope forto haue · heueneriche blisse ;

As aueres and heremites · that holden hem in here  
selles, 28

And coueiten nought in contre · to kairen aboute,

For no likerous lifode · her lykam to plese.

¶ And somme chosen chaffare · they cheuen the bettere,

As it semeth to owre syzt · that suche men thryueth ;

And somme murthes to make · as mynstralles conneth,

And geten gold with here glee · synneles, I leue. 34

Ac iapers & iangelers · Iudas chylderen,

Feynen hem fantasies · and foles hem maketh,

And han here witte at wille · to worche ȝif þei sholde.

That Poule precheth of hem · I nel nought preue it  
here ; 38

20. [putten W] putte C<sub>2</sub>; put L.C. See l. 23. hem] him C. pleyed] pleiden W; pleyede O; plaiden C; pleyed L.C<sub>2</sub>. selde] seelde O; seeld C<sub>2</sub>; seiden C.

21. in sowyng] WOC<sub>2</sub> omit in. swonken] swynken C.

22. with] in OC<sub>2</sub>. destruyeth] distroys C.

23. apparailed] apparayleden OC<sub>2</sub>; apparailed LWC.

24. disgised] degised W.

25. prayers] preyere O. in penaunce] penances W.

26. loue] þe loue W.

27. forto haue] to haue after W.

29. kairen] cayren O; carien WC<sub>2</sub>; walken C.

31. chosen] chesen C. cheuen] cheueden W.

32. suche] swilke C. men] OC<sub>2</sub> om.

33. conneth] konne W; knaueth C.

34. synneles] Mr Wright prints gittles (cf. Text A); but we find synneles in LWC; not synles in OC<sub>2</sub>.

35. Ac] As COC<sub>2</sub>.

36. Feynen] þat feynen OC<sub>2</sub>.

37. at wille] at her wille OC<sub>2</sub>. sholde] wolde W.

38. nel] wol W. In the margin of O is written, Qui non laborat non manducet.

*Qui turpiloquium loquitur* · [is luciferes hyne].

¶ Bidders and beggeres · fast aboute zede, 40

With her bely and her bagge[s] · of bred ful ycrammed ;

Fayteden for here fode · fouzten atte ale ;

In glotonye, god it wote · gon hij to bedde,

And risen with ribaudye · tho roberdes knaues ; 44

Slepe and sori sleuthe · seweth hem eure.

¶ Pilgrymes and palmers · plizted hem togidere

To seke seynt Iames · and seyntes in rome.

Thei went forth in here wey · with many wise tales,

And hadden leue to lye · al here lyf after. 49

I seigh somme that seiden · þei had ysonzt seyntes ;

To eche a tale þat þei tolde · here tonge was tempred to

lye,

More þan to sey soth · it semed bi here speche. 52

¶ Heremites on an heep · With hoked staues,

Wenten to Walsyngham · and here wenches after ;

Grete lobyes and longe · that loth were to swynke, 55

Clotheden hem in copis · to ben knowen fram othere ;

And shopen hem heremites · here ese to haue.

¶ I fonde þere Freris · alle þe foure ordres,

Preched þe peple · for profit of hem-seluen,

Glosed þe gospel · as hem good lyked, 60

For coueitise of copis · construed it as þei wolde.

Many of þis maistres Freris · mowe clotheu hem at

lykyng,

There were  
beggars, too,  
dissembling  
[Fol. 1 b.]  
knaues, who lived  
in gluttony, sleep,  
and sloth.

Pilgrims and  
palmers were  
there, who went  
to Rome, and  
had leave to lie  
ever after.

† I saw some that  
said they had  
sought saints.

Hermits, too,  
went to Walsing-  
ham, and their  
wenches with  
them ; great long  
lubbers were  
they, and loath to  
work.

I found friars  
there, of all four  
orders, glozing  
the Gospel,

¶  
covetous cheats,  
whose traffic had  
much to do with  
money.

39. *Qui*] But *Qui* W. *The readings are—Qui turpiloquium loquitur, &c.* LC ; But *Qui loquitur turpiloquium* · is *Luciferes hyne* W ; O *resembles* W, with *knaue instead of hyne* ; Cz *has the same as O, with hyne written above* *knaue*. Cf. Text A.

41. *hely*] *belies* W. *bagges*] L *has bagge* ; but WCOCz *have the plural*.

42. *atte ale*] at þe ale W ; at ale O ; at nale Cz.

43. *it*] W *om. gon*] go W ; *gayt* C. *hij*] þei WO ; they C.

44. *þe*] þe O.

45. *seweth*] *sheweth* C ; *suen* O.

46. *plizted*] *plizteden* O ; *plizted* L ; *plizten* W ; *gedir* C.

47. *To*] For to W. *in*] at W.

49. *to lye*] for to lye O ; to lee C.

51. *To eche*] Tho *hille* C. *here*] *thayr* C.

52. *to*] OCz *om. here*] *thair* C.

54. *here*] *hire* W ; *thair* C.

59. *Preched*] *Prechynge* W ; *Precheden* O.

60. *Glosed*] *Gloseden* O.

62. *maistres*] *so also in* C ; *maistre* W ; *maystre* O. *mowe*] *now* W.

- For here money and marchandise · marchen togideres.  
 For sith charite haþ be chapman · and chief to shryue  
 lordes, 64  
 Many ferlis han fallen · in a fewe 3eris.  
 But holychirche and hij · holde better togideres,  
 The moste my[s]chief on molde · is mountyng wel faste.
- ¶ þere preched a Pardonere · as he a prest were, 68  
 Brouzte forth a bulle · with bishopes seles,  
 And seide þat hym-self myzte · assoilen hem alle  
 Of falshed of fastyng · of vowes ybroken.  
 ¶ Lewed men leued hym wel · and lyked his wordes,  
 Comen vp knelyng · to kissen his bulles ; 73  
 He bonched hem with his breuet · & blered here eyes,  
 And rauzte with his ragman · rynges and broches.  
 Thus þey geuen here golde · glotones to kepe, 76  
 And leueth such loseles · þat lecherye haunten.
- ¶ Were þe bishop yblissed · and worth bothe his eres,  
 His seel shulde nouzt be sent · to deceyue þe peple.  
 Ac it is nauzt by þe bischop · þat þe boy precheth, 80
- 5 [Fol. 2.] For the parish prest and þe pardonere · parten þe  
 siluer,  
 That þe poraille of þe parish · sholde haue zif þei nere.  
 ¶ Persones and parish prestes · pleynd hem to þe  
 bischop, 83  
 þat here parissies were pore · sith þe pestilence tyme,  
 To haue a lycence and a leue · at London to dwelle,  
 And syngen þere for symonye · for siluer is swete. 86
- † Bishops and ¶ Bischopes and bachelers · bothe maistres and doctours,
63. *marchandise*] hire marchaun- W; yen O; eyen C.  
 diþe W; mauchaudises (*sie*) C.  
 66. *hij*] þei O.  
 67. *myschief*] mychief L; meschief WCO. *wel*] vp wel OCz.  
 69. *with*] wiþ many W.  
 71. *of vowes*] of Auowes W; and of  
 vowes CO.  
 72. *hym*] it W.  
 74. *bonched*] bunchede O; *Mr*  
*Wright prints* bouched. *eyes*] eiþen
- W; yen O; eyen C.  
 77. *leueth*] leueþ it or leneþ it  
 (*misprinted* leueth in) W; leuys or  
 lenys C; louen OCz. *þat*] as W.  
 78. *yblissed*] yblessed W; Iblessid O.  
 80. *Ac*] And C. *boy*] both C.  
 82. *poraille*] pore porayle O. *nere*]  
 ne were WO.  
 84. *parissies*] parisse C. *pore*]  
 pouere W. *sith þe*] sith C.  
 85. *a leue*] leue WO.

þat han cure vnder criste · and crounyng in tokne 88 others having  
 And signe þat þei sholden · shryuen here paroschienes, cure of souls live  
 Prechen and prey for hem · and þe pore fede, in London, even  
 Liggen in London · in lenten, an elles. in Lent. (Cf. A.  
 Somme seruen þe kyng · and his siluer tellen, 92 † Some serve the  
 In cheker and in chancerye · chalengen his dettes. king in his  
 Of wardes and wardmotes · weyues and streyues. exchequer.  
 ¶ And some seruen as seruantz · lordes and ladyes, † Some are  
 And in stede of stuardes · sytten and demen. 96 stewards to lords.  
 Here messe and here matynes · and many of here oures  
 Arn don vndeoutlych ; · drede is at þe laste  
 Lest crist in cons[is]torie · acorse ful manye.  
 I parceyued of þe power · þat Peter had to kepe, 100 † St Peter  
 To bynde and to vnbynde · as þe boke telleth, deputed his power  
 How he it left wiþ loue · as owre lorde hight, of the keys to the  
 Amonges foure vertues · þe best of alle vertues, four cardinal  
 þat cardinales ben called · & closyng zatis, 104 virtues ;  
 þere crist is in kyngdome · to close and to shutte,  
 And to opne it to hem · and heuene blisse shewe.  
 Ac of þe cardinales atte Courte · þat cauzt of þat name, † but as to the  
 And power presumed in hem · a Pope to make, 108 power of the men  
 To han þat power þat peter hadde · inpugnen I nelle ; now called  
 For in loue and letterure · þe eleccioun bilongeth, cardinals—I will  
 For-þi I can and can nauzte · of courte speke more. not inpugn it.  
 ¶ þanne come þere a kyng · kny3thod hym ladde, 112 Next I beheld a  
 M3t of þe comunes · made hym to regne, king.  
 And þanne cam kynde wytte · and clerkes he made,

88. *crounyng*] crowng (*sic*) C ;  
 crownes C2.

91. *Liggen*] Liggand C. *in Lon-*  
*don*] at Londone W.

93. *chancerye*] chauncelrie W.

94. *and wardmotes*] and of warde-  
 motes W ; of wardmotes OC2. *weyues*  
*and*] of weyues of OC2.

96. *stuardes*] stywardes W ; sti-  
 wardes C.

99. *consistorie* WCO] constorie L.  
*acorse*] a-curse C ; curse O.

101. *to vnbynde*] vnbynden W.

102. *left*] self (!) OC2.

103. C omits.

105. *cris is*] is crist W. *in*] in  
 his W.

106. *opne*] opene W ; open C.

107. *Ac*] And C. *atte*] at WO.

108. *And*] Ac (!) O.

109. *han*] haue CO. *inpugnen*]  
 impugnen W ; Impugne it O.

110. *letterure*] in lettrure W.

111. *and can*] and I can OC2.

- For to conseille þe kyng · and þe comune saue.
- † He and his knights said the commons must support them.  
† The commons provided ploughmen to till the soil.  
[Fol. 2 b.]
- ¶ The kyng and kny3thode · and clergeye bothe 116  
Casten þat þe comune · shulde hem-self fynde.  
¶ Þe comune contreued · of kynde witte craftes,  
And for profit of alle þe poeple · plowmen ordeygued,  
To tilie and trauaile · as trewe lyf askeþ. 120  
þe kyng and þe comune · and kynde witte þe thridde  
Shope lawe & lewte · eche man to knowe his owne.
- † Then a lunatic cried aloud and said, "Christ grant, sir king, that you may rule well."
- ¶ Þanne loked vp a lunatik · a lene þing with-alle,  
And knelyng to þe kyng · elergealy he seyde; 124  
" Crist kepe þe, sire kyng · and þi kyngriche,  
And leue þe lede þi londe · so leute þe louye,  
And for þi ri3tful rewlyng · be rewarded in heuene ! "
- † Then an angel exclaimed in Latin—
- ¶ And sithen in þe eyre an hiegh · An angel of  
heuene  
Lowed to speke in latyn— · for lewed men ne coude  
Iangle ne iugge · þat iustifie hem shulde, · 130  
But suffren & seruen— · for-thi seyde þe angel,  
† giving the king good advice.
- ¶ *Sum Rex, sum Princeps · neutrum fortasse deinceps ;—*  
*O qui iura regis · Christi specialia regis,* 133  
*Hoc quod agas melius · iustus es, esto pius !*  
*Nudum ius a te · vestiri vult pietate ;*  
*Qualia vis metere · talia grana sere.* 136  
*Si ius nudatur · nudo de iure metatur.*  
*Si scriitur pietas · de pietate metas ! "*
- † A buffoon replied in Latin to the angel.
- ¶ Thanne greued hym a Goliardeys · a glotoun of  
wordes,  
And to þe angel an hei3 · [answered] after, 140  
" *Dum rex a regere · dicatur nomen habere,*  
*Nomen habet sine re · nisi studeat iura tenere.*"

118. *contreued*] contoured (*probably miswritten*) C.

120. *and trauaile*] and to traouaille W.

121. *and kynde*] kynde C.

122. *lewte*] leaute WC; leute O.

125. *Here commenees the fragment of MS. R which is now found in MS.*

Lansdowne 398; see the Preface.

126. *leue*] leue or lene WCO. *lede*] to lede OCz.

135. *ius*] vis R.

137. *ius*] vis R.

140. [*answered* C] answerde W; answerede O; answeres LR,

141. *Dum*] so in LWR; Cum CO.

¶ And þanne gan alle þe comune · crye in vers of latin, † The commons  
To þe kynges conseil·le · construe ho-so wolde— 144 † too spoke in  
"Precepta Regis · sunt nobis vincula legis." Latin.

¶ Wiþ þat ran þere a route · of ratones at ones, † Then a rout of  
And smale mys with hem · mo þen a þousande, † rats and mice ran  
And comen to a conseil·le · for here comune profit; 148 † together to take  
For a cat of a courte · cam whan hym lyked, counsel.  
And ouerlepe hem lyztlich · and lauhte hem at his wille,  
And pleyde wiþ hem perilouslych · and possed [hem]  
aboute. 151

"For doute of dyuerse dredes · we dar nouhte wel loke; † "We are all  
And 3if we grucche of his gamen · he wil greue vs alle, † afraid of the cat."  
Cracche vs, or clowe vs · and in his cloches holde,  
That vs lotheth þe lyf · or he lete vs passe.  
Myhte we wiþ any witte · his wille withstonde, 156  
We myhte be lordes aloft · and lyuen at owre ese."

¶ A raton of renon · most renable of tonge, † A rat of renown  
Seide for a souereygne · help to hym-selue;— † said, "I have  
"I haue ysein segges," quod he · "in þe cite of london [Fol. 3.]  
Beren biȝes ful briȝte · abouten here nekkes, 161 † seen creatures in  
And some cōlers of crafty werk; · vncoupled þei wenden London wear  
Boþe in wareine & in waste · where hem leue lyketh; collars on their  
And otherwhile þei aren elles-where · as I here telle. 164 necks,  
Were þere a belle on here beiȝ · bi Ihesu, as me thynketh, † A bell might be  
Men myhte wite where þei went · and awei renne! † hung on to such  
And riȝt so," quod þat ratoun · "reson me sheweth, † a collar.  
† Let us put a

143. *And þanne*] Thanne W. *co-*  
*mune*] comunnes O. *vers*] a vers R.

147. *mys*] mees W; myce O. *with*]  
myd W.

148. *here*] þe W.

149. *courte*] contree W.

151. [*hem* COR] LW om.

152. *dar*] doren O; durre Cz. *wel*]  
C om.

153. *of*] R om.

154. *or*] & O. *clowe*] clawen W;  
clawe RO; clow C.

155. *or*] er WR.

156. *wille*] wit C (*wrongly*).

157. *aloft*] o-lofte W; on lofte R.

158. *renon*] renoun WCO. *renable*]  
resonable R.

159. *hym-selue*] hem alle R.

160. *ysein*] seyn CO; y-seyen W.  
*segges*] segthis C.

161. *Beren*] Weren C. *biȝes*] beiȝes  
W; behes C; byes O; beȝes R.

162. *wenden*] so in LCOR; wenten  
W.

163. *hem leue lyketh*] hem-self liked  
W; þaym lef lykeþ R.

165. *beiȝ*] bighes C; byes O; bye R.

167. *þat*] þe O.

collar and bell on  
the cat's neck. To bugge a belle of brasse · or of briȝte syluer, 168  
And knitten on a colere · for owre comune profit,  
And hangen it vp-on þe cattes hals · þanne here we  
mowen

Where he ritt or rest · or renneth to playe.

† When he is  
playful, we can  
stay; when  
wrathful, we  
must run away."

And zif him list for to laike · þenne loke we mowen, 172  
And peren in his presence · þer while hym plaic liketh,  
And zif him wrattheth, be ywar · and his weye shonye."

† But when the  
bell was bought,  
never a rat durst  
hang it on the  
cat's neck.

¶ Alle þis route of ratones · to þis reson þei assented.  
Ae þo þe belle was ybouȝt · and on þe beȝe hanged, 176  
þere ne was ratoun in alle þe route · for alle þe rewme  
of Fraunze,

þat dorst haue ybounden þe belle · aboute þe cattis  
nekke,

Ne hangen [it] aboute þe cattes hals · al Englonde to  
wynne;

† So theirs was  
labour lost.

And helden hem vnhardy · and here conseille feble, 180  
And leten here laboure lost · & alle here longe studye.

† A mouse ad-  
dressed the rout,  
saying,

¶ A mous þat moche good · couthe, as me thouȝte,  
Stroke forth sternly · and stode biforn hem alle,  
And to þe route of ratones · reherced þese wordes; 184

† "If we kill the  
old cat, a young  
one will come;

"Thouȝ we culled þe catte · ȝut sholde þer come an-  
other,

To cracchy vs and al owre kynde · þouȝ we croupe vnder  
benches.

For-þi I conseille alle þe comune · to lat þe catte worthe,  
And be we neuer so bolde · þe belle hym to shewe; 188

† and it is very

For I herde my sire seyn · is seuene ȝere ypassed,

168. *bugge*] *bigge* CO; *bye* Cz.

169. *on*] *it on* W.

170. W *omits*.

171. R *omits*. *rest*] *rest* O.

172. R *omits*.

173. *þer while*] *þe while* WR.

174. *ywar*] *war* W.

175. *þis* (1)] *þe* R. *þei*] O *om*.

176. *Ae*] And C. *ybouȝt*] *y-brouȝt* W.

177. *rewme*] *reaume* W; *reem* C.

178. *ybounden*] *bounden* W; *bounde*

179. [*it*] *occurs in* WCROC<sub>2</sub>; L

*om*. *þe cattes*] *his* R.

180. *And*] *Alle* W.

181. *alle*] O *om*.

184. *route of*] O *om*.

185. *culled*] *killen* W; *kulled* C;  
*kill-den* O; *had Iculled* R.

186. *cracchy*] *cracche* O; *cacchen*  
W; *cache* Cz. *croupe*] *cropen* W,  
*crepe* C; *crope* R.

188. *so*] W *om*.

þere þe catte is a kitoun · þe courte is ful elyng ; 190 bad for the court  
þat wittiseth holiwrite · who-so wil it rede, where a kitten  
reigns.

*Ve terre vbi puer rex est, &c.*

† Eccles. x. 16.

For may no renke þere rest haue · for ratones bi nyzte ;  
þe while he caccheþ conynges · he coueiteth nouzt owre  
caroyne, 193

But fet hym al with venesoun · defame we hym nenere.

For better is a litel losse · þan a longe sorwe,

† Better a little  
loss than a long  
sorrow.

þe mase amonge vs alle · þouȝ we mysse a schrewe. 196

For many mannus malt · we mys wolde destruye,

† Mice and rats  
are a nuisance,  
as well as cats.

And also ȝe route of ratones · rende mennes clothes,

Nere þat cat of þat courte · þat can ȝow ouerlepe ;

For had ȝe rattes ȝowre wille · ȝe couthe nouzt reule  
ȝowre-selue. 200

I sey for me," *quod* þe mous · "I se so mykel after,

[Fol. 3 b.]

Shal neuer þe cat ne þe kitoun · bi my conseilte be  
greued,

Ne carpyng of þis coler · þat costed me neure.

† I do not pay  
my share for the  
collar.

And þouȝ it had coste me catel · biknowen it I nolde,

But suffre as hym-self wolde · to do as hym liketh, 205

† Let them go  
where they like."

Coupled & vncoupled · to cacche what thei mowe.

For-þi vche a wise wizte I warne · wite wel his  
owne."—

¶ What þis meteles bemeneth · ȝe men þat be merye,

Deuine ȝe, for I ne dar · bi dere god in heuene! 209

¶ ȝit houed þere an hondreth · in houues of selke,

There were a  
hundred  
sergeants in silk  
hoods, law-

Seriauntȝ it semed · þat serueden atte barre,

Plededen for penyes · and poundes þe lawe, 212

192. *þere*] no R.

193. *owre*] youre W.

194. *fet*] fedep W; fedes C. *al*] Oom.

196. C om.

198. *ȝe*] the C; þe O.

199. *þat eat of þat*] þe eat of þat  
W; þat cat of þe R.

200. *rattes*] ratones R.

201. *for me*] it for my-self R.

203. *Ne*] Thoruȝ W. *costed*] cost  
CO.

204. *had coste*] hadde costned W;  
costed R.

207. *Forþi—wizte*] For vche a wyse  
man R. *vehe*] ech W; ilke C.

208. *bemeneth*] bymene R.

209. *for—dar*] ne dar I nouzt R.

211. *it semed*] it bi-semed W; it  
semeden O; as it semed C. *atte*] at  
þe WOR.

212. *Plededen*] Pleteden WCRO;  
Pleded Cz.

pleaders, who never spoke till they saw their money.

And nouȝt for loue of owre lorde · vnlese here lippes  
onis.

þow myȝtest better mete þe myste · on maluerne hullles,  
þan gete a momme of here mouthie · but money were  
shewed.

**G**

I saw too barons,  
burgesses, bond-  
men,

bakers, butchers,  
brewsters, and  
others; and  
ditchers who lead  
ill lives, and sing  
idle songs.

¶ Barones an burgeis · and bonde-men als 216  
I seiȝ in þis assemble · as ȝe shul here after.

Baxsteres & brewsteres · and bocheres manye,  
Wollewebsteres · and weueres of lynnen,  
Tailleurs and tynkeres · & tolleres in marketes, 220  
Masons and mynours · and many other craftes.  
Of alkin libbyng laboreres · lopen forth somme,  
As dykers & delueres · þat doth here dedes ille,  
And dryuen forth þe [longe] day · with “*Dieu vous  
sauue, Dame Enme!*” 224

Cooks were cry-  
ing “hot pies,”  
and taverners  
were praising  
their wine.

Cokes and here knaues · crieden, “hote pies, hote!  
Gode gris a[nd] gees · gowe dyne, gowe!”  
¶ Tauerners vn-til hem · tolde þe same,  
“White wyn of Oseye · and red wyn of Gascoigne, 228  
Of þe Ryne and of þe Rochel · þe roste to defye.”—  
Al þis seiȝ I slepyng · and seuene sythes more.

213. *vnlese*] vnlose (*printed* un-  
close) W; vnlose O; vnlose C.

214. *þe*] W *om.*

215. *momme*] mom W; mummy  
OR. *but—were*] but moneie be O; til  
moneie be W; er mony hem by R. L  
*has monoy, miswritten for money;*  
*cf. Pass. I. l. 44.*

216. *burgeis*] burgeises W.

218. *Baxteres*] baksteres WR.

222. *alkin*] alle kynne W; alle

kyn O; alkyn C; alle R.

223. *deth*] doon WO; does C.

224. [*longe*] *so in* WCO; L *has*  
*dere.* Cf. Text A. *þe — day*] here  
dayes here R. *vous*] W *om.*

226. *and*] and WRO; an C; L *has a.*

227. *tolde*] trewely tolden W.

228. *red wyn*] R *om.*

230. W *omits*; but Mr Wright sup-  
plies the line from MS. T (of the A-  
class). *seiȝ*] sawe CO.

## PASSUS I.

*Passus Primus de visione.*

**W**hat this montaigne bymeneth · and þe merke dale, I now tell the  
 And þe felde ful of folke · I shal 3ow faire schewe. meaning of the  
 A loueli ladi of lere · in lynnyn yclothed, mountain, the  
 Come down fram a castel · and called me faire, 4 dale, and the  
 And seide, “ Sone, slepestow · sestow þis poeple, field.  
 How bisi þei ben · abouten þe mase? A lovely lady  
 þe moste partie of þis poeple · þat passeth on þis erthe, most of whom  
 Haue þei worschip in þis worlde · þei wilne no better ; in this world (here  
 Of other heuene þan here · holde þei no tale.” 9 [Fol. 4.]  
 ¶ I was aferd of her face · þei3 she faire were, imaged by a  
 And seide, “ mercy, Madame · what is þis to mene ? ” field).  
 “ þe toure vp þe toft,” quod she · “ treuthe is þere-Inne, I was afraid, and  
 And wolde þat 3e wrougte · as his worde techeth ; 13 “ In the tower,”  
 For he is fader of feith · fourmed 3ow alle, she said, “ is  
 Bothe with fel and with face · and 3af 3ow fyue wittis ← Truth, i. e. God  
 Forto worschip hym þer-with · þe while þat 3e ben here. the Creator,  
 And þefore he hyzte þe erthe · to help 3ow vchone 17 8  
 Of wollen, of lynnyn · of lyflode at nede, who gives men  
 In mesurable manere · to make 3ow at ese ; wool and linen  
 ¶ And comaunded of his curteisye · in comune þree 20 Three things are  
 þinges ; really needful,—

TITLE. *So in* LWC ; Passus primus  
 de visione petri plowman R ; Primus  
 Passus O.

3. *lere*] leere W ; lyre C.

5. *sestor*] sest þow R ; seest þou O.

6. *abouten*] alle aboute W.

10. *aferd*] a-fered CW ; a-feerd O.

*she*] scho C.

12. *toure*] thour C. *vy*] on W.

13. *techeth*] thecheth C.

14. *is*] O *om.* *fourmed*] and formed

W.

16. *þe*] W *om.* *þat*] O *om.*

18. *of lyflode*] o lifode (*sic*) C.

clothes, meat,  
and drink.

Arne none nedful but þo · and nempne hem I thinke,  
And rekne hem bi resoun · reherce þow hem after.  
That one is vesture · from chele þe to saue,  
And mete atte mele · for myseise of þi-selue, 24  
And drynke whan þow dryest · ac do nouzt out of  
resoun ;

But beware of  
drink, and re-  
member Lot's  
sin,

That þow worth þe werse · whan þow worche shuldest.  
¶ For loth in his lifdayes · for likyng of drynke,  
Dede bi his douztres · þat þe deuel lyked ; 28  
Delited hym in drynke · as þe deuel wolde,  
And lecherye hym lauzt · and lay bi hem boþe ;  
And al he witt it wyn · þat wikked dede.

which was caused  
by drunkenness.

† Gen. xix. 32.

*Inebriamus eum vino, dormiamus que cum eo,  
Ut seruare possimus de patre nostro semen.*

† Thus was Lot  
encumbered.

Thorw wyn and þorw women · þere was loth acombred,  
And þere gat in glotonye · gerlis þat were cherlis. 33  
For-þi drede delitable drynke · and þow shalt do þe  
bettere ;

Moderation is  
wholesome,  
though the  
appetite be keen.

Mesure is medeyne · þouȝ þow moche ȝerne.  
It is nauzt al gode to þe goste · þat þe gutte axeþ, 36  
Ne liflode to þi likam · [þat leef is to þi soule.

Believe not thy  
body, which is  
leagued with the  
fiend; therefore  
beware."

Leue not þi likam · for a lyer him techeth,  
That is þe wrecched worlde · wolde þe bitraye.  
For þe fende and þi flesch · folweth þe to-gidere, 40  
This and þat [sueth] þi soule · and seith it in þin herte ;

21. *and*] O om.

22. *þow*] ȝe O.

23. *is*] W om. *vesture*] clothinge  
C2. *chele*] chelde C; cold W; colde  
C2.

24. *atte*] at W; at þe R; atte the  
C.

25. *ac*] and CC2.

28. *lyked*] wolde C. *But C omits  
the next line, which ends with wolde.*

31. O omits. *it*] it þe WC.

33. *gat*] he gate O. *gerlis*] barnes  
C. *cherlis*] karles C.

35. *moche*] myche O; muchel W;  
mikile C; muche R.

36. *to*] for O. *þe—axeþ*] guttis  
askys C.

37, 38. [*þat leef—not þi likam*]  
LWC *wrongly omit this, owing to the  
repetition of likam; but we find—þat  
leef is þi soule Lef nauzt þi licame R;  
þat leef is to þi soule Leeue þou not  
þi likham OC2. Cf. Text A.*

39. *þe*] a O.

40. *þe*] W om.

41. [*sueth*] *so in R. The other  
readings hardly make sense; they are  
—seest L; seep WO; sees C; seip  
C2. Cf. Text A. scith*] setth C. *it*]  
O om.

And for þow sholdest ben ywar · I wisse þe þe beste.”

¶ “Madame, *mercy*,” quod I · “me liketh wel 3owre  
wordes, 43 I thanked her,  
and asked her to  
whom the  
treasures of the  
world belonged.

Ac þe moneye of þis molde · þat men so faste holdeth,  
Telle me to whom, Madame · þat tresore appendeth ?”

¶ “Go to þe gospel,” quod she · “þat god seide hym-  
seluen, She bade me go  
to the gospel, and  
read how Christ  
was tempted by  
being shown a

Tho þe poeple hym apposed · wiþ a peny in þe temple,  
Whether þei shulde þer-with · worschip þe kyng  
Sesar. 48 [Fol. 4 b.]  
penny.

And god axed of hem · of whome spake þe lettre,

And þe ymage ilyke · þat þere-inne stondeth ?

‘Cesaris,’ þei seide · ‘we sen hym wel vchone.’

¶ ‘*Reddite cesari*,’ quod god · ‘þat *cesari* bifalleth, 52 “Render unto  
*Et que sunt dei, deo* · or elles 3e done ille.” Cesar,” &c. (Matt.  
xxii. 21).

For riȝtful reson · shulde rewle 3ow alle,

And kynde witte be wardeyne · 3owre welthe to kepe,  
And tutour of 3oure tresore · and take it 3ow at nede ;

For housbonderye & hij · holden togideres.” 57 Reason and  
common sense  
should rule you.

þanne I frained hir faire · for hym þat hir made,

“That dongeoun in þe dale · þat dredful is of siȝte,  
What may it be to mene · ma-dame, I 3ow biseche ?” 60 Then I asked her  
what the deep  
dale meant.

¶ “þat is þe castel of care · who-so cometh þerinne  
May banne þat he borne was · to body or to soule. 61 “That is the  
castle of care,”  
she said, “the  
abode of Satan,

þerinne wonieth a wiȝte · þat wronge is yhote,

Fader of falsbed · and founded it hym-selue. 64

Adam and Eue · he egged to ille, who deceived  
Adam and Eve,

Adam and Eue · he egged to ille, 64

Adam and Eue · he egged to ille, who deceived  
Adam and Eve,

42. *ywar*] ware C. *beste*] better O.

44. *Ac*] And C. *holdeth*] kepeth

R. 45. *to—Madame*] madame to whom

R. 47. *Tho*] When C; To O. *hym*] R.

þat hym O.

49. *axed*] asked WCO. *hym*] hym

W.

50. *ilyke*] was lik W.

51. *Cesaris*] Cesares W; Cesar C.

*hym*] it W.

52. *cesari* (2)] cesar C.

53. *ille*] yuele O.

54. *riȝtful*] riȝtfully W.

55. *welthe to kepe*] wele to kype C.

57. *For*] And O. *hij*] þei O; heo

R.

58. *hir* (2)] me W.

60. *biseche*] be biseche C (*an ob-*

*vious error*).

61. *þe*] a R. *cometh*] comþ W.

62. *or*] & O.

and Cain, and  
Judas.

Conseilled caym · to kullen his brother ;  
Iudas he iaped · with iuwen siluer,  
And sithen on an eller · honged hym after. 68

He hinders love,  
and deceives all  
that trust in vain  
treasure."

Then I wondered  
who she was, and  
conjured her to  
tell me her name.

He is letter of loue · and lyeth hem alle,  
That trusten on his tresor · bitrayeth he sonnest."  
¶ Thanne had I wonder in my witt · what womman it  
were

þat such wise wordes · of holy writ shewed ; 72  
And asked hir on þe hieze name · ar heo þennes zeode,  
What she were witterli · þat wissed me so faire ?

"I am Holy  
Church, who  
received thee in  
infancy; thou  
broughtest me  
then pledges, to  
work my will."

¶ "Holicherche I am," quod she · "þow ouztest me to  
knowe,

I vnderfonge þe firste · and þe feyth tauzte, 76  
And brouztest me borwes · my bidding to fulfille,  
And to loue me lelly · þe while þi lyf dureth."

Then I prayed  
her to teach me  
Christ's will,

¶ Thanne I courbed on my knees · and cryed hir of  
grace,

And preyed hir pitously · prey for my synnes, 80  
And also [kenne] me kyndeli · on criste to bileue,

¶

for I wished for no  
treasure but my  
soul's salvation.

That I mihte worchen his wille · þat wrouzte me to man ;  
"Teche me to no tresore · but telle me þis ilke,

How I may saue my soule · þat seynt art yholden ?" 84

"Truth is the  
best of treasures ;

¶ "Whan alle tresores aren tried," quod she · "trewtwe  
is þe best ;

I do it on *deus caritas* · to deme þe soþe ;

[Fol. 5.]

It is as derworth a drewery · as dere god hym-selnen.

whoever is true

¶ Who-so is trewe of his tonge · & telleth none other,

66. *kullen*] killen WCO.

67. *iucen*] Iewes R ; Iuwes Cz.

68. *an*] C om. *hym after*] hym-  
selue W ; *hym selue, corrected to hym*  
after O.

70. *he*] he hem W. *bitrayeth he*] *has*  
bytrayed aren R.

71. *it*] sche R.

72. *shewed*] me scheued C.

73. *on*] in CO. *ar heo*] er she W ;  
ers scho C ; er sche O ; er heo R.

76. *vnderfonge*] vnderfeng W.

77. *And*] And þou O.

78. *me*] C om. *me lelly*] lely me R.

79. *courbed*] coureed C.

80. *prey*] to prey R.

81. [*kenne* WCRO] L *corruptly*  
*has* kende.

82. R omits.

85. *aren tried*] been I-tryed O.  
*quod she*] CO om.

87. *It*] þat it R. *drewery*] drury  
W.

88. *Who-so*] Who W ; He R.

And doth þe werkis þer-with · and wilneth no man  
 ille, 89 in word and work  
 is like our Lord.

He is a god bi þe gospel · agrounde and aloft,

And ylike to owre lorde · bi seynte lukes wordes.

Luke viii. 21.

þe clerkes þat knoweþ þis · shulde kenne it aboute, 92

For cristene and vneristne · clameþ it vehone.

¶ Kynges & kniȝtes · shulde kepe it bi resoun,

Kings and knights  
 should govern  
 rightfully, and  
 bind trans-  
 gressors ;

Riden and rappe down · in reumes aboute,

And taken *transgressores* · and tyen hem faste, 96

Til treuthe had ytermyned · her trespas to þe ende.

And þat is þe professioun appertly · þat appendeth for  
 knyȝtes, and to do so is  
 far better than to  
 fast on Fridays.

And nouȝt to fasten a fryday · in fyue score wynter ; 99

But holden wiþ him & with hir · þat wolden al treuthe,

And neuer leue hem for loue · ne for lacchyng of syluer. **12**

¶ For Dauid in his dayes · dubbed kniȝtes,

For David dubbed  
 knights to serve  
 Truth.

And did hem swere on here swerde · to serue treuthe  
 enere ;

And who-so passed þat poynte · was *apostata* in þe  
 ordre. 104

¶ But criste kingene kyng · kniȝted ten,

And Christ, too,  
 knighted  
 Cherubim and  
 Seraphim, and

Cherubyn and seraphin · suche seuene and an-othre,

And ȝaf hem myȝte in his maieste · þe muryer hem  
 þouȝte ;

And ouer his mene meyne · made hem archangeles, 108

Tauȝte hem bi þe Trinitee · treuthe to knowe,

taught them  
 Truth and  
 Obedience.

To be buxome at his bidyng · he bad hem nouȝte elles.

¶ Lucifer wiþ legiounes · lerned it in heuene,

Lucifer was most  
 lovely till he  
 brake obedience :

But for he brake buxunnesse · his blisse gan he tyne,

89. *doth*] O om.

90. *agrounde*] on ground O. *aloft*] on loft O ; o lofte W.

93. *clameþ*] cleymeþ W ; claymeth R.

95. *down*] adoun O.

96. *transgressores*] marked as a Latin word in WC ; *transgressouris* O.

98. *þe*] W om. *for*] to WO.

99. *a*] o W.

101. *And*] Ne R.

103. *swerde*] swerde (*printed* swerdes) W ; swerd CO ; swerdes R.

104. *þat*] þe O. *was*] is O.

105. *kingene*] kyngen C.

106. *an-othre*] oþere W.

107. *muryer*] *miswritten* murger L ; murgur R ; murier W ; muryer C.

108. *meyne*] meynge C.

110. *To*] And R.

112. *But for*] Til R.

and then he and his fellows became fiends. And fel fro þat felawship · in a fendes liknes, 113  
In-to a depe derke helle · to dwelle þere for eure ;

And mo þowsandes wiþ him · þan man couthe noumbre,

+ His fellows had trusted his lies. Lopen out wiþ Lucifer · in lothelich forme, 116

For þei leueden vpon hym · þat lyed in þis manere :

+ Isaiah xiv. 14. *Ponam pedem in aquilone, et similis ero altissimo.*

¶ And alle þat hoped it miȝte be so · none heuene miȝte hem holde,

+ The fiends fell for nine days, till God shut heaven. But fellen out in fendes liknesse · nyne dayes togideres,

Til god of his goodnesse · gan stable and stynte, 120

And garte þe heuene to stekye · and stonden in quiete.

¶ Whan thise wikked went out · wonderwise þei fellen,

Somme in eyre, somme in erthe · & somme in helle depe ;

Ac lucifer lowest · lith of hem alle ; 124

For pryde þat he pult out · his peyne hath none ende ;

And alle þat worche with wronge · wenden hij shulle

After her deth day · and dwelle wiþ þat shrewe.

But they that do after the word may be sure of Ac þo þat worche wel · as holiwritt telleth, 128

And enden as I ere seide · in treuthe, þat is þe best,

Mowe be siker þat her soule · shal wende to heuene,

þer treuthe is in Trinitee · and troneth hem alle.

For-þi I sey as I seide ere · bi sizte of þise textis, 132

Whan alle tresores arne ytried · treuthe is þe beste.

Lereth it þis lewde men · for lettred men it knowen,

þat treuthe is tresore · þe triest on erþe."

115. *wiþ*] myd W. 126. *þat*] C om. (*by mistake*). *hij*] *pei* WRO.  
117. C *omits. pedem*] *pedem* meum O. *et—altissimo*] &c. R. 127. *and*] to R.  
118. *none*] no C. 128. *Ac*] And WRC.  
120. *stable*] *stabilisse* W. 129. *ere*] erst O. *þe*] O om.  
121. *stekye*] *stekie* W ; *steke* C. 130. *soule*] *soules* W.  
122. *wonderwise*] in wonder wise 131. *and troneth*] for to saue R.  
W. 132. *þise textis*] *þis texte* C. *sizte* of] R om.  
123. *in erthe*] in þe erthe C. 133. O *omits. ytried*] *tried* W.  
124. *lith*] *liþ* yet W. 134. *it*] R om. *þis*] *þise* W ; *þise* O ; this R. *it knowen*] *ne knowen* C.

¶ “ȝet haue I no kynde knowing,” quod I · “ȝet mote  
ȝe kenne me better, 136 “But I have no  
natural know-  
ledge of it,” said I.

By what craft in my corps · it comseth and where.”

¶ “ȝow doted daffe,” quod she · “dulle arne ȝi wittes ; “Thou fool,” said  
To litel latyn ȝow leredest · lede, in ȝi ȝouthes ; she, “it is thy  
natural  
conscience,  
teaching you  
to love God,  
and leave deadly  
sin.  
*Heu michi, [quod] sterilem duxi vitam iuueni-  
lem !*

¶ It is a kynde knowyng,” quod he · “ȝat kenneth in  
ȝine herte 140

For to louye ȝi lorde · leuer ȝan ȝi-selue ;

No dedly synne to do · dey ȝouȝ ȝow sholdest :

This I trowe be treuthe · who can teche ȝe better,

† If any can teach  
you better, let  
him!

¶ Loke ȝow suffre hym to sey · and sithen lere it after.

For thus witnesseth his worde · [worche] ȝow ȝere-  
after ; 145

For trewth the telleȝ ȝat loue · is triacle of heuene ;

† Truth says that  
Love is the  
treacle of heaven.

May no synne be on him sene · ȝat vseth ȝat spise,

And alle his werkes he wrouȝte · with loue as him liste ;

And lered it Moises for ȝe leuest ȝing · and moste like  
to heuene, 149

For Love is what  
God likes best,  
and eke the  
plant of  
Peace.

And also ȝe plente of pees · moste precious of vertues.

¶ For heuene myȝte nouȝte holden it · it was so heuy  
of hym-self,

† Heaven could  
not hold it, and  
it fell to earth.

Tyl it hadde of ȝe erthe · yeten his fylle. 152

¶ And whan it haued of ȝis folde · flesshe & blode  
taken,

† But having  
taken human  
nature, it  
was as light as a  
linden-leaf.

Was neuere leef vpon lynde · liȝter ȝer-after,

136. *ȝet mote ȝe*] ye mote W. ȝe  
kenne me] I lerne R.

137. *corps*] cors W ; coors O.

138. *Here* MS. R. has lost two  
leaves. It begins again at P. ii. l. 40.

139. *lede*] leode WO. *ȝouthes*]  
thougthe C. [*quod*] This reading  
must be right, as shewn by the scansion  
of the line. It occurs in MS. Camb.  
ff. 5. 35. But LWC, and Crowley's  
text, have quia.

140. *he*] she W ; sche O. See note.

144. *lere*] here C.

145. W omits. [*worche* COC<sub>2</sub>]  
worceth L (*wrongly*).

146. *of*] in O.

148. *his*] this C. *he*] he (*printed*  
be) W.

149. *lered*] lernede O. *ȝe*] O om.

150. *ȝe*] Com. *plente*] plentee WC.  
Cf. Text A.

152. *yeten*] eten WO ; heten C.

153. *haued*] hadde WO ; had C.  
*ȝis*] ȝe O. *taken*] OC<sub>2</sub> om.

And portatyf and persant · as þe poynt of a nedle, 155  
That myzte non armure it lette · ne none heiȝ walles.

† Love is a leader  
of the angels, and  
a mediator.

¶ For þi is loue leder · of þe lordes folke of heuene,  
And a mene, as þe Maire is · bitwene þe kyng and þe  
comune ;

Riȝt so is loue a ledere · and þe lawe shapeth, 159  
Vpon man for his mysdedes · þe merciment he taxeth.

[Fol. 6.]

And for to knowe it kyndely · it comseth bi myght,  
And in þe herte þere is þe heuede · and þe heiȝ welle ;

111

¶ For in kynde knowynge in herte · þere a myzte  
bigynneth.

Love began with  
God the Father,  
who let His Son  
die for us ;

And þat falleth to þe fader · þat formed vs alle, 164

Loked on vs with loue · and lete his sone deye

Mekely for owre mysdedes · to amende vs alle ;

And ȝet wolde he hem no woo · þat wrouȝte hym þat  
peyne,

even as Christ  
prayed for His  
enemies,

But mekelich with mouthe · mercy he bisouȝte 168

To haue pite of þat poeple · þat peyned hym to deth.

¶ Here myȝtow see ensamples · in hym-selue one,

granting mercy to  
them that pierced  
his heart.

That he was miȝtful & meke · and mercy gan graunte

To hem þat hongen him an heiȝ · and his herte þirled.

Therefore I advise  
the rich to have  
pity on the poor ;  
for ' with the  
same measure,'  
&c. (Matt. vii. 2).

¶ For-thi I rede ȝow riche · haueth reuthe of þe pouere ;

Thouȝ ȝe be myȝtful to mote · beth meke in ȝowre  
werkes. 174

¶ For þe same mesures þat ȝe mete · amys other elles,  
ȝe shullen ben weyen þer-wyth · whan ȝe wende hennes ;

*Eudem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecietur  
vobis.*

For though ye be  
true in word and  
deed, except ye  
love the poor, and  
give alms,

¶ For þouȝ ȝe be trewe of ȝowre tonge · and trewliche  
wynne,

And as chaste as a childe · þat in chereche wepeth, ·

158. *bitwene*] bitwixe O.

160. *man*] a man C.

161. *myght*] nyght (!) C.

162. *heuede*] heed W.

166. *Mekely*] Mekel C.

168. *with*] bi O. *he*] W om.

170. *Here*] Here (*printed* There)  
W. *myȝtow*] myghtestow C. *en-  
samples*] ensample W ; ensaumpyle C.

172. *hongen*] hengen W.

174. *Thouȝ*] Thought C.

178. *chereche*] kerke C

- But if 3e louen lelliche · and lene þe poure,  
Such goed as god 3ow sent · godelich parteth, 180  
3e ne haue na more meryte · in masse ne in houres,  
þan Malkyn of hire maydenhode · þat no man desireth. **15**  
¶ For Iames þe gentil · iugged in his bokes,  
That faith with-oute þe faite · is ri3te no þinge worthi,  
And as ded as a dore-tre · but 3if þe dedes folwe; 185  
*Fides sine operibus mortua est, &c.*  
¶ For-thi chastite with-oute charite · worth cheyned in  
helle; so chastity  
without charity is  
but an unlighted  
lamp.  
It is as lewed as a laumpe · þat no li3te is Inne.  
¶ Many chapeleynes arne chaste · ac charite is away; Many chaplains  
are chaste, but  
have not charity;  
Aren no men auarousere þan hij · whan þei ben  
auaunced; 189  
Vnkynde to her kyn · and to alle cristene,  
Chewen here charite · and chiden after more.  
Such chastite wiþ-uten charite · worth cheyned in  
helle! 192  
¶ Many curatoures kepen hem · clene of here bodies,  
Thei ben acombred wiþ coueitise · þei konne nou3t don  
it fram hem, Curators that  
should be chaste  
are encumbered  
with avarice.  
So harde hath auarice · yhasped hem togideres.  
And þat is no treuthe of þe trinite · but treccherye of  
helle, 196  
And lernyng to lewde men · þe latter for to dele.  
¶ For-þi þis wordes · ben wryten in þe gospel,  
*Date & dabitur vobis* · for I dele 3ow alle. **16**  
And þat is þe lokke of loue · and lateth oute my grace,  
To conforte þe careful · acombred wiþ synne. 201  
¶ Loue is leche of lyf · and nexte owre lorde selue,  
And also þe graith gate · þat goth in-to heuene; Love is the

180. *goed*] good WCO.181. *more*] C om. *ne*] nor W.184. *faite*] feet W; feite O; facte  
or faite C.185. C om. *the second* as. *þe*] thy C.188. *ac*] and C.189. *hij*] þei O.196. *no*] in O (*wrongly*).200. *lateth*] leteþ WC.201. *conforte*] counforte O; con-  
forten W; confort C.202. *nexte*] nexit C.

readiest way to  
heaven;  
and Truth is the  
best of all  
treasures."

For-þi I sey as I seide · ere by þe textis, 204

Whan alle tresores ben ytryed · treuthe is þe beste.

Now haue I tolde þe what treuthe is · þat no tresore is  
bettere,

I may no lenger lenge þe with · now loke þe owre  
lorde!" 207

204. *ere—textis*] erst · bi þe trewe  
textis O.

205. *ytryed*] tried W

## PASSUS II.

*Passus secundus de visione, vt supra.*

Yet I courbed on my knees · and cryed hir of *grace*, 17  
 And seide, “mercy, Madame · for Marie loue of  
 heuene,

That bar þat blisful barne · þat bouzte vs on þe Rode,  
 Kenne me bi *somme* craftē · to knowe þe fals.” 4 to teach me how  
 to know

¶ “Loke vpon þi left half · and lo where he standeth,  
 Bothe fals and fauel · and here feres manye!” 8 Falsehood.  
 She bade me  
 turn and see him.

¶ I loked on my left half · as þe lady me taughte,  
 And was war of a womman · wortheli yclothed, 8 I looked, and,  
 first of all, beheld  
 a woman very  
 richly clothed,

Y-crounede with a corone · þe kyng hath non better.  
 Fetislich hir fyngres · were fretted with golde wyre, 12 + She wore rubies,  
 diamonds, and  
 sapphires.

And þere-on red rubyes · as red as any glede,  
 And diamantz of derrest pris · and double manere saf-  
 feres,

Orientales and ewages · enuenymes to destroye.

¶ Hire robe was ful riche · of red scarlet engreyned, [18]  
 With ribanes of red golde · and of riche stones; 16  
 Hire arraye me rauysshed · suche ricchesse saw I neuere; + Never beheld I  
 such rich array.

- TITLE. *So in* LWC; Secundus liche W.  
 Passus O. 10. corone] crowne C. hath] haes  
 1. *courbed]* courred C. C.  
 4. *to]* for to O. 11. *fretted]* fettred C; fetrid O.  
 5. *he]* she O. *standeth]* stondeþ *gold]* gol C. 13. *safferes]* sapphires W; saphyrs  
 W. C: saphers O.  
 7. *taughte]* thaughte C. 17. *saw]* sau; W.  
 8. *was]* whas C. *wortheli]* worþi-

I had wondre what she was · and whas wyf she were.

“Who is this?”  
I asked.

¶ “What is þis womman,” quod I · “so worthily a-  
tired?”

“That is Meed  
(Bribery),” she  
said, “who has  
done me much  
evil.

¶ “That is Mede þe Mayde,” quod she · “hath noyed  
me ful oft, 20

[Fol. 7.]

And ylakked my lemman · þat lewte is hoten,  
And bilowen hire to lordes · þat lawes han to kepe.

In þe popis paleys · she is pryue as my-self,  
But sothensse wolde nouȝt so · for she is a bastarde. 24

+ Her father was  
named False; and  
she is like him.

¶ For fals was hire fader · þat hath a fykel tonge,  
And neuere sothe seide · sithen he come to erthe.

¶ And Mede is manered after hym · riȝte as kynde  
axeth;

† Matt. vii. 17.

*Qualis pater, talis filius; [bona] arbor bonum  
fructum facit.*

I auȝte ben herre þan she · I cam of a better. 28

+ My father is the  
One God.

¶ Mi fader þe grete god is · and grounde of alle graces,  
O god with-oute gynnyng · & I his gode douȝter,  
And hath ȝoue me mercy · to marye with my-self;

+ Every merciful  
man is my hus-  
band.

And what man be merciful · and lelly me loue, 32  
Schal be my lorde and I his leef · in þe heiȝe heuene.

¶ And what man taketh Mede · myne hed dar I legge,  
That he shal lese for hir loue · a lappe of *caritatis*.

+ See what David  
says of men who  
take Meed.

How construeth dauid þe kynge · of men þat taketh  
Mede, 36

And men of þis molde · þat meynteneth treuthe,

And how ȝe shal saue ȝow-self · þe Sauter bereth wit-  
nesse,

+ Psal. xiv. 1  
(Vulgate).

*Domine, quis habitabit in tabernaculo tuo, &c.*

18. *she*] scho C. *whas*] whos  
WCO.

20. *hath*] hathes C.

21. *lewte*] leautee W; leaut C.

22. *han*] hathes C.

26. *come*] com WC.

27. *axeth*] askeþ WO; askes C.  
[*bona*] So in CC2; bonus LWO.

[*fructum*] fructum (*printed* fructum)  
W.

28. *auȝte*] ouȝte W. *herre*] hyere  
W; heyer O.

29. *graces*] grace C.

30. *O*] Oo (*printed* So) W. *his*  
C om.

31. *ȝoue*] yeuen W; geue C.

32. *loue*] loueþ O.

38. *shal*] shul W; schul O; sal C.  
*ȝow-sclif*] ȝow-seluen O; ȝour-self W;  
ȝowre-self C.

- ¶ And now worth þis Mede ymarried · al to a mansed  
schrewe,  
To one fals fikel-tonge · a fendes bizete ; 40  
Fauel þorw his faire speche · hath þis folke enchaunted,  
And al is lyeres ledyng · þat she is þus ywedded.  
¶ To-morwe worth ymade · þe maydenes bruydale,  
And þere miȝte þow wite, if þow wolt · which þei ben  
alle 44  
That longeth to þat lordeship · þe lasse and þe more.  
Knowe hem þere if þow canst · and kepe þi tonge,  
And lakke hem nouȝt, but lat hem worth · til lewte be † but let them  
iustice, alone.  
And haue powere to punyschen hem · þanne put forth  
þi resoun. 48
- 19**
- ¶ Now I bikenne þe criste," quod she · "and his elene  
moder, I now commend  
And lat no conscience acombte þe · for coueitise of thee to † Christ."
- ¶ Thus left me þat lady · liggyng aslepe,  
And how Mede was ymarried · in meteles me þouȝte ; 52  
þat alle þe riche retenauns · þat regneth with þe false  
Were boden to þe bridale · on bothe two sydes,  
Of alle maner of men · þe mene and þe riche.  
To marie þis maydene · was many man assembled, 56 † Thither were  
As of kniȝtes and of clerkis · and other comune poeple, knights, clerks,  
As sysours and sompnours · Shireues and here clerkes, sheriffs, beadles,  
Bedelles and Bailliues · and brokoures of chaff[a]re, [Fol. 7 b.]
39. *alto*] vn-to W. *mansed*] mansed  
W (see Mr Wright's note); *maysed*  
C; *in* MS. O *mansed is glossed by*  
cursid. *schrewe*] sherewe W; O *om.*  
40. *Here* MS. R *begins again.*  
*fikel*] fikel of R. *a*] and C.  
41. *þorw*] thourth C. *his*] hir C.  
*hath*] hayth C.  
43. *ymade*] ymaked W; ymaad O.  
*maydenes*] maydesnesse (!) C. *bruy-*  
*dale*] bridale WC; brydale O.  
44. *miȝte þow*] myȝtow W; myȝtist  
þou O. *wolt*] wilt WBO.
45. *longeth*] longen WO.  
46. *kepe*] kepe þow W; kepe wel  
O; kepen R.  
47. *lewte*] leaute W; leute O; leaut C.  
48. *þanne*] þat C.  
50. *lat*] at R.  
53. *retenauns*] retenaunce WO;  
retenauntz C; retenawans R.  
54. *boden*] bede R.  
56. *was*] were W. *man*] men W.  
58. *sompnours*] somonours W;  
sompnours RO.  
59. *chaffare*] WCO] chaffre L.

- † advocates, and many others. Forgoeres and vitailleurs · and vokates of þe arches ; 60  
I can nouzt rekene þe route · þat ran aboute mede.
- † Of these, Simony and Civil were the principal. ¶ Ac Symonye and eyuile · and sisoures of courtes  
Were moste pryue with Mede · of any men, me þouzte.
- Then Flattery led Meed to Falsehood. Ac fauel was þe first · þat fette hire out of boure, 64  
And as a brokour brouzte hir · to be with fals enioigned.  
Whan Symonye and eyuile · seiþ here beire wille,  
Thei assented for siluer · to sei as bothe wolde.
- [26] † Then Liar leapt forth with a charter. Thanne lepe lyer forth, and seide · “ lo here ! a chartre,  
That gyle with his gret othes · gaf hem togidere,” 69  
And preide eyuile to se · and symonye to rede it.
- Simony and Civil unfold the deed. Thanne Symonye and eyuile · stonden forth bothe,  
And vnfoldeth þe fessment · þat fals hath ymaked, 72  
And þus bigynneth þes gomes · to greden ful heiz :—  
“ *Sciant presentes & futuri, &c.*”
- CARTA. “ Know all men that + Meed is married for her goods ; ¶ Witeth and witnesseth · þat wonieth vpon þis erthe,  
þat Mede is y-maried · more for here goodis,  
þan for ani vertue or fairenesse · or any free kynde. 76  
Falsenesse is faine of hire · for he wote hire riche ;  
And fauel with his fikel speche · fesseth bi þis chartre  
To be prynees in pryde · and pouerte to dispise,  
To bakbite, and to bosten · and bere fals witesse, 80  
To seerne and to scolde · and sclaudere to make,  
Vnboxome and holde · to breke þe ten hestes ;—  
¶ And þe Eirdome of enuye · and Wratthe togideres,  
With þe chastelet of chest · and chater yng-out-of-resoun,  
and the county of Covetousness ; þe counte of coueitise · and alle þe costes aboute, 85

60. *vokates*] aduokettes W.  
62. *Ac*] And C.  
63. *me*] R om.  
64. *Ac*] And C.  
65. O omits.  
66. *beire*] so also C; boþer (printed bothe) W; boþer O; bethere R.  
67. *Thei*] And R. *sei*] seggen R.  
68. *lepe*] leep W; leup R.  
71. *standen*] stondesth R.  
72. *fessment*] fessament C.  
73. *gomes*] gromes C. *to*] at R.
75. *y-maried*] married C.  
76. *vertue*] vertus C. or (1)] of CO. or (2)] or for O. *kynde*] kyne C; kende R.  
78. *speche*] felaw O.  
79. *prynces*] pryncesse O.  
82. R *begins*, Bold and vnboxum.  
84. *chastelet*] chastilet WO. *cheste*] cleste C; gestes R. *resoun*] tyme R.  
85. *counte*] countee WCRO. *costes*] coostes O.

That is, vsure and auarice · alle I hem graunte,  
In bargaines and in brokages · with al þe [borghe] of  
theft ;—

¶ And al þe lordeship of lecherye · in lenthe and in + also the lordship  
of Lechery."  
brede, 88

As in werkes and in wordes · and waitynges with eies,  
And in wedes and in wisshynges · and with ydel  
thouȝtes,

There as wille wolde · and wer[k]manship failleth." 91

¶ Glotonye he gaf hem eke · and grete othes togydere, + Gluttony is  
also granted to  
them,  
And alday to drynke · at dyuerse tauernes,  
And there to iangle and to iape · and iugge here euene  
cristene,

And in fastyng-dayes to frete · ar ful tyme were. 95

And þanne to sitten and soupen · til slepe hem assaille, + and all kinds of  
Sloth;  
[Fol. 8.]  
And [breden] as burgh-swyn · and bedden hem esily,  
Tyl sleuth and slepe · slyken his sides ;

And þanne wanhope to awake hym so · with no wille  
to amende,

For he leueth be lost · þis is here last ende. 100

¶ And þei to haue and to holde · and here eyres after, to haue and to  
hold all their  
lives,  
A dwellyng with þe deuel · and dampned be for eure,  
Wip al þe purtenaunces of purgatorie · in-to þe pyne of  
helle.

3eldyng for þis þinge · at one ȝeres ende, 104 they yielding  
their souls to  
Satan at a year's  
end.  
Here soules to Sathan · to suffre with hym peynes,  
And with him to wonye with wo · whil god is in  
heuene. 21

87. [borghe CR] burghe WO ; L has borgthe.

89. waitynges] in waitynges W ; wattynges C. eies] eizes W ; yen O.

90. wedes] wedynges R. in (2)] O om.

91. wolde] ne wolde LC ; but ne must be omitted, as in WRO ; see note. workmanship] wermanship L (by mistake ; WCRO preserve the k)

95. in] with R. ar] er WCO.

96. soupen] to soupe O.

97. [breden WCO] bredun LR. as] as a R.

99. hym] hem W. to (2)] it C.

100. be lost] he be lost O ; be yloste R. here] hir WC ; his R.

103. purtenaunces] purtenance CO ; appurtinaunces W. of (2)] in O.

104. ȝeres ende] dayes tyme W.

105. to (2)] and R.

106. with] in CRO.

- The witnesses  
were Wrong,  
Piers the  
Pardoner,  
Bette the beadle,  
and many others.
- ¶ In witesse of which þing · wronge was þe first,  
And Pieres þe pardonere · of paulynes doctrine, 108  
Bette þe bedel · of Bokyngham-shire,  
Rainalde þe Reue · of Rotland sokene,  
Munde þe Mellere · and many moo other.
- The deed was then  
sealed and signed.
- “ In þe date of þe deuel · þis dede I assele, 112  
Bi sizte of Sire Symonye · and cyuyles leue.”
- But Theology was  
wroth, and said  
to Civil, “Wo  
betide thee!
- ¶ þenne tened hym theologie · whan he þis tale  
herde,  
And seide to cyuile · “now sorwe mot þow haue, 115  
Such [weddynges] to worche · to wratthe with treuthe ;  
And ar þis weddyng be wrouzte · wo þe bityde !
- Meed should be  
wedded  
† to Truth.
- ¶ For Mede is moylere · of amendes [engendred,]  
And god graunteth to gyf · Mede to treuthe, 119  
And þow hast gyuen hire to a gyloure · now god gyf  
þe sorwe !
- Remember the  
text (Luke x. 7).
- Thi tixt telleth þe nouzt so · treuthe wote þe sothe,  
For *dignus est operarius* · his hyre to haue,  
And þow hast fest hire to fals · fy on þi lawe ! 123
- † Thou livest by  
lying.
- For al by lesynges þow lyuest · and lecherouse werkes,  
Symonye and þi-self · schenden holicherche,  
þe notaries and 3ee · noyeth þe peple,  
3e shul abiggen it bothe · bi god þat me made !  
Wel 3e witen, wernardes · but if 3owre witte faille, 128  
That fals is faithlees · and fikel in his werkes,
- 22**  
But ye shall  
abide it † here-  
after.  
Ye well know  
Falsehood is a
107. *which*] wilch C; þis R.  
*was*] C om.  
110. *Rainalde*] Reynald WCR;  
Reynold O. *Rotland*] Rutland W;  
Rutlande C; Rokelond R; Ruteland O.  
111. *Munde*] Maude WCO.  
*mellere*] millere W; mylner O.  
112. *In þe*] In R. *I assele*] I en-  
sele W; is yseled C.  
113. *and*] at R.  
114. *tened*] teneth R; torned C.  
*herde*] harde C; yherde R.  
115. *to*] vn-to W.  
116. [*weddynges* WRO] wend-  
ynges LC. Cf. Text A.  
117. *ar*] er WCO.
118. *moylere*] muliere W; Moilere  
C; mulirie O. [*engendred* WO] en-  
gendreth LCR.  
119. *graunteth*] graunted CO.  
121. *Here* MSS. Bodley 814, Cotton  
Calig. A. xi., and B. M. Addit. 10574  
(*which up to this point have followed  
the C-text*), *begin to agree with the  
B-text*. See Note.  
123. *fest*] fast R.  
124. *lecherouse*] lechores R.  
125. *schenden*] scheden (*by mis-  
take for schenden*) C.  
126. *noyeth*] noyen WO; noythis  
C; nuyzet R.  
129. *fikel*] fals R.

- And was a bastarde y-bore · of belsabubbes kynne.  
 And Mede is moylere · a mayden of gode,  
 And myzte kisse þe kyng · for cosyng, an she wolde.  
 ¶ For-þi worcheth bi wisdome · and bi witt also, 133  
 And ledeth hire to londoun · þere lawe is yshewed,  
 If any lawe wil loke · þei ligge togederes.  
 And þouȝ Iustices iugge hir · to be ioigned with fals,  
 ȝet beth war of weddyng · for witty is truthe, 137 [Fol. 8 b.]  
 And conscience is of his conseille · and knoweth ȝow  
 vchone ;  
 And if he fynde ȝow in defaute · and with þe fals  
 holde,  
 It shal bisitte ȝowre soules · ful soure atte laste !” 140  
 ¶ Here-to assenteth cyuile · ac symonye ne wolde,  
 Tyl he had siluer for his seruise · and also þe no-  
 taries.  
 ¶ Thanne fette fauel forth · floreyne ynowe,  
 And bad gyle to gyue · golde al aboute, 144  
 And namelich to þe notaries · þat hem none ne faille,  
 And fesse false-witnes · with floreines ynowe ;  
 “ For he may mede amaistrye · and maken at my  
 wille.”  
 ¶ Tho þis golde was gyue · grete was þe þonkyng 148  
 To fals and to fauel · for her faire ȝiftes,  
 And comen to conforte · fram care þe fals,  
 And seiden, “ certis sire · cesse shal we neuere  
 Til Mede be þi wedded wyf · þorw wittis of vs alle. 152  
 For we haue Mede amaistried · with owre mery speche,

traitor, and  
 Beelzebub's  
 bastard son ;  
 but Meed  
 (Reward) might  
 kiss the king.

Then take her to  
 London, and see  
 if the law will  
 permit this.

If Conscience  
 find this out,  
 it will go hard  
 with you at the  
 last.”

23  
 Then Flattery  
 fetched out  
 florins, and bade  
 Guile give it to  
 the notaries.

Great were the  
 thanks for these  
 bribes.

130. *was*] as R. *y-bore*] yborne C; Iborn O.  
 131. *is*] O *om.* *moylere*] muliere W; mulere O.  
 132. *an*] and WCRO. *she*] he R.  
 133. *witt*] witti O.  
 134. *lawe*] it W.  
 136. *with*] to W.  
 137. *beth*] be W. *weddyng*] þe weddyng R.  
 140. *soure*] *so spelt in* LWCRO.  
*atte*] at þe W; at C.  
 141. *ac*] and C.  
 142. *Tyl*] Thil C. *his*] this R.  
 145. *noon ne*] non ne R; noone O.  
 146. *witnes*] witnesse CRO; witnesses W.  
 147. *he*] þei WCO.  
 148. *gyue*] y-gyue W; Igyue R.  
 152. *þi wedded*] weddid þi O.  
 153. *haue*] han O. *with*] thorȝ R.

- Meed consents to  
go to London. That she graunteth to gon · with a gode wille,  
To Londoun to loke · zif þat þe lawe wolde  
Iugge zow ioyntly · in ioye for euere.” 156
- Then were False-  
hood and Flattery  
glad, and bade all  
be ready to go to  
Westminster. ¶ Thanne was falsenesse fayne · and fauel as blithe,  
And leten sompne alle segges · in schires aboute,  
And bad hem alle be bown · beggeres and othere,  
To wenden wyth hem to Westmynstre · to witnessse þis  
dede. 160
- Then they all  
wanted horses. ¶ Ac þanne cared þei for caplus · to kairen hem þider,  
And fauel fette forth þanne · folus ynowe ;  
And sette Mede vpon a Schyreue · shodde al newe, ·  
And fals sat on a sisoure · þat softlich trotted, 164  
And fauel on a flat[er]ere · fetislich atired.
- 21 Meed was set on  
a sheriff's back,  
and Falschood  
on an assizer's ;  
Flattery rides  
upon + a flatterer, ¶ Tho haued notaries none · annoyed þei were,  
For Symonye and cyuile · shulde on hire fete gange.
- but Simony and  
Civil had to go on  
foot. ¶ Ac þanne swore Symonye · and cyuile bothe, 168  
That sompnoures shulde be saddled · and serue hem  
vchone,
- Summoners are to  
be saddled, And lat apparaille þis prouisoires · in palfreis wyse ;—  
“Sire Symonye hym-seluen · shal sitte vpon here  
bakkes.
- and provisors and  
deans to be used  
as horses, ¶ Denes and suddenes · drawe zow togideres, 172  
Erechdekenes and officiales · and alle zowre Registreres,  
Lat sadel hem with siluer · owre synne to suffre,  
As anoutrie and deuou[r]ses · and derne vsurye,
- + and to be sad-  
dled with siluer.  
[Fol. 9.]

154. *she*] sho C; heo R. *to gon*] hadden O.  
goo R. 168. *Ac*] And C.
155. *þat*] W om. *þe*] R om. 169. *sompnoures*] somonours W.
158. *sompne*] somone W. *alle*] *vchone*] echone WC; ichoon O.  
alle þe R. 170. *þis*] þise W; þe R; þeise O.
159. *othere*] otheres R. 171. *hym-seluen*] hym-self W ·  
160. *hym*] hym R. *þis*] þe R. hym-selue R.
161. *Ac*] And C. *kairæn*] carien 172. *suddenes*] sudenes O; south-  
WC. denes WR; subdeanes C.
162. *folus*] foles W; foolis CO. 173. *officiales*] deknas · officiales R.  
163. *vpon*] vpp R. *shodde*] shoed *alle*] C om.  
W; I-schoud R; schod O. 175. *anoutrie*] deuoutrie R. *de-  
uourses*] so in C; diuores W; de-  
uores O; *but* LR *have* deuoses.  
165. *flaterere*] So in WCRO; L  
*has* flatere.  
166. *haued*] hadde W; had C;  
*vsurye*] vsure RO.

- To bere bischopes aboute · abroad in visytynge. 176
- ¶ Paulynes pryues · for pleyntes in þe consistorie, "Pauline's friends shall serve my-self," said Civil.
- Shul serue my-self · þat cyuile is nempned ;
- And cartesadel þe comissarie · owre carte shal he lede, "Yoke our commissary,"
- And fecchen vs vytailles · at *fornicatores*. 180
- ¶ And maketh of lyer a longe carte · to lede alle þese othere, and make of Liar a long cart."
- As Freres and faitours · þat on here fete remmen." Plowman 29
- And thus fals and fauel · fareth forth togideres, Thus all fare forth together.
- And Mede in þe myddes · and alle þise men after. 184
- ¶ I haue no tome to telle · þe taille þat hem folweth, Of many maner man · þat on þis molde libbeth ;
- Ac gyle was forgoer · and gyed hem alle. Guile led the way ; but soon Soothness spurred on, and went and told Conscience.
- ¶ Sothenesse seiþ hym wel · and seide but a litel, 188
- And priked his palfrey · and passed hem alle,
- And come to þe kynges courte · and conscience it tolde,
- And conscience to þe kyng · carped it after.
- ¶ "Now by cryst," *quod* þe kyng · "and I cacche myzte 192
- Fals or fauel · or any of his feres,
- I wolde be wroke of þo wrecches · þat worcheth so ille,
- And don hem hange by þe hals · and alle þat hem meynnteneth !
- Shal neure man of molde · meynprise þe leste, 196
- But rihte as þe lawe wil loke · late falle on hem alle."
- ¶ And comanded a constable · þat come atte furst, I command the constable to attach them,
- To "attache þo tyrauntz · for eny thyng, I hote, fetter Falsehood,
- And fettereth fast falsnesse · for enykyntes 3iftes, 200

177. *pryues*] pryuees W; preues O. þe] WC om.

179. *þe*] oure O.

181. *maketh*] make C. *longe*] lang W; lange R. *þese*] þise WC; þes R.

182. *Freres*] fobberes R. *faitours*] faitouris O.

184. *men*] other CO.

185. *tome*] toom O. *hem folweth*] hire folwed W.

186. W omits.

188. *hym*] hem WR. *a*] W om.

190. *come*] com WR.

193. *or*] other R (*in both places*).

194. *þo*] þe C.

196. *of*] of þis W; on O. *leste*] leeste WO.

197. *wil*] wol WC; wole O.

198. *eome*] com W. *atte*] atte þe R; at C.

200. *enykyntes*] any kyntes WC; any kyns O.

- and cut off Guile's head.  
Let not Liar escape."
- Dread was at the door, and heard the doom, and bade Falsehood flee.
- Then fled Falsehood and Guile;  
[Fol. 9 b.] but tradesmen prayed Guile to keep their shops for them.
- Liar leapt away through by-lanes, being nowhere welcome.
- But pardoners took him in, washed him, clothed him, and ~~27~~ sent him to church with pardons.
- And gurdeth of gyles hed · and lat hym go no further.  
And ȝif ȝe lacche lyer · late hym nouȝt ascapen  
Er he be put on þe pilorye · for eny preyere, I hote ;  
And bryngeth Mede to me · maugre hem alle." 204
- ¶ Drede atte dore stode · and þe dome herde,  
And how þe kyngre comaunded · constables and  
seriantz,  
Falsenesse and his felawschip · to fettren an to bynden.  
þanne drede went wirtliche · and warned þe fals, 208  
And bad hym flee for fere · and his felawes alle.
- ¶ Falsenesse for fere þanne · fleiȝ to þe freres,  
And gyle doþ hym to go · agast for to dye. 211  
Ac marchantz mette with hym · and made hym abide,  
And bishetten hym in here shope · to shewen hero  
ware,  
And apparilled hym as a prentice · þe poeple to serue.
- ¶ Ligtliche lyer · lepe away þanne,  
Lorkyngre thorw lanes · to-lugged of manye. 216  
He was nawhere welcome · for his manye tales,  
Ouer al yhowted · and yhote trusse ;  
Tyl pardoneres haued pite · and pulled hym in-to  
house.  
They wessen hym and wyped hym · and wonden hym  
in cloutes, 220  
And sente hym with seles · on sondayes to cherches,  
And gaf pardoun for pens · poundmel aboute.
202. *ȝe*] thou C. *lacche*] laccheth R. *lice* W.  
203. *ȝe*] C om.  
204. *bryngeth*] brynght C. *maugre*] maugree W; maugrey O.  
205. *atte*] at þe WCO.  
206. *comaunded*] demede R. *seriantz*] *sergeantz* W; *sergeantz* C; *sergeauntis* O.  
207. *an*] and WCRO.  
210. *fleiȝ*] fleiȝt R; fleis C.  
212. *Ac*] And C.  
213. *shope*] shoppes W.  
214. *And*] W om. *apparilled*] apparayleden O. *a prentice*] Appren-
- lice* W.  
215. *lepe*] leep W; leepe O.  
216. *Lorkyngre*] Lurkyngre W.  
217. *nawhere*] nowher W; nawere R; nouȝwher O; naught where C.  
218. *yhowted*] *so in* LC; I-howted RO; y-honted or y-honted (*printed* y-honted) W.  
219. *haued*] hadde W; hadden O.  
220. *wonden*] wounnden WCO. *hym*] C om.  
221. *sente*] senten W; sent R. *cherches*] kyrkees C; chirche O.  
222. *gaf*] yeuen W. *pens*] pans R.

- ¶ Thanne loured leches · and lettres þei sent,  
þat he sholde wonye with hem · wateres to loke. 224  
Spiceres spoke with hym · to spien here ware,  
For he couth of here craft · and knewe many gomme.  
¶ Ac mynst[r]alles and messageres · mette with hym  
ones,  
And helden hym an half-ȝere · and elleuene dayes. 228  
¶ Freres with faire speche · fetten hym þennes,  
And for knowyng of comeres · coped hym as a frere.  
Ac he hath leue to lepe out · as oft as hym liketh,  
And is welcome whan he wil · and woneth wyth  
hem oft. 232  
¶ Alle fledden for fere · and flowen in-to hernes,  
Sauē Mede þe Mayde · na mo durst abide.  
Ac trewli to telle · she trembled for drede,  
And ek wept and wronge · whan she was attached. 236
- Then leeches  
begged him to  
dwell with them;  
and spicers asked  
him to be  
shopkeeper.  
Minstrels  
entertained him  
half a year;  
but Friars fetched  
him thence, and  
clothed him as a  
Friar.  
Thus all fled into  
corners for fear,  
and only Meed  
durst stay; and  
even she wept  
when taken  
prisoner.

225. *spoke*] spoken O; spoken C.  
WR; spake C. *with*] to R. 231. *Ac*] And C.  
226. *of here*] on here R; of hir 234. *na mo*] nama C; no moo O;  
WC. *gommes*] gummes R. no man R.  
227. *Ac*] And WC. 235. *Ac*] And C. *she—drede*] heo  
228. *an half-ȝere*] half a ȝere R. tremeled for fere R.  
229. *with*] with hir C. *þennes*] 236. *ek*] al-so R. *whan*] R om.  
þennes (*printed* þennes) W; theyunes *she*] heo R.

## PASSUS III.

*Passus tertius.*

28

Now is Meed, all  
alone, brought to  
the king.

Now is Mede þe Mayde · and namo of hem alle 1  
With bedellus & wiþ bayllyues · brouzt bifor þe  
kyng.

The kyng called a clerke · can I nouzt his name,  
To take Mede þe mayde · and make hire at ese. 4

"I shall ask her,"  
said the king,  
"whom she  
wishes to wed;  
and perhaps I  
may forgive her."

"I shal assaye hir my-self · and sothelich appose  
What man of þis molde · þat hire were leueste.  
And if she worche bi my witte · and my wille folwe,  
I wil forgyue hir þis gilte · so me god help!" 8

So a clerke  
brought her to  
the chamber.

¶ Curteysliche þe clerke þanne · as þe Kyng hight,  
Toke Mede bi þe Middel · and brouzte hir in-to  
chaumbre,

And þere was myrthe and mynstralceye · Mede to plesse.

[Fol. 10.]

¶ They þat wonyeth in Westmynstre · worschiped hir  
alle; 12

Gladly the  
Justices went to  
see her, and said,

Gettelliche wiþ ioye · þe Iustices somme  
Busked hem to þe boure · þere þe birde dwelled,

TITLE; Passus tertius O; Passus  
iijus L; Passus Tertius de visione,  
C; to which W adds vt supra; and R  
adds petri plowman, vt supra, &c.

OBS. Occasional readings from MS.  
B (Bodley 814) are given in lines 1-86;  
after which it is more closely collated.  
See Note.

2. wiþ] BO om. bayllyues] baillies W;  
baylifs O; baillifs C. brouzt] ybrouzt RB.

5. sothelich] couthliche R.

6. þis] C om. molde] world RB.

7. B omits. my (1)] W om.

8. þis gilte] þis gultes R; þe gilt B.

9. þanne] C om. hight] hym hyzt B.

10. into] in O; to B.

11. to] forto B.

12. worschiped] worschipeden O;  
worshipeþ WB.

13. somme] comen O; sone B.

14. hem] hym B. birde] burde W;  
buyrde R; berde B; bryde O; bred Cz.

- To conforte hire kyndely · by clergise leue,  
 And seiden, “mourne nought, Mede · ne make þow no  
 sorwe, 16 “Mourn not, Meed, we will get thee clear off.”
- For we [wil] wisse þe kyng · and þi wey shape,  
 To be wedded at þi wille · and where þe leue liketh,  
 For al conscience caste · or craft, as I trowe !”
- ¶ Mildeliche Mede þanne · mereyed hem alle 20 Then Meed thanked them all, and gave them gold cups and ruby rings.  
 Of þeire gret goodnesse · and gaf hem vchone  
 Coupes of clene golde · and coppis of siluer,  
 Rynge with rubies · and riches manye,  
 The leste man of here meyne · a motoun of golde. 24
- Thanne lauzte þei leue · þis lordes, at Mede.
- ¶ With that comen clerkis · to conforte hir þe same,  
 And beden hire be blithe · “for we beth þine owne,  
 For to worche þi wille · þe while þow myzte laste.” 28 Then came clerks, and said, “Be blithe, Meed, we will work thy will.”  
 Hendeliche heo þanne · bihight hem þe same,  
 To “loue þow lelli · and lordes to make,  
 And in þe consistorie atte courte · do calle þowre names ;  
 Shal no lewdnesse lette · þe leode þat I louye, 32 “Naught shall prevent one whom I love from being  
 That he ne worth first auanced · for I am biknowen  
 þere konnyng clerkes · shul klokke bihynde.” 30 advanced.”  
 ¶ þanne come þere a confessoure · coped as a Frere,  
 To Mede þe mayde · he mellud þis wordes, 36 Then came a confessor, and said,  
 And seide ful softly · in shrifte as it were,  
 “Theiȝ lewed men and lered men · had leyne by þe  
 bothe, “Though learned and lay had all lain by thee, I would assoil thee  
 And falsnesse haued yfolwed þe · al þis fyfty wyntre,

17. [wil R] willen B ; wol W ; LCO C ; lely R ; leely B.  
 om. shape] make B.

18. B omits. leue] leaf W.

19. conscience] Consciencis W.  
 caste—craft] crafte · and cast R ;  
 cast a craft B.

21. þeire] hire W ; her O.

22. coppis] cuppes RO ; pecis B.

27. beden] biden C.

28. þe—laste] while our lif lasteþ B.

29. heo] sho C ; sche O ; she B.

30. þow] hem WCOB. lely] lealy

C ; lely R ; leely B.

31. And] O om. consistorie] con-  
 storie RB. þowre] hire W. names]  
 name O.

33. ne] R om. auanced] vaused R.

34. klokke] so in LWCROB.

35. come] cam W ; com RB. coped]  
 ycoped R ; caped C.

36. mellud] melled C ; mellid B ;

mened W ; mededeð O.

37. softly] sotely R.

39. B omits. falsnesse] falsede R.

for a load of  
wheat." I shal assoille þe my-selue · for a seme of whete, 40

And also be þi bedeman · and bere wel þi message,  
Amonges kniȝtes and clerkis · conscience to torne."

Then Meed knelt  
to him, and  
shrove her, and  
gave him a noblo. ¶ Thanne Mede for here mysdedes · to þat man kneled,  
And shroue hire of hire shrewednesse · shamelees, I  
trowe, 44

Tolde hym a tale · and toke hym a noble,  
Forto ben hire bedeman · and hire brokour als.

Then he assoiled  
her, and said that  
if she would glaze  
a window, she  
should be saved. ¶ Thanne he assoiled hir sone · and sithen he seyde,  
"We han a wyndowe a wirchyng · wil sitten vs [ful]  
heigh ; 48

Woldestow glase þat gable · and grane þere-inne þi  
name,

Siker sholde þi soule be · heuene to haue."

[Fol. 10 b.]

"Wist I that," quod þat womman · "I wolde nouȝt  
spare

She said that,  
were that only  
sure, she would  
+ be his friend.

For to be ȝowre frende, frere · and faille ȝow neure 52

Whil ȝe loue lordes · þat lechery haunteþ,  
And lakkeþ nouȝt ladis · þat loueþ wel þe same.

+ "Lechery,"  
said she, "is a  
frailty of the  
flesh.

It is a frelete of flesche · ȝe fynde it in bokes,  
And a course of kynde · wher-of we komen alle ; 56

Who may scape þe sklaundre · þe skaþe is sone  
amended ;

It is synne of [þe] seuene · sonnest relessed.

¶ Haue mercy," quod Mede · "of men þat it haunte,

+ Be not hard on  
those who  
practise it, and I  
will glaze your  
windows."

And I shal keure ȝowre kirke · ȝowre cloystre do maken,  
Wowes do whitten · and wyndowes glasen, 61

Do peynten and purtraye · and paye for þe makyng,

42. *torne*] turne ROB.

44. *shroue*] shrof WR; shroof B.

47. *he seyde*] a sayde R.

48. *a* (2)] in W. [ful] So in WCROB; L has wel. Cf. Text A.

51—63. R has only these four lines—

Wist I þat, quat; mede · þere nys wyn-  
dow no wowȝ,

þat y ne wolde make and amende · it  
with of myne,

And my name write · openliche þere-

Inne,

þat vch a segge schal I-se · Ich am  
suster to ȝow alle.

55. *a*] W retains a, omitted in the  
printed copy. ȝe] þei B.

57. *þe* (1)] W om.

58. B omits. [þe] inserted in  
WOC2; LC om. *sonnest*] is sonnest  
O. *relessed*] for-gyuene C.

60. *keure*] keure O; kouere C;  
couere W. ȝowre (2)] & ȝoure O.

That eury segge shal seyn · I am sustre of 3owre hous.”

31

¶ Ae god to alle good folke · suche *grayunge* defendeth, But God forbids such painting of windows.

To writen in wyndowes · of here wel dedes, 65  
On auenture pruyde be peynted þere · and pompe of þe  
workle ;

For crist knoweþ þi conscience · and þi kynde wille, † For Christ knows thy conscience.  
And þi coste and þi coueitise · and who þe catel ouzte.

¶ For-þi I lere 3ow, lordes · leueþ suche werkes, 69  
To writen in wyndowes · of 3owre wel dedes,  
Or to greden after goddis men · whan 3e delen doles ;  
An auenture 3e han 3owre hire here · and 3oure heuene  
als ; 72

*Nesciat sinistra quid faciat dextra.*

Lat nouzte þi left half · late [ne] rathe, But remember ye the text, Matt. vi. 3.

Wyte what þow worchest · with þi riȝt syde ;  
For þus bit þe gospel · gode men do here almesse.

¶ Meires and maceres · that menes ben bitwene 76  
þe kyng and þe *comune* · to kepe þe lawes,  
To punyschen on pillories · and pynynge stoles  
Brewesteres and bakesteres · hocheres and cokes ;

For þise aren men on þis molde · þat moste harme For they defraud the poor that buy by retail.  
worcheth 80

To þe pore peple · þat parcel-mele buggen.

¶ For they poyssoun þe peple · priueliche and oft, 32

Thei rychen þorw regraterye · and rentes hem buggen  
With þat þe pore peple · shulde put in here wombe ;

For toke þei on trewly · þei tymbred nouzt so heiȝe, 85 Were they true men, they would not be so rich.  
Ne bouzte non burgages · be 3e ful certeyne.

63. *seyn*] seye WCO.

64. *Ae*] And C.

66. *On*] An W ; And CR ; In B.  
*peynted*] ypeynted R.

67. *crist*] god R. *kynde*] kende R.

68. *And*] R om.

72. *An*] On WCO ; In B. *han*] haue W.

73. [*ne*] so in WCRB ; LO *have* no.  
Cf. Text A.

75. *For*] And O. *bit*] hitt R ; bid-

*diȝ* B. *In W* *miswritten* by, as  
*printed*.

77. *kepe*] kepe wel O.

78. *on*] vppon R.

79. *bakesteres*] baxters C.

80. *on*] vppon R ; of B.

82. *For—poyssoun*] And also poy-  
sene R. *poyssoun*] enpoisoned W ;  
punyschen O.

83. *buggen*] biggen WO ; bieggan B.

86. *burgages*] burgage R.

- But Meed advised the mayor to take bribes,  
[Fol. 11.]
- and to suffer them to cheat.
- But Solomon thus speaks against all receivers of bribes; (see Job xv. 34).
- This Latin means, that fire shall consume the tabernacles of bribery.
- Then the king sent for Meed, who was brought with mirth and song.
- Then the king courteously spake thus:
- "Never hast thou done worse than now; but do so no more.
- I have a knight named Conscience; wilt thou marry him?"
87. *Ac*] And C.  
89. *or*] And B. *pens*] pans R.  
90. *or other*] other othere R.  
91. *loue*] lord R.  
95. *thynke*] *written* thynko in L; þynke W; thenke CRO. *accipiunt munera*] R om.  
96. O omits. *ledes*] lede R.  
97. *That*] þat is O. [*brenne* WCOB] *preferable to berne, as in L.*  
98. *þe homes*] homes W. [þat WCROB] L om.  
99. *zerezynes*] zereziftes R; zereziftes C. *offices*] office R.
100. *fro*] fro þe W.  
101. *alswythe*] as swiþe WC; also swiþe B. *seriauntes*] sergeauntz W; sergeauntes CO; seruauntis B.  
102. *That*] And W.  
104. *melleth*] he meneþ W.  
106. *Ac*] And C.  
107. [þe] þee WO; þe R; þo (*by mistake for þe*) CB; L om. Cf. Text A. þat] þis O.  
108. *do*] to do R.  
109. *bizunde* LR] biyonde WCO.  
110. *wyff*] wyue RB.
- ¶ Ac Mede þe Mayde · þe Maire hath bisouzte,  
Of alle suche sellers · syluer to take, 88  
Or present; with-oute pens · as peeces of siluer,  
Ringes or other richesse · þe regrateres to maynetene.
- ¶ "For my loue," quod that lady · "loue hem vchone,  
And soffre hem to selle · somdele azeins resoun." 92
- ¶ Salamon þe sage · a sarmoun he made,  
For to amende Maires · and men þat kepen lawes,  
And tolde hem þis teme · þat I telle thynke ;  
*Ignis deuorabit tabernacula eorum qui libenter  
accipiunt munera, &c.*
- Amonge þis lettered ledes · þis latyn is to mene, 96  
That fyre shal falle, and [brenne] · al to blo askes  
The houses and þe homes · of hem [þat] desireth  
Ziftes or zerezynes · bi-cause of here offices.
- ¶ The kynge fro conseilie cam · and called after Mede,  
And ofsent hir alswythe · with seriauntes manye, 101  
That brouzten hir to bowre · with blisse and with ioye.
- ¶ Curteisliche þe kynge þanne · comsed to telle,  
To Mede þe mayde · melleth þise wordes : 104  
"Vnwittily, womman ! · wrouzte hastow oft,  
Ac worse wrouztestow neure · þan þo þow fals toke.  
But I forgyue [þe] þat gilte · and graunte þe my grace ;  
Hennes to þi deth day · do so namore ! 108
- ¶ I haue a knyzte, conscience · cam late fro bizunde ;  
Zif he wilneth þe to wyf · wyltow hym haue ?"

- “Ȝe, lorde,” *quod* þat lady · “lorde forbede elles ! 111 “Yes,” said she,  
But I be holely at ȝowre heste · lat hange me soue !” “I will do your  
will.”
- ¶ And þanne was conscience calde · to come and appiere **34**  
Bifor þe Kynge and his consaille · as clerkes and othere. Then was  
Knelynge conscience · to þe kynge louted, 115 Conscience called,  
To wite what his wille were · and what he do shulde. who knelt and  
asked the king’s  
will.
- ¶ “Woltow wedde þis womman,” *quod* þe kynge · “ȝif 117 “Wilt thou wed  
this woman ?”  
said the king.  
I wil assente, 117
- For she is fayne of þi felawship · for to be þi make ?”
- ¶ *Quod* conscience to þe kynge · “cryst it me forbede ! “Nay, Christ  
forbid !” quoth  
Conscience.  
Ar I wedde suche a wyf · wo me bityde ! 120  
For she is frele of hir feith · fykel of here speche,  
And maketh men mysdo · many seore tymes ;  
Truste of hire tresore · treieth ful manye.  
Wyues and widewes · wantounes she techeth, 124 [Fol. 11 b.]  
And lereth hem leecherye · that loueth hire ȝiftes. She teaches  
women  
wantounesse.  
Ȝowre fadre she felled · þorw fals biheste, She caused  
Adam’s fall ; and  
harms holy  
Church.  
And hath apoysonde popis · [&] peired holicherche ;  
Is nauȝt a better baude · bi hym þat me made, 128  
Bitwene heuene and helle · in erthe þough men souȝte !  
For she is tikil of hire taile · talwis of hir tonge,  
As comune as a cartwey · to eche a knaue þat walketh,  
To monkes, to mynst[r]alles · to meseles in hegges. 132  
Sisoures and sompnoures · suche men hir preiseth ;  
Shireutes of shires · were shent ȝif she nere ;  
For she doþ men lese here londe · and here lyf bothe.

She is frail, and a  
tale-hearer ; as  
common as a  
cartway to every  
**35**  
knave.  
Assizers and  
summoners  
and sheriffs  
praise her.

111. *forbete*] forbete it W. *lorde*  
—*elles*] lord it me forbete R.  
113. *caldē*] called WCO ; Icalled R.  
115. *fayned*] a-lowtid B.  
116. *shulde*] wolde W.  
117. *I*] she B. *Woltow*] Wiltow  
CR ; wilt þou OB.  
118. *fayne*] R om.  
120. *Ar*] Er WCROB.  
121. *fykel*] and fykel R.  
123. *treieth*] bitrayeþ W ; bitraieþ B.  
124. *wantounes*] *It may be wanton-*  
*nes, the reading being uncertain in*

W and C ; but cf. wantownesse RO.  
126. *she*] he R ; O om. *fals*] faire  
R ; hire fals B.  
127. *apoysonde*] a-poysowned O ;  
apoisunde C ; appoysond R ; apoisoned  
B ; enpoisoned W. *peired*] and peired  
WO ; and appayreth R. L omits &.  
129. *in*] and R.  
130. *tikil*] fikil O. *talwis*] and  
talewis W. *hir*] R om.  
132. *to* (2)] and to R.  
133. *sompnoures*] Somonours W.  
134. *were*] ne were W.

She makes men  
lose both land  
and life, and  
releases prisoners  
by bribes.

She ties true men  
fast, and hangs  
the innocent.

She is assoiled  
when she pleases.

She is intimate  
with the pope,  
and seals bulls.

She maintains  
priests in  
concubinage.

## 36

+ She corrupts  
judges with  
jewels.

She directs the  
law as she likes,  
and appoints  
love-days.

She leteth passe prisoneres · and payeth for hem ofte,  
And gyueth þe gailers golde · and grotes togideres, 137  
To vnfettre þe fals · fle where hym lyketh ;

And takeþ þe trewe bi þe toppe · and tieth hym faste,  
And hangeth hym for hatred · þat harme dede neure.

¶ To be cursed in consistorie · she counteth nouȝte a  
russhe ; 141

For she copeth þe comissarie · and coteth his clerkis ;

She is assoiled as sone · as hir-self liketh,  
And may neiȝe as moche do · in a moneth one[s], 144  
As ȝowre secret seel · in syx score dayes.

For she is priue with þe pope · prouisoures it knoweth,  
For sire symonye and hir-selue · seletth hire bulles.

¶ She blesseth þise bisshopes · þeiȝe þey be lewed, 148

Prouendreth persones · and prestes meynteneth,  
To haue lemmannes and lotebies · alle here lif dayes,  
And bringen forth barnes · aȝein forbode lawes.

There she is wel with þe kynge · wo is þe rewme, 152  
For she is fauorable to þe fals · and fouleth trewth the ofte.

¶ Bi ihesus, with here ieweles · ȝowre iustices she  
shendeth,

And lith aȝein þe lawe · and letteth hym þe gate,  
That feith may nouȝte haue his forth · here floreines go  
so þikke. 156

She ledeth þe lawe as hire list · and louedayes maketh,  
And doth men lese þorw hire loue · þat lawe myȝte  
wynne,

136. *leteth*] lat R; lates C; lateþ B.  
*prisoneres*] prisons R.

139. *þe trewe*] trewth R. *hym*] hem W.

140. *hym*] hem W.

141. *consistorie*] constorie RB.  
*she*] he R. *russhe*] resshe C; rische O; reische B; bene W.

142. *she*] he R.

143. *as* (1)] al-so B.

144. *neiȝe*] nee C. *as*] al-so B.  
[*ones* ROB] one LWC. Cf. Text A.

145. *ȝowre*] oure O.

146. *she*] he R.

148, 149. *þeiȝe—persones*] R om.

150. *lif dayes*] lyues dayes C.

151. *bringen*] bryngeþ WB. *forbode*] forbidden O.

152. *rewme*] reame W; reame C.

153. *þe*] W om. *fouleth*] defouleþ W; folweþ CB.

154. *ȝowre*] þe R. *she*] heo R.

155. *letteth*] let R.

157. *ledeth*] let R.

- þe mase for a mene man · þouȝ he mote hir cure.  
 Lawe is so lordeliche · and loth to make ende, 160 Law will not  
make an end  
without bribes.  
 With-oute presentȝ or pens · she pleseth wel fewe.  
 ¶ Barounes and burgeys · she bryngeth in sorwe,  
 And alle þe comune in kare · þat coueyten lyue in  
 trewthē ; She brings  
barons and  
burgesses to  
sorrow.  
 For clergeye and coueitise · she completh togideres. 164  
 þis is þe lyf of that lady · now lorde ȝif hir sorwe !  
 And alle that meynteneth here men · meschaunce hem  
 bityde ! [Fol. 12.]  
Such is her evil  
life.  
 For pore men mowe haue no powere · to pleyne hem  
 þouȝ þei smerte ; The poor cannot  
make their  
complaints  
known."  
 Suche a maistre is Mede · amonge men of gode." 168  
 ¶ Thanne morned Mede · and mened hire to the kynge,  
 To haue space to speke · spede if she myȝte. Then Meed was  
sorry, and asked  
leave to speak.  
 ¶ The kynge graunted hir grace · with a gode wille ;  
 " Excuse þe, ȝif þow canst · I can namore seggen, 172  
 For conscience acuseth þe · to congey þe for euere."  
 ¶ " Nay, lorde," quod þat lady · " leueth hym þe worse, 37  
" Disbelieve  
Conscience," said  
she ;  
 Whan ȝe wyten witterly · where þe wronge liggeth ;  
 There þat myschief is grete · Mede may helpe. 176  
 And þow knowest, conscience · I cam nouȝt to chide,  
 Ne depraue þi persone · with a proude herte.  
 Wel þow wost, wernard · but ȝif þow wolt gabbe,  
 þow hast hanged on myne half · elleuene tymes, 180  
 And also griped my golde · gyue it where þe liked ;  
 And whi þow wratthest þe now · wonder me thynketh.  
 ȝit I may as I myȝte · menske þe with ȝiftes, 183  
 And mayntene þi manhode · more þan þow knoweste.  
 ¶ Ac þow hast famed me foule · bifor þe Kynge here. and hast defamed  
me. And yet I

159. *mote hire*] moote heer O ; mute here Cz.

160. *make*] make an O.

161. *pens*] pans R. *she*] he R.

162. *burgseys*] burgeises W. *she*] heo R.

163. *comune in*] comunes into O.

167. *pore*] pouere W. *hem*] B om.

170. *she*] a R.

173. *congey*] congeien W.

174. *leueth*] leue R ; leues C.

177. *þow*] þat þow R.

179. *wost*] woost W.

181. *griped*] Igripe R. *gyue*] and ȝaf B.

183. *menske*] amende B.

185. *Ac*] And C.

never killed a  
king, as *thou*  
+ sayest.

For kulled I neuere no kyng · ne conseilled þer-after,  
Ne dede as þow demest · I do [it] on þe kyng! 187

'Twas *thou* who  
madest him  
return from  
Normandy,

¶ In normandye was he nouȝte · noyed for my sake ;

Ac þow þi-self sothely · shamedest hym ofte,

Crope in-to a kaban · for colde of þi nailles,

Wendest þat wyntre · wolde haue lasted euere,

And draddest to be ded · for a dym cloude, 192

hastening home  
for hunger.

And hiedest homeward · for hunger of þi wombe.

¶ Wip-out pite, piloure · pore men þow robbedest,

And bere here bras at þi bakke · to caleys to selle.

BS

There I lafte with my lorde · his lyf for to saue, 196

But *I* laughed  
and made my  
lord merry, and  
made his men  
hopeful.

I made his men meri · and mornyng lette.

I bated hem on þe bakke · and bolded here hertis,

And dede hem hoppe for hope · to haue me at wille.

Had *I* been  
marshal then, he  
should have been  
lord of all the  
land!

Had I ben Marschal of his men · bi Marie of heuene!

I durst haue leyde my lyf · and no lasse wedde, 201

He shulde haue be lorde of þat londe · a lengthe and a  
brede,

And also Kyng of þat kitthe · his kynne for to helpe,

[Fol. 12 b.]

þe leste brolle of his blode · a barounes pere! 204

But *thou*,  
Conscience, didst  
counsel him to  
leave that richest  
realm.

¶ Cowardliche þow, conscience · conseiledest hym  
þennes,

To leuen his lordeship · for a litel siluer,

That is þe richest rewme · þat reyne ouer houeth!

A king should  
reward them that  
serve him.

¶ It bicometh to a kyng · þat kepeth a rewme, 208

To ȝiue Mede to men · þat mekelich hym serneth,

To alienes and to alle men · to honoure hem with ȝiftes ;

Mede maketh hym biloued · and for a man holden.

186. *kyng*] kniȝt R.

187. [*it* WRO ; *hit* B] LC om.

188. *noyed*] Inuyed R ; anoied B.

189. *Ac*] And C.

190. [*Crope*] And crope B. *kabane*] Cabane W ; cabau CO.

191. *haue lasted*] han y-lasted W ; a last R. *lasted*] durid O.

193. *hiedest*] hyedest þee O.

195. *bere*] bare CO.

196. *lafte*] lefte R.

197. *lette*] lettete O.

198. *I*] And I O. *bated*] bated W.

200. *his*] O om.

202. *a*] in (*in both places*) W. *of*] of al B.

203. *of*] of al B. *kitthe*] kiþ WB · kyth R ; kiþþe O.

204. *brolle*] brol WR. *blode*] kynne CB. *pere*] pier WC.

205. *þennes*] þanne O.

208. *a* (2)] þe COB.

- Emperoures and Erlis · and al manere lordes 212 Thus emperors  
and earls get  
their young  
servants.  
For 3iftes hau 3onge men · to renne and to ride.  
The pope and alle *p̄relatis* · *presentz* vnderfongen,  
And medeth men hem-seluen · to meyntene here  
lawes. Thus, too, the  
pope gives  
rewards to men.
- Seruauntz for her seruise · we seth wel þe sothe, 216 **39** Servants receive  
wages.  
Taken Mede of here maistre · as þei mowe acorde.  
Beggeres for here bidlynge · bidden men Mede ; Beggars ask for  
gifts, and so do  
minstrels.  
Mynstralles for here murthe · mede þei aske.  
þe kyng hath mede of his men · to make pees in The king  
[† receives meed]  
to keep the peace.  
londe ; 220
- Men þat teche chylde[n] · craue of hem mede.  
Prestis þat precheth þe poeple · to gode, asken mede, Priests expect  
mass-pence.  
And masse-pans and here mete · at þe mele tymes.  
Alkynnes crafty men · crauen Mede for here prentis ; Trade and  
payment go  
together; none  
can live without  
reward."  
Marchauntz and Mede · mote nede go togideres ; 225  
No wizte as I wene · with-oute Mede may libbe."  
¶ [Quod] þe kyng to conscience · "bi criste ! as me "Then Meed is  
worthy to rule,"  
said the king,  
thynketh,  
Mede is wel worthi · þe maistrye to haue !" 228  
¶ "Nay," quod conscience to þe Kyng · and kneled to  
þe erthe,  
"There aren two manere of Medes · my lorde, with  
3owre leue.  
þat one, god of his grace · graunteth in his blisse the one, such as  
God gives men  
on earth ;  
To þo þat wel worchen · whil þei ben here. 232  
The prophete precheth þer-of · and put it in þe sautere,  
*Domine quis habitabit in tabernaculo tuo ?* † see Psalm xv.  
(Vulgate xiv.).  
"Lorde, who shal wonye in þi wones · and with þine  
holi seyntes,
213. *For*] þurȝ R. *3onge men*] ȝoumen R. *renne*] ȝernen R.  
214. *alle*] alle þe W.  
216. *Seruauntz*] Sergeauntz W. *prentis*] Prentices WO ; prentices R.  
*seth*] se C.  
217. *maistre*] mayster O ; maistres  
WCB ; meystres R.  
221. *of hem*] after W.  
223. *þe*] R om. *mele*] male O.  
224. *Alkynnes*] Alle kynne W ;  
Alle kyns O. *crafty*] craftes W.  
225. *mote*] most R.  
227. [*Quod* WCROB] Quatz L.  
228. *wel*] R om. 230. *with*] by R.  
234. *and*] R om.

Or resten on þi holy hilles? ' þis asketh dauid; 235

¶ And dauyd assoileth it hym-self · as þe sauter telleth,

† Ps. xv. 2.

*Qui ingreditur sine macula, & operatur iusticiam,*

Tho þat entren of o colour · and of on wille,

And han wrouȝte werkis · with riȝte and with reson ;

And he þat ne vseth nauȝte · þe lyf of vsurye,

And enfourmeth pore men · and pursueth treuthe ; 240

Ps. xv. 5 ;

*Qui pecuniam suam non dedit ad vsuram, & munera super innocentem, &c.*

[Fol. 13.]

And alle þat helpeth þe innocent · and halt with þe riȝtful,

With-oute mede doth hem gode · and þe treuthe helpeth—

Suche manere men, my lorde · shal haue þis furst Mede

Of god at a grete nede · whan þei gone hennes. 244

40

the other, such as maintains misdoers, and of which the psalter speaks (Ps. xxvi. 10).

There is an-other Mede mesurelees · þat maistres desireth ;

To meyntene mysdoers · Mede þei take ;

And þere-of seith þe sauter · in a salmes ende,

*In quorum manibus iniquitates sunt, dextera eorum repleta est muneribus ;*

Such as take bribes will have to answer for it.

And he þat gripeth her golde · so me god helpe ! 248

Shal abie it bittere · or þe boke lyeth !

Priests that take money shall have the reward St Matthew speaks of (Matt. vi. 5).

¶ Prestes and parsones · þat plesynge desireth,

That taketh Mede and [moneie] · for messes þat þei syngeth,

Taketh here mede here · as Mathew vs techeth ; 252

235. *ou*] in WCOB.

238. *wrouȝte*] y-wrought W ; Iwrouȝt R.

239. *ne*] W *om.*

240. *innocentem*] innocentem B ; innocentes O ; innoc : LWCR.

241. *helpeth*] helpen WO. *halt*] holt R ; hold C ; holden W ; holdip B.

242. *þe*] O *om.* *treuthe*] trewe R.

243. *þis*] þe O.

244. *a*] þe B ; O *om.*

245. *an-other*] and other C.

247. *þere-of*] þer B. *sunt*] C *om.*

249. *bittere*] bittirli O ; ful bittere R ; ful bytterly B. *lyeth*] lees C.

251. *taketh*] taken WO ; takes C ; taked R. [*moneie*] WC] money O ; moneye B ; *this seems preferable to the spelling* mone LR.

252. *Taketh*] Taken WO ; Takes C. *repperunt* O] recipiebant LWCRB.

*Amen, amen, [recepunt] mercedem suam.*

¶ That laboreres and lowe folke · taketh of her maistres,  
It is no manere Mede · but a mesurable hire.

In marchandise is no mede · I may it wel a-vowe 255  
It is a *permutacioun* apertly · a penyworth for an othre.

¶ Ac reddestow neuere Regum · þow recrayed Mede,  
Whi þe veniaunce fel · on Saul and on his children ?

God sent to Saul · bi Samuel þe prophete,  
þat agage of amaleke · and al his peple afre 260

Shulde deye for a dede · þat done had here ekdres.

¶ 'For-þi,' seid Samuel to Saul · 'god hym-self hoteth  
The, be boxome at his biddynge · his wille to fulfille :

Wende to amalec with þyn oste · and what þow fyndest  
þere, slee it ; 264

Biernes and bestes · brenne hem to ded ;

Wydwes and wyues · wommen and children,

Moebles and vnmoebles · and al þat þow myzte fynde,

Brenne it, bere it nouzte away · be it neuere so riche

For mede ne for [moneie] ; · loke þow destruye it, 269

Spille it and spare it nouzte · þow shalt spede þe  
bettere.'

¶ And for he coueyted her catel · and þe kyng spared,  
Forbare hym and his bestes bothe · as þe bible wit-  
nesseth, 272

Otherwyse þan he was · warned of þe prophete,

God seide to Samuel · þat Saul shulde deye,

And al his sede for þat synne · shenfullich ende.

Such a myschief Mede made · Saul þe kyng to haue,

But that which labourers receive is not Meed (Bribery), but wages.

In trading is no Meed, but only barter.

41

Hast thou not read, in Kings, how God told Saul to slay Agag for Amalek's sin against Israel ?

(1 Sam. xv. ; Exod. xviii. 8). Samuel said to Saul,

+ Go to Amalec and slay men and beasts,

+ and burn all thou findest there."

But because he did not so,

God sent to say that he should die.

Thus did Meed

253. *lowe*] lewed R. *taketh*] taken WO.

254. *is*] nis R. *mesurable*] resonabile CB.

256. *a*] R om.

257. *Ac*] And C.

258. *veniaunce*] vengeaunce WC.

260. *al*] R om.

263. *be*] to be O. *his*] is C. *his*—to] & his wille O.

264. *fyndest*] fynst R.

265. *brenne*] bren W ; brynne C. *ded*] dede CROB ; deþe W.

267. *Moebles*] Mobles C ; Mebles ROB. *vnmoebles*] vnmobles C ; vnmobles ROB. *þat*] WO om.

269. *ne*] nor C. [*moneie* C] money OB ; monee W ; mone LR.

275. *shenfullich*] shendfulliche B ; shentfulliche R ; shenfulliche C. *ende*] endede R.

make God hate  
him.

12

[Fol. 13 b.]

† But now-a-days,  
a truth-teller is  
blamed.

I, Conscience,  
well know that  
Reason shall  
reign.

Saul shall be  
blamed, and  
David diademed;

and there  
shall be Love,  
Humility, and  
Loyalty; Loyalty  
shall punish  
trespassers.

Meed makes  
[† many lords.]

But Common  
Sense shall yet  
return, and make  
Law a labourer.

† Then shall  
Jews think that  
Moses or Messiah  
is come.

That god hated hym for euere · and alle his eyres after.  
The eulorum of þis cas · kepe I nouȝte to shewe; 278

An auenture it noyed men · none ende wil I make.

For so is þis worlde went · wiþ hem þat han powere,  
That who-so seyth hem sothes · is sonnest yblamed. 281

¶ I conscience knowe þis · for kynde witt me it tauȝte,  
þat resoun shal regne · and rewmes gouerne;  
And riȝte as agag hadde · hadde shul somme. 284

Samuel shal sleen hym · and Saul shal be blamed,  
And dauid shal be diademed · and daunten hem alle,  
And one cristene kyng · kepen hem alle.

¶ Shal na more Mede · be maistre, as she is nouthe,  
Ac loue and lowenesse · and lewte togederes, 289  
þise shul be maistres on molde · treuthe to saue.

¶ And who-so trespasseth ayein treuthe · or taketh  
aȝein his wille,

Leute shal don hym lawe · and no lyf elles. 292

Shal no *seriaunt* for here *sernyse* · were a silke howue,  
Ne no pelure in his cloke · for pledyng atte barre.

Mede of mys-doeres · maketh many lordes,  
And ouer lordes lawes · reuleth þe rewmes. 296

¶ Ac kynde loue shal come ȝit · and conscience to-  
gideres,

And make of lawe a laborere · suche loue shal arise,  
And such a pees amonge þe peple · and a *perfit* treuthe,  
þat iewes shal wene in here witte · and waxen wonder  
glade, 300

þat Moises or Messie · be come in-to þis erthe,  
And haue wonder in here hertis · þat men beth so trewe.

277. *eyres*] eires O; heires WCRB.

278. *shewe*] telle W.

279. *An*] On WO; R *om.* *auen-*

*ture*] Aunter R.

281. *sothes*] sopest W.

282. *I*] retained in W (but not in  
the printed copy). *me it*] it me W.

*it tauȝte*] tauȝte it O.

288. *she*] he R; scho C.

289. *Ac*] And C. *lowenesse*] lewed-

nese C; lewidnesse B. *leuete*] leautee  
W; leaute CB.

290. *on*] of CB.

292. *lyf*] lif WRB; lief C; lijf O.

293. *seriaunt*] *sergeant* W; ser-  
geant CB. *here*] his W.

294. *atte*] at þe WOB.

297. *Ac*] And C. *kynde*] kende R.

299. *a*] R *om.*

¶ Alle þat bereth baslarde · brode swerde or launce,  
 Axe [other] hachet · or eny wepne ellis,      304  
 Shal be demed to þe deth · but if he do it smythyne  
 In-to sikul or to sithe · to schare or to kulter ;

Men shall beat  
 their swords and  
 axes into sickles  
 and scythes.

*Conflabunt gladios suos in vomeres, &c. ;*

† Isaiah ii. 4.

Eche man to pleye with a plow · pykoys or spade,  
 Spynne, or sprede donge · or spille hym-self with  
 sleuthe.      308

¶ Prestes and parsones · with *placebo* to hunte,  
 And dyngen vpon dauid · eche a day til cue.  
 Huntynge or haukyng · if any of hem vse,  
 His boste of his benefys · worth bynome hym after.

† Priests shall  
 hunt with  
*placebo* only,  
 or lose their  
 benefices.

Shal neither kyng ne knyghte · constable ne Meire 313  
 Ouer-lede þe comune · ne to þe courte somþne,  
 Ne put hem in panel · to don hem plizte here treuthe,  
 But after þe dede þat is don · one dome shal rewarde,  
 Mercy or no mercy · as treuthe wil acorde.      317

† Kings and  
 knights shall not  
 oppress the  
 commons.

[Fol. 14.]

¶ Kynges courte and *comune* courte · consistorie and  
 chapitele,

† The king's  
 court and the  
 commons' court  
 shall be one.

Al shal be but one courte · and one baroun be iustice ;  
 Thanne worth trewe-tonge a tidy man · þat tened me  
 neuere.

Batailles shal non be · ne no man bere wepne,      321  
 And what smyth þat ony smyt[h]eth · be smyte þer-  
 with to dethe,

† War shall  
 cease.

*Non leuabit gens contra gentem gladium, &c.*

† Isaiah ii. 4.

¶ And er þis fortune falle · fynde men shal þe worste,  
 By syx sonnes and a schippe · and half a shef of arwes ;  
 And þe myddel of a mone · shal make þe iewes to torne,

† Signs and  
 wonders will  
 be seen."

303. *baslarde*] baslard R ; base-  
 larde W ; baselard CB ; basalarde O.

*chapitele* LR] Chapitle WCO.

304. [other R ; oþer OB] ouþer  
 WC ; orther I (*corruptly*).

318, 319. *consistorie*—*courte*] B  
*omits.*

307, 308. B *omits.*

319. *one*] oon WC ; on R ; o O.

307. *pykoys*] pykoise W ; pikeys  
 CO ; pycos R.

322. *smytheth*] smyþeþ WO ; smi-  
 thie R ; smytheth LCB. *smyte*] smiten  
 R.

308. or (2)] other R. *spille*] lese R.  
 310. a] W *om.*

325. *to*] R *om.*

318. *consistorie*] constorie R.

- And saracenes for þat sizte · shulle synge *gloria in excelsis*, &c., 326
- For Makomet & Mede · myshappe shal þat tyme ;  
 + Prov. xxii. 1. For, *melius est bonum nomen quam diuicie multe.*"
- ¶ Also wroth as þe wynde · wex Mede in a while,  
 "I can no latyn," quod she · "clerkis wote þe sothe.
- + Meed replies by quoting Scripture, Se what Salamon seith · in Sapience bokes, 330  
 That hij þat ziueth ziftes · þe victorie wynneth,  
 & moche worschip had þer-with · as holiwryt telleth,  
*Honorem adquiret qui dat munera, &c."*
- + Prov. xxii. 9 (Vulgate). ¶ "I leue wel, lady," quod conscience · "þat þi latyne  
 be trewe ; 333
- + "You are like a lady," said Conscience, "who read but half a text (1 Thess. v. 21) ;  
 Ac þow art like a lady · þat redde a lessoun ones,  
 Was, *omnia probate* · and þat plesed here herte,  
 For þat lyne was no lenger · atte leues ende. 336  
 Had [she] loked þat other half · and þe lef torned,  
 [She] shulde haue founden fele wordis · folwyng þer-after,  
*Quod bonum est tenete* · treuthe þat texte made !
- + the rest of it was over the leaf. ¶ And so ferde ze, madame ! · ze couthe namore  
 fynde, 340  
 Tho ze loked on sapience · sittyng in zoure studie.  
 þis tixte þat ze han tolde · were gode for lordes,  
 Ac zow failed a cunningg clerke · þat couthe þe lef  
 haue torned !
- + And what says the rest of your text ? It condemns you." And if ze seche sapience eft · fynde shal ze þat  
 folweth, 344  
 A ful teneful tixte · to hem þat taketh Mede,  
 And þat is, *animam autem aufert · accipientium, &c. :*

326. þat] þe B.  
 327. For] And CB.  
 329. note] wite W ; wyten B.  
 331. hij] þei WB ; he O. ziueth] zynen W ; zeuen B.  
 332. moche] moost W ; myche O.  
 333. I] retained in W (but not in the printed copy).  
 334. Ac] An C.
336. no] O om. (1)  
 337, 338. [she WC] sche RO ; ze LB (corruptly). torned] Iturned R.  
 340. couthe] koude C ; coude RO.  
 342. han told] haue Itolde R. couthe] coude R.  
 343. Ac] And C. haue torned] attorned (contr. from a torned) R.  
 345. B omits. taketh] taken O.

And þat is þe taille of þe tixte · of þat þat 3e schewed, † Prov. xxii. 9  
 þat þei3e we wynne worschip · and wiþ mede haue (Vulgate).  
 victorie, 348

þe soule þat þe sonde taketh · bi so moche is bounde.”

347. 3e] she W. *schewed*] scheweden 349. *sonde*] son3d (*miswritten for*  
 O; *schede* (!) R. sondz?) R.  
 348. *mede*] me (!) R.

## PASSUS IV.

*Passus quartus de visione, vt supra.*

## 43

[Fol. 14 b.]  
"Be reconciled,"  
said the king,  
"and kiss her,  
Conscience."

"Not unless  
Reason advises  
me so to do."

"Then ride and  
fetch Reason  
here," said the  
king.

"He shall give us  
good advice."

Conscience gladly  
rode off,  
and gave  
Reason the king's  
message.

Reason bids his  
knave Cato saddle  
his horse called  
Suffer-till-1-sec-  
my-time.

"Cesseth," seith þe kyng · "I suffre ȝow no lengere.  
ȝe shal sauȝtne for sothe · and serue me bothe.

Kisse hir," quod þe kyng · "conscience, I hote."

¶ "Nay, bi criste," quod conscience · "congeye me for  
euere ! 4

But resoun rede me þer-to · rather wil I deye !"

¶ "And I comaunde þe," quod þe Kyng · to conscience  
þanne,

"Rape þe to ride · and resoun þow fecche ;  
Comaunde hym þat he come · my conseille to here. 8

For he shal reule my rewme · and rede me þe beste,  
And acounte with þe, conscience · so me cryst helpe,  
How þow lernest þe peple · þe lered and þe lewede."

¶ "I am fayne of þat forwarde" · seyde þe freke þanne,  
And ritt riȝte to resoun · and rowneth in his ere, 13

And seide as þe kyng badde · and sithen toke his leue.

¶ "I shal arraye me to ride, quod resoun · "reste þe a  
while"—

And called catoun his knaue · curteise of speche, 16

And also tomme trewe-tonge · telle-me-no-tales-

Ne-lesyng-to-lawȝe-of · for-I-loued-hem-neuere—

TITLE. *vt supra*] petri plowman, COB.  
vt supra R; CB om.

1. *Cesseth*] Cesses C.

2. *sauȝtne*] sauȝtne OB.

3. *hote*] þe hote B.

4. *for*] er for W. *for euere*] rather R;

11. *þe lered*] lered R.

13. *ritt*] ryt W; rit CO; ridiþ B.

14. *sithen*] sithes R.

18. *lawȝe*] lauȝen W; laughe C; lawe

R; lauȝhe O; lauȝhe B. *of*] at O.

“And sette my sadel vppon suffre- · til-I-se-my-tyme,  
 And lete warrok it wel · with witty-words gerthes, 20  
 And hange on hym þe heuy brydel · to holde his hed  
 iowe,

For he wil make wehe · tweye er he be there.”

¶ Thanne conscience vppon his caple · kaireth forth Then Conscience  
 faste, and Reason rode  
 to the king, and

And resoun with hym ritte · rownynge togideres, 24  
 Whiche maistries Mede · maketh on þis erthe.

¶ One waryn wisdom · And witty his fere Wisdom and Wit  
 Folwed hem faste · [for þei] haued to done followed them,  
 In þe cheker and at þe chauncerie · to be discharged of for they wanted  
 þinges ; Reason's advice. 28

And riden fast, for resoun · shulde rede hem þe beste,  
 For to saue hem, for siluer · fro shame and fram harmes.

¶ And conscience knewe hem wel · þei loued coueitise, † Conscience  
 And bad resoun ride faste · and recche of her noither, knew these two  
 “þere aren wiles in here wordes · and with Mede þei were covetous,  
 dwelleth ; 33

There as wratthe and wranglyng is · þere wyne þei siluer,

¶ Ac þere is loue and lewte · þei wil nouzte come þere ; † and shunned  
*Contricio & infelicitas in vijs eorum, &c.* Love and  
 Loyalty.

þei ne gyueth nouzte of god · one gose wyng, 36 † Ps. xiii. 7  
*Non est timor dei ante oculos eorum.* (Vulgate).  
 [Fol. 15.]

For, wot god, þei wolde do more · for a dozeine  
 chickenes,

Or as many capones · or for a seem of otes,

20. *lete*] let R; lat W. *it*] hym W. *is marked for correction.* *haued*  
*gerthes*] gere B. hadde WC; hadden B.

21. *holde*] helde R.

22. *wehe*] wehee W. *tweye*] twies R om. *at þe*] in þe WCOB; atte  
 WB; twyes O; twyces C. þe R.

23. *kaireth*] carieþ WB.

24. *ritte*] ryt W; rit RO; rydes C; 29. *hem*] O om.  
 ryt B. 32. CB omit. *resoun*] O om.

25. *Mede—erthe*] on eerth · Mede *noither*] neiþer WO; nother R.

þe mayde maketh R. 33. *þere—wiles*] þei arn wyli O.

27. *hem*] hym W. [*for þei WOB*] 35. *Ac þere*] Ac where W; And þer  
 for hij C; LR om.; but in L, the line C; þere R.

36. *gosc*] goose W; goos O.

† "They will do more," said he, "for a dozen chickens than for our Lord's sake."

þan for loue of owre lorde · or alle hise lene seyntes.  
For-þi, resoun, lete hem ride · þo riche, bi hem-seluen,  
For conscience knoweth hem nouȝte · ne cryst, as I  
trowe. 41

And þanne resoun rode faste · þe riȝte heiȝe gate,  
As conscience hym kenned · til þei come to þe kyng.

The king receives them courteously.

¶ Curteisliche þe kyng þanne · come aȝein resoun, 44  
And bitwene hym-self and his sone · sette hym on  
benche,

And wordeden wel wyseli · a gret while togideres.

45

Enter Peace, with a plea against Wrong.

¶ And þanne come pees in-to parlement · and put  
forth a bille,

How wronge aȝeines his wille · had his wyf taken, 48  
And how he rauissshed Rose · Reginoldes loue,  
And Margarete of hir maydenhode · maugre here chekis.

"Wrong (said he) has stolen my geese and pigs, and my horse Bayard,

"Bothe my gees & my grys · his gadelynges feccheth ;  
I dar nouȝte for fere of hym · fyȝte ne chyde. 52  
He borwed of me bayard · he brouȝte hym home neure,  
Ne no ferthyng þer-fore · for nauȝte I couthe plede.

murdered my men, stolen my wheat, and beaten myself."

He meyneteneþ his men · to morther myne hewen,  
Forstalleth my feyres · and fiȝteth in my chepyng, 56  
And breketh vp my bernes dore · and bereth aweye my  
whete,

And taketh me but a taile · for ten quarteres of otes,  
And ȝet he bet me þer-to · and lyth bi my Mayde,

I nam nouȝte hardy for hym · vneth to loke." 60

¶ The kyng knewe he seide sothe · for conscience hym  
tolde,

39. *loue*] þe loue W.  
40. *resoun*] R om.  
43. *þei*] he O.  
44. *come*] com W. *aȝein*] aȝeins W.  
46. *a*] at C.  
47. *put*] puttete O.  
49. *Reginoldes*] Reignaldes W; Reynoldes CO; Reynaldes R; Raynaldis B.  
50. *maugre*] maugree W; maugrey O; magre B.  
52. *hym*] hem W.

53. *he*] and R. *hym*] it R.  
54. CB om. *nauȝte*] ouȝt W; ouȝt þat O.  
55. *hewen*] hennes (!) R.  
57. CB om. *bernes dore*] berne-dores O.  
58. *but*] C om. *a*] o O. *taile*] taille WC. *ten*] a ten CB.  
59. *bet*] beteþ WB.  
60. *nam*] am WR. *vneth*] vnneþe WROB; vnees C.

- þat wronge was a wikked luft · and wrouzte moche  
sorwe. 62
- ¶ Wronge was afered þanne · and wisdome he souzte  
To make pees with his pens · and profered hym  
manye, Then was Wrong afraid, and tried  
to bribe Wisdom to plead for him.
- And seide, “had I loue of my lorde þe kyng · litel  
wolde I recche, 46
- Theiþe pees and his powere · pleyned hym cure !”
- ¶ þo wan wisdome · and sire waryn þe witty,  
For þat wronge had ywrouzte · so wikked a dede, 68  
Wisdom and Wit told him
- And warned wronge þo · with such a wyse tale ;  
“ Who-so worcheth bi wille · wratthe maketh ofte ;  
I seye it bi þi-self · þow shalt it wel fynde.  
But if Mede it make · þi myschief is vppe, 72  
For bothe þi lyf and þi londe · lyth in his grace.”  
that, unless he could get Meed to help, he was ruined.
- ¶ Thanne wowed wronge · wisdome ful 3erne,  
To make his pees *with* his pens · handi-dandi payed. [Fol. 15 b.]
- Wisdom and witte þanne · wenten togideres, 76  
And toke Mede myd hem · mercy to winne. Then Wrong [† begged] Wisdom and Wit to take Meed with them.
- ¶ Pees put forþ his hed · and his panne bloody ;  
“ Wyth-outhen gilte, god it wote · gat I þis skape,  
Peace shows the king his bloody head.  
Conscience and þe comune · knowen þe sothe.” 80
- ¶ Ac wisdom and witt · were about faste  
To ouercome þe kyng · with catel, 3if þei myzte.
- ¶ þe kyng swore, bi crist · and bi his crowne bothe, 84  
þat wronge for his werkis · sholde wo þolye,  
And comaunded a constable · to casten hym in yrens,  
“ And late hym nouzte þis seuene 3ere · seen his feet  
ones.”
- ¶ “ God wot,” quod wysdom · “ þat were nauzte þe  
beste ; Wisdom offer bail, and says

62. *luft*] lift O ; lyft C. *wrouzte*—  
*sorwe*] mæche sorwe wrouzte R.

66. *hym*] hem R.

67. *wan*] whan CB ; wente WO.

70. *bi*] my CB ; by my O.

71. *þi-self*] myself WCB.

75. *his pees*] pees WB.

77. *myd*] with C.

78. *put*] putte WR.

79. *gilte*] gult R.

81. *Ac*] And C. *were*] weren OB.

84. *þolye*] thole R.

Wrong will pay  
damages.

And he amendes mowe make · late meynprise hym haue ;  
And he borwgh for his bale · and biggen hym bote, 89  
And so amende þat is mysdo · and euermore þe bettere."

Wit seconds this.

¶ Witt acorded þer-with · and seide þe same :  
" Bettere is þat bote · bale adoun brynge, 92  
þan bale be ybette · & bote neuere þe bettere."

Then Meed  
proffers Peace a  
present of gold,

¶ And þanne gan Mede to mengen here · and mercy  
she bisought,

and engages that  
Wrong shall keep  
the peace.

And profred pees a present · al of pure golde :  
" Haute þis, man, of me," quod she · "to amende þi  
skape, 96

Peace begs Wrong  
off, and forgives  
him, since Meed  
has made amends.

For I wil wage for wronge · he wil do so namore."  
¶ Pitously pees þanne · prayed to þe kyng  
To haue mercy on þat man · þat mys-did hym so ofte :  
" For he hath waged me wel · as wysdome hym tauzte,  
And I forgyue hym þat gilte · with a goode wille ; 101  
So þat þe kyng assent · I can seye no bettere ;  
For Mede hath made me amendes · I may namore axe."

48

But the king  
swears that  
Wrong shall not  
get off so lightly.

¶ " Nay," quod þe Kyng þo · " so me cryst helpe ! 104  
Wronge wendeth nouzte so awaye · arst wil I wite more ;  
For loupe he so listly · laughen he wolde,  
And este þe balder be · to bete myne heven ;  
But resoun haue reuthe on hym · he shal rest in my  
stokkes, 108

Then some  
advised Reason  
to take pity on  
Wrong.

[Fol. 16.]

And þat as longe as he lyueth · but lownesse hym  
borwe."

¶ Somme men redde Resoun þo · to haue reuthe on þat  
schrewe,

And for to conseille þe kyng · and conscience after,

88. *mowe*] mowe (*printed* nowe) W.  
89. *borwgh*] borgh WCB; boru; R.  
*biggen*] buggen WR; bi;en B. *hym*] hem C.

90. *euermore*] euere be R.  
92. *Bettere*] þat bettere R.  
94. *mengen*] meken R. *she*] he R;  
C om.

99. *on*] of O.

103. *made me amendes*] me amendes  
maad W. *axe*] aske O.

105. *arst*] erst WCOB. *wite*] Com.  
106. *loupe*] lope WO; lepe B.  
*laughen*] ley;hen R.

107. *balder*] boldere WR. *heven*] huen O; hewes R.

110. *redde*] radde WR; radden O;  
redde B.

That Mede moste be meyn *pernour* · resoun þei bisouzte.

¶ “Rede me nouzte,” quod resoun · “no reuthe to  
haue, 113 “Nay,” says Reason, “not till all lords and ladies love truth,

Til lordes and ladies · louien alle treuthe,

And haten al harlotrye · to heren it, or to mouthen it ;

Tyl pernelles *purfil* · be put in here hucche ; 116

And childryn cherissyng · be chastyng with 3erdes ;

And harlotes holynesse · be holden for an hyne ; rioters are holy, clerks [† charitable to the poor],

Til clerken coucitis be · to clothe þe pore and to fede,

And religious romares · *recordare* in here cloistres, 120

As seynt Benet hem bad · Bernarde and Fraunceys ;

And til prechoures *prechyng* · be preued on hem- and priests practise what they preach ;

seluen ;

Tyl þe kynges conseil · be þe *comune profyte* ;

Tyl bisschopes baiardes · ben beggeres chambres, 124

Here haukes and her houndes · helpe to pore Religious ;

¶ And til seynt Iames be souzte · þere I shal assigne, till men go no more to Galicia, and Rome-seekers no more bear the king's coin over the sea,

That no man go to Galis · but if he go for euere ;

And alle Rome-renneres · for robberes of [byzonde] 128

Bere no siluer ouer see · þat signe of kyng sheweþ,

Noyther graue ne vngraue · golde noither siluer,

Vppon forfeiture of þat fee · who so fynt hym at

Douere,

But if it be marchaut or his man · or messagere with unless they be merchants, messengers, pro- visors, or priests.

letteres, 132

Prouysoure or prest · or penaunt for his synnes.

112. *moste*] *muste* OB.

115. *heren it*] *heren* W.

116. *pernelles*] *Parnelles* W ; *peronelles* RB ; *Peronelle* C.

117. *childryn*] *childrene* W ; *children* COB ; *childerne* R. *chastyng*] *chastysyng* O.

118. *an hyne*] *vuheende* O ; *nauzte* R.

119. *clerken*] *clerkene* WR ; *clerkis* B. *to fede*] *fede* W.

122. *And*] C *om.*

124. *baiardes*] *Bayardes* WCRO ;

*bayardis* B.

125. *to*] þe CB. *pore*] *pouere* WR ; *Religious*] *religioues* R.

128. *of*] W *om.* [byzonde] *bizonde* COB ; *biyonde* W ; *preferable to byzende, as in* LR.

129. *see*] *sehe* O.

130. *Noyther*] *Neiþer* WCOB ; *Nother R. noither*] *neiþer* WCOB ; *nother* R.

131. *hym*] *it* W.

132. *if*] B *om.* *it*] he WCOB ; *but see* Text A.

I will have no  
pity while Meed  
is here.

¶ And ȝet," quod resoun, "bi þe Rode · I shal no  
reuthe haue,

While Mede hath þe maistrye · in þis moot-halle.

Ac I may shewe ensaumples · as I se other-while, 136

I sey it by my-self," quod he · "and it so were

That I were kyng with crowne · to kepen a Rewme,

Shulde neuere wronge in þis worlde · þat I wite myȝte,

Ben vnpunished in my powere · for peril of my soule !

Ne gete my grace for giftes · so me god saue ! 141

Ne for no Mede haue mercy · but mekenesse it make.

Were I king, no  
Wrong should go  
unpunished, or  
get grace by  
bribes.

¶ For *nullum malum* þe man · mette with *inpunitum*,

And badde *nullum bonum* · be *irremuneratum*. 144

## 50

No evil ought to  
go unpunished,  
nor good unre-  
warded.

¶ Late ȝowre confessoure, sire Kyng · construe þis  
vnglosed ;

And ȝif ȝe worken it in werke · I wedde myne eres,

That lawe shal ben a laborere · and lede a-felde donge,

And loue shal lede þi londe · as þe lief lyketh !” 148

Were this rule  
kept, Law might  
go and cart  
manure, and Love  
should rule over  
all.”

¶ Clerkes þat were confessoures · coupled hem to-  
gideres,

[Fol. 16 b.]

Alle to construe þis clause · and for þe kynges profit,

Ac nouȝte for conforte of þe comune · ne for þe kynges  
soule.

† Then I saw  
Meed wink at the  
lawyers ;

¶ For I seiȝe mede in the moot-halle · on men of lawe  
wynke, 152

And þei lawghyng lope to hire · and lafte resoun manye.

† and Waryn  
Wisdom winked  
again at Meed.

¶ Waryn wisdom · wynked vppon Mede,

And seide, “Madame, I am ȝowre man · what so my  
mouth · iangleth ; 155

I falle in floreines,” quod þat freke · “an faile speche ofte.”

136. *Ac*] And C. *as*] CB *om.* other] ouþer W.

137, 138. *and—crowne*] B *om.* *crowne*] coroune W ; corowu O.

139. *wite*] witt R.

141. *for*] þoruȝ R.

142. *make*] made R.

143. *inpunitum*] impunitum O.

144. *badde*] bad WRB ; bade O.

146. *ȝe worken*] he wirke B. *myne*] boþe myne O.

150. *Alle*] Al W.

152. *seiȝe*] seiȝ WC ; seiȝ R ; syȝ O ; say B.

153. *lope*] lepe C. *lafte*] left WR.

155. *am*] C *om.* *iangleth*] iangle WR.

156. *an*] and WCROB.

¶ Alle riȝtful recorded · þat resoun treuthe tolde, 157 [† All true men  
And witt acorded þer-with · and comended his wordes, thought Reason]  
And þe moste peple in þe halle · and manye of þe was right, and  
grete, that Meed was a  
wretch.

Aud leten mekenesse a maistre · and Mede a mansed  
schrewe. 160

¶ Loue lete of hir liȝte · and lewte ȝit lasse, As for Love, he  
And seide it so heiȝe · þat al þe halle it herde, laughed her to  
“Who-so wilneth hir to wyf · for welth of her godis, scorn, and said,  
But he be knowe for a koke-wolde · kut of my nose !” “Whoever marries  
her will surely  
prove a cuckold.”

¶ Mede mourned þo · and made heuy chere, 165  
For þe moste comune of þat courte · called hire an  
hore.

Ac a sȝsourē and a sompnourē · sued hir faste, † A sheriff's clerk  
And a schireues clerke · byschrewed al þe route, 168 and others com-  
fort Meed.

“For ofte haue I,” quod he · “holpe ȝow atte barre,  
And ȝit ȝeue ȝe me neuere · þe worthe of a russhe.”

¶ The kyngē called conscience · and afterwardes 51  
resoun, The king decreed  
that Reason was  
right,

And recorded þat resoun · had riȝtfullich schewed, 172  
And modilich vppon Mede · with myȝte þe Kyngē loked,  
And gan wax wrothe with lawe · for Mede almoste had  
shent it,

And seide, “þorw ȝowre lawe, as I leue · I lese many  
chetes ;

Mede ouer-maistrieth lawe · and moche treuthe letteth.

Ac resoun shal rekene with ȝow · ȝif I regne any while,  
And deme ȝow bi þis day · as ȝe han deserued. 178

157. *riȝtful*] rightfulle W. WCOB.  
159. *þe* (2)] þis R. 170. *ȝeue*] gaue C. *russhe*] risshe  
160. *And*] O *om.* *maistre*] mais- W; *resshe* C; *rische* O; *reische* B.  
tresse B. *mansed*] mased C; *masid* 172. *riȝtfullich*] reuffulliche (!) CB.  
B. 173. *wiȝh—loked*] miȝte þat kyng  
163. *wyf*] wyue RB. loke R.  
164. *kut*] bitte (*prob. miswritten* 174. *gan*] gand C. *naw*] wexe W.  
*for kitte*) R. *it*] C *om.*  
167. *Ac*] And C. *sued*] sieden O. 175. *ȝowre*] W *om.* *many*] myn B.  
168. *al*] al (*printed at*) W. *chetes*] eschetes W; *eschetis* B.  
169. *holpe*] Ihulpe R. *atte*] at þe 178. *bi þis*] on a O.

- Mede shal nouȝte meynprise ȝow · bi þe Marie of  
heuene!
- † and declares  
that justice shall  
be done. I wil haue leute in lawe · and lete be al ȝowre ian-  
glynȝ, 180  
And as moste folke witnesseth wel · wronge shal be  
demed."
- † Conscience says  
it is hard to  
gouern thus. ¶ Quod conscience to þe kynge · "but the comune wil  
assent,  
It is ful hard, bi myn hed · here-to to brynge it,  
Alle ȝowre lige leodes · to lede þus euene." 184
- Reason declares  
it is easy. ¶ "By hym þat rauȝte on þe rode" · quod resoun to þe  
kynge,  
"But if I reude þus ȝowre rewme · rende out my guttes!  
ȝif ȝe bidden buxomnes · be of myne assente."
- [Fol. 17.] ¶ "And I assent," seith þe kynge · "by seynte Marie  
my lady, 188  
Be my conseilliche comen · of clerkis and of erlis.  
Ac redili resoun · þow shalt nouȝte ride fro me,  
For as longe as I lyue · lete þe I nelle."
- and hopes he will  
stay with him. ¶ "I am aredy," quod resoun · "to reste with ȝow  
euere, 192  
So conscience be of owre conseilliche · I kepe no bettere."
- "I will stay if  
Conscience be  
your counsellor." ¶ "And I graunt," quod the kynge · "goddess forbode it  
faile,  
Als longe as owre lyf lasteth · lyue we togideres." 195
- "Yes," said the  
king, "let us  
live together till I  
die."

180. *al*] O om.181. *moste*] alle R. *folke*] O om. *witnesseth*] witnesse C. *wel*] R om. *demed*] ydemed R.182. *the*] C om.186. *But if*] But B.187. *ȝif*] If WCROB.188. *seith*] saye C; quod O; quatȝ R.189. C omits. *Be*] so in LROB. *comen*] so in LOB; I come R. *Hence the reading in W*, By my counsell comune, is probably corrupt; cf. Text A.190. *Ac*] And C.192. *aredy*] al redy WCB.194. *it*] he R. *it faile*] ellis W.195. *lasteth*] last R. *lyue*] leue R.

## PASSUS V.

*Passus quintus de Visione.*

The kyng and his knightes · to the kirke wente  
 To here matynes of þe day · and þe masse after.  
 þanne waked I of my wynkyng · and wo was with-alle,  
 þat I ne hadde sleped sadder · and yseiȝen more. 4  
 Ac er I hadde faren a fourlonge · feyntise me hente,  
 That I ne myȝte ferther a-foot · for defaute of slepyng; ·  
 And sat softly adown · and seide my bileue,  
 And so I babeled on my bedes · þei brouȝte me a-slepe.  
 ¶ And þanne saw I moche more · þan I bifore tolde, 9  
 For I say þe felde ful of folke · þat I bifore of seyde,  
 And how resoun gan arrayen hym · alle þe reume to  
 preche,  
 And with a crosse afor þe kyng · comsed þus to  
 techen. 12  
 ¶ He preued þat þise pestilences · [were] for pure syune,  
 And þe southwest wynde · on saterday at euene

52  
 The king goes to  
 matins.

THE FIRST VISION  
 ends.

Here begins the  
 SECOND VISION,  
 viz. of the Deadly  
 Sins, and of PIERS  
 THE PLOWMAN.

The sermon of  
 Conscience upon  
 the pestilence and  
 the violent wind  
 of Jan. 15, 1362.

TITLE. Passus Quintus O; Passus  
 quintus de visione LCB; *to which* W  
*adds* vt supra; and R *adds* petri  
 plowman, vt supra.

3. *waked*] awaked RB. *was*] Com.  
 4. *sleped*] slept W. *yseiȝen*] yseien  
 B; I-sye O.

5. *Ae*] And C. *fourlonge*] furlong  
 W; forlong CO; furȝlonge R. *feyn-  
 tise*] a feyntise O.

7. *sat*] sette me B.

8. *so I*] R om. *on*] vppon R; of

O. *þei*] til þei B.

9. *mochē*] myche O; mykile C.  
*tolde*] of tolde W.

10. *say*] seiȝ W; sey C; saw O;  
 sauȝ B.

12. *with*] O om. *afor*] bifore C.

13. *preued*] preueþ O. *pestilences*]  
 pestilence C. [*were* W] was LCROB;  
*but were seems required.*

14. *southwest*] south westrene W.  
*wynde*] wijnd O. *on*] vppon a B.  
*eucne*] eue C.

## 53

Pear-trees,  
plum-trees,  
beeches, and oaks  
were blown down.

The dreamer gives  
an outline of  
Conscience's  
sermon.

Conscience bids  
a waster work,

and tells Pernel  
to put her fiery  
[Fol. 17 b.]  
away.

Thomas is to fetch  
home his wife  
Felice; and Wat's  
wife is to blame.

† Bette is to beat  
lazy Betoun.

Chapmen are to  
chastise their  
children.

Was pertliche for pure pryde · and for no poynt elles.  
Piries and plomtrees · were puffed to þe erthe, 16

In ensample, 3e segges · 3e shulden do þe bettere.  
Beches and brode okes · were blowen to þe grounde,  
Torned vpward her tailles · in tokenynge of drede,  
þat dedly syune at domesday · shal fordon hem alle. 20

¶ Of þis matere I myzte · mamely ful longe,  
Ae I shal seye as I saw · so me god helpe !  
How pertly afor þe poeple · resoun gan to preche.  
¶ He bad wastoure go worche · what he best couthe, 24  
And wynnen his wastynge · with somme manere crafte.

¶ And preyed peronelle · her purfyle to lete,  
And kepe it in hir cofre · for catel at hire nede.  
¶ Thomme stowue he tauzte · to take two staues, 28  
And fecche [felice] home · fro þe wyuen pyne.  
¶ He warned watt · his wyf was to blame,  
þat hire hed was worth halue a marke · his hode nouzte  
worth a grote.

And bad bette kut · a bow other tweyne, 32  
And bete betoun þer-with · but if she wolde worche.  
And þanne he charged chapmen · to chasten her chil-  
deren ;

Late no wynnynge hem forweny · whil þei be 3onge,

15. *pure*] R *om.*

17. *3e segges*] þat 3e segges (*printed*  
that the segges) W. *3e shulden*]  
sholden W; shulden B.

19. *tailles*] taile R. *in tokenynge*]  
to kenynge R.

21. *mamely*] mamelen W; mamly B.

22. *Ae*] And C. *saw*] sau3 WB.

23. *pertly*] apertly B. *gan*] bigan  
WB; gand C.

25. *crafte*] craftys R.

26. *And*] He W. *peronelle*] Per-  
nele WR.

27. *hir*] CB *om.*

28. *stowue*] Stowue C; stouue R;  
Stowe O; of stowue B; Stowue *or*  
Stowne (*printed* Stowne) W. *staues*]  
stones R.

29. [*felice* WCROB] filice L. *fro*  
þe] fram R. *wyuen*] wyuen *or*  
wynen LWCO; wyuene *or* wynene  
RB. *See note to Text A*; p. 144.

30. *He*] And O.

31. *þat*] For W. *halue a*] half a  
C; half WROB. *his*] & his W; & is  
B. *hode*] hed C; B *om.* *worth* (2)]  
R *om.*

32. *bow*] bou3 W; bowghe C.  
*other*] outhur W; *or* C. *tweyne*]  
tweye WR; tweyen O.

33. *if*] C *om.* *she*] heo R.

34. *chasten*] chastigen W; chastis-  
sen O; chaste R.

35. *hem*] R *om.* *forweny*] for-  
wane WB; for-wanyen R. *whil*] þe  
while R.

Ne for no pouste of pestilence · plese hem nouȝte out  
of resoun. 36

¶ “ My syre seyde so to me · and so did my dame,  
þat þe leuere childe · þe more lore bihoueth,  
And Salamon seide þe same · þat Sapience made,

*Qui parcit virge, odit filium.*

þe Englich of þis latyn is · who-so wil it knowe, 40  
Who-so spareth þe sprynge · spilleth his children.”

¶ And sithen he preyed prelatȝ · and prestes to-gideres,  
“ þat ȝe prechen to þe peple · preue it on ȝowre-seluen,  
And doth it in dede · it shal drawe ȝow to good ; 44  
If ȝe lyuen as ȝe leren vs · we shal leue ȝow þe bettere.”

¶ And sithen he radde Religioun · here reule to holde—  
“ Leste þe kynge and his conseille · ȝowre comunes ap-  
payre,

And ben stuardes of ȝowre stedes · til ȝe be ruled  
bette.” 48

¶ And sithen he conseilled þe kynge · þe comune to  
louye,

“ It is þi tresore, if tresoun ne were · and triacle at þi  
nede.”

And sithen he prayed þe pope · haue pite on holi-  
cherche,

And er he gyue any *grace* · gouerne firste hym-selue. 52

¶ “ And ȝe that han lawes to kepe · late treuthe be  
ȝowre coueytise,

More þan golde or other gyftes · if ȝe wil god plese ;  
For who-so contrarieth treuthe · he telleth in þe gospel,

† The better the  
child, the more  
profit in teaching  
him.

† Spare the rod,  
and spoil the  
child (Prov. xiii.  
24).

5.1  
Priests should  
practise what  
they preach.

Religion should  
rule strictly.

† The king should  
love the com-  
mons.

† The pope should  
govern *himself*.

† Lawyers should  
covet *truth*.

36. *pouste*] poustee W.

41. *sprynge*] ȝerde B. *spilleth*] he  
spilleth R. *children*] child B.

42. *preyed*] prechede W ; proned  
R.

43. *ȝowre-seluen*] yowselue WR.

45. *lyuen*] leuen WC. *leren*] lerne  
R.

48. *stuardes*] stywardes WOB ;  
stiwardes CR.

49. *þe* (2)] his W. *comune*] comunes  
O.

50. *tresore—were*] trewe tresor W.  
*ne*] R om.

51. *pope*] *erased in R.* *on*] of C.

54. *or other*] ouþer W ; & oþer O.  
*ȝe*] he O.

55. *who-so*] who B. *telleth*] telth

That god knoweth hym nouȝte · ne no seynte of heuene,  
*Amen dico vobis, nescio vos.*

† Matt. xxv. 12.

Pilgrims should  
 seek St *Truth*.

¶ And ȝe þat seke seynte James · and seintes of  
 Rome, 57

Seketh seynt treuthe · for he may saue ȝow alle ;  
*Qui cum patre & filio · þat feire hem bifalle*  
 þat suweth my *sermon* ;” · and þus seyde resoun.  
 Thanne ran repentance · and reherced his teme, 61  
 [Fol. 18.] And gert wille to wepe · water with his eyen.

## SUPERBIA.

¶ Peronelle proude-herte · platte hir to þe erthe,  
 And lay longe ar she loked · and “lorde, mercy !”  
 cryed, 64

I. PRIDE. Pernel  
 repents her pride,

And byhiȝte to hym · þat vs alle made,  
 She shulde vnsowen hir serke · and sette þere an heyre  
 To affaiten hire flesshe · þat fierce was to synne :  
 “Shal neuere heiȝe herte me hente · but holde me  
 lowe, 68

and vows to wear  
 a hair shirt, and  
 to be ever  
 humble.

And suffre to be myssayde— · and so did I neuere.  
 But now wil I meke me · and mercy biseche,  
 For al þis I haue · hated in myne herte.”

## LUXURIA.

55

II. LECHERY.  
 Lechour repents,

¶ þanne lecchoure seyde “allas !” · and on owre lady  
 he cryed, 72

To make mercy for his mis-dedes · bitwene god and his  
 soule,

56. *hym*] hem R. *Amen*] Amen  
 amen C.

60. *suweth*] seweth W; suen O;  
 sueth R; suwes C. *resoun*] O *adls*  
 Amen.

61. *and*] O *om. teme*] tyme C.

62. *eyen*] eizen WB; eyȝes R; yen O.

*Superbia*. This is here written in  
 the margin of LWCO. Further on,  
 we find the other titles, *Luxuria*,  
*Inuidia*, &c.

63. *Peronelle*] Pernele WR.

64. *she*] he R. *cryed*] he criede R.

65. *byhiȝte*] bisouȝte CB. *to*] vn-  
 to O.

66. *heyre*] haire RB.

67. *fierce*] fiers W; fers RO; feerse  
 C; firs B.

68. *holde*] holde I wole W.

70. *wil I*] I wole W.

71. *al*] R *om. hated*] I-hated R;  
 hauntid B.

With þat he shulde þe saterday · seuene zere þere-after, and vovs  
Drynke but myd þe doke · and dyne but oncs. drink only with  
the ducks.

## INUIDIA.

¶ Enuye with heuy herte · asked after scrifte, 76 III. ENVY. Envy  
And carefullich *mea culpa* · he comsed to shewe. confesses his  
He was as pale as a pelet · in þe palsye he semed, misdeeds.  
And clothed in a caurimaury · I couthe it nouzte dis- He is pale,  
creue ; paralytic, and like  
a dried leek for  
leanness.

In kirtel and kourteby · and a knyf bi his syde, 80  
Of a freres frokke · were þe forsleues.

And as a leke hadde yleye · longe in þe sonne,  
So loked he with lene chekes · louryng foule.

¶ His body was to-bolle for wratthe · þat he bote his He bites his lips,  
lippes, and wrings his  
84 fist.

And wryngyng he zede with þe fiste · to wreke hym-  
self he pouzte

With werkes or with wordes · whan he seighe his tyme.

Eche a worde þat he warpe · was of an Addres tonge, † His words were  
Of chydyng and of chalangyng · was his chief lyflode, as if from an  
adder's tongue.

With bakbityng and bismar · and beryng of fals wit-  
nesse ; 89

þis was al his curteisye · where þat euere he shewed hym.

¶ “I wolde ben yshryue,” quod þis schrewe · “and I † “I had rather  
for shame durst ; than an Essex  
cheese that Gib  
should suffer loss.

I wolde be gladder, bi god · þat gybbe had meschaunce,

74. *þe saterday*] on þe day R.

75. *myd*] with CR.

*Inuidia*. O has *Envie*.

78. *as pale*] also pale B. *þe*] O  
*om*. *palsye*] palacye C.

79. *clothed*] cluted R. *cauri-  
maury*] kaurymaury W; Caurymaury  
CB; taurimaury (l) R. *couthe*] coude  
R. *discrue*] diseryue WCOB; de-  
scriue R.

80. *kourteby*] courtepy W; curteby  
R; curtepy B.

81. *þe*] his R. *forsleues*] fore sleues  
WR.

82. *leke*] leek þat W. *yleye*] y-  
leyen C.

84. *to-bolle*] to-bollen WCO; to-  
bolne B. *bote*] boot W; bot R.

85. *wryngyng*—*zede*] wrynged R.  
*þe*] his O. *fiste*] fust W; fuyst B.

86. *seighe*] sey; R; say B; saw O.

87. *of*] B *om*. *an Addres*] an  
addre R; a neddes W.

88. *and*] O *om*.

90. W *omits*. *euere*] C *om*.

91. *yshryue*] schryuen O. *schrewe*]  
sherewe W.

Than þouze I had þis woke ywonne · a weye of essex  
chese. 93

56

I annoy my  
neighbour,

¶ I haue a neighbore neyze me · I haue ennuyed hym  
ofte,

And lowen on hym to lordes · to don hym lese his  
siluer,

and make his  
friends his foes.

And made his frendes ben his foon · thow my false  
tonge ; 96

I stir up strife  
between † men,

His grace and his good happes · greueth me ful sore.

Bitwene many and many · I make debate ofte,  
þat bothe lyf and lyme · is lost þorw my speche.

And whan I mete him in market · þat I moste hate, 100

[Fol 18 b.]

I hailse hym hendeliche · as I his frende were ;

yet I pretend to  
be my foe's friend.

For he is douztier þan I · I dar do non other.

Ac hadde I maystrye and myzte · god wote my wille !

When I kneel in  
churche, I pray  
Christ to curse  
them that have  
borne away my  
bowl.

¶ And whan I come to þe kirke · and sholde kuele to  
þe Rode, 104

And preye for þe pople · as þe prest techeth,  
For pilgrimes and for palmers · for alle þe poeple after,  
þanne I crye on my knees · þat cryste 3if hem sorwe  
þat bar[en] away my bolle · and my broke schete. 108

57

I envy † Eleyne  
his new clothes,

¶ Away fro þe auter þanne · turne I myn eyghen,

And biholde how Eleyne · hath a newe cote ;

I wisse þanne it were myne · and al þe webbe after.

laugh when men  
lose, weep when  
they win,

¶ And of mennes lesyunge I laughe · þat liketh myn  
herte ; 112

And for her wynnynge I wepe · and waille þe tyme,

93. *noke*] wouke W ; wike B.

94. *neyze*] by W ; ny3 OB. *ennuyed*] anoyed W ; enuyed CRO ; enuyed B.

96. *made*] also R.

97. *greueth*] greuen WOB ; greues C.

100. *hate*] hatye R.

101. *hailse*] haile B. *his*] is C.

103. *Ac*] And C.

104. *kirke*] cherehe R. *to* (2)] to-  
for O.

106. *and for*] and B.

108. *baren*] *so in* OB ; beren W ; bare RC ; bar L. *broke*] broken OB.

109. *eyghen*] eyzes R ; yen O.

110. *how*] W om. *Eleyne*] heleyne R ; Elyne C. *hath*] has C.

111. *þe*] C om. *webbe*] web WRO ; weeb B.

112. *mennes*] his R. *liketh*] werkes C ; akip B. *þat--herte*] þat myn herte akeþ O.

113. *And*] Ac R. *her*] his R.

- ¶ And deme þat hij don ille · þere I do wel worse ; judge ill-doers,  
Who-so vndernymeth me here-of · I hate hym dedly and do worse  
after. myself.
- I wolde þat vche a wyght · were my knaue, 116  
For who-so hath more þan I · þat angreth me sore.  
And þus I lyue louelees · lyke a luther dogge,  
That al my body bolneth · for bitter of my galle.  
¶ I myzte nouzte eet many zeres · as a man ouzte, 120  
For enuye and yuel wille · is yuel to defye ;  
May no sugre ne swete þinge · asswage my swellynge,  
Ne no *diapenidion* · dryue it fro myne herte,  
Ne noyther schrifte ne shame · but ho-so schrape my  
mawe ? " 124  
¶ " 3us, redili," quod repentaunce · and radde hym to Repentance bids  
þe beste, him be sorry.
- " Sorwe of synnes · is sauacioun of soules."  
¶ " I am sori," quod þat segge · " I am but selde other, " I am never  
And þat maketh me þus megre · for I ne may me otherwise," said  
venge. he. 58  
128  
Amonges Burgeyses haue I be · dwellynge At  
Londoun,  
And gert bakbitinge be a brocoure · to blame mennes  
ware.  
Whan he solde and I nouzte · þanne was I redy † " I have often  
To lye and to loure on my neighbore · and to lakke his lied against my  
chaffare. neighbour ; but  
132 amends."
114. *þat*] men *þat* R. *hij*] þei nouþer C. *ne*] no R. *schrape*] schape O.  
WO; huy B. 125. *zus*] *zis* WR; þis CB; þis  
115. *here-of*] herof (*printed* hero) (*corrected* to *zis*) O. *redili*] rede I O.  
W. and] has C; haþ B.  
116. *I*] And I O. *vche a*] ech a 126. *sauacioun*] saluacion C.  
W; ilk a C. *my*] my owne O. 127. *þat*] þe B.  
118. *luther*] lyther CR; liþer B. 128. *venge*] auenge O.  
119. *bitter*] bytterhed B. *of*] in R. 129. *Burgeyses*] burgeis C; burgeys  
121. *defye*] diffye CO; diffie B. R.  
122. *sugre*] sucre RB; sugure C. 130. *gert*] gart W; grete C; gret  
123. *diapenidion*] diapendioun CB. B. *bakbitinge*] bagbytyng R.  
*Ne—diapenidion*] For no diapendion 131. *redy*] a-redy R.  
may B. 132. *lye*] lee C. *to lakke*] lakke  
124. *Ne*] Bom. *noyther*] neiþer WOB; CB. *chaffare*] ware R.

I wil amende þis, ȝif I may · þorw myȝte of god  
almyȝty." 133

## IRA.

† IV. IRA. Wrath  
comes, with two  
white eyes.

[Fol. 19.]

† "Once," said  
he, "I was a friar,  
and gardener to  
the convent.

¶ Now awaketh wratthe · with two whyte eyen,  
And nyuelynge with þe nose · and his nekke hangyng.

¶ "I am wrath," quod he · "I was sun tyme a frere,  
And þe couentes Gardyner · for to graffe ympes ; 137

On limitoures and listres · lesynges I ymped,  
Tyl þei bere leues of low speche · lordes to plesse,  
And sithen þei blosmed obrode · in boure to here  
shriftes. 140

And now is fallen þer-of a frute · þat folke han wel  
leuere

Schewen her schriftes to hem · þan shryue hem to her  
persones.

† The regular  
clergy and the  
friars are wroth  
with one another

¶ And now persones [han] parceyued · þat Freres  
parte with hem,

þise possessioneres preche · and deprauē freres, 144  
And freres fyndeth hem in defaute · as folke bereth  
witnes,

That whan þei preche þe poeple · in many place  
aboute,

I, wrath, walke with hem · and wisse hem of my  
bokes.

† and despise one  
another.

þus þei speken of spiritualte · þat eyther despiseth  
other, 148

133. *wil*] wolde C. *þorw*] by CB;  
bi O. *myȝte*] my (!) C. *þorw—of*]  
by dere B.

135. *nyuelynge*] neuelynge W;  
sneuelyng C; sneueling B. *þe*] his  
CB. *hangyng*] hyngyng CB.

137. *þe*] O om. *couentes*] eouent R.

138. *listres*] listers C; legistreris O.

140. *blosmed*] blesmed (*so mis-*  
*written*) C. *obrode*] abrode CO; a-  
brood W; R om.

141. *frute*] fruyt WCROB. *han*]  
haue R. *wel*] C om.

142. *shryue hem*] shryuen C.

143. *persones han*] L omits han;  
*but we find persons han* W; han per-  
sones COB; haue persones R. *The*  
*reading in W alone gives the right*  
*sense. parceyued*] aperecyued R.

144. *deprauē*] dempne C.

145. *freres*] R om.

146. *place*] plaees WRO.

147. *walke*] walkes C. *hem*] *The*  
*first time R has hym, but the second*  
*time hem.*

148. *of*] of my WR. *eyther*]  
aiper C.

- Til þei be bothe beggers · and by my spiritualte  
libben,  
Or elles alle riche · and riden aboute. 150  
I, wrath, rest neuere · þat I ne moste folwe † I keep them  
This wykked folke · for suche is my grace. excited.
- ¶ I haue an aunte to nonne · and an abbesse bothe, † My aunt is a  
Hir were leuere swowe or swelte · þan [suffre] any nun and an  
peyne. 154 abbess.
- I haue be cook in hir kichyne · and þe couent serued † I was eook in  
Many monthes with hem · and with monkes bothe. her kitchen.
- I was þe priouresses potagere · and other poure ladyes,  
And made hem ioutes of iangelynge · þat dame Iohanne † I got up all  
was a bastard, kinds of seandal.
- And dame Clarice a kniȝtes douȝter · ac a kokewolde  
was hire syre,  
And dame Peronelle a prestes file · Priouresse worth  
she neuere, 160
- For she had childe in chirityme · al owre chapitere it  
wiste.
- ¶ Of wykked wordes I, wrath · here wordes I-made, † I fed them with  
Til ‘ þow lixte ’ and ‘ þow lixte ’ · lopen oute at ones, wicked words.
- And eyther hitte other · vnder þe cheke; 164  
Hadde þei had knyues, bi cryst · her eyther had killed  
other.
- ¶ Seynt Gregorie was a gode pope · and had a gode † Gregory ruled  
forwit, that no prioress  
might hear con-  
fession.
- þat no priouresse were prest · for þat he ordeigned.

149. *my*] R om.

150. B omits. *alle*] al W.

151. *moste*] muste OB; mot R.

153. *an aunte*] a naunte R. *and an*] & O. *bothe*] R om.

154. *uere*] hadde W. *þan*] or O. [suffre WCRB] L has the unusual spelling soeffre.

156. *bothe*] also R.

157. *priouresses*] Prioress WCO. *poure*] pouere WC; pouer R; pore OB.

158. *And—of*] I made hir wordes

with CB; And made hem iowtes wij  
O. *Iohanne*] Iohane W; Iohan C;  
ione R.

159. *ae*] and COB.

160. *Peronelle*] Pernele W; peronel  
RO. *she*] heo R.

161. *she*] heo R. *chirityme*] ehiri-  
tyme WO. *chapitere*] Chapitre WOB.

162. *I-made*] made WCB.

164. *eyther*] aither C.

165. *Hadde*] Ha C. *her eyther*] eiþer COB.

167. *prest*] preest WO.

þei had þanne ben *infamis* þe firste day · þei can so  
yuel hele conseilte. 168

† I rather shun  
monks;

¶ Amonge monkes I miȝte be · æc many tyme I  
shonye ;

For pere ben many felle frekis · my feres to aspye,  
Bothe Prioure an supprioure · and owre *pater abbas* ;  
And if I telle any tales · þei taken hem togyderes, 172  
And do me faste frydayes · to bred and to water,  
And am chalanged in þe chapitelhous · as I a childe  
were,

† for priors and  
abbots make one  
do penance for  
talebearing.

And baleised on þe bare ers · and no breche bitwene ;  
For-þi haue I no lykyng · with þo leodes to wonye. 176

[Fol. 19 b.]

I ete there vnthende fisshe · and fieble ale drynke ;  
Æc other while, whan wyn cometh · whan I drynke  
wyn at ene,

† But when I can  
get at the wine,  
my tongue runs  
fast indeed."

I haue a fluxe of a foule mouthe · wel fyue dayes after.  
Al þe wikkednesse þat I wote · bi any of owre  
bretheren, 180

I couth it in owre cloistre · þat al owre couent wote it."

† "Repent," said  
Repentance ;

¶ "Now repent þe," quod Repentaunce · "and reherce  
þow neure

Conseille þat þow enowest · bi contenaunce ne bi  
riȝte ; 183

And drynke nouȝte ouer delicatly · ne to depe noyther,  
þat þi wille bi cause þer-of · to wrath myȝte torne.

168. *ben*] be CR. *infamis*] so in  
LCRO, and in W (though printed in-  
fames); but infames in B. *þe-day*]  
O om. *so—hele*] ille holde CB. *hele*]  
holde O.

169. *æc*] and CR. *shonye*] shonye  
it W.

170. *feres*] feeris W; fieres C.

171. *an*] and WCROB.

173. *do*] doon W.

174. *am*] ȝcet am R. *chapitelhous*]  
Chapitre hous WCB.

175. *ers*] ars B; hers (altered to  
bak) R. and] B om.

176. O omits. *þo*] B om. *leodes*]  
ledes R; leedis B.

177. *vnthende*] vnheende O. *fioble*]  
feble WROB.

178. *Æc*] And C. *cometh*] come  
C. *whan* (2)] þanne W; and COB.  
*wyn* (2)] wel R; it COB.

179. *I*] And W.

180. *wote*] woot WO; wot B.  
*bretheren*] brether C; breþere B.

181. *couth*] kiþe B; couþe (*glossed*  
*þy* make knowe) O. *owre* (2)] þe COB;  
R om. *wote*] woot WCO; wot RB.

183. *riȝte*] syȝt O; speche R.

184. *nouȝte*] nat W; nauȝt R; not  
OB. *noyther*] neiþer WOB; neytlær  
R; nowþer C.

185. *bi*] be CROB.

*Esto sobrius,*" he seyde · and assoilled me after, 186 † "and keep your-  
 And bad me wilne to wepe · my wikkednesse to self sober."  
 amende.

## AUARICIA.

## V. AVARICE.

¶ And þanne cam coueytise · can I hym nouzte Then came  
 descryue, 188 Avarice,  
 So hungiriliche and holwe · sire [Heruy] hym loked.  
 He was bitelbrowed · and baberlipped also,  
 With two blered eyghen · as a blynde hagge ;  
 And as a letheren purs · lolled his chekes, 192  
 Wel sydder þan his chyn · þei chiueled for elde ;  
 And as a bondman of his bacoun · his berde was † with a greasy  
 bidraneled. beard like a  
 bondman,  
 With an hode on his hed · a lousi hatte aboue,  
 And in a tauny tabarde · of twelue wynter age, 196 and a threadbare  
 Al totorne and baudy · and ful of lys crepynge ; and torn coat.  
 But if þat a lous couthe · haue lopen þe bettre,  
 She sholde nouzte haue walked on þat welche · so was  
 it thredbare.  
 ¶ "I haue ben coueytouse," quod þis caityne · "I bi- † I acknowledge I  
 knowe it here ; 200 am covetous, for  
 I once served Sim  
 at the Stile,  
 For some tyme I serued · Synme atte Stile,  
 And was his prentis yplizte · his profit to wayte.  
 First I lerned to lye · a leef other tweyne,  
 Wikkedlich to weye · was my furst lessoun. 204 where I learnt  
 lying and false  
 weights.

186. *and*] and so he R.

188. *Auaricia*] Descripcio Avaritie  
 R. *can I*] I can RO. *nouzte*] nazt  
 W; nozt B; not O.

189. [*Heruy* WOB] Henri L; henry  
 CR.

190. *bitelbrowed*] bytter browid B.  
*also*] bope CB.

193. *sydder*] sidder WC; siddere  
 B. *chiueled*] ryueleden (*corrected* to  
*chyueleden*) O; cheuerid B.

195. *an*] his R.

196. *twelue*] twelf WC.\*

197. *totorne*] to torn (*printed* so

torn) W.

198. *þat*] R *om.* *haue*] han W.  
*haue lopen*] lepe R.

199. *haue*] han W. *on þat welche*]  
 on þat welpe W; on þat welsch R;  
 there CB; þeron O. *In R the line*  
*begins.* He ne schulde nouzt walke on  
 þat welsch.

200. *coueytouse*] couettise C. *I—*  
*here*] y knew hit neuere B.

201. *atte*] at þe RO.

202. *profit*] prophete (!) C.

203. *leef*] so in LWCROB. *other*]  
 oufer WC.

I went to  
Winchester and  
Weyhill fair, and

To Wy and to Wynchestre · I went to þe faire,  
With many manere marchandise · as my Maistre me  
hiȝte ; 206

sold my wares by  
cheating.

Ne had þe *grace* of gyle · ygo amonge my ware,  
It had be vsolde þis seuene ȝere · so me god helpe !

**59**  
Then I went to  
the drapers, and  
learnt from them  
false measure.

¶ Thanne drowe I me amonges draperes · my donet to  
lerne, 209

There I learnt to  
fasten pieces of  
stuff together,

To drawe þe lyser alonge · þe lenger it semed ;  
Amonge þe riche rayes · I rendred a lessoun,  
To broche hem with a [pak-]nedle · and plaited hem  
togyderes, 212

and press them  
out till they  
seemed longer.

And put hem in a presse · and pyn[n]ed hem þerinne,  
Tyl ten ȝerdes or twelue · [hadde] tolled out threttene.

My wife made  
woollen cloth,  
and paid for it by  
false weight.

¶ My wyf was a webbe · and wollen cloth made ;  
She spak to spynnesteres · to spynnen it oute. 216  
Ac þe pounde þat she payed by · poised a quarteroun  
more,

[Fol. 20.]

Than myne owne auncere · who-so weyȝed treuthe.

She brewed  
barley, and  
made mixed  
drinks for poor  
people,

¶ I bouȝte hir barly malte · she brewe it to selle,  
Peny ale and podyng ale · she poured togideres 220  
For laboreres and for low folke ; · þat lay by hym-  
selue.

¶ The best ale lay in my boure · or in my bedchambre,  
And who-so bummed þer-of · bouȝte it þer-after,

206. *marchandise*] merchandises  
COB.

207. *had*] hadde WROB. *ygo*] go  
C ; goo B. *amonge*] amonges W.  
*rare*] chaffiare WCOB.

208. *be*] so in LR ; ben WCB ;  
been O.

209. *amonges*] among WCOB.

210. *lyser*] liser WCB ; lesere O.

211. *rayes*] rayeres R.

212. [*pak-nedle* WCO] packenedle  
B ; bat-nedle L ; batnedel R. See  
Text A. *plaited*] playte W ; plyghted  
C ; plytyd B.

213. *pynned*] so in CB ; pyned  
LR ; pynnede O ; pyne W.

214. [*hadde* WOCB] LR om.

216. *She*] Heo R. *spynnesteres*]  
a spinnester R.

217. *Ac*] And C. *þat*] O om. *poised*]  
peised WR ; weyed CO. *quarteroun*]  
quartron W ; quaterone C ; quartroun  
O ; quarter R. B *has*, Ac for þe pound  
she paid · al-þouȝ hit weyed a quar-  
troun more.

218. *auncere*] aunser COB.

219. *malte*] R om.

220. *podyng*] puddyng WCR ; pud-  
yng O. *she*] heo R.

221. *for*] COB om.

222. *ale*] of alle R. *my bed-  
chambre*] bedde chambre C.

223. B omits. *bouȝte*] he bouȝt  
CRO.

A galoun for a grote · god wote, [no] lesse ; 224 and sold ale  
 And ȝit it cam in cupmel · þis crafte my wyf vsed. at a groat a  
 gallon.

Rose þe regratere · was hir riȝte name ; Her name is  
 She hath holden hokkerye · al hire lyf tyme. Rose the regrater.

¶ Ac I swere now, so the ik · þat synne wil I lete, 228 But now I repent  
 And neuere wikkedliche weye · ne wikke chaffare and will make  
 vse, restitution." 60

But wenden to Walsyngham · and my wyf als,  
 And bidde þe Rode of bromeholme · brynge me oute of  
 dette."

¶ "Repente[de]stow þe euere," quod repentance · "ne † "Have you  
 restitucioun madest ?" 232 never made  
 restitution ? "

¶ "ȝus, ones I was herberwed," quod he · "with an said Repentance.  
 hep of chapmen,

I roos whan þei were arest · and yrifled here males." † "Yes; I once  
 rifled some  
 pedlars' paeks ;

¶ "That was no restitucioun," quod repentance · "but  
 a robberes thefte,

þow haddest [be] better worthy · be hanged þerfore  
 þan for al þat · þat þow hast here shewed." 237

¶ "I wende ryflynge were restitucioun," quod he · "for † for I thought  
 I lerned neuere rede on boke, rifling, as I don't  
 know French."

And I can no frenche in feith · but of þe ferthest ende  
 of norfolke."

¶ "Vsedestow euere vsurie," quod repentaunce · "in † "Did you ever  
 alle þi lyf tyme ?" 240 lend on usury ? "

224. [no] so in WCOB; L has na.

225. it] C om. cupmel] cuppemele  
 WB; coppemele R; copmele C. vsed]  
 vseth R.

226. was] is R.

227. hokkerye] hukkerye W;  
 hukrie O.

228. Ac] And C. so] also B. the  
 ik] thee ik W; theich R; thei C;  
 þeik B.

231. bromeholme] Bromholm  
 WCOB. of dette] dette C.

232. Repentedestow] Repentedes-  
 tow W; Repentedest þow R; Re-  
 pentestow LC; Repentist þow OB. þe]  
 WCRO om.; B retuins. ne] or WCO.

233. ȝus] ȝis WCOB. herberwed] y-  
 herberwed W; herberd C; sobrid (!) B.

234. roos] aros B. arest] at reste  
 B. yrifled] rifled WCOB; Irifled R.

236. [be C] LR om.; be þe W; been  
 O; ben B. be] to be O.

237. C has, thanne for al þat thow  
 haste · here now yshewed; OB the  
 same, but O has schewid for yshewed.  
 LWR agree.

238. for] COB om. lerned] lerid  
 B. rede] COB om.

239. þe ferthest] ferrest C. nor-  
 folke] Northfolk WC.

240. Vsedestow] Vsedist þow OB.  
 euere] O om.

† "Only in my youth, when I learnt to clip coin.

¶ "Nay, sothly," he seyde · "saue in my zouth.  
I lerned amonge lumbardes · and iewes a lessoun,  
To wey pens with a peys · and pare þe heuyest,  
And lene it for loue of þe crosse · to legge a wedde and  
lese it; 244

Suche dedes I did wryte · ȝif he his day breke.  
I haue mo maneres þorw rerages · þan þorw *miseretur*  
& *comodat*.

† I have lent to lords, and dealt with exchanges.

¶ I haue lent lordes · and ladyes my chaffare,  
And ben her brocour after · and bouȝte it my-self. 248  
Eschaunges and cheuesances · with suche chaffare I  
dele,

And lene folke þat lese wol · a lyppe at euery noble.  
And with lumbardes *lettres* · I ladde golde to Rome,  
And toke it by *taille* here · and tolde hem þere lasse."

[Fol. 20 b.]

"Len[t]estow euere lordes · for loue of her maynten-  
aunce?" 253

† I have made knights mercers and drapers.

¶ "Ȝe, I haue lent lordes · loued me neuere after,  
And haue ymade many a knyȝte · bothe mercere &  
drapere,  
þat payed neuere for his prentishode · nouȝte a peire  
gloues." 256

¶ "Hastow pite on pore men · þat mote nedes borwe?"

† I pity the poor as much as a pedlar does eats.

¶ "I haue as moche pite of pore men · as pedlere hath  
of cattes,  
þat wolde kille hem, yf he cacche hem myȝte · for  
coueitise of here skynnes."

241. *zouthē*] *ȝouȝe* B. Lenedest þow R; Lenedestow C; Lent-  
242. *and—lessoun*] a lessoun, and ist þow OB.  
of iewes R. 254. *lordes*] to lordes W. *loued*]  
243. *pens*] pans R. *peys*] pays C. þat loueden O; louede þei B.  
245. *breke*] broke RB; brook O. 255. *ymade*] maad C; made B. a]  
246. *maneres*] manoirs W. *comod- CR om.*  
*dat*] so in LCROB; also *comodat* in 256. *his*] hir CB. *peire*] paire of C.  
W (though printed *commodat*). 257. *Hastow*] Hast þow O.  
247. *lent*] lente R. 258. *as moche*] as mikile C; also  
248. *louȝte*] brouȝt (!) R. muche B. *of—men*] of hem CB; on  
249. *chaffare*] chaffares R. hem O. *pedlere*] þe pedlere R.  
252. *taille*] tale W. *hem*] O om. 259. *yf*] and R. *cacche hem*]  
253. *Lentestow* W] Lenestow L; COB om. *for—of*] forto haue CB.

- ¶ "Artow manlyche amonge þi neiȝbores · of þi mete  
and drynke?" 260
- ¶ "I am holden," quod he, "as hende · as hounde is in  
kychyne, † I am as hos-  
pitale as a cur  
in a kitchen."  
Amonges my neiȝbores, namelich · such a name ich  
haue."
- ¶ "Now god leue neure," quod repentance · "but þow  
repent þe rather, † "God grant  
that your issue  
may have no joy  
with your  
winnings.  
þe grace on þis grounde · þi good wel to bisette, 264  
Ne þine ysue after þe · haue ioye of þat þow wynnest,  
Ne þi excecutours wel bisett · þe siluer þat þow hem  
leuest ;  
And þat was wonne with wronge · with wikked men  
be despended.  
For were I frere of þat hous · þere gode faith and  
charite is, † Were I a friar, I  
would not touch a  
penny of yours. 268  
I nolde cope vs with þi catel · ne owre kyrke amende,  
Ne haue a peny to my pitaunce · of þyne, bi my soule  
hele,  
For þe best boke in owre hous · þeiȝe brent golde were  
þe leues,  
And I wyst wytterly · þow were suche as þow [tellest,]  
[Or elles þat I kouþe knowe it · by any kynnes wise.]  
*Seruus es alterius · cum fercula pinguia queris,* 274  
*Pane tuo potius · vescere, liber eris.*  
¶ Thow art an vnkynde creature · I can þe nouȝte as- † I cannot absolve  
you till you make  
restitution. 276  
saue W. *hele*] CB om.  
271. *brent*] brend RB.  
272. [*tellest* WCROB] telleth L;  
*but the line is marked for correction.*  
273. LWRO omit this line, but it  
is found in CBC2, and in Crowley's  
text, which has *kindes wyt for kynnes*  
*wise. I quote it from C.*  
274. *cum*] dum W.  
275. *potius*] potius (*printed* potius)  
W.  
276. *þe nouȝte*] nouȝt þe CB.
260. *Artow*] Art þow ROB. þi saue W. *hele*] CB om.  
*mete and*] met and of CB.  
261. COB *place* as hende *before*  
quod he. *is in*] in his R.  
263. *Neue*] O om. *leue*] leue þec  
*or lene* þec W. *neure*] CB om.  
265. *ysue*] vssue R; heires WCB;  
eyres O.  
266. *wel*] COB om. *þe*] þi O.  
267. *þe*] B om.  
269. *nolde*] wolde nouȝt R. *kyrke*] W.  
cherche R.  
270. *of—hele*] so god my soule

Til þow make restitucioun · and rekne with hem alle,  
 And sithen þat resoun rolle it · in þe registrye of henene,  
 That þow hast made vche man good · I may þe nouzte  
 assoille ; 279

*Non dimittitur peccatum · donec restituatur ablatum, &c.*

† All who touch  
 your money must  
 make restitution  
 at the last day."

¶ For alle þat [haue] of þi good · haue god my trouthe !  
 [Ben] holden at þe heighe dome · to helpe þe to restitue.  
 And who so leueth nouzte þis be soth · loke in þe  
 sauter glose, 282

† Ps. li. 6.  
 (l. 8. Vulg.)

In *miserere mei deus* · where I mene treuthe,  
*Ecce enim veritatem dilexisti, &c.*

¶ Shal neuere werkman in þis worlde · þryue wyth þat  
 þow wynnest ; 284

† Ps. xviii. 26.  
 (xvii. 26. Vulg.)

*Cum sancto sanctus eris* · construe me þat on englysche."

¶ Thanne wex þat shrewe in wanhope · and walde haue  
 hanged him-self,

[Fol. 21.]

Ne hadde repentaunce þe rather · reconforted hym in  
 þis manere,

† Repentance bids  
 him pray for  
 mercy.

"Haue mereye in þi mynde · and with þi mouth  
 biseche it, 288

For goddes mereye is more · þan alle hise other werkes ;

† Ps. cxliv. 9  
 (Vulgate).

*Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius, &c.*

¶ And al þe wikkednesse in þis worlde · þat man  
 myzte worche or thynke,

Ne is no more to þe mereye of god · þan in þe see a glede ;

277. R *inserts quod* repentance  
 after restitucioun.

278. *it*] þe C ; B *om.*

279. *assoille*] saue R. *donce*] nisi  
 R. *ablatum*] oblatum WCB.

280. [*haue* C] haue B ; han WO ;  
 hath LR.

281. [Ben WCOB] Is LR. *holden*]  
 haldynge R. *to* (2)] R *om.*

282. *nouzte þis be*] this be nouzt  
 CB. *þe*] a R.

283. *After &c. follows. in R only, the  
 curious line, þere is no laborere wolde  
 leue with hem · þat knoweth þere þe*

plowman.

284. *Shal*] For schal R.

285. *construe—englysche*] C *om.*  
*me þat*] me þis W ; þou me þat B.

286. *þat*] þe R. *him-self*] hym W.

287. *reconforted*] confortd R.  
*hym*] CB *om.*

289. LOR *preserue*, WCB *omit, the  
 Latin quotation, eius*] domini R.

290. *þe*] O *om.* *in*] of O. *þis*]  
 C *om.* *worche*] do COB.

291. *Ne is*] Nis WCOB. [*quasi*  
 WCOB] L *om.* *sintilla*] *so in W*  
 (*though printed* scintilla).

*Omnis iniquitas quantum ad misericordiam dei,  
est [quasi] sintilla in medio maris.*

¶ For þi haue mercy in þi mynde · and marchandise, † “Give up your  
leue it, 292 trading,” said  
Repentance.

For þow hast no good grounde · to gete þe with a  
wastel,

But if it were with thi tonge · or ellis with þi two  
hondes.

For þe good þat þow hast geten · bigan al with false- † That which you  
hede, won, you won  
falsely.

And as longe as þow lystest þer-with · þow zeldest  
nouzte, but borwest. 296

¶ And if þow wite neuere to whiche · ne whom to † If you know not  
restitute, whom to repay,  
give your money  
to the bishop.

Bere it to þe bisshop · and bidde hym of his grace,

Bisette it hym-selue · as best is for þi soule.

For he shal answeere for þe · at þe heygh dome, 300

For þe and for many mo · þat man shal ȝif a reken- † He shall answer  
yngge. for you.

What he lerned ȝow in lente · leue þow none other,

And what he lent ȝow of owre lordes good · to lette  
ȝow fro synne.”

## GULA.

## VI. GLUTTONY.

¶ Now bigynneth glotoun · for to go to schrifte, 304 † Glutton goes to  
church to confess,

And kaires hym to-kirke-ward · his coupe to schewe.

¶ Ac Beton þe brewestere · bad hym good morwe, † but on the way  
Beton the  
brewster hails  
him.

And axed of hym with þat · whiderward he wolde.

¶ “To holi cherche,” quod he · “forto here masse, 308

295. *bigan*] hit began B.

297. *wite*] wost COB. *restitute*] restitute R; make restitucioun B.

301. *for*] COB *om.*

303. *Corruptly made into two lines* in COB.

And what he lente yow of his  
goode · to wite yow fro synne,  
For he sholde helpe yow · of oure  
lordes goode C.

304. GULA] LWCOcz.

305. *kaire*] karieþ WB. *kirke*]  
cherche R. *coupe*] culpe B.

306. *Ac*] And W; An C.

307. *axed*] asked WR. *of*] at W.  
*hym*] B *om.* *whiderward*] whider  
B.

308. *chereke*] kirke O. *forto*] to  
CB.

And sithen I wil be shryuen · and synne namore."

She offers him ale; he asks if it is spiced; she says, yes.

¶ "I haue gode ale, gossib," quod she · "glotoun, wiltow assaye?"

"Hastow auzte in þi purs · any hote spices?"

¶ "I haue peper and pioness," quod [s]he · "and a pounde of garlike, 312

A ferthyngworth of fenel-seed · for fastyngdayes."

Glutton goes in.

¶ þanne goth glotoun in · and grete othes after;

There were Cis the shoemaker's wife, Wat the warrener, Tim the tinker,

Cesse þe souteresse · sat on þe benche, Watte þe warner · and his wyf bothe, 316

**G1**

Hiek the ostler, Hugh the needle-seller, Clarice of Cock lane, the clerk of the

Tymme þe tynkere · and tweyne of his prentis, Hikke þe hakeneyman · and hughe þe nedeler,

Clarice of cokkeslane · and þe clerke of þe cherche, Dawe þe dykere · and a dozeine other; 320

[Fol. 21 b.]

church, Sir Piers of Pridie, Pernel of Flanders, a ribibe-player, a ratcatcher, and many others, who all welcomed Glutton.

Sire Piers of Pridie · and Peronelle of Flaundes, A ribibour, a ratonere · a rakyer of chepe,

A ropere, a redyngkyng · and Rose þe dissheres, Godfrey of garlekehith · and gryfin þe walshe, 324

And vpholderes an hepe · erly bi þe morwe

Geuen glotoun with glad chere · good ale to hansel.

Clement the cobbler offers to barter his cloak, and Hiek the ostler his hood.

¶ Clement þe cobelere · cast of his cloke, And atte new faire · he nempned it to selle; 328

Hikke þe hakeneyman · litte his hood after,

And badde bette þe bochere · ben on his side.

þere were chapmen y-chose · þis chaffare to preise;

310. *wiltow*] woltow W; wilt þou OB.

311. *purs*] purs, quod he W.

312. *pioness*] pionus C; pioyne R; greynes B. *she* so in W; sche OR; he LCB; see l. 310.

313. *A*] And a W.

315. *souteresse*] sowestere B.

316. *warner*] waryner B.

317. *Tymme*] Symme CRB. *prentis*] prentices WCO; prentys R; prentiz B.

318. *hughe*] howe R; hue O.

319. *cokkeslane*] cockislane B. *þe clerke*] clere C.

320, 321. R *transposes these lines.*

321. *Sire*] And sire R. *Pridie*] Pride C. *Peronelle*] Pernele W.

322. *rakyer*] Raker COB.

323. *redyngkyng*] Rydyngkyng C. *dissheres*] disshere B; dysshers douyter R.

324. *garlekehith*] garlek-hethe R. *gryffin*] grifyth R.

325. *erly*] herly R.

326. *Geuen*] Gyuen C. *glad*] good COB.

328. *atte*] at þe WCOB; to þe R. *he*] R om.

330. *ben*] to ben R.

331. *were*] R. om. *y-chose*] chosen CB.

Who-so haueth þe hood · shuld haue amendes of  
þe cloke. 332

¶ Two risen vp in rape · and rouned togideres,  
And preised þese penyworthes · apart bi hem-selue ;  
þei couth nouȝte bi her conscience · acorden in treuthe,

Then all rose  
together, and  
chaffered, and  
disputed.

Tyl Robyn þe ropere · arose bi þe southe, 336  
And nempned hym for a noumpere · þat no debate nere,  
[For to trye þis chaffare · bitwixen hem þre.]

Robin the  
roper is made  
umpire, 62

¶ Hikke þe hostellere · hadde þe cloke,  
In couenaunte þat Clement · shulde þe cuppe fille, 340  
And haue Hikkes hode hostellere · and holde hym  
yserued ;

who decided that  
Hick should have  
the cloak, and  
Clement have  
the hood and fill  
the cup.

And who-so repented rathest · shulde arise after,  
And grete sire glotoun · with a galoun ale.

¶ Þere was laughyng and louryng · and “let go þe  
cuppe,” 344

Then came much  
laughing and  
drinking, till  
Glutton had  
swallowed more

And seten so til euensonge · and songen v̄mwhile,  
Tyl glotoun had y-globbed · a galoun an a lille.

His guttis gunne to [gothely] · as two gredy sowes ;

He pissed a potel · in a pater-noster while, 348

than he could  
well hold.

And blew his rounde ruwet · at his rigge-bon ende,

That alle þat herde þat horne · held her nose after,

And wissheden it had be wexed · with a wispe of firses.

332. *Who-so*] That whoso W. *haueth*] haue CB; hadde WO. *shuld*] shul CR. *haue*] han W.

333. *Two*] þo R. *vp*] R om.

334. *þese*] þe R.

336. *bi*] R om (!).

337. *noumpere*] nounpere W; noun-  
pier C. *nerre*] were R.

338. *From* O; also in CBC2; LWR  
omit. Crowley has the line, but puts  
there for þre.

341. *yserued*] serued CB.

342. *who-so*] who þat COB. *rathest*]  
rather COB.

343. *sire*] wele C; wel B; wel sire  
O.

345. *seten so*] sitten so R; so setyn  
pey C; so þei seten B; so seten O.  
*songen*] syngen R. *v̄mwhile*] v̄m-  
while R; oȝer while O.

346. *y-globbed*] y-glubbed W;  
glubbed O; globed C; swelwid B.  
*an*] and WCROB. *lille*] gille  
WCROB.

347. *gunne*] gone R; bigonne  
WC; bigune O. [*gothely* C] gurle,  
*corrected to gotheli* O; gobelen W;  
grouly B; godly LR; but in L, the  
line is marked for correction. Crowley  
prints gothlen. *gredy*] guedy R.

348. *potel*] potel and more B.

349. *And*] He R. *ruwet*] rowet  
R; rewet C; ruet B. *rigge-bon*]  
rigges boue C; ruggebones W; rigges-  
bones R; rigge-bonys O; riegbones B.

350. *þat herde*] R om. *nose*] noses W.

351. *wexed*] waxed COB. *wispe*]  
wips R.

He could scarce stand, and walked all ways, like a gleeman's bitch,

¶ He myzte neither steppe ne stonde · er he his staffe hadde ; 352

## 63

or a man setting bird-catching lines.

And þanne gan he go · liche a glewmannes bicche,  
Somme tyme aside · and somme tyme arrere,  
As who-so leyth lynes · forto lacche foules.

¶ And whan he drowgh to þe dore · þanne dymmed his eighen, 356

He stumbled at the threshold, when Clement caught him and carried him,

He [stumbled] on þe thresshewolde · an threwe to þe erthe.

Clement þe cobelere · cauzte hym bi þe myddel,  
For to lifte hym alofte · and leyde him on his knowes ;

Ac glotoun was a gret cherle · and a grym in þe lift-ynge, 360

[Fol. 22.]

for which service he was ill repaid.

And coughed vp a caudel · in clementis lappe ;

Is non so hungri hounde · in Hertford schire  
Durst lape of þe leuynges · so vnlovely þei smauzte.

His wife put him to bed, and he slept all Saturday and Sunday.

¶ With al þe wo of þis worlde · his wyf and his wenche 364

Baren hym home to his bedde · and brouzte hym þer-inne.

And after al þis excesse · he had an accidie,  
þat he slepe saterday and sonday · til sonne zede to reste.

Then he woke up, rubbed his eyes, and asked where the cup was.

þanne waked he of his wynkyng · and wiped his eyghen ; 368

þe fyrste worde þat he warpe · was, “where is þe bolle ?”

352. *ne*] no C.

353. *go*] to go B. *glewmannes*] glemannes W; glwmannes (*sie*) R.

354. *arere*] arere WCRB; a rere O.

355. *lynes*] lymzēdis B. *lacche*] kacehe B.

356. *And*] Ac R. *eighen*] eyzes R.

357. [*stumbled* WCO] stomlid B; trembled L; tremled R. *thresshewolde*] þreiswald B; þresshfold W. *an*] and W &c. *threwe*] threwe C;

ouerþrew B.

359. *hym*] C om. *knowes*] knowes, altered to knees C; knees O.

360. *a grym*] grym O; heuy B.

361. *coughed*] cowede R; kowid B.

363. *þe*] þat WCOB. *leuynges*] leuyng R. *þei smauzte*] hit smacchid B.

365. *home*] R om.

367. *slepe*] sleep WB. *zede to*] wente to O; took CB.

369. *þe* (1)] C om.

His [wif] gan edwite hym þo · how wikkedlich he  
lyued,

And repentance riȝte so · rebuked hym þat tyme :

† His wife and  
Repentance  
rebuke him.

¶ “As þow with wordes and werkes · hast wrouȝte  
yuel in þi lyue, 372

Shryue þe and be shamed þer-of · and shewe it with þi  
mouth.”

¶ “I, glotoun,” quod þe gome · “gylti me ȝelde,  
þat I haue trespassed with my tonge · I can nouȝte  
telle how ofte,

† “I confess that  
I have often used  
oaths,

Sworen ‘goddess soule’ · and ‘so god me help and  
halidom,’ 376

þere no nede ne was · nyne hundreth tymes ;

¶ And ouer-seye me at my soper · and some tyme at  
nones,

† and have been  
gluttonous,

þat I glotoun girt it vp · er I hadde gone a  
myle,

And y-spilte þat myȝte be spared · and spended on  
somme hungrie ; 380

Ouerdelicately on fastyng dayes · drunken and eten  
bothe,

And sat some tyme so longe þere · þat I slepe and ete  
at ones.

† sometimes  
sleeping and eat-  
ing both at once.”

For loue of tales in tauernes · to drynke þe more, I  
dyned,

And hyed to þe mete er none · whan fastyng dayes  
were.” 384

370. [wif WO] witte LRB; wit C. Cf. Text A.

371. so] þoo so O.

372. yuel] ille COB.

373. shamed] a-schamed OR. þi] COB om.

374. gome] grom W; goome C.

375. þat] Of þat R.

376. soule] soule and his sydes R. god—help] help me god R; me god helpe W. and halidom] at þe holy dom B; W om.

377 ne] W om. hundreth] hundred

WC; hundrid OB.

378. ouer-seye] ouerseyen W. at my] atte C; at þe B.

379. it] COB om.

380. And] And (printed An) W. y-spilte] spilt COB. spended] spend R. on somme] vpon þe B.

382. þat I] and R. slepe] sleep W; sleped C; slep R; slepte O. at] al at B.

383. to drynke] and for drynke W; to ete R.

384. hyed] hized me B.

† “This confession of yours will help you.”

¶ “This shewyng shrifte,” quod repentance · “shal be meryte to þe.”

**61**

“I vow,” said he, “henceforth to observe abstinence.”

¶ And þanne gan glotoun grete · and gret doel to make  
For his lither lyf · þat he lyued hadde, 387

And avowed [to] fast— · “for hunger or for thurst  
Shal neuere fische on þe fryday · defien in my wombe,  
Tyl abstinence myn aunte · haue ȝiue me leue;  
And ȝit haue I hated hir · al my lyf tyme.”

VII. ACCIDIA.

ACCIDIA.

† Sloth comes, asking for a seat.

¶ þanne come sleuthe al bislabered · with two slymy  
eizen, 392

“I most sitte,” seyde þe segge · “or elles shulde I  
nappe;

I may nouȝte stonde ne stoupe · ne with-oute a stole  
knele.

Were I brouȝte abedde · but if my taille-ende it made,  
Sholde no ryngyng do me ryse · ar I were rype to  
dyne.” 396

† He went to sleep over his prayers.

He bygan *benedicite* with a bolke · and his brest  
knocked,

And roxed and rored · and rutte atte laste.

[Fol. 22 b.]

“What! awake, renke!” quod repentance · “and rape  
þe to shrifte.”

† Awaked, he says he forgets his *puter-noster*,

¶ “If I shulde deye bi þis day · me liste nouȝte to  
loke; 400

385. *shrifte*] of shryfte B. *meryte*] mercy CB.

386. *þanne*] C om. *grete*] to grete RB. *gret*] muche R. *to make*] made O.

387. *lither*] lusher W.

388. [to WCOB] LR om. *arowed* to] made his avow to B; *vowede* to O. *thurst*] thruste C.

389. *þe*] WCO om. *Shal—defien*] þat neuere fisch on þe Friday · diffie shal B.

390. *haue ȝiue*] hath Iȝene R.

392. *Accidia*] LWC; ROB om.

*come*] cam WCOB. *bislabered*] byslobred R. *slymy eizen*] slymed eyses R.

393. *shulde I*] I schulde OB.

394. *a*] R om.

396. *ryngyng*] þyng B. *ar*] er WCB; ere R; or O.

397. *his*] is C; on his B.

398. *roxed*] raxed W; roskid B.

*atte*] at þe WO; al out atte B.

399. *What*] COB om. *renke*] and þenk B.

400. *If*] Al-þouȝ B. *day*] day quod he R. *liste*] lest R.

- I can nouȝte *perfitly* my *pater-noster* · as þe prest it  
 syngeth, † but he knows  
 rimes about  
 Robin Hood.
- But I can rymes of Robyn hood · and Randolf erle of  
 Chestre,
- Ac neither of owre lorde ne of owre lady · þe leste þat  
 euere was made.
- ¶ I haue made vowes fourty · and for-ȝete hem on þe  
 morne ; 404
- I parfourned neuere penaunce · as þe prest me hiȝte,  
 Ne ryȝte sori for my synnes · ȝet was I neuere. † "I never  
 perform my  
 penances rightly.
- And ȝif I bidde any bedes · but if it be in wrath,  
 þat I telle with my tonge · is two myle fro myne  
 herte.
- I am occupied eche day · haliday and other, 409 † I am always  
 occupied with  
 idle tales.
- With ydel tales atte ale · and otherwhile in cherches ;  
 Goddes peyne and his passioun · ful selde þynke I  
 þere-on.
- ¶ I visited neuere fieble men · ne fettered folke in  
 puttes, 412
- I haue leuere here an harlotrie · or a somer game of † I had sooner  
 hear such things  
 than all that ever  
 Mark wrote.
- Or lesynges to laughe at · and belye my neighbore,  
 þan al þat euere Marke made · Mathew, John, & lucas.
- And vigilies and fastyng dayes · alle þise late I passe,  
 And ligge abedde in lenter · an my lemman in myn † In Lent, I lie  
 in bed till mass  
 is nearly over.
- armes, 417
- Tyl matynes and masse be do · and þanne go to þe  
 freres ;

401. *it*] COB *om.*403. *Ae*] And C. *of* (2)] CO *om.*  
*euere—made*] þat is made COB.404. *vowes*] auowes W. *fourty*] fifty  
COB. *on þe*] al at CB; or R; on O.  
*morne*] morwe WCRO; morwen B.405. *parfourned*] performed B.406. *Ne*] For B. *synnes*] synne CB.409. *occupied*] ocuped R.410. *atte ale*] at þe Ale WCRO; at  
þe nale B. *in cherches*] in cherche

R; at chirche W.

411. *þere-on*] on CO; on it W.412. *fioble*] feble WOB; seke R.*puttes*] pittes COB.413. *haue*] hadde R. a] C *om.**somer game*] somer gamen B.414. *lesynges*] lesynges W. *at*] of R.*neighbore*] neȝebores WCOB.415. *þan*] R *om* (!). *lucas*] luk B.416. *late I*] I late R.418. *and þanne*] þan C.

Come I to *ite*, *missa est* · I holde me yserued.

† I am shriven  
about twice in  
two years.

I nam nouȝte shryuen some tyme · but if sekenesse it  
make, 420

Nouȝt tweies in two ȝere · and þanne vp gesse I schryue  
me.

† Though I am  
a priest, I cannot  
*sol-fa*;

¶ I haue be prest and *parsoun* · passynge thretti  
wynter,

ȝete can I neither solfe ne syng · ne seyntes lyues rede,

† but I can find  
a hare in a field.

But I can fynde in a felde · or in a fourlonge an hare,  
Better þan in *beatus vir* · or in *beati omnes* 425

Construe oon clause wel · and kenne it to my *paroch-*  
*ienes*.

† I can hold  
love-days.

I can holde louedayes · and here a Reues rekenynge,  
Ac in canoun ne in þe decretales · I can nouȝte rede a  
lyne. 428

¶ ȝif I bigge and borwe it · but ȝif it be ytailed,

† I forget what  
I borrow.

I forȝete it as ȝerne · and ȝif men me it axe  
Sixe sithes or seuene · I forsake it with othes,  
And þus tene I trewe men · ten hundreth tymes. 432

† I keep back my  
servants' wages.

¶ And my seruauantz some tyme · her salarye is  
bihynde,

Reuthe is to here [þe] rekenynge · whan we shal rede  
acomptes ;

So with wikked wille and wraththe · my werkmen I  
paye.

† I requite  
benefits with  
unkindness.

¶ ȝif any man doth me a *benfait* · or helpeth me at  
nede, 436

419. *yserued*] *serued* COB.

420. *if*] COB *om.*

421. *schryue*] *miswritten* sheryue  
*in L. me*] C *om.*

422. *thretti*] twenty B. *wynter*]  
yere COB.

423. *ȝete*] And yet W. *solfe*] *solf*  
B; *solue* R; *solue* (*printed solne*)  
W.

426. *oon—wel*] *it clausemel* R;  
*me þis clause wel* B. *my*] *þi* (!) B.  
*parochienes*] *parishens* WCOB.

427. *and*] or R.

428. CB *om.* *ne in þe*] *nor* in W;  
*ne* O.

429. *it* (1)] *auȝt* W. *ȝif* (2)] B *om.*  
*ytailed*] *tailed* COB.

430. *as*] also B. *ȝerne*] *soone* O.  
*axe*] *aske* R.

432. *tene I*] I *tene* RB. *hundreth*]  
hundred WOB.

434. *is*] *it is* WB. [þe WCOB]  
LR *om.*

436. *doth*] *do* COB. *benfait*] *bien-*  
*fait* WC; *benfeet* RO; *bienfet* B.  
*helpeth*] *helpe* COB.

- I am vnkynde aȝein his curteisye · and can nouȝte [Fol. 23.]  
 vnderstonde it ; 437
- For I haue and haue hadde · some dele haukes maneres,  
 I nam nouȝte lured with loue · but þere ligge auȝte  
 vnder þe thombe.
- ¶ The kyndenesse þat myne euene-cristene · kidde me † I forget the  
 [fernyere], 440 kindnesses men  
 do to me.
- Sixty sythes I, sleuthe · haue fo[r]ȝete it sith,  
 In speche and in sparynge of speche · yspilte many a  
 tyme
- Bothe flesche & fische · and many other vitailles ;  
 Bothe bred and ale · butter, melke, and chese 444 † I waste much  
 meat and drink."
- Forsleuthed in my seruyse · til it myȝte serue noman.
- ¶ I ran aboute in ȝouthe · and ȝaf me nouȝte to lerne,  
 And euere sith [haue] be beggere · for my foule  
 sleuthe ;
- Heu michi, [quod] sterilem vitam duxi Iuuenilem.* 448
- ¶ "Repentestow þe nauȝte ?" quod repentance · and Sloth falls down  
 riȝte with þat he swowned, swooning, but  
*Vigilate* wakes  
 him,
- Til *vigilate* þe veille · fette water at his eyȝen,  
 And flatte it on his face · and faste on hym criede,  
 And seide, "ware þe fram wanhope · wolde þe bitraye.  
 'I am sori for my synnes' · sey so to þi-selue, 453  
 And bete þi-selue on þe breste · and bidde hym of grace ;  
 and bids him  
 repent.

437. *vnkynde*] vnkende R ; vn-  
 hende O. *aȝein*] ayeins W ; aȝens O ;  
 to CB. *his*] W om.

439. *nam*] am WCB. *lured*] leired  
 C ; lieured B. *þere ligge auȝte*] auȝt  
 be CB ; if ouȝt lye O. *þe*] R om.

440. *kidde*] kudde R ; kydden O.  
*[fernyere WC]* ferneȝere RB ; ferne  
 ȝer O ; farnere L.

441. *sythes*] sithe R. *forȝete*] for-  
 yete W ; *miswritten* foȝete L.

442. *of speche*] OB om ; of speches  
 C. *yspilte*] I spilt COB ; I spelt R.  
*a tyme*] tymes CB.

443, 444. Boþe flesshe and fische ·  
 butter, mylk, an chesse,  
 Boþe brede an ale · and many

other vitailles COB. *many*] myn R.

447. [*haue C*] haue I WO ; I haue  
 B ; LR omit ; but the line is marked  
 for correction in L. Crowley has haue.

448. [*quod RB*] quia LWCO ;  
*which spoils the seasion.*

449. *Repentestow*] Repentest þou  
 BO ; Repentest R ; Repentedestow W.  
*þe*] WCO om. *swowned*] swhounede R.

450. *eyȝen*] eyȝes R ; yen O.

451, 452. B *transposes these lines.*

451. *it on*] water in B. *faste*] R om.

452. *fram*] fro CB ; for WO.  
*wolde*] he wolde B.

453. *so*] þou B ; WCO om.

454. *bete*] bette C. *þe*] þi C. *hym*]

god B.

For is no gult here so grete · þat his goodnesse nys  
more."

Then Sloth sat  
up and [blessed  
himself,]

and vowed he  
would always go  
to church early  
and regularly,

¶ Þanne sat sleuthe vp · and seynd hym swithe, 456  
And made avowe to-fore god · for his foule sleuthe,  
"Shal no sondaye be þis seuene 3ere · but sykenesse it  
lette,

attend evensong,  
and make  
65  
amends.

þat I ne shal do me er day · to þe dere cherehe,  
And heren matines and masse · as I a monke were. 460  
Shal none ale after mete · holde me þennes,  
Tyl I haue euensonge herde · I behote to þe Rode.  
And 3ete wil I 3elde a3ein · if I so moche haue,  
Al þat I wikkedly wan · sithen I wytte hadde. 464  
¶ And þough my liflode lakke · leten I nelle,  
þat ecche man ne shal haue his · ar I hennes wende:  
And with þe residue and þe remenaunt · bi þe Rode  
of chestre!

Robert the robber  
thought to make  
restitution, and  
prayed to Christ,  
saying,

I shal seke treuthe arst · ar I se Rome!" 468  
¶ Robert þe robbere · on *reddite* lokede,  
And for þer was nou3te wher-of · he wepe swithe  
sore.

"Christ, that  
saved Dismas on  
the cross,

Ac 3et þe synful shrewe · seyde to hym-selue,  
"Cryst, þat on caluarye · vpyon þe crosse deydest, 472  
Tho dismas my brother · bisou3te 3ow of grace,  
And haddest mercy on þat man · for *memento* sake,  
So rewe on þis robbere · þat *reddere* ne haue, <sup>debeo</sup>  
Ne neuere wene to wynne · with crafte þat I owe. 476  
But for þi mykel mercy · mitigacioun I biseche;

[Fol. 23 b.]  
have mercy  
upon me!"

455. *is*] *þer* is B. *no*] no (*printed*  
ne) W. *nys*] is CROB.

456. *seynd*] sayned C; blissid B.

457. *avowe*] avow O; awowe C; a  
vow RB; anow (*printed* a vow) W.

458. *but—it*] but 3if sekenesse me  
R.

459. *ne*] B *om.*

463. *And—I*] What I nam R.

465. *my*] me R.

466. *ne*] ROB *om.*

467. *with þe*] with CO. *þe Rode*]  
rode C.

468. *arst*] erst WCOB. *ar*] er  
WCROB.

469. *Robert*] Robert WCR.

470. *wepe*] weped COB; wepte W.  
*sore*] O *om.*

471. *Ac*] And C.

472. *on*] on þe O.

473. B *omits.* *dismas*] bymas R.

474. *on*] of CO.

475. *haue*] haþ O.

476. *owe*] knowe R.

477. *for*] C *om.* *I*] O *om.*

Ne dampne me nouȝte at domesday · for þat I did so  
ille.”

¶ What bifel of þis feloun · I can nouȝte faire schewe,  
Wel I wote he wepte faste · water with boþe his eyen,  
And knowleched his gult · to cryst zete eftsones, 481

What became of  
him I know not;  
yet he wept sore,

þat *penitencia* his pyke · he shulde polsche newe,  
And lepe with hym ouer londe · al his lyf tyme,

and vowed  
penitence. **66**

For he had leyne bi *latro* · luciferes aunte. 484

¶ And þanne had repentaunce reuthe · and redde hem  
alle to knele,

† Repentance  
prays for all the  
penitents.

“ For I shal biseche for al synful · owre sauceoure of  
*grace*,

To amende vs of owre mysdedes · and do mercy to vs  
alle.

¶ Now god,” quod he, “ þat of þi goodnesse · gonne þe  
worlde make, 488

† “O God, who  
didst suffer man  
to commit sin,

And of nauȝte madest auȝte · and man moste liehe to  
þi-selue,

And sithen suffredest for to synne · a sikennesse to vs  
alle,

And al for þe best, as I bileue · what euere þe boke  
telleth,

† for the ultimate  
benefit of man-  
kind,

*O felix culpa! o necessarium peccatum ade! ꝑe.*

For þourgh þat synne þi sone · sent was to þis erthe,

And bicam man of a mayde · mankynde to saue, 493

† and wast  
made man;

And madest þi-self with þi sone · and vs synful yliche,

*Faciamus hominem ad ymaginem et similitu-* † (Gen. i. 26;

*dinem nostram;*

478. *so*] *O om.*

479. *feloun*] schrewe O.

481. R *omits. gult*] gilt WCO. *eftsones*] efter soones O.

482. *polsche*] polische O; polissh C; pulsehe B.

483. *lyf*] C *om.*

484. *had*] hath R.

488. *he*] R *om.* (!) *þat*] *precedes* gonne COB. *gonne*] gunne O; bi-

gonne W. *make*] to make W.

489. *auȝte*] alle þynge B.

490. *suffredest*] suffrest COB. *for to*] hym to R; for O; for oure B (*which last is clearly wrong here*).

491. *telleth*] telle CB. *peccatum ade*] *ade peccatum O.*

494. *vs synful*] vs silf B; CB *omit the quotation, and also ll. 495—497. et similitudinem*] WO *om.*

1 St John iv. 16);

*Et alibi: qui manet in caritate, in deo manet,  
& deus in eo;*

† and didst die  
upon Good  
Friday;

¶ And sith with þi self sone · in owre sute deydest  
On godefryday for mannes sake · at ful tyme of þe  
daye, 496

þere þi-self ne þi sone · no sorwe in deþh feledest;  
But in owre secte was þe sorwe · and þi sone it ladde,

† (Eph. iv. 8);

*Captiuum duxit captiuitatem.*

† when the sun  
was darkened at  
noon-day;

¶ þe sonne for sorwe þer-of · les syzte for a tyme  
Aboute mydday whan most lizte is · and mele tyme of  
saintes; 500  
Feddest with þi fresche blode · owre forfadres in derk-  
nesse,

† (Isalah ix. 2);

*Populus qui ambulabat in tenebris, vidit lucem  
magnam;*

And thow þe lizte þat lepe oute of þe · hucifer was  
blent,

And blewe alle þi blissed · in-to þe blisse of paradise.

† and on the third  
day didst rise  
again;

¶ þe thrydde daye after · þow ȝedest in owre sute, 504  
A synful Marie þe seighe · ar seynte Marie þi dame,  
And al to solace synful · þow suffredest it so were:

† Mat. ix. 13.

*Non veni vocare iustos, set peccatores ad peni-  
tenciam.*

¶ And al þat Marke hath ymade · mathew, Johan, and  
lucas,

[Fol. 24.]

Of þyne douzticst dedes · were don in owre armes. 508

† Jo. i. 14.

*Verbum caro factum est, et habitauit in nobis.*

§—*eo*] O *om.*

495. þi] þe R. *sute*] *so in* O;  
scute R; seete W. Crowley *has* *sute.*

496. þe] R *om.*

497. ne] and R.

498. þe] þat R. *duxit*] *duxi* CB,

499. les] lees W; lese C. *syzte*] *ar*] er WCROB.

lizt W; hys lizt O. *for*] of W.

500. *mele*] *meke* (!) B.

501. *with*] þo with R. *fresche*  
*blode*] *Fleisch* & þi blood B. *ambula-*  
*bat*] *ambulat* CB.

502. *was*] it R.

503. *blissed*] *blissed þennes* R. *þe*] *þy* C.

504. þow] O *om.* *sute*] *so in* WO;  
*syte* CB; *scute* R.

505. *A*] And COB. *þe*] þow CB.

506. *And*] CB *om.* *al*] O *om.*  
*set*] *sed* R.

507. *And*] To (!) B.

508. *douzticst*] *douzty* WCOB.  
*were*] *was* W; þat *weren* B.

And bi so moche, me semeth · þe sikerere we mowe

Bydde and biseche · if it be þi wille,

þat art owre fader and owre brother · be merciable

to vs,

And haue reuthe on þise Ribaudes · þat repente hem <sup>† we pray Thee,</sup>  
here sore, 512 <sup>have mercy on all</sup>  
<sup>these penitents."</sup>

þat euere þei wratthed þe in þis worlde · in worde,  
þouzte, or dedes."

¶ þanne hent hope an horne · of *Deus, tu conuersus* <sup>† Then Hope</sup>  
*uiuificabis* [nos,] <sup>seized a horn, and</sup>  
<sup>blew it; (Ps. lxx.</sup>

And blew it with *Beati quorum · remisse sunt iniqui-*  
*tates,* <sup>20, and xxxi. 1;</sup>  
<sup>Vulgate.)</sup>

þat alle seyntes in heuene · songen at ones, 516

*Homines & iumenta saluabis, quemadmodum* <sup>† Ps. xxxv. 7;</sup>  
*multiplicasti misericordiam tuam, deus, &c.* <sup>(Vulgate.)</sup>

¶ A thousand of men þo · thrungen togyderes ;

Criede vpward to cryst · and to his clene moder

To haue grace to go with hem · treuthe to seke. 519

Then a thousand  
men thronged  
together, hoping  
to find Truth.

¶ Ac þere was wyzte non so wys · þe wey þider couthe,

But blustreden forth as bestes · ouer bankes and hilles,

Til late was and longe · þat þei a lede mette,

Apparilled as a paynym · in pylgrymes wyse.

He bare a burdoun ybounde · with a brode liste, 524

In a withewyndes wise · ywounden aboute.

A bolle and a bagge · he bare by his syde ;

An hundreth of ampulles · on his hatt seten,

Signes of synay · and shelles of galice ; 528

**6?**  
But no one knows  
the way.

At last they met  
a Palmer in  
pilgrim's weeds,  
a staff in his  
hand, a bag and a  
bowl by his side,

*ampulle* in his  
hatt, and marked

509. *me*] it R. *sikerere*] syker-  
loker R.

510. *biseche*] biseche it CB.

511. *to*] til CO.

512. *reuthe*] mercy R. *here*] R om.

513. *wratthed*] wrapþeden O ;  
wrathe C. *in—worlde*] R om. *dedes*]  
dede CO.

514. [*nos*] in R *only*.

515. *blew*] he blew R.

516. *þat*] Til CB. *deus*] found in  
W (but not printed).

518. *Criede*] Cryeden O.

519. *To—go*] Grace to god (!) R.

520. *C omits. was wyzte*] ne was B.

521. *blustreden*] blostereden R ;

blustreden (*sic*) C. *forth*] for C.

522. *þat þei*] til þey C ; til þei wiþ B.

525. *withewyndes*] wiþwynde W ;  
wodebyndis B ; swithe wyndes CO.

526. *bolle*] bulle R.

527. *Au*] Au (*printed* And) W.

*hundreth*] hundred WROB.

528. *synay*] a sise (!) R.

with crosses and  
keys on his cloak.

And many a cruche on his cloke · and keyes of Rome,  
And þe vernicle bifore · for men shulde knowe,

68

And se bi his signes · whom he souzte hadde. 531

They asked him  
whence he came;  
and he said, From  
Sinai, the  
sepulchre,  
Bethlehem, and  
Babylon.

¶ Þis folke frayned hym firste · fro whennes he come?

¶ "Fram synay," he seyde · "and fram owre lordes  
sepulchre;

In bethleem and in babiloyne · I haue ben in bothe,  
In ermonyne, in Alisaundre · in many other places.

þe may se bi my signes · þat sitten on myn hatte, 536  
þat I haue walked ful wyde · in wete and in drye,  
And souzte gode seyntes · for my soules helth."

"Knowest thou  
a saint named  
Truth; where  
dwells he?"

¶ "Knowestow ouzte a corseint · þat men calle treuthe?  
Coudestow auzte wissen vs þe weye · where þat wy  
dwelleth?" 540

He answers that  
he cannot tell.

¶ "Nay, so me god helpe!" · seide þe gome þanne,  
"I seygh neuere palmere · with pike ne with scrippe  
Axen after hym er · til now in þis place."

[Fol. 21 b.]

Enter PIERS THE  
PLOWMAN.

"Peter!" quoth  
he, "I know him  
well.  
Conscience and  
Common Sense  
told me where he  
lives.

"Peter!" quod a plowman · and put forth his hed, 544  
"I knowe hym as kyndely · as clerke doþ his bokes;  
Conscience and kynde witte · kenned me to his place,  
And deden me suren hym sikerly · to serue hym for  
eetere,

Bothe to sowe and to sette · þe while I swynke  
myghte. 548

I have sown his  
seed,

I haue ben his folwar · al þis [fifty] wyntre;  
Bothe ysowen his sede · and sued his bestes,

529. a] CR *om.* *cruche*] *erouche*  
WCOB. *keyes*] þe *cayes* R.

530. *knowe*] I-knowe R.

531. *signes*] *seyntes* R.

532. *þis*] þeise O. *frayned*] *frey-*  
*neden* B.

533. *Fram*] Fro COB (*twice*).  
*synay*] *Synay* (*printed* *Syny*) W.

534. *bethleem*] *Bedlem* COB.

535. *ermonyne*] *Armonyne* W. *in*  
*Alisaundre*] *so in* W; *but printed*  
*and Alisaundre. in*] and in R.

538. *soules*] *soule* R.

540. *Coudestow*] *koudest þow* ROB.

*auzte*] CB *om.* *þe*] þe *rijte* B. *wy*  
*wyzte* R; he COB.

541. *me*] *mote me* B.

542. *seygh*] *ne sauþ* B. *scrippe*  
*scrippe wende* O.

543. *Axen*] *Asken* W. *til*] COB  
*om.*

545. *bokes*] *booke* COB.

547. *deden*] *diden* W; *dide* C.  
*suren hym*] *surenhem* R; *swere* COB.

549. [*fifty*] WCOB; *fourty* LR;  
*Crowley has fifty. Cf. Pass. VI. 85.*

550. *ysowen*] I-sowe R; *sowen* CB;  
*sewe* O. *sued*] *feukle* CO; *feed* B.

With-Inne and with-ouen · wayted his profyt.  
 I dyke and I deluc · I do þat treuthe hoteth ;  
 Some tyme I sowe · and some tyme I thresche,  
 In tailoures crafte and tynkares crafte · what treuthe  
 can deuyse,

I weue an I wynde · and do what treuthe hoteth.

¶ For þouze I seye it my-self · I serue hym to paye ; 556  
 Ich haue myn huire [of hym] wel · and otherwhiles more ;  
 He is þe pretest payer · þat pore men knoweth ;  
 He ne with-halt non hewe his hyre · þat he ne hath it  
 at enen.

He is as low as a lombe · and louliche of speche, 560  
 And zif ze wilneth to wite · where þat he dwelleth,  
 I shal wisse zow witterly · þe weye to his place.”

¶ “Ze, leue Pieres,” quod þis pilgrymes · and proferd  
 hym huire

For to wende with hem · to treuthes dwellyng place. 564

¶ “Nay, bi my soules helth,” quod pieres · and gan forto  
 swere,

“I nolde fange a ferthyng · for seynt Thomas shryne !  
 Treuthe wolde loue me þe lasse · a longe tyme þere-  
 after ! 567

Ac if ze wilneth to wende wel · þis is þe weye thider,  
 [þat I shal say to yow · and sette yow in þe soþe.]

¶ Ze mote go þourgh mekenesse · bothe men and wyues,  
 Tyl ze come in-to conscience · þat cryst wite þe sothe,  
 þat ze louen owre lorde god · leuest of alle þinges, 572  
 And þanne zowre neighbores nexte · in non wise apeyre

69  
 and everywhere  
 watched his  
 profit ; and I  
 please him well.

He pays me  
 well.”

The pilgrims then  
 offer Piers money,  
 which he refuses.

But he tells them  
 to go through  
 Meckness, till  
 they come to  
 Conscience.

70

551. *wayted*] I-wayted R.  
 552. *I do*] & do OB. *treuthe*] he  
 R. *hoteth*] me hotþ B.  
 555. *we*] and WCROB. *weue*—  
*wynde*] wynde and wede B. *do*] I do  
 C. *hoteth*] me hotþ B.  
 557. [*of hym* R] LWCROB om.  
 559. *He ne*] He CROB. *non*—  
*hyre*] no men here huyre R ; noon  
 hynen his hire B. *þat*—*cuen*] þat  
 þei ne haue it anone R.

564. *treuthes*] treuthe C.  
 565. *soules helth*] soule CB ; soules  
 helpe (*printed* helpe) W ; soule perel  
 R.  
 566. *fange*] fonge RB.  
 567. *a*] COB om. *þere-after*] after  
 COB.  
 568. *ze*] yow W.  
 569. *From* C ; also in OBC2 ; LWR  
 and Crowley omit.  
 571. *in-to*] to COB.

Otherwyse þan þow woldest · he wrouzte to þi-seluc.

" Next (says he)  
cross the brook  
called Be-buxom-  
of-speech by the  
ford called  
Honour-your-  
fathers.

¶ And so boweth forth bi a broke · beth-buxum-of-  
speche,

Tyl 3e fynden a forth · 3owre-fadres-honoureth, 576

*Honora patrem & matrem, &c. :*

Wadeþ in þat water · and wascheth 3ow wel þere,

And 3e shul lepe þe listloker · al 3owre lyf tyme.

And so shaltow se swere-nouzte · but-if-it-be-for-nede-  
And-namelich-an-ydel · þe-name-of-god-almȝȝti. 580

Pass by Swear-  
not-in-vain and  
the croft called  
Covet-not ;

¶ þanne shaltow come by a crofte · but come þow  
nouzte þere-Inne ;

That crofte hat coueyte-nouzte · mennes-catel-ne-her-  
wyues,

[Fol. 25.]

Ne-none-of-her-seruauntes · þat-noyen-hem-myzte. 583

Loke 3e breke no bowes þere · but if it be 3owre owne.

also by the stocks  
named Steal-not  
and Slay-not.

¶ Two stokkes þere stondesth · ac stynte 3e nouzte þere,  
They [hatte] stele-nouzte, ne-slee-nouzte · stryke forth  
by bothe ;

And leue hem on þi left halfe · and loke nouzte þere-  
after ;

And holde wel þyne haliday · heighe til euen. 588

Turn aside from  
the [þ hill] Bear-  
no-false-witness,

Thanne shaltow blenche at a berghe · bere-no-false-  
witness,

¶ I

He is frithed in with floreines · and other [fees] many ;

Loke þow plukke no plante þere · for peril of þi soule.

574. *þi-seluc*] þe-seluc O.

575. *boweth*] bouh R ; bowe CB.

*beth*] be R ; bees C. *of*] of þi R.

576. *forth*] forthe RB ; foorþe O ;  
ford W ; forde C. *honoureth*] 3e  
honoure O.

577. *in*] in-to B. *þat*] O *om.*  
*wascheth*] wasshe WC. *þere*] þer-Inne  
W.

578. *þe*] C *om.* *listloker*] lighter  
C ; listlier OB.

579. *shaltow*] schalt þow R. *se*]

O *om.* *if*] B *om.*

580. *an*] on W ; in OB.

581. *þow*] COB *om.*

582. *That*] þe R. *mennes*] men

CR. *catel*] R *om* (!).

583. *noyen*] aneien B.

584. *3e*] þow R. *3owre*] on 3oure R.

585. *stondesth*] stonde CB. *ac*] and  
C.

586. [*hatte* CR] hatten OB ; liste  
W ; hat L. *ne*] & W. *by bothe*]  
bifore COB.

589. *blenche*] *written more like*  
*bleuche in* L ; *blenche* W. Cf. Text A.  
*berghe*] beruh R ; beruz O.

590. *He*] R *om.* *frithed in*]  
florischid wip-Inne B. [*fees* WCRB]  
foes L ; foos O.

591. *þow*] 3e R. *þi soule*] 3oure  
soules R.

¶ þanne shal 3e se sey-soth- · so-it-be-to-donc- 592 and then shall ye  
In-no-manere-ellis-nau3te- · for-no-mannes-biddynge. see Say-sooth.

¶ þanne shaltow come to a courte · as clere as þe sonne, So shall ye come  
þe mote is of mercy · þe manere aboute, 595 to a court, with  
And alle þe wallis ben of witte · to holden wille oute ; walls of Wit, and  
And kerneled with crystendome · man-kynde to saue, battlements of  
Boterased with bileue-so- · or-þow-becst-nou3te-ysaued. Christendom,

¶ And alle þe houses ben hiled · halles and chambres, with houses that  
Wit[h] no lede, but with loue · and lowe-speche-as-bre- Love-as-brethren.

theren. 600

þe brugge is of bidde-wel- · þe-bette-may-þow-spede ; † The bridge is  
Eche piler is of penaunce · of preyeres to scyntes, Pray-well.

¶ Grace hatte þe gateward · a gode man for sothe, 604 Grace is the gate-  
Hys man hatte amende-3ow · for many man him keeper, and his  
knoweth ; man is called  
Amend-you, to  
whom give a  
token.

Telleth hym þis tokene · þat treuthe wite þe sothe ;  
' I parfourned þe penaunce · þe preest me enioyned,  
And am ful sori for my synnes · and so I shal euere, 608  
Whan I þinke þere-on · þeighe I were a pope.'

¶ Biddeth amende-3ow meke him · til his maistre ones, Ask Amend-you  
To wayne vp þe wicket · þat þe womman shette, to pray his  
Tho Adam and Eue · eten apples vnrosted ; 612 master to open  
the wicket-gate  
of Paradise.

*Per eum cun[c]tis clausa est, & per mariam  
virginem [iterum] patefacta est ;*

592. *se*] R *om.*

593. *no*] none RB ; good W.

595. *þe mote*] þat moot hit B. *of*] O *om.* *manere*] Manoir W.

596. *And*] CB *om.*

597. *kerneled*] I-carneled R. *man-kynde*] þat kende R.

598. *Boterased*] Botrased W ; Bi-trased C ; I-buterased R ; Bretaskid B.

599. *And*] O *om.* *hiled*] I-hyled R ; helied B. *halles*] halle B. *chambres*] chambere C.

600. *With*] Wit L ; *but the line is marked for correction.*

601. *brugge*] brygge COB. *may*]

maist B.

602. *Eche*] Ilke C. *preyeres*] prayer C ; preyer O ; preiere B.

603. *almes dedes*] almeis dede C. *þe* (1)] þo B. *þat*] COB *om.*

604. *hatte*] hotiþ B.

605. *hatte*] hotiþ B. *for*] R *om.* *man*] men WB.

607. *parfourned*] parfournied R ; performed B. *þe* (2)] þat þe W.

611. *wayne*] wayne OB ; wayne or wayue LRC ; waynen or wayuen (*printed* wayven) W.

612. [*iterum*] in R only. See note.

¶ For he hath þe keye and þe [cliket] · þou; þe kyng  
slepe.

And if *grace* graunte þe · to go in in þis wise,  
þow shalt see in þi-selue · treuthe sitte in þine herte,  
In a cheyne of charyte · as þow a childe were, 616  
To suffre hym and segge nouzte · azein þi sires wille.

Take heed of  
Wrath-thee,  
[Fol. 25 b.]

¶ Ac bewar þanne of wrath-þe · þat is a wikked shrewe,  
He hath enuye to hym · þat in þine herte sitteth ;  
And pukketh forþ pruyde · to prayse þi-seluen. 620  
þe boldnesse of þi bienfetes · maketh þe blynde þanne,  
And þanne worstow drynen oute as dew · and þe dore  
closed,

lest ye be driven  
out,

and the door be  
closed and locked  
against you.

Kayed and [cliketed] · to kepe þe with-outen ;  
Happily an hundreth wyntre · ar þow eft entre. 624  
þus myght þow lesen his loue · to late wel by þi-selue,  
And neuere happiliche este entre · but grace þow haue.

But there are also  
seven sisters  
there at the gates,

¶ Ac þere [aren] seuene sustren · þat seruen treuthe  
eucere,  
And aren porteres of þe posternes · that to þe place  
longoth. 628

called Abstinence,  
Humility,  
Charity, Chastity,

þat one hat abstenence · and humilite an other,  
Charite and chastite · ben his chief maydenes,

613. *he*] scho C. [*cliket* WCB] dryues C. *dew*] deuþ R; a dew CB.  
clikat LR. þou;] þou; þat B. *closed*] I-closed R.

614. *in in*] in WCROB; but see  
Text A.

615. *sitte*] W om.

617. *segge*] saye C. *segge nouzte*] to segge (!) R. þi sires] thy sires C;  
þyn heiris B.

618. *Ac*] And WC. *wrath-þe*] Wratthe CB. *shrewe*] sherewe W.

619. *to*] til COB.

620. *pukketh*] pukkes C; pukketh R; poukeþ O; pokeþ WB. *forþ*] for C; R om.

621. *bienfetes*] benefetes R; bien-faittes CB; beenfetis O. *maketh*] make C.

622. *þanne*] O om. *worstow*] worst þou B; worþest þou O. *dryuen*]

dryues C. *dew*] deuþ R; a dew CB. *closed*] I-closed R.

623. *Kayed*] I-kayed R; Kayed WCOB. [*cliketed* CB] clikated L; cliketed W; I-elycated R.

624. *hundreth*] hundred WOB. *ar*] er WCOB.

625. *myght þow*] myztist þou O; myztetow W; myztow R.

626. *but*] til O.

627. *Ac*] And WC. [*aren* R] are W; ar L; been O; ben B; be C; see next line. *sustren*] sistren O; systers C; 3iftes (!) R.

628. *aren*] arn W; been O; ben B; be C. *porteres*] portes C. *of*] ouer R. þe (2)] C om.

629. *humilite*] vmblete R.

Pacience and pees · moche poeple þei helpeth,  
 Largenesse þe lady · heo let in ful manye ; 632  
 Heo hath hulpe a þousande oute · of þe deuces pon-  
 folde.

Patience, Peace,  
 and Bounty.

¶ And who is sibbe to þis seuene · so me god helpe !  
 He is wonderliche welcome · and faire vnderfongen.  
 And but if 3e be syb · to summe of þise seuene, 636  
 It is ful harde bi myne heued," quod Peres · "for any  
 of 3ow alle

Without their  
 aid it is hard to  
 gain entrance at  
 that gate."

To geten ingonge at any gate þere · but grace be þe  
 more."

¶ "Now, bi cryst," quod a cutpurs · "I haue no  
 kynne þere !" 639

The cut-purse,  
 the ape-ward, and  
 wafer-maker  
 declare they have  
 no kindred there ;

"Ne I," quod an apewarde · "bi auzte þat I knowe !"  
 ¶ "Wite god," quod a wafrestre · "wist I þis for  
 sothe,

Shulde I neuere ferthere a fote · for no freres prechyngē."

¶ "3us," quod Pieres þe plowman · and pukked hem  
 alle to gode, 643

but Piers tells  
 them Mercy  
 dwells there also,  
 who is of kin to  
 all sinful men.

"Mercy is a maydene þere · hath myzte ouer hem alle ;  
 And she is syb to alle synful · and her sone also ;  
 And þoruze þe helpe of hem two · (hope þow none  
 other),

þow myzte gete grace þere · bi so þow go bityme."

¶ "By seynt Poule," quod a pardonere · "peraventure  
 I be nouzte knowe þere, 648

† A pardonere  
 says he will fetch  
 his box.

632. *heo*] he R; she WOB; sho C. *frestre*] waferer OB. *for*] R om.  
*in*] out (!) O.

633. *Heo*] Sche OB; Sho C. *hulpe*] frere R.

636. *if*] if þat R. *3e*] he B. 643. *3us*] 3is B; 3is WC. *pukked*] poukede O; poked WRB; puto C.  
*ponfolde*] pondfolde R; punfolde WB; *hem*] the (*miswritten for* them) C;  
*pounfolde* C; *pyufold* O. O om.

634. *who*] who so CB. 644. *a*] as C. *hath*] and haþ B.  
 636. *if*] if þat R. *3e*] he B. *hem*] WCOB om.

638. *ingonge*] ingong O; Ingange C; in-going WB. *any*] þe COB. 647. *þere bi*] þere · bi LO; þere ·

640. *We*] Nor WCB; Nou O. *I(2)*] be R; þere W; þerly CB.

I kan W. 648. *knowe þere*] welcome R.

611. *Wite god*] God wot B. *wa-*

I wil go fecche my box with my breuettes · and a bulle  
with bisshopes *lettres* !”

† A common  
woman says she  
will follow him.

“ By cryst,” *quod* a comune womman · “ þi companye  
wil I folwe,

þow shalt sey I am þi sustre · I ne wot where þei  
bicomē.”

651

649. *go*] COB *om.* *fecche*] *fette* B. *bisshopes*] *bisshope* C.

## PASSUS VI.

*Passus Sextus.*

“**T**his were a wikked way · but who-so hadde a gyde  
That wolde folwen vs eche a fote ;” · þus þis folke  
hem mened. The pilgrims say  
that they need  
a guide; ¶ 1

Quat; Perkyn þe plouman · “bi seynt Peter of Rome,  
I haue an half acre to eryl · bi þe heighe way ; 4  
Hadde I eried þis half acre · and sowen it after,  
I [wolde] wende with 3ow · and þe way teche.”  
Piers says he will  
guide them, when  
[Fol. 26.]  
he has ploughed  
his half-acre.

¶ “þis were a longe lettyng” · quod a lady in a  
sklayre, “That were long  
to wait,” said a  
lady; “and what  
shall we women  
do meanwhile?”

“What sholde we wommen · worche þere whiles?” 8

¶ “Somme shal sowe [þe] sakke,” quod Piers · “for  
shedyng of þe whete ;

And 3e, louely ladyes · with 3oure longe fyngres,  
þat 3e han silke and sendal · to sowe, whan tyme is,  
Chesibles for chapelleyne · cherches to honoure. 12  
Piers tells them  
to sew chaubles,

¶ Wyues and wydwes · wolle & flex spynneth,

TITLE. Passus Sextus LOB; C Scleyre W; laire C.  
*adds, de visione; WR add, de visione,*  
*vt supra.* 8. CB omit. *þere whiles*] so in R;  
3. CB omit. þe whyles O; þe while W.  
5. *eried*] hered R. *sowen*] I-sowen 9. *shal*] schal R; shul WC;  
R. shullen B. [þe WCROB] L om. *þe whete*] whete CB.  
6. [wolde WOB] wil LR; wyl C. 10. *ladyes*] lady.B.  
7. *a* (3)] retained in W (but omitted 11. *han*] haue WRCB. *sendal*]  
*in the printed edition). sklayre*] sandel WC.

Maketh cloth, I conseilte 3ow · and kenneth so 3owre  
douztres ;

to clothe the  
naked,  
75

þe nedý and þe naked · nymmeth hede how hij liggeth,  
And casteth hem clothes · for so comaundeth treuthe. 16  
For I shal lene hem lyfode · but 3if þe londe faille,  
Flesshe and bred bothe · to riche and to pore,  
As longe as I lyue · for þe lordes loue of heuene.

and to help the  
poor labourers,

¶ And alle manere of men · þat þow mete and drynke  
lybbeth, 20

Helpith hym to worche wíztliche · þat wynneth 3owre  
fode."

A knight declares  
he will help Piers  
to labour.

¶ "Bi crist," quod a kny3te þo · "he kenneth vs þe  
best ;

Ac on þe teme trewly · tau3te was I neuere.

Ac kenne me," quod þe kny3te · "and, bi cryst, I wil  
assaye !" 24

Piers says he will  
work for both, if  
the knight will  
guard the church  
from wasters,

¶ "Bi seynt Poule," quod Perkyn · "3e profre 3ow so  
faire,

þat I shal swynke and swete · and sowe for vs bothe,  
And oper laboures do for þi loue · al my lyf tyme,  
In conenaunt þat þow kepe · holikirke and my-selue 28  
Fro wastoures and fro wykked men · þat þis worlde  
struyeth.

and hunt hares  
and foxes, and  
76

¶ And go hunte hardiliche · to hares and to foxes,  
To bores and to brockes · þat breketh adown myne  
hegges,

14. *Maketh*] Make C. *kenneth so* kennes C; kennyþ B.

15. *nymmeth*] takes C. *hij liggeth*] þei liggeþ W; þey ligge COB; a lyggeth R.

16. *casteth*] castes C. *hem*] hym R. *comaundeth*] biddiþ O; comande C.

17. *lene*] *so in* LOB; *lene or leue* RC; *lenen or leuen* (*printed* leuen) W.

19. *þe*] oure O.

20. *lybbeth*] lynes C.

21. *Helpith*] Helps C. *wynneth*]

wynnes C.

23. *Ac*] And C. *tau3te*] caught (*so miswritten*) C.

24. *Ac*] But W; And C. *bi cryst*] COB om.

26. *sowe*] saw C.

27. *laboures*] laboreres R.

28. *In the margin of O*—þe lyuyng of trewe kny3tis. *my*] þy C.

29. *fro*] COB om. *struyeth*] strueth R; struthes C; stroyen O; stroieþ B; destruyeth W.

31. *brockes*] bukkes R. *adown*] down W. *myne*] men B.

And go affaite þe faucones · wilde foules to kille ; 32 kill the [wild]  
For suche cometh to my croft · and croppeth my birds with  
whete." falcons.

¶ Curteislich þe knyzte þanne · comsed þise wordes,  
"By my power, Pieres," quod he · "I plizte þe my The knight gladly  
treuthe consents.

To fulfillle þis forward · þow3 I fizte sholde ; 36  
Als longe as I lyue · I shal þe mayntene."

¶ "3e, and 3it a poynt," quod Pieres · "I preye 3ow Piers further bids  
of more ; him to barn no  
tenant, to take no  
gifts from the  
poor,

Loke 3e tene no tenauit · but treuthe wil assent.

And þowgh 3e mowe amerey hem · late mercy be [Fol. 26b.]  
taxoure, 40

And mekenesse þi mayster · maugre medes chekes,  
And þowgh pore men profre 3ow · presentis and 3iftis,  
Nym it nauzte, an auenture · 3e mowe it nauzte deserue ;  
For þow shalt 3elde it a3ein · at one 3eres ende, 44

In a ful perillous place · purgatorie it hatte.

¶ And mysbede nouzte þi bonde-men · þe better may to injure no  
þow spede ; labourer,

þowgh he be þyn vnderlynge here · wel may happe in  
heuene,

þat he worth worthier sette · and with more blisse, 48  
[þan þow, bot þou do bette · And lyue as þow shulde ;]

*Amice, ascende superius.*

† remembering  
the text, Luke  
xiv. 10;

For in charnel atte clirche · cherles ben yuel to knowe,  
Or a knizte fram a knaue þere · knowe þis in þin herte.

32. go] so W. þe] þi WR; þy C.  
foules] foweles W; bestis O.

33. suche] swiche WR; swilce C.

34. þise] hise O.

37. Als] Al-so B; As CR.

38. 3e] 3he O; 3ee B. a] C om.

39. Loke] Lokiþ þat B.

40. hem] men R; CB om.

41. þi] þe CB; 3oure R. medes]  
mede R.

43. Nym] Nemeþ B. an auenture]  
in aduenture B. 3e] þow R.

45. hatte] hatteth RB.

46. And] COB om. bonde-men]  
bonde-man R. may] mayst OB.

47. happe] happen B.

48. worth—sette] worthier sit CO;  
worpiere sitteþ B.

49. LWRO omit. Copied from C;  
found also in BC2, and in Crowley's  
text. In CBC2 it is wrongly placed  
after the Latin quotation; rightly  
placed in Crowley. shulde] sholdust B.

50. charnel] a chanel (!) R. atte]  
at WR; and in CB. cherles] clerkes R.

51. þere] COB om.

to be true of  
tongue,

And þat þow be trewe of þi tonge · and tales þat þow  
hatie, 52

But if þei ben of wisdome or of witte · þi werkmen to  
chaste.

and to avoid  
ribalds.

Holde with none harlotes · ne here nouȝte her tales,  
And nameliche atte mete · suche men eschue ;  
For it ben þe deueles disoures · I do þe to vnder-  
stande.” 56

The knight again  
assents,

¶ “ I assente, bi seynt Iame ” · seyde þe kniȝte þanne,  
“ Forto worche bi þi wordes · þe while my lyf dureth.”

¶

¶ “ And I shal apparaille me,” quod Perkyn · “ in  
pilgrimes wise,

And wende with ȝow I wil · til we fynde treuthe ; 60

Piers [† says he  
will get] ready to  
go, and take with  
him corn to sow,

¶ And cast on me my clothes · yelouted and hole,  
My cokeres and my coffes · for colde of my nailles,  
And hange myn hoper at myn hals · in stede of a  
serippe ;

A busshel of bredcorne · brynge me þer-inne ; 64

For I wil sowe it my-self · and sitthenes wil I wende  
To pylgrymage as palmers don · pardoun forto haue.

promising that  
all who help him  
shall have [† leave  
to glean] in  
harvest,

¶ Ac who so helpeth me to erie · or sowen here ar I  
wende,

Shal haue leue, bi owre lorde · to lese here in heruest, 68

And make hem mery þere-mydde · maugre who-so  
bigruccheth it.

52. þat þow] COB *om.* þi] R *om.*  
*tales—hatie*] loke þow tales hatye CO ;  
loke talis þat þow hate B.

53. þei] it COB. of (1)] C *om.*  
of (2)] COB *om.* chaste] chastie CR ;  
chastise OB.

54. with] nauȝt with R.

55. atte] at þe WCR ; at O ; at þi B.

56. it ben] it beth R. þe (1)] þo  
B. vnderstande] vnderstone C.

57. scyde—kniȝte] þe knyȝt sayde  
COB.

59. In margin of O—How peers  
goop on pilgrimage. And] COB *om.*

61. me] WCOB *om.* cast—clothes]  
on my cloþis caste B. yelouted] boþe

clowtete B. hole] I-hole R.

62. coffes] cuffed CRO ; cuffus B.

63. hoper] glossed in OC2—i. a  
secd leep. a] þe B.

65. sawe] saw C. and] B *om.*  
*sitthenes*] siþenes W ; sytthen R ;  
siþen C ; seþen B.

66. To] On B. for] O *om.*

67. Ac] And WCB. or] and W.  
*here*] CB *om.* ar] er WCOB ; ere R.

68. lese here] lacche her C ; lacche  
hire OB.

69. And] Ac B. hem] COB *om.* ;  
hym R. þere-mydde] þer-with C.  
*bigruccheth it*] grucches C ; grucchip  
O ; grucche B ; it be-grucche R.

¶ And alkyn crafty men · þat konne lyuen in treuthe, and that he will  
I shal fynden hem fode · þat feithfulliche libbeth. find all their food,

¶ Saue Iakke þe iogeloure · and Ionet of þe stues, 72 except Jack the  
And danyel þe dys-playere · and denote þe baude, juggler, and  
And frere þe faytoure · and folke of his ordre, Janet of the  
And Robyn þe Rybaudoure · for his rusty wordes, stews, and  
Robin the tale-  
teller, a worthless  
set.

Treuthe tolde me ones · and bad me tellen it after, 76  
*Deleantur de libro viuentium* · I shulde nouzte dele Psalm lxxviii. 29.  
with hem ;

For holicherche is hote of hem · no tythe to take, [Fol. 27.]

*Quia cum iustis non scribantur ;* 78

They ben ascaped good auenture · now god hem  
amende !”

¶ Dame worche-whan-tyme-is · Pieres wyf hiȝte, 80 Piers' wife is  
His douȝter hiȝte do-riȝte-so- . or-þi-dame-shal-þe-bete, named Work-  
His sone hiȝte suffre-þi-souereynes- to-hauen-her-wille- when-time-is, his  
Deme-hem-nouȝte-for-if-þow-doste- · þow-shalt-it-dere- daughter is Do-  
abugge. as-you-are-bid,  
and his son is  
Obey-your-kin.

“Late god yworth with al · for so his worde techeth ; 84

¶ For now I am olde and hore · and haue of myn owen, Piers says he is  
To penaunce and to pilgrinage · I wil passe with þise other. old, and must  
For-þi I wil, or I wende · do wryte my biqueste. make his will.

*In dei nomine, amen* · I make it my-seluen. 88 THE TESTAMENT.

He shal haue my soule · þat best hath yserued it, “I bequeath my  
And fro þe fende it defende · for so I bileue, soul to Him that  
best deserves it,

Til I come to his acountes · as my *credo* me telleth,

70. *alkyn*] alle kynne WOR.

71. *libbeth*] lyuees C.

72. *Iakke*] Iagge W. *stues*] stuwes  
W; stewes C; stiues R; styuehous B.

73. *dys-playere*] dees-pleyere WCO.  
*denote*] Enote CB; euot O.

74. *his*] hire W. B *has*—And þe  
frere faytour · wiþ al his hool ordre.

76. *it*] hit forþ B.

77. *I—hem*] CB om.

78. *hote*] hoten O. *take*] aske R.  
*Quia*] so in W; *misprinted* Qui.

79. *now*] but O; WCB om.

80. *worche*] werche wel B.

82. *souereynes*] suffereignes C.  
to] RO om.

83. *doste*] do CB. *it*] ful O; is C.  
*abugge*] a-bygge C; abiegge B.

84. CB omit. *so*] O om.

86. *to*] CO om.

87. *or*] er WCOB; ar R. *biqueste*]  
queste R.

88, 89. *In—soule*] one line in R.

89, 90. *þat best, ꝑc.*] one line in  
R. *yserued*] deserved W. *it defende*

—*bileue*] I-keped it R.

91. *credo me*] crede R.

To haue a relees and a remissioun · on þat rental I  
leue. 92

and my body to  
the church, that  
takes tithe of my  
corn.

¶ þe kinke shal haue my caroigne · and kepe my  
bones ;

For of my corne and catel · he craued þe tythe.

I payed it hym prestly · for peril of my soule,

99

For-þy is he holden, I hope · to haue me in his  
masse, 96

And mengen in his memorye · amonge alle crystene.

My wife shall  
haue my lawful  
winnings, for my  
debts are all paid.

¶ My wyf shal haue of þat I wan · with trentle and  
nomore,

And dele amonge my douȝtres · and my dere children.

For þowghe I deye to-daye · my dettes ar quitte, 100

I bare home þat I borwed · ar I to bedde ȝede.

With the residue  
will I worship  
Truth, and be  
His pilgrim."

¶ And with þe residue and þe remenaunte · bi þe Rode  
of Lukes !

I wil worschip þer-with · treuthe bi my lyue,

And ben his pilgryme atte plow · for pore mennes  
sake. 104

My plow-fote shal be my pyk-staf · and picche atwo  
þe rotes,

And helpe my culter to kerue · and elense þe forwes."

Piers and the  
pilgrims set about  
ploughing, and  
many workmen  
help him.

¶ Now is perkyn and his pilgrymes · to þe plowe  
faren ;

To erie þis halue acre · holpyn hym manye. 108

Dikeres & delucres · digged vp þe balkes ;

þere-with was perkyn apayed · and preysed hem faste.

Other werkemen þere were · þat wrouȝten ful ȝerne,

92. *a* (2)] *O om.* leue] bileue CB.

93. *caroigne*] cariogne C; carayne  
RB.

94. *he*] she WB. þe] R *om.*

95. *hym*] ful W; hem B.

99. *children*] childres R; childerne C.

100. *deye*] deyede R. *dettes*—  
*quitte*] dette is I-quitied R; dettes  
are quyte W.

101. *ar*] er WCOB.

102. *and*] of CB.

104. *atte*] at þe RB; at CO.

105. *plow-fote*] ploughwes foot B;  
plow-pote R; plow-foot WC. *pyk-*  
*staf*] pikid staf B. *and—rotes*] to  
picche a-two rotis B. *atwo*] at R.

107. *his*] hise WC; þese R.

108. *þis*] *so in* W; *misprinted* his.  
*holpyn*] þer helpen B.

109. *digged*] digges C. *balkes*]  
balkys B.

111. *ȝerne*] faste C.

Eche man in his manere · made hym-self to done, 112

And some to plese perkyn · piked vp þe wedes.

¶ At heighe pryme peres · lete þe plowe stonde,

To onersen hem hym-self · and who-so best wrouzte,

He schulde be huyred þer-after · whan herneest-tyme  
come. 116

At high prime  
Piers looked at  
[Fol. 27 b.]  
what the work-  
men had done. 80

¶ And þanne seten somme · and songen atte nale,

And hulpen erie his half acre · with “how! trolli-  
lollo!”

But some helped  
him only by  
drinking and  
singing,

¶ “Now, bi þe peril of my soule!” quod Pieres · al  
in pure tene,

“But 3e arise þe rather · and rape 3ow to worche, 120

Shal no greyne þat groweth · glade 3ow at nede ;

And þough 3e deye for dole · þe deuel haue þat rec-  
cheth !”

till Piers  
threatened them  
with famine.

¶ Tho were faitoures aferde · and feyned hem blynde,  
Somme leyde here legges aliri · as suche loscles conneth,

And made her mone to pieres · and preyde hym of  
grace : 125

Then the shirkers  
feigned to be  
blind, or lame,

“For we haue no lymes to laboure with · lorde,  
y-graced be 3e!

¶ Ac we preye for 3ow pieres · and for 3owre plow  
bothe, 128

þat god of his grace · 3owre grayne multiplye,

And 3elde 3ow of 3owre almesse · þat 3e 3iue vs here ;

For we may nouzte swynke ne swete · suche sikennesse  
vs eyleth.”

and said all they  
could do was to  
pray for him,

since they could  
not work.

112. *Eche*] Elke C.

115. *To*] And 3eed to R. *and*] B  
*om.*

116. *He*] For he B.

117. *atte nale*] at þe nale ROB; at  
þe ale R.

118. *hulpen*] holpen WCOB; ho  
helpen R. *erie*] herie C; ere W; to  
erye RB. *his*] þis W. *how*] hey O.

122. *doye*] deyede R. *dole*] doel  
W; deul R; deel O; defaute B.  
*haue*] hym haue B. *reecheth*]

recches C; reeche R.

123. *Tho*] Two C. *aferde*] afered W.

124. *aliri*] a-liry W; a-lyrye C.  
*conneth*] knoues C.

126. *y-graced*] graced R; graceful  
B. *3e*] þe W.

127. *Ae we*] And C. *for* (2)] O  
*om.*

129. *of*] for W. *3owre*] O *om.*  
*almesse*] almose C.

130. *nouzte*] neiþer B. *eyleth*] C  
*om.*; ayleth R.

"I shall soon find out if what you say is true," said Piers.

¶ "If it be soth," quod pieres, "þat 3e seyne · I shal  
it sone asspye!

3e ben wastoures, I wote wel · and treuthe wote þe  
sothe! 132

81

And I am his olde hyme · and hiȝte hym to warne  
Which þei were in þis worlde · his werkemen appeyred.  
¶ 3e wasten þat men wynnen · with *trauaille* and  
with tene,

"Truth shall teach you to drive his team; but those who are really blind I will help.

Ac treuthe shal teche 3ow · his teme to dryue, 136  
Or 3e shal ete barly bred · and of þe broke drynke.

But if he be blynde [or] broke-legged · or bolted with  
yrnes,

He shal ete whete bred · and drynke with my-seluc,  
Tyl god of his goodnesse · amendement hym sende. 140

† You might do something to earn money,

Ac 3e myȝte *trauaille* as treuthe wolde · and take mete  
& huyre

To kepe kyne in þe felde · þe corne fro þe bestes,  
Diken or deluen · or dyngen vppon sheues,  
Or helpe make mortar · or bere mukke a-felde. 144

† but you live by lying and in sloth.

¶ In lecherye and in losengerye · 3e lyuen, and in  
sleuthe,

And al is þorw suffrance · þat veniaunce 3ow ne taketh.

Anchorites and hermits I will feed, but only once a day.

¶ Ac aneres and heremytes · þat eten [nozȝt] but at  
nones,

And namore er morwe · myne abnesse shul þei haue,  
And of my catel to cope hem with · þat han cloistres  
and cherches. 149

† But Robert

Ac robert renne-aboute · shal nowȝte haue of myne,

131. *If it*] If þis CB. þat—seyne] CB om. *In margin of* O—Of ydel beggers.

132. *3e*] þo R. *wote* (2)] wot wel R.

134. *his*] þat his B. *appeyred*] apayreth R.

135. *with* (2)] COB om.

138. [*or* WCROB] and L.

139. *whete*] swete O.

142. *kyne*] kyene C; ken R kyen WB; kijn O.

143. *dyngen vppon*] picchen vp B.

144. *make*] to make B.

145. *in* (2)] COB om. *3e lyuen*]

lyue R.

147. *Ac*] As C. [*nozȝt* WCOB] LR omit.

148. *er*] er þe W.

149. *of my*] COB om.; of W. *cope*] kepe W. *and cherches*] in kerkes R.

Ne posteles, but þey præche conne · and haue powere  
of þe bisschop ;

Run-about shall  
have nothing.

They shal haue payne and potage · and make hem-self  
at ese, 152 [Fol. 23.]

For it is an vnresonable Religioun · þat hath riȝte  
nouȝte of certeyne."

¶ And þanne gan a wastoure to wrath hym · and wolde  
haue yfouȝte,

Then the wasters  
began to resist,  
'and one of them  
threatened Piers,

And to Pieres þe plowman · he profered his gloue ;  
A Brytonere, a braggere · a-bosted pieres als, 156  
And bad hym go pissen with his plow · for-pyned  
schrewe !

"Wiltow or neltow · we wil haue owre wille, 82

Of þi flowre and of þi flessche · fecche whan vs liketh,  
And make vs myrie þer-myde · maugre þi chekes !" 160

¶ Thanne Pieres þe plowman · pleyned hym to þe  
knyȝte,

who prayed the  
knight to keep his  
promise.

To kepe hym, as couenaunte was · fram cursed shrewes,  
And fro þis wastoures wolueskynnes · þat maketh þe  
worlde dere :

"For þo waste and wynnyn nouȝte · and þat ilke  
while 164

Worth neuere plente amonge þe poeple · þer-while my  
plow liggeth."

¶ Curteisly þe knyȝte þanne · as his kynde wolde,  
Warned wastoure · and wissed hym bettere,

The knight  
sternly warns  
them.

"Or þow shalt abugge by þe lawe · by þe ordre þat I  
bere !" 168

151. *haue*] 3ut haue R.

152. *hem-self*] hem COB.

153. *riȝte—of*] no thyng in COB.

154. *And*] COB *om.* *a*] W *om.*  
*to*] CB *om.*

155. *þe*] O *om.* *he*] O *om.*

156. *Brytonere*] Bretoner WRB.

157. *with*] on R.

158. *Wiltow—neltow*] wil þow or  
nelle þow R; wilt þou or nylt þou O.

159. *Of*] And of R. *fecche*] *facche* C; *fette* hit B.

160. *þer-myde*] þer-with CB.

161. *þe*] O *om.*

163. *wolueskynnes*] wolf skynnes  
CO; of wolues kynne B. *þe*] þis R.

164. *þat*] B *om.*

165. *þe*] R *om.* *þer-while*] þe  
while WROB. *liggeth*] lieþ B; legges  
C.

166. *as*] C *om.*

167. *bettere*] þe better O.

168. *abugge*] abigge WCO; abiegge  
B. *by* (1)] with R.

But one of them  
cared nothing for  
Piers or the  
knight, and  
threatened them.

¶ "I was nouȝt wont to worche," quod wastour · "and  
now wil I nouȝt bigynne!"—

And lete liȝte of þe lawe · and lasse of þe knyȝte,

And sette Pieres at a pees · and his plow bothe,

And manaced pieres and his men · ȝif þei mette eft  
sone. 172

Piers swears he  
will punish them  
yet, and calls in  
Hunger.

¶ "Now, by þe peril of my soule!" quod pieres · "I  
shal apeyre ȝow alle!"

And houped after hunger · þat herd hym atte firste :

"A-wreke me of þise wastoures," quod he · "þat þis  
worlde schendeth!"

Hunger caught  
Waster, and  
**S3**  
wring and  
buffeted him so,

¶ Hunger in haste þo · hent wastour bi þe mawe, 176

And wronge hym so bi þe wombe · þat bothe his eyen  
wattered ;

He buffeted þe Britoner · aboute þe chekes,

þat he loked like a lanterne · al his lyf after.

He bette hem so bothe · he barste nere here guttes ; 180

that Piers had to  
interfere, and  
[† pray Hunger  
to cease.]

Ne hadde Pieres with a pese-lof · preyed hunger to  
cesse,

They hadde ben doluen bothe · ne deme þow non other.

"Suffre hem lyue," he seyde · "and lete hem ete with  
hogges,

Or elles benes and bren · ybaken togideres, 184

Or elles melke and mene ale" · þus preyed pieres for  
hem.

Then the shirkers  
flew to the barns  
to thrush;

¶ Faitoures for fere her-of · flouen in-to bernes,

And flapten on with flayles · fram morwe til euen,

169. *was*] *nas* O. *wont*] *woned*  
B; *wone* R. *wil—nouȝt*] *I nyl* COB.

171. *pees*] *pese* WCRCB. *plow*] *plowht* C.

172. *manaced*] *manseyd* R.

173. *Now*] *R om.*

175. *schendeth*] *schenden* R; *shendes* C.

176. *þo*] *þan* B. *mawe*] *wombe* W.

177. *And*] *And* he B. *bothe—*  
*wattered*] *al waterred* his eyȝes R.

178. *Britoner*] *Bretoner* WRB.

179. *after*] *tyme* B.

180. *he*] *þat* he B. *barste*] *brást* C.

181. *lof*] *loof* WO; *lafe* C; *lofe* R.  
*to cesse*] *sese* R.

182. *bothe*] *W om. ne—þow*] *wilne þow* B.

183. *lyue*] *to lyne* B. *and*] *B om.*

184. *and*] *an* C; or *W. bren*] *bran* COB.

185. *mene*] *meyne* ROB; *meynye* C.

186. *her-of*] *þer-of* COB. *into*] *in* R.

187. *flapten*] *flapped* C; *flappiden* B.

That hunger was nouȝt so hardy · on hem for to  
loke, 188

For a potful of peses · þat peres hadde ymaked.

An heep of heremites · henten hem spades,

And ketten here copes · and courtpies hem made,

And wenten as werkemen · with spades and with  
schoueles, 192

And doluen and dykeden · to dryue aweye hunger.

¶ Blynde and bedreden · were botened a þousande,

þat seten to begge syluer · sone were þei heled.

For þat was bake for bayarde · was bote for many  
hungry, 196

And many a beggere for benes · buxome was to swynke,

And eche a pore man wel apayed · to haue pesen for  
his huyre,

And what pieres preyed hem to do · as prest as a sper-  
hauke. 199

And þere-of was peres proude · and put hem to werke,

And ȝaf hem mete as he myȝte aforth · and mesurable  
huyre.

¶ þanne hadde peres pite · and preyed hunger to wende  
Home in-to his owne erde · and holden hym þere.

“For I am wel awroke now · of wastoures, þorw þi  
myȝte. 204

Ac I preye þe, ar þow passe” · quod Pieres to hunger,

“Of beggeres and of bidderes · what best be [to] done?”

[Fol. 28 b.]  
Hermits seized  
spades and dug.

The blind,  
bedridden, and  
lame received  
assistance.

[84]  
† Many beggars  
set to work  
willingly,

for which Piers  
gave them meat.

Then had Piers  
pity, yet fears  
they will do ill  
when Hunger  
departs,

188. *so*] R *om.* for *to*] fort B.  
189. *peses*] pesen O; pisen B;  
pese C.  
190. *An*] And C.  
191. *ketten*] kutton CB; kitten  
WO. *copes*] capes C. *courtpies*]  
curtepies B; curtbyes CO; curtebies  
R. *maked*] maked W.  
192. *with* (2)] COB *om.*  
193. *doluen*] dolueden O.  
194. *bedreden*] bedrede B; bedered  
O. *botened*] botoned C; bootned W.  
195. *þat*] And C. *seten to*] re-  
peated in L, by mistake.

196. *bote for*] bote to R.  
197. *a*] CO *om.* *buxome*] fayne  
R. *was*] were B.  
198. *echē*] elke C. *apayed*] payed  
CO. *his*] her O.  
199. *to*] for to R. *as* (1)] also B.  
200. *peres*] pieris so B.  
201. *mesurable*] resounable O.  
203. *in-to*] vn-to W. *erde*] erþe  
COB; yerd W.  
204. *now*] W *om.*  
205. *ar*] er WO; or CB. *to*] þo to R.  
206. *and*] O *om.* *of*] C B *om.*  
*be*] is R. [*to* WCROB] L *om.*

For I wote wel, be þow went · þei wil worche ful ille ;  
 though they are meek enough now,  
 For myschief it maketh · þei beth so meke nouthe, 208  
 And for defaute of her fode · þis folke is at my wille.  
 þey are my blodly bretheren," quod pieres · "for god  
 bouȝte vs alle ;

Treuthe tauȝte me ones · to louye hem vchone,  
 And to helpen hem of alle þinge · ay as hem nedeth.  
 And now wolde I witen of þe · what were þe best, 213  
 An[d] how I myȝte amaistrien hem · and make hem to  
 worche."

8.5  
 Hunger tells him to feed the able-bodied beggars with horses' bread and beans,

¶ "Here now," quod hunger · "and holde it for a  
 wisdomme :

Bolde beggeres and bigge · þat mowe her bred bi-  
 swynke, 216

With houndes bred and hors bred · holde vp her hertis,  
 Abate hem with benes · for bollyng of her wombe ;

and to make them work.

And zif þe gomes grucche · bidde hem go swynke,  
 And he shal soupe swettere · whan he it hath deseruid.

Men who have been unfortunate should be comforted.

¶ And if þow fynde any freke · þat fortune hath ap-  
 peyred, 221

Or any maner fals men · fonde þow suche to enowe ;  
 Conforte [hem] with þi catel · for crystes loue of heuene,  
 Loue hem and lene hem · so lawe of god techeth :—

*Alter alterius onera portate.*

† Gal. vi. 2.  
 The needy and naked should be helped with money.

And alle maner of men · þat þow myȝte asspye, 225  
 That nedy ben, and nauȝty · helpe hem with þi godis,

207. *nil worche*] wolen do O.  
 210. *þey are*] It aren R; And zif  
 þei arn O. *bretheren*] brether C.  
*for*] & R.

214. *And*] An L; but marked for  
*correction. amaistrien*] amaystrien R;  
 a-maistren W; a-mastrie O; maistre  
 B; maister C.

215. *Here*] I here R; Here me B.  
 218. *bollyng*] bolnyng CB. *wombe*]  
 wombes W.

219. *þe—grucche*] þey grucche  
 þanne COB. *go*] go and R.

220. R omits.

221. *And*] Ac R. *fortune*] falshed  
 R.

222, 223. CB omit.

222. *fals*] fawti O. *enowe*] knowe  
 W:O.

223. [*hem* RO] hym LW.

224. *Loue*] Hire B. *hem*] hym  
 CB (in both places). *so—god*] for so  
 þe lawe COB. *onera*] honera R  
*portate*] so in W, but misprinted  
 portare.

225. *of*] RB om. *þat*] CO om.  
*myȝte*] myȝtist O.

226. *nauȝty*] noȝt han B.

Loue hem and lakke hem nouȝte · late god take þe  
veniaunce ;

Theigh þei done yuel · late þow god [y-worþe] :— 228

*Michi vindictam, & ego retribuam.*

† Rom. xii. 19.

And if þow wil[t] be graciouse to god · do as þe gospel  
techeth,

[Fol. 29.]

And [biloue] þe amonges low men · so shaltow lacche  
grace,

*Facite vobis amicos de mamona iniquitatis."*

Luke xvi. 9.

¶ "I wolde nouȝt greue god," quod piers · "for al þe  
good on grounde ;

Piers wants to know if it is right to make men work.

Miȝte I synnelees do as þow seist?" · seyde pieres  
þanne. 232

86

¶ "ȝe, I bihote þe," quod hunger · "or ellis þe bible  
lieth ;

Hunger refers him to Gen. iii. 19 ;

Go to Genesis þe gyaunt · þe engendroure of vs alle ;

'*In sudore* and swynke · þow shalt þi mete tilye,

And laboure for þi lyflode' · and so owre lorde hyȝte. 236

And sapience seyth þe same · I seigh it in þe bible ;

'*Piger pro frigore* · no felde nolde tilye,

and to Prov. xx. 4.

And þerfore he shal begge and bilde · and no man  
bete his hunger.'

¶ Mathew with mannes face · mouthed þise wordes, 240

The slothful servant, Mat. xxv. 28 ; Lu. xix. 22, 24.

þat *seruus nequam* had a nam · and for he wolde nouȝte  
chaffare,

He had maugre of his maistre · for euermore after ;

And binam [hym] his Mnam · for he ne wolde worche,

228. þow] WCOB om. [y-worþe  
W] better than aworthe LR ; CO  
have worthe ; B has worche.

229. And] Ac O. wilt] WCO ;  
wolt B ; wil L ; R om.

230. [biloue WCOB] bilow L ; by-  
lowe R ; in L, the line is marked for  
correction. low] lewed W. vobis]  
vos W. mamona] mammona (printed  
Mammone) W.

233. bihote þe] þe bihote B. þe]  
god R.

235. and] & in OR.

237. seigh] se CB. it] R om.

238. pro] pro (printed præ) W.

nolde] wolde R.

239. he shal] shal he CB.

240. mouthed] mouthe C ; mouth-  
eth R.

241. nam] Mnam WC ; man (!)  
RB. wolde] nolde COB.

242. for] WCB om.

243. [hym WCROB] L om. Mnam]  
napm (sic) R ; nam O. ne] C om.

And ȝaf þat Mnam to hym · þat ten Mnames hadde,  
 And with þat he seyde · þat holicherche it herde, 245

M.t. xxv. 29; Lu.  
 xix. 26.

‘He þat hath shal haue · and helpe þere it nedeth,  
 And he þat nouȝt hath, shal nouȝt haue · and no man  
 hym helpe ;

87

Common senso  
 tells men to work.

And þat he weneth wel to haue · I wil it hym bireue.’  
 ¶ Kynde witt wolde · þat eche a wyght wrouȝte 249  
 Or in dykyngre or in deluyngre · or trauaillynge in  
 preyeres,

Contemplatyf lyf or actyf lyf · cryst wolde men wrouȝte.  
 þe sauter seyth in þe psalme · of *beati omnes*, 252  
 þe freke þat fedeth hym-self · with his feythful labourre,  
 He is blessed by þe boke · in body and in soule :

Ps. exxvii. 2  
 (Vulg.).

*Labores manuum tuarum, &c.*”

¶ “Ȝet I prey ȝow,” quod pieres · “*par charite*, and ȝe  
 kunne

Piers complains  
 that some of his  
 men are always  
 ill.

Eny leef of lechecraft · lere it me, my dere. 256  
 For *somme* of my *seruauntz* · and my-self bothe  
 Of al a wyke worche nouȝt · so owre wombe aketh.”

Hunger says it  
 comes from their  
 over-eating.

¶ “I wote wel,” quod hunger · “what sykenesse ȝow  
 eyleth,

Ȝe han maunged ouer-moche · and þat maketh ȝow  
 grone. 260

Ac I hote þe,” quod hunger · “as þow þyne hele  
 wilnest,

þat þow drynke no day · ar þow dyne somewhat.

They should not  
 eat till they are  
 hungry.

Ete nouȝte, I hote þe · ar hunger þe take, 263  
 And sende þe of his sauce · to sauoure with þi lippes ;

88

And kepe some tyl soper-tyme · and sitte nouȝt to  
 longe,

244. *Mnam*] *nam* RO. *Mnames*] *Mnames* CB; *napmes* R; *nammes* O.  
 247. *ȝaf*] *C om.* *nouȝt hath*] *hath*  
*nouȝt* CB.

248. *weȝ*] for R.

250. *in* (2)] CB *om.*

251. *lyf* (2)] COB *om.* *men*] *ȝei*  
 WCOB.

252. *ȝe*] a R.

253. *ȝaf*] B *om.* *his*] C *om.*

257. *bothe*] been seek of̄er while O.

258. *a*] *ȝe* O. *wyke*] woke R.

260. *ouer*] to COB. *and*] B *om.*

*grone*] to grone COB.

261. *Ac*] And COB.

263. *ȝe* (2)] R *om.*

265. *tyl*] to RO; for CB.

Arise vp ar appetit · haue eten his fulle.

[Fol. 29 b.]

Lat nouȝt sire surfait · sitten at þi borde ;

Leue him nouȝt, for he is lecherous · and likerous of  
tonge, 268

They should not  
let Sir Surfeit sit  
beside them.

And after many manere metes · his maw is afyngred.

¶ And ȝif þow diete þe þus · I dar legge myne eres,  
þat phisik shal his furred hodes · for his fode selle,  
And his cloke of calabre · with alle þe knappes of  
golde, 272

Were men thus  
moderate, Phy-  
sic would sell  
his cloak, and  
turn farm-  
labourer.

And be fayne, bi my feith · his phisik to lete,

And lerne to laboure with londe · for lyflode is swete ;  
For morthereres aren mony leches · lorde hem amende !  
þei do men deye þorw here drynkes · ar destine it  
wolde." 276

¶ "By seynt Poule," quod pieres · "þise aren profit-  
able wordis !

Piers thanks  
Hunger for such  
advice.

Wende now, hunger, whan þow wolt · þat wel be þow  
eure !

For þis is a louely lessoun · lorde it þe for-ȝelde !"

¶ "By-hote god," quod hunger · "hennes ne wil I  
wende, 280

Hunger says he  
must dine ere he  
goes away.

Til I haue dyned bi þis day · and ydronke bothe."

¶ "I haue no peny," quod peres · "poletes forto  
bigge,

Piers says he has  
no geese or pigs,  
only cheese, curds,  
cream, an oat  
cake, and loaves of  
beans and brau,

Ne neyther gees ne grys · but two grene cheses,  
A fewe cruddes and creem · and an hauer cake, 284

266. *Arise*] And rys W ; And rise  
COB. *eten*] I-ete R.

268. *lecherous*] likerous CB.  
*likerous*] lecherous CB. *of*] of his  
COB.

269. *afyngred*] a-fyngerd C.

270. *þe*] C om.

271. *hodes*] hood B.

272. *þe*] R om. *knappes*] knoppes  
CB.

274. *lerne*] lere CO ; to lere B.  
*laboure*] labori R.

275. *For*] R om. *morthereres*—  
*leches*] many lechis ben morþereris

B ; þer aren mo morareres (*sic*) þan  
leches R.

276. *do men*] maken men to B.  
*drynkes*] drynkyngis B. *destine*]  
here desteny B. *it*] COB om.

277. *pieres*] Piers W ; perkyn CB.

278. *be þorw*] þow be R ; be þee O ;  
be þe B.

279. *it*] CB om.

280. *By-hote*] I bihote B. *ne  
wil I*] wol I nat COB.

282. *forto*] to W.

283. CB *omit.* *gees*] goos O.  
*grys*] grijs O.

89

And two loues of benes and bran · y-bake for my  
fauntis.

And zet I sey, by my soule · I haue no salt bacoun,  
Ne no kokeney, bi cryst · coloppes forto maken. 287

also parsley, leeks,  
and cabbages,

Ac I haue *percil* and *porettes* · and many *kole-plantes*,  
And eke a cow and a calf · and a cart-mare  
To drawe a-felde my donge · þe while þe drought  
lasteth.

which must last  
out till harvest.

And bi þis lyflode we mot lyue · til lammasse tyme ;  
And bi þat, I hope to haue · heruest in my croft ; 292  
And þanne may I diȝte þi dyner · as me dere liketh."

The poor people  
brought peascods,  
beans, and  
cherries to feed  
Hunger.

Alle þe pore peple þo · psecoddess fetten,  
Benes and baken apples · þei brouȝte in her lappes,  
Chibolles and cheruelles · and ripe chiries manye, 296  
And profred peres þis present · to plesse with hunger.

Hunger wanted  
more, and they  
brought peas and  
leeks,  
þ thinking to  
poison him.

¶ Al hunger eet in hast · and axed after more.  
þanne pore folke for fere · fedde hunger ȝerne  
With grene poret and pesen · to poysoun hunger þei  
þouȝte. 300

By þat it neighed nere heruest · newe corne cam to  
chepyngge ;

90

But in harvest-  
time they fed  
Hunger  
plentifully,

þanne was folke fayne · and fedde hunger with þe  
best,

With good ale, as glotoun tauȝte · and gerte hunger go  
slepe.

285. *bran*] of bran B. *y-bake*] I  
take CB.

288. *Ac*] And C. *percil*] *percile*  
WR; *percelle* C; *persoly* B. *porettes*]  
poret R; poret B. *kole-plantes*]  
*cale-plantes* C; *queynte herbes* R.

290. *a-felde*] on feld B. *þe* (1)]  
B *om.* *þe* (2)] C *om.* *drought last-*  
*eth*] *weder* is drye COB.

291. *til—tyme*] to heruest tyme  
CB; til heruest tyme come O.

293. *liketh*] likes C; lykede B.

294. *fetten*] to fette B.

295, 296. *Only one line in* CB;  
*thus*—Benes, Chibolles, and cheruelles ·  
and many oȝer herbes.

295. *lappes*] lappe R.

297. *And—þis*] To make Piers a  
COB. *with*] *with* his COB.

298. *Al*] An C; Ac B. *axed*] asked  
C; askiþ B.

300. *poret*] *porettes* COB. *and*]  
and wiþ B. *to—hunger*] to poison  
hym W; hunger þey CB. *þouȝte*]  
*souȝte* B.

301. *it—nere*] neighed C; neyȝhede  
it O; hit neighed B. *newe*] & newe  
W; CB *om.*

302. B *omits.* *hunger with*] hem  
of CO.

303. CB *omit.* *gerte*] garte W.

- ¶ And þo wolde wastour nouȝt werche · but wandren  
aboute, 304
- Ne no begger ete bred · þat benes Inne were, [Fol. 30.]  
But of coket or clerematyn · or elles of clene whete ; and beggars  
Ne none halpeny ale · in none wise drynke, would eat only  
But of þe best and of þe brounest · þat in borghe is to the finest bread.  
selle. 308
- ¶ Laboreres þat haue no lande · to lyue on but her Laboures were  
handes, dainty,
- Deyned nouȝt to dyne a-day · nyȝt-olde wortes.  
May no peny ale hem paye · ne no pece of bakoun,  
But if it be fresch flesch other fische · fryed other and wanted fresh  
bake, flesh and fried  
fish, 312
- And þat *chaule* or *plus chaul* · for chillyng of here  
mawe.
- ¶ And but if he be heighlich huyred · ellis wil he and grumbled  
chyde, about wages,
- And þat he was werkman wrouȝt · waille þe tyme,  
Aȝeines catones conseilie · comseth he to iangle :— 316  
*Paupertatis onus pacienter ferre memento.* † (Cato. Distich.  
i. 21).
- ¶ He greneth hym aȝeines god · and gruccheth aȝeines  
resoun,
- And þanne curseth he þe kynge · and al his conseilie  
after,
- Suche lawes to loke · laboreres to greue. 319

304. *wolde—nouȝt*] ne wolde no wastour R; wolde nouȝt (*omitting* wastour) C; þei wolden nouȝt B. *wandren*] wandred COB.

306, 307. But of coket or clene whete · and drynke of þe beste ale C; B *the same, with or of for or.*

306. *or* (1)] or of R; and W.

307. *halpeny*] *so also in* RO; half-peny W.

308—311. CB *omit.*

308. *of* (2)] O *om.*

309. *haue*] hadde O. *to—but*] but lyue wiþ O.

310, 311. Wolden ete no nyȝt olde wotis · ne drynke no peny ale OCz. *nouȝt*] R *om.* (*by mistake*).

312. *if it be*] COB *om.* *bake*] y-bake WB; baken O.

312, 313. *fryed—chaud*] R *om.* *or*] and W. *here*] his R.

314. *if*] CO *om.* *heighlich*] hye O.

315. COB *omit.*

317. *gruccheth*] grucchede B.

318. *And*] R *om.* *þanne—he*] he corses þe C; he curseþ þe O; he cursed þe B.

319. *loke*] look C.

except when  
hungry.

Ac whiles hunger was her maister · þere wolde none of  
hem chyde, 320

Ne stryue azeines his statut · so sterneliche he lokod.

91

A warning to  
workmen,

¶ Ac I warne 3ow, werkemen · wynmeth while 3e  
mowe,

For hunger hide[r]ward · hasteth hym faste,

He shal awake with water · wastoures to chaste. 324

and a prophecy of  
famine.

Ar fyue [3ere] be fulfilled · suche famyn shal aryse,

Thorwgh flodes and þourgh foule wederes · frutes shul  
faile,

And so sayde saturne · and sent 3ow to warne : 327

† A mysterious  
prophecy.

Whan 3e se þe sonne amys · and two monkes hedes,

And a Mayde haue þe maistrie · and multiplie bi eight,  
þanne shal deth withdrawe · and derthe be iustice,

And dawe þe dyker · deye for hunger,

But if god of his goodnesse · graunt vs a trewe. 332

320. *Ac*] And COB. *þere—hem*] wolde þey nat COB.

321. *his*] þe B.

322. *Ac*] And C.

323. *hideward*] *so in* WCROB; hideward L. *faste*] ful faste R.

324. *water*] wat R. *chaste*] chastie C; chastise OB.

325. *fyue*] fewe B. [*3ere* R] 3ecr OB; LWC *om.*; Crowley *has* yere. *suche*] CB *om.*

326. *þourgh*] CROB *om.* *foule wederes*] foule werdis O; foolis wordis B.

327. *sent*] sende B.

329. *multiplie*] *so in* WCOB; LR *have* multiplied; Crowley *has* multiply. *bi*] be R.

329, 330. *Transposed in* B.

331. *deye*] shal dye B.

332. *But*] And R. *if*] W *om.*

## PASSUS VII.

*Passus vij<sup>us</sup>. de visione, vt supra.*

- Treuthe herde telle her-of · and to peres he sent,  
 To taken his teme · and tulyen þe erthe,  
 And purchaced hym a pardoun · *a pena & a culpa*  
 For hym, and for his heires · for euermore after. 4  
 And bad hym holde hym at home · and cryen his leyes,  
 And alle þat halpe hym to erie · to sette or to sowe,  
 Or any other myster · þat myzte pieres auaille,  
 Pardoun with pieres plowman · treuthe hath ygraunted.  
 ¶ Kynges and knyghtes · þat kepen holycherche, 9  
 And ryȝtfullych in reumes · reulen þe peple,  
 Han pardoun thourgh purgatorie · to passe ful lyztly,  
 With patriarkes and prophetes · in paradise to be  
 felawes. 12  
 ¶ Bisshopes yblessed · ȝif þei ben as þei shulden,  
 Legistres of bothe þe lawes · þe lewed þere-with to  
 preche,  
 And in as moche as þei mowe · amende alle synful, 93

92  
 Truth bids Piers  
 labour before the  
 famine comes,

and promises  
 pardon to all  
 who help him to  
 work.

9  
 Just kings and  
 knights pass  
 lightly through  
 purgatory.  
 [Pol. 30 b.]

Bishops who  
 observe the  
 commandments,

TITLE. *So in* LWCRB; Passus 7<sup>us</sup> O.

1. *her-of*] her-of (*printed* her) W.  
*he*] O *om.* *sent*] wente B.

2. *taken*] maken W. *tulyen*] so  
*in* LR; *tilien* WCB; *tilie* O.

6. *halpe*] holpen WOB; *holpe* R.

7. *myster*] mestier W; *mester* R;  
*mynsterye* B.

8. *pieres*] peres þe R; *picris* þe B.

9. *eherehe*] eherches R.

10. *reumes*] reames C; Remes W.

11. *Han*] And (!) R. *lyztly*] lighte  
 COB.

12. *felawes*] felawe WCOB.

13. *shulden*] mowe amende B.

14. *þe* (1)] WRB *om.*

15. *And*] O *om.*

sit with the  
Apostles at  
doomsday.

Merchants have  
not plenary  
pardon,

because they keep  
not holidays, and  
swear.

Truth bade them  
trade fairly  
and mend  
hospitals,

repair broken  
bridges, and  
dower maidens,

91  
and assist poor  
scholars.

Aren peres with þe apostles · [þis] pardoun Piers sheweth,  
And at þe day of dome · atte heigh deyse to sytte. 17

¶ Marchauntz in þe margyne · hadden many 3eres,  
Ac none a *pena* & a *culpa* · þe Pope nolde hem graunte,  
For þei holde nouȝt her halidayes · as holicherche  
techeth,

And for þei swere by her soule · and ‘so god moste  
hem helpe,’ 21

Aȝein clene conscience · her catel to selle.

¶ Ac vnder his secret seel · treuthe sent hem a *lettre*,  
That þey shulde bugge boldely · þat hem best liked, 24  
And sithenes selle it aȝein · and saue þe wynny[n]ge,  
And amende *mesondieux* þere-myde · and myseyse folke  
helpe,

And wikked wayes · wigtlich hem amende ;

And do bote to brugges · þat to-broke were, 28

Marien maydenes · or maken hem nonnes ;

Pore peple and prisounes · fynden hem here fode,

And sette scoleres to scole · or to *somme* other craftes ;  
Releue Religiou · and renten hem bettere ;— 32

“ And I shal sende ȝow my-selue · seynt Michel myn  
archangel,

þat no deuel shal ȝow dere · ne fere ȝow in ȝowre  
deyinge,

And witen ȝow fro wanhope · if ȝe wil þus worche,

16. [þis WCOB] þus LR.

17. *deyse*] deys WCOB; dayes R.  
to] W om.

19. *Ac*] And C. *none—pena*] no  
*pena* R. *a* (2)] O om. *Pope*] pape  
C. *nolde hem*] wald hem nauȝt R;  
wolde hem B.

20. *holde*] held C. *halidayes*] halyday R. *techeth*] telleth R.

21. *by—soule*] ofte R. *and*] R om.  
*moste*] mote B; R om.

22. *catel*] chaffare B.

23. *Ac*] And CB. *his*] her O.  
*seel*] sehel O.

24. *þat*] what B. *best liked*]

likede best O; best liketh R.

25. *it*] it vs R. *wynnyng*] wyn-  
nynges R; *miswritten* wynnyge L.

26. *þere-myde*] þer-with CRB.

27. CB om. *hem*] W om.

28. *brugges*] brugges (*altered to*  
*brygges*) C; brieggas B.

29. *make*] to make B.

30. *and*] or R. *prisounes*] prisons  
RCO; prisons W; *prisoneris* B. *fode*]  
liflode CB; lijflode O.

31. *somme*] R om.

34. *deyinge*] deynge R; doynge  
(*sic*) COB, and Crowley.

And sende þowre sowles in safte · to my seyntes in  
ioye.” 36 Then they would reach heaven.

¶ þanne were Marchauntz mery · many wepten for ioie, Then the  
And preyseden pieres þe plowman · þat purchaced þis merchants wept  
bulle. for joy.

¶ Men of lawe lest pardoun hadde · þat pleteden for  
Mede, 39 Lawyers had least pardon; for they take bribes.

For þe sauter saueth hem nouȝte · such as taketh ȝiftes,  
And namelich of innocenz · þat none yuel ne kunneth ;  
*Super innocentem munera non accipies.* Ps. xiv. 5 (Vulg.).

Pledoures shulde peynen hem · to plede for such, an  
helpe,

Pryncees and prelates · shulde paye for her trauaille ;  
*A regibus & principibus erit merces eorum.*

¶ Ac many a iustice an iuroure · wolde for Iohan do  
more, 44

þan *pro dei pietate* · leue þow none other !

Ac he þat spendeth his speche · and spekeþ for þe But he that pleads  
pore the cause of the  
poor— **95**

þat is Innocent and nedy · and no man appeireth,

Conforteth hym in þat cas · with-oute coneytise of [Col. 31.]  
ȝiftes, 48

And scheweth lawe for owre lordes loue · as he it hath  
lerned,

Shal no deuel at his ded-day · deren hym a myȝte, no devil shall  
þat he ne worth sauf and his sowle · þe sauter bereth harm him at his  
witnessse ; death-day.

*Domine, quis habitabit in tabernaculo tuo, &c.* Ps. xiv. 1 (Vulg.).

36. *sende*] sente C. *in* (1)] in-to *an*] and WCROB.

O. 37. *Marchauntz—wepten*] manye 44. *Ac*] And C. *a iustice*] Iustices  
*marchauntz · þat wopen R. many]* COB. *iuroure*] Iurour CO; Iur-  
& O. rouris B. *Iohan*] ion O.

39. *Two lines in R; the first ends* 46. *Ac*] And C. *spendeth*] speneth  
*at hadde; the second is eked out by* R.

*adding* for þat craft is schrewed. 48. *Conforteth*] And conforteth R.

41. *ne kunneth*] konnes C; kunnen 49. *lerned*] I-learned R; y-learned W.  
OB. R omits the Latin. 50. *ded-day*] dede-day C; deef-day

42. *peynen*] pyne CO; pynen B. WB.

Water, air, [fire,] and wit ought never to be bought.

¶ Ac to buggge water, ne wynde · ne witte, ne fyre þe fierthe, 52

þise foure þe fader of heuene · made to þis folde in comme ;

þise ben trenthes tresores · trewe folke to helpe,

þat neuere shal wax ne wanye · with-oute god hym-selue.

¶ Whan þei drawn on to deye · and Indulgences wolde haue, 56

Her pardon is ful petit · at her partyng hennes,

þat any Mede of mene men · for her motyng taketh.

Ye lawyers, pay heed to the text,

3e legistres and lawyeres · holdeth þis for treuthe,

þat, 3if þat I lye · Mathew is to blame, 60

For he bad me make 3ow þis · and þis prouerbe me tolde,

† Mat. vii. 12.

*Quodcumque uultis et faciunt uobis homines, facile eis.*

Labourers that are true, loving, and meek, haue the same pardon as Piers.

¶ Alle lybbyng laboreres · þat lyuen with her hondes, þat trewlich taken · and trewlich wynnen,

And lyuen in loue and in lawe · for her lowe hertis, 64

Haueþ þe same absolucioun · þat sent was to peres.

Beggars are not pardoned if they leign.

¶ Beggres ne bidderes · ne beth nouzte in þe bulle,

But if þe suggestioun be soth · þat shapeth hem to begge.

90

For he þat beggeth or hit · but if he haue nede, 68

He is fals with þe fende · and defraudeth þe nedy,

And also he bigileth þe gyuere · ageines his wil.

† Men should give to the neediest.

For if he wist he were nouzte nedy · he wolde 3iue þat an other,

52. *Ac*] And C. *ne* (1)] no R. *þe* R. *holdeth*] holdes C. *fierthe*] ferþe WCROB.

53. *þis*] his COB.

54. *treuthe*] trewest C.

55. *with oute*] wiþ (!) O.

56. *ou—dege*] vu-to þe day C; *uuto* þe deþ OB; in-to deþ R.

57. *Her*] His CRB. *her*] his R.

58. *any*] R out. *her*] his COB.

59. *3e*] the C; þe RB. *and*] and

60. *þat* (2)] B om. *is to*] y B.

61. *make*] take O.

64. *hertis*] herte R.

65. *Haueþ*] Han O; Has C;

Has B.

68. *hit*] hid C.

70. *bigileth*] gyleth R.

71. *3iue þat*] it gif COB.

þat were more nedy þan he · so þe nediest shuld be  
hulpe. 72

Catoun kenneth men þus · and þe clerke of þe stories,  
*Cui des, videto* · is catounes techynge,  
And in þe stories he techeth · to bistowe þyn almes ;  
*Sit elemosina [tua] in manu tua, donec studes  
cui des.*

† Dion. Cato.  
Brev. Sent. 23.

¶ Ac Gregori was a gode man · and bad vs gyuen alle  
þat asketh, for his loue · þat vs alle leneth :— 77  
*Non eligas cui miserearis, ne forte pretereas  
illum qui meretur accipere. Quia incertum  
est pro quo [Deo] magis placeas.*

† Pope Gregory's  
precept.  
† Choose not, but  
give to all.

¶ For wite 3e neuere who is worthi · ac god wote who  
hath nede,  
In hym þat taketh is þe treccherye · if any tresoun wawe ;  
For he þat 3iueþ, 3eldeth · and 3arketh hym to reste,  
And he þat biddeth, borweth · and bryugeth hym-self  
in dette. 81

† He that gives,  
pays ; he that  
begs, borrows.

For beggeres borwen euermo · and her borghe is god  
almy3ti, [Fol. 31 b.]

To 3elden hem þat 3iueþ hem · and 3et vsure more :  
*Quare non dedisti peccuniam meam ad mensam, † Luke xix. 23.  
vt ego veniens cum vsuris [exegissem illum ?]*

¶ For-þi biddeth nou3t, 3e beggeres · but if 3e haue gret  
nede ; 84

For who-so hath to buggen hym bred · þe boke bereth  
witnessse,

72. *more—he*] more nedyer and nau3tier R.

73. *men*] me WO. *of þe*] of WCOB.

75. [*tua* WCOB] LR om.

76. *Ac*] And C. *was*] is R.

77. *leneth*] leues C. [*Deo* W] deum LCROB; deo in Crowley.

78. *uite 3e*] ye woot COB. *ac*] and C.

79. *In*] Alle in R. *þe*] R om. *any*] C om. *wanc*] walke WCROB.

80. *þat 3iueþ*] 3ift R.

81. *biddeth*] bit R.

82. *For*] For-thi R. *borghe*] bo-rough C; boru3 O; bor3 R.

83. *more*] amore R. *ueniens*] veniam W. [*exegissem*] exigissem, &c. CB; & exigissem R; exigere L; exigere WO. [*illam*] omitted in the MSS.; added from the Vulgate.

84. *gret*] COB om.

85. *hath—buggen*] may by C; may bigge OB.

He hath ynough þat hath bred ynough · þough he haue  
nouzt elles :

† To have bred, d,  
is enough.

*Satis diues est, qui non indiget pane.*

¶ Late vsage be zowre solace · of seyntes lyues  
redyngē,  
þe boke banneth beggarie · and blameth hem in þis  
manere : 88

† Ps. xxxvi. 25  
(Vulg.).

*Iunior fui, etenim senui; et non vidi iustum  
derelictum, nec semen eius [querens panem.]*

[† Ye] are love-  
less and lawless,  
and seducers of  
women.

¶ For ze lyue in no loue · ne no lawe holde ;  
Many of zow ne wedde nouzt · þe women þat ze with  
delen,  
But as wilde bestis with wehe · worthen vppe and  
worchen, 91  
And bryngeth forth barnes · þat bastardes men calleth.  
Or þe bakke or some bone · he breketh in his zouthē,  
A[nd] sitthe gon faiten with zoure fautes · for euer-  
more after.

Some break a  
bone, and beg  
ever after.

They are always  
meeting with  
accidents.

þere is moo mysshape peple · amonge þise beggeres,  
þan of alle maner men · þat on þis molde walketh ; 96  
And þei þat lyue þus here lyf · mowe lothe þe tyme,  
þat euere he was man wrouzt · whan he shal hennes  
fare.

But the old and  
feeble, women  
with child, blind  
and maimed,

¶ Ac olde men & hore · þat helpeles ben of strengthe,  
And women with childe · þat worche ne mowe, 100  
Blynde and bedered · and broken here membres,

86. ynough] I-nowe R (in both  
places); B omits the second. þough]  
if C. non] R om. (!)

88. hem] COB om. etenim] etenim  
(printed et jam) W. [querens  
panem OCB] LWR omit.

89. lyue] lyue nouzt CB.

90. women] womman C. þat]  
CO om.

91. bestis] hors B. worthen vppe]  
& worþ vp O.

92. calleth] eallid B.

93. some] þe R. he breketh] he  
l.reke C; þei breken R; ze brekiþ B.

his] here R.

94. And] L has A; but the line is  
marked for correction; And WCROB.  
zoure] here R; her O.

95. mysshape] myshap C; mys-  
happy B; myschappid O.

97. And þei] þo R.

98. þat] þan C. he—man] þei  
were men W. he shal] þei shal W.  
fare] C om.

99. Ac] And C.

101. bedered] bedreden W; bed-  
rede OB; bedred C; bederede R.

þat taketh þis myschief mekelych · as meseles and othere, that are meek,

Han as pleyne pardoun · as þe plowman hym-self ;

For loue of her lowe hertis · owre lorde hath hem graunted 104 have their purgatory on earth.

Here penaunce and her purgatorie · here on þis erthe. 97

¶ “Pieres,” quod a prest þo · “þi pardoun most I rede, A priest asks to see Piers’ pardon.  
For I wil construe eche clause · and kenne it þe on engliche.”

¶ And pieres at his preyere · þe pardoun vnfoldeth, Piers shows it ; it had but two lines,  
And I bihynde hem bothe · bihelde al þe bulle. 109

Al in two lynes it lay · and nouȝt a leef more,

And was writen riȝt þus · in witesse of treuthe :

*Et qui bona egerunt, ibunt in vitam eternam ;* quoted from Mat. xxv. 46.  
*Qui vero mala, in ignem eternum.* (INDULGENCIA PETRI).

¶ “Peter!” quod þe prest þo · “I can no pardoun fynde, 112 The priest says it is no pardon at all.

But ‘dowel, and haue wel · and god shal haue þi sowle,

And do yuel, and haue yuel · hope þow non other

[But] after þi ded-day · þe deuil shal haue þi sowle !” [Fol. 32.]

¶ And pieres for pure tene · pulled it atweyne, 116 Piers, for pure vexation, tears it asunder,  
And seyde, “*si ambulauero in medio vmbre* quoting Ps. xxii. 4 (Vulg.).  
*mortis, non timebo mala ; quoniam tu mecum es.*”

¶ I shal cessen of my sowyng,” quod pieres · “and swynk nouȝt so harde,

Ne about my bely ioye · so bisi be namore !

Of preyers and of penaunce · my plow shal ben her- Piers says he shall give himself  
after,

102. þis myschief] þise myschiefs WCB ; þeise mescheues O.

103. as (1)] a O ; also B.

105. on] vpon R.

107. wil] schal R. eche] ich a O. on] an R.

108. vnfoldeth] he vnfoldeth R.

109. bihelde] biholde C. bulle] bille C.

110. Al] And W ; Alle R.

111. in witesse] watinesse (!) B. eternum] eternam B.

115. [But WCOB] þat LR ; Crowley has But. ded-day] dede-day C ; deef-day WB ; deth-day RO.

116. mala] O om.

118. Ne] Ne be COB. bisi] bisily COB. be] COB om.

119. of (2)] COB om. penaunce] penaunces R.

- 98 up to prayer and penance. And wepen whan I shulde slepe · þough whete bred me faille. 120
- “David ate his bread with weeping, ¶ þe prophete his payn etc · in penaunce and in sorwe, By þat þe saunter seith · so dede other manye ; þat loueth god lelly · his lyflode is ful esy :
- Ps. xli. 4 (Vulg.). *Fuerunt michi lacrimæ mee panes die ac nocte.*
- ¶ And, but if Luke lye · he lereth vs bi foules, 124 We shulde nouȝt be to bisy · aboute þe workdes blisse ; *Ne solliciti sitis* · he seyth in þe gospel, And sheweth vs bi ensamples · vs selue to wisse. 127 þe foules on þe felde · who fynt hem mete at wynter ? Haue þei no gernere to go to · but god fynt hem alle.”
- Luke xii. 22. Mat. vi. 25. ¶ “What !” quod þe prest to perkyn · “peter ! as me þinketh, þow art lettred a litel · who lerned þe on boke ?”
- “Abstinence and Conscience,” he replies. ¶ “Abstinence þe abbesse,” quod pieres · “myne a.b.c. me tauȝte, 132 And conscience come afterward · and kenned me moche more.”
- “You should take Ps. xlii. 1 [Vulg.] for your text,” says the priest. 99 ¶ “Were þow a prest, pieres,” quod he · “þow miȝte preche where þow sholdest, As deuyneur in deuynte · with *dixit insipiens* to þi teme.”
- “I refer you to Prov. xxii. 16,” quoth Piers. ¶ “Lewed lorel !” quod Pieres · “litel lokestow on þe bible, 136 On salomones sawes · selden þow biholdest, [*Eice*] *derisores et iurgia cum eis, ne crescant, &c.*”

121. *etc*] eet WR.  
 122. *other manye*] many other  
 COB.  
 124. *he-foules*] or lereth vs be  
 foles R.  
 127. *bi*] B *om.* *vs selue*] ouresilue  
 B; oure seluen O.  
 128. *ou*] in WCOB; of R. *fynt*]  
 fyndes C. *at*] in B.  
 129. *fynt*] fyndes C.  
 132. *þe abbesse*] R *om.*  
 133. *come*] cam W.  
 134. *pires*] WO *om.* *miȝte*] myȝt-  
 est WROB. *sholdest*] woldest R.  
 135. *As*] As a B. *in*] of R.  
 136. *Lewed*] Lew C. *Pieres*]  
 Pieris þo B. *litel-on*] ful litil  
 lokist þou vp-on B. *þe*] þi R.  
 137. *On*] Or on O; Vppon B; And  
 R. *selden*] ful selde B. [*Eice* O]  
*Ecce* LWR'OB. (*Eice is the old spell-*  
*ing of the word now spelt Ejice.*) *et*  
*-crescant*] R *om.*

- ¶ þe prest and perkyn · apposeden eyther other, They disputed so  
that I awoke.  
 And I þorw here wordes a-woke · and waited aboute,  
 And seighe þe sonne in þe south · sitte þat tyme, 140  
 Meteles and moneeles · on Maluerne hulles,  
 Musyng on þis meteles ; · and my waye ich zede. Wandering over  
Malvern hills, I  
mused on this  
dream  
 ¶ Many tyme þis meteles · hath maked me to studye  
 Of þat I seigh slepyng · if it so be myzte, 144  
 And also for peres þe plowman · ful pensyf in herte,  
 And which a pardoun peres hadde · alle þe peple to † about Piers and  
the priest.  
 conforte,  
 And how þe prest impugned it · with two propre  
 wordes. 147  
 Ac I haue no sauoure in songewarie · for I se it ofte faille ; [Fol. 32 b.]  
 Catoun and canonistres · conseillesh vs to leue Cato (Dist. ii. 31)  
bids us despise  
dreams.  
 To sette sadnesse in songewarie · for, *sompnia ne cures.*  
 ¶ Ac for þe boke bible · bereth witnesse,  
 How danyel deuyned · þe dremes of a kynge, 152 **100**  
 þat was nabugodonosor · nempued of clerkis. Yet Daniel  
interpreted that of  
Nebuchadnezzar  
(Belshazzar),  
 Daniel seyde, “ sire Kynge · þi dremeles bitokneth,  
 þat vnkouth knyztēs shul come · þi kyngdom to cleue ;  
 Amonges lowere lordes · þi londe shal be departed.”  
 And as danyel denynd · in dede it felle after, 157 which turned out  
quite true.  
 þe kynge lese his lordship · and lower men it hadde.  
 ¶ And ioseph mette merueillously · how þe mone and Joseph too had a  
dream,  
 þe soune,  
 And þe ellenene sterres · hailed hym alle. 160

140. *sitte*] sattu C ; sate O ; at B.141. *moneeles*] moneles R ; monei-  
lees WCOB.142. *þis meteles*] þeise metelis O.  
*and*] a R. *One would think that the  
reading should be on ; (a = on.)*143. *The paragraph-mark is omit-  
ted in L ; but in W, we have here a  
large illuminated letter.*143. *þis meteles*] þeise metelis O.  
*hath*] han OB. *to*] O om.148. *Ac*] And C. *songewarie*]  
sompnewarie O.150. *songewarie*] sompnewarie O.151. *Ac*] And C. *bible*] of the  
bible C ; of þe bible B.152. *dremes*] dreme R ; drem W.153. *nempued*] Inempued R.154. *dremeles bitokneth*] dremels  
bitokneþ W ; dremelis bitoknen O ;  
dremees bitoknes C ; dremes bitokneþ  
B.155. *cleue*] cleyme WB ; clayme  
C ; reue R.158. *lese*] lees WO ; les R ; lees  
aftir B.159. *and þe*] & O.160. *hym*] hem CO.

which his father  
interpreted,

þanne Iacob iugged · iosephes swenene :

“*Beau filtz*,” quod his fader · “for defaute we shullen,  
I my-self and my sones · seche þe for nede.”

and so it came to  
pass.

¶ It bifel as his fader seyde · in pharaoes tyme, 164  
þat ioseph was iustice · egipte to loken,  
It bifel as his fader tolde · his frendes þere hym souzte.

Wherefore I often  
mused upon Piers  
and the priest,  
and concluded  
that Do-well  
surpassed  
indulgences.

And al þis maketh me · on þis metele's to þynke ;

¶ And how þe prest preued · no pardoun to dowel, 168

And demed þat dowel · indulgences passed,

Biennales and triennales · and bisschopes *lettres*,

And how dowel at þe day of dome · is dignelich vnder-  
fongen,

And passeth al þe pardoun · of seynt petres cherche.

The pope, I fully  
believe, can grant  
pardon.

¶ Now hath þe pope powere · pardoun to *graunte* þe  
peple 173

With-uten eny penaunce · to passen in-to heuene ;

þis is owre bileue · as lettered men vs techeth,

Mat. xvi. 19.

*Quodcumque ligaueris super terram, erit ligatum  
et in celis, &c.*

And so I leue lelly · (lordes forbode ellis !) 176

þat pardoun and penaunce · and preyeres don saue

Soules þat haue synned · seuene sithes dedly.

But to trust to  
Triennials is very  
unsafe.

Ac to trust to þise triennales · trewly me þynketh,

Is nouzt so syker for þe soule · certis, as is dowel. 180

¶ For-þi I rede þow, renkes · þat riche ben on þis erthe,

Vppon trust of þowre tresoure · triennales to haue,

Be þe neuere þe balder · to breke þe [ten] hestes ;

And namelich, þe maistres · mayres and iugges, 184

162. *Beau*] Bew O. *filtz*] so also margin is the note—now haþ þe p.  
in R; fitz WOC; fiz B.

165. *egipte*] al Egipte B.

166. *þere hym*] hym þere R.

167. *þis meteles*] þeise meteles O;  
þis metels WCRB.

169. *demed*] nempned R. *indul-  
gences*] indulgence RCB.

172. *passeth*] passid B. *al þe*] alle  
R. *petres*] Peter C; Petir B.

173—180. O omits; but in the

174. *eny*] C om.

175. *is*] R om. *&c.*] R om.

176. *lordes*] oure lordis B.

177. *saue*] þe same CB.

179. *Ac*] And C. *trust*] trist RB.

180. *Is*] It is R. *soule*] saules C;  
soullis B.

181. *renkes*] thenke R; to þynk B.

183. *balder*] bolder WCRB. [*ten*  
CROB] x LW.

- þat han þe welthe of þis worlde · and for wyse men  
ben holden,  
To purchace 3ow pardoun · and þe popis bulles.  
At þe dredeful dome · whan ded[e] shullen rise,  
And comen alle bifor cryst · acountis to 3elde, 188  
How þow laddest þi lyf here · and his lawes keptest,  
And how þow dedest day bi day · þe dome wil reherce ;  
A poke ful of pardoun þere · ne prounciales *lettres*,  
Theigh 3e be founde in þe fraternete · of alle þe foure  
ordres, 192  
And haue indulgences double-folde · but if dowel 3ow  
help,  
I sette 3owre patentis and 3owre pardounz · at one pies  
hele !  
¶ For-þi I conseilte alle cristene · to crye god mercy,  
And Marie his moder · be owre mene bitwene, 196  
þat god gyue vs grace here · ar we gone hennes,  
Suche werkes to werche · while we ben here,  
þat after owre deth-day · dowel reherce,  
At þe day of dome · we dede as he hizte. 200  
[*Explicit visio willelmi de petro plowman. Et  
sequitur vita de dowell, Dobett, et Do-beste,  
secundum wytt & reson.*]

Ye mayors, and  
wealthy judges,  
who purchase  
pardons,  
[Fol. 33.]

when ye stand  
before Christ at  
doomsday,  
and your deeds  
are rehearsed ;  
102

though you had a  
sackful of  
provincial letters,

I will give little  
for your pardon  
unless Do-well  
help you !

God give us grace  
to work such  
works, that Do-  
well at doomsday  
will say we did  
God's will.

185. *for*] COBR *om.*  
186. *and*] at O.  
187. *dede*] *so in* WCR ; þe dede B ;  
ded L. *rise*] arise CB.  
188. *bifor*] to-fore W. *acountis*] and acountes R.  
190. *dedest*] dost R.  
191. *poke*] pook C ; pouh3 R.  
192. *foure*] fyue R.  
193. *indulgences*] indulgence CB.  
*if dowel*] dowel wil R.  
194. *pardounz*] pardon WCROB.  
*one*] on RE ; a O. *pies hele*] pese hule C ; peese hole B.  
196. *be*] þat she be B.  
198. *while*] þe while R.  
199. *deth-day*] dede-day C.  
COLOPHON. *From* MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Li. 4. 14, *in a later hand* ; cf. Text A.



Visio ejusdem de Ho-wel, Ho-bet, et Ho-best,  
secundum Wit et Resoun.



## PASSUS VIII. (INCIPIT DO-WEL.)

*Passus octauus de visione [Petri Plowman. Incipit  
Dowel, Dobet, & Dobest.]*

<p><b>T</b>Hus yrobed in russet · I romed aboute          Al a somer sesoun · for to seke dowel,          And frayned ful oft · of folke þat I mette,          If ani wizte wiste · where dowel was at Inne,          And what man he miȝte be · of many man I axed.          ¶ Was neuere wizte, as I went · þat me wisse couthe          Where þis lede lenged · lasse ne more ;          ¶ Tyl it bifel on a fryday · two freres I mette,          Maistres of þe Menoures · men of grete witte.          I hailed hem hendely · as I hadde lerned,          And preyed hem <i>par</i> charitee · ar þei passed forther,          If þei knewe any contre · or costes, as þei went,          Where þat dowel dwelleth · doth me to wytene.</p>	<p>4          4          8          12</p>	<p><b>103</b>          Everywhere I          wandered, to find          Do-well.            None knew where          he dwelt.            8 One Friday, I met          two Minorites,            and asked them          to tell me where          Do-well dwelt.</p>
---	--	---

TITLE. [*Petri—Dobest*] so in R *spelt rowmed in L, but the line is* (but with the spelling Plowman); & *marked.*  
*primus de dowel* LW; vt *supra* C; vt *supra*; Et hic incipit *primus de do-*  
*wel, &c., B. O merely has Passus*  
*octauus. See the Note.*

OBS. *From this point mere varia-*  
*tions of spelling and inflexion will*  
*not so often be given, as they can be*  
*well ascertained from the foregoing*  
*part.*

1. *romed* WCRO] *romed me* B;

3. *frayned*] *asked* C.

4. *was*] *were* R.

5. *man*] *men* B.

6. *Was—went*] *And was neuere in*  
*þis worlde* R.

7. O *omits. lenged*] *logged was* B.  
*ne*] *opur* B.

9. *Maistres*] *And maistres* R.

11. *par*] *for* CR; *pur* OB.

12. *contre*] *courte* R. *as*] *þer* R.

† For such go  
about every-  
where.

¶ For þei ben men on þis molde · þat moste wyde  
walken,

And knowen contrees, and courtes · and many kynnes  
places,

Bothe prynces paleyses · and pore mennes cotes, 16

And do-wel and do-yuel · where þei dwelle bothe.

“With us, at all  
times,” said one.

¶ “Amonges vs,” quod þe Menours · “þat man is  
dwellynge,

And euere hath, as I hope · and euere shal here-after.”

101

“Nay,” said I,  
“even the  
righteous man  
sins seven times  
[Fol. 33 b.]  
a day,  
(Prov. xxiv. 16.)

¶ “Contra,” quod I as a clerke · and comsed to dis-  
puten, 20

And seide [hem] sothli, “*sepcies · in die cadit iustus* ;

Seuene sythes, seith þe boke · synneth þe riȝtful.

And who-so synneth,” I seyde · “doth yuel, as me  
þinketh,

And dowel and do-yuel · mow nouȝt dwelle togideres.

so he cannot  
always be with  
you.”

*Ergo*, he nys nauȝt alway · amonge ȝow freres ; 25

He is otherwhile ellis where · to wisse þe peple.”

“I’ll explain that  
about the  
righteous man,”  
said he.

¶ “I shal sey þe, my sone” · seide þe frere þanne,

“How seuene sithes þe sadman · on þe day synneth ;

By a forbisene,” quod þe frere · “I shal þe faire  
shewe. 29

“Put a man in a  
boat in open sea,

¶ Lat brynge a man in a bote · amydde a brode water,

þe wynde and þe water · and þe bote waggynge

and the wagging  
of the boat will  
make him  
stumble, though  
he is safe.

Maketh þe man many a tyme · to falle and to stonde ;

For stonde he neuere so styf · he stonbleth ȝif he  
moeye ; 33

14. *wyde*] wilde COB.

14—17. R omits.

15. *contrees and courtes*] townes  
and contreis B.

18. *þe Menours*] a menoures (*sic*) R.

19. *euere* (2)] B om.

20. *comsed*] by-gane C.

21. [*hem* WCOB] LR om. *sothli*  
R om.

22. *scith*] on þe day seiþ B.

23. *I seyde*] he saide CO ; seide  
he B.

24. *dowel—do-yuel*] do-yuel and

do-wel CB. O omits this line.

25. *nys*] is CROB.

26. *is*] C om.

27. *shal*] B om.

28. *þe* (2)] a WCOB.

29. *a forbisene*] an ensample B.

30. *a* (3)] þe WCOB.

32. *þe*] a O. *a*] RO om. and] þan  
B. *stonde*] stumble O.

33. *he*] B om. *stonbleth*] tumbleþ  
B. *moeye*] meue WR ; moueþ O ;  
meuyþ B.

Ac 3it is he sauf and sounde · and so hym bihoueth,  
 For 3if he ne arise þe rather · and rau3te to þe stiere ; Yet if he neglects  
 the helm, he will  
 be upset by his  
 own fault.  
 þe wynde wolde, wyth þe water · þe bote ouerthrowe ;  
 And þanne were his lyf loste · þourgh lacchesse of  
 hym-self. 37

¶ And þus it falleth," *quod* þe frere · " bi folke here on Even so on earth.  
 erthe ;

þe water is likned to þe worlde · þat wanyeth and **105**  
 wexeth,

þe godis of þis grounde aren like · to þe grete waves, The waves are  
 this world's  
 fluctuating riches.  
 þat as wyndes and wederes · walweth aboute. 41

þe bote is likned to owre body · þat brutel is of kynde,  
 þat þorough þe fende and [þe] flesshe · and þe frele worlde  
 Synneth þe sadman · a day, seuene sythes. 44 The boat is the  
 frail body.

¶ Ac dedly synne doth he nou3t · for dowel hym kepith, Yet the just man  
 doth no *deadly*  
 sin, and is safe.  
 And þat is charite þe champioun · chief help a3cin  
 synne ;

For he strengtheth man to stonde · and stereth mannes  
 soule,

And þowgh þi body bow · as bote doth in þe water, 48

Ay is þi soule sauf · but [if] þi-self wole

Do a dedly synne · and drenche so þi soule ; If thou do *deadly*  
 sin, thou art  
 justly drowned."

God wole suffre wel þi sleuthe · 3if þi-self lyketh.

For he 3af þe to 3eres3yue · to 3eme wel þi-selue, 52

And þat is witte a[nd] fre wille · to euery wy3te a por-  
 cioun,

To fleghyng foules · to fissesches & to bestes.

Ac man hath moste þerof · and moste is to blame,

34. *Ac*] And CB.

35. *stiere*] steere W; stere COB; *þi*] þe W, *þe*] C om.  
 sterne R.

36. *wyth*] and R.

39. *wanyeth*] wanes C; wantiþ B.

41. *walweth*] walkeþ WRB;  
 walkes C; walken O.

42. *body*] bodyes CB.

43. *þat*] And B. [*þe* WCOb] þi  
 LR. *þe* (3)] þis R.

47. *man*] men W.

48. *And*] þat R. *þowgh*] doip B.

*þi*] þe W, *þe*] C om.

49. [*if* WCOb] LR om. *þi-self*  
*wole*] þow wole þi-selue W.

50. *so*] CB om. *soule*] selue R.

51. *sleuthe*] soule R.

52. *to* (1)] a W.

53. *and*] L has a, *but the line is*  
*marked for correction*; and WCOb.

54. *þ*] and also COB.

55. *man*] þanne, *altered to men* R.

But if he worche wel þer-with · as dowl hym techeth."

"I can't follow that," said I; "so farewell."

¶ "I haue no kynde knowyng," quod I · "to conceyue alle 3owre wordes, 57

Ac if I may lyue and loke · I shal go lerne bettere."

"I bikenne þe cryst, [quod he] · þat on þe crosse deyde."

And I seyde, "þe same · saue 3ow fro myschaunce, 60

[Fol. 34.]

And 3iue 3ow grace on þis grounde · good men to worthe."

Again I wandered wide, [walking alone,] and came to a grove,

**106**

and listened to the sweet birds' lays.

Then I slept again, and had a wondrous dream.

One like myself came, and called me by name,

¶ And þus I went wide-where · walkyng myne one, By a wilde wilderness · and bi a wode-syde.

Blisse of þo briddes · [abyde me made,] 64

And vnder a lynde vppon a launde · lened I a stounde, To lythe þe layes · þe louely foules made.

Murthe of her mouthes · made me þere to slepe ;

þe merueillest meteles · mette me þanne 68

þat euer dremed wyzte · in worlde, as I wene.

¶ A moche man, as me þouzte · and lyke to my-selue Come and called me · by my kynde name.

"What artow," quod I þo · "þat þow my name knowest?" 72

"þat þow wost wel," quod he · "and no wyzte bettere."

who said, he was Thought.

¶ "Wote I what þow art?" · "þought," seyde he þanne,

"I haue suwed þe þis seuene 3ere · sey þow me no rather?"

"Thought," said I, "tell me where is Do-well."

¶ "Art þow thought?" quod I þo · "þow coutheest me wisse 76

57. *3owre*] þi R.  
59. [*quod he W*] quod þei R; LCOB om. on þe] on W; vppon þe B.

62. *myne*] bi myn B.  
63. *wode-syde*] wodes side WCB.  
64. *Blisse*] þe blisse B. þo] þe WCOB. [*abyde me made R*] bronzte me aslepe LWCOB. But see the three next lines; and cf. Text A.

65. a (1) RB om. vppon] vnder B. I] y me B.

66. *lythe*] hiren B. þe (2)] þat þo B; þat þe R. *louely*] R om.

67. *slepe*] slepe W.  
68. þe] R om. *merueillest*] Merueylokest R; merueilous B. *mette me*] Mette I me O; me mette B.

69. I repeats dremed, but the line is marked.

70. *moeche*] mykil C. me] R om.  
72. þo] R om.

75. *sey*] seye W; sey3 O; sawe C.  
76. *couthest-wisse*] kannes me wisse C; knowest, y-wysse B; coud-est me wisse where R.

Where þat dowel dwelleth · and do me þat to knowe?"

¶ "Dowel and dobet · and dobest þe thridde," quod he,  
"Aren three faire vertues · and beth nauȝte fer to fynde."

Who-so is trewe of his tonge · and of his two handes, "Whoever is meek, mild, and true," said he,  
And þorough his laboure or þorough his londe · his "him Do-well follows.  
lyflode wynmeth, 81

And is trusti of his tailende · taketh but his owne,  
And is nouȝt dronkenlew ne dedeignous · dowel hym **107**  
folweth.

Dobet doth ryȝt þus · ac he doth moche more; 84 Do-bet does even more, and gives to the needy,

He is as low as a lombe · and loueliche of speche,  
And helpeth alle men · after þat hem nedeth;

þe bagges and þe bigurdeles · he hath to-broken hem alle,

þat þe Erl auarous · helde, and his heires; 88  
And þus with Mammonacs [moncie] · he hath made hym frendes,

And is ronne in-to Religioun · and hath rendred þe and hath rendered the Bible,  
bible,

And precheth to þe poeple · seynt Poules wordes, and preaches from the text,  
*Libenter suffertis insipientes, cum sitis ipsi* 2 Cor. xi. 19.  
*sapientes,*

'And suffreth þe vnwise · with ȝow for to libbe, 92

And with gladd wille doth hem gode · for so god ȝow hoteth.'

77. þat (2)] hym R.

78. þe] O om.

81. or] and B. þorough (2)] COB om. londe] londes COB.

82. CB om. his tailende] taylyng O.

83. is] is (printed his) W. dronkenlew] dronkelew R; dronkelewe (printed dronklewe) WB; dronklewe C; dronklew O. dedeignous] deygnous CB.

84. doth (1)] does C; do B. he] B om.

85. as (1)] B om.

87. to-broken] to-brook C; broken B.

88. þe] B om.

89. þus] R om. Mammonacs] Mamondes C. [moncie WCOB] mone

LR. hath] had B. made] ymade R.

90. in-to] to WCOB. bible] bille (!) R.

91. precheth] preached CR.

92, 93. In one line—And to þe vnwise ye do goode · for so god yow beddis C; B the same, but with hotip for beddis.

Do-best is above  
both, and bears a  
bishop's crosier.

¶ Dobest is aboue bothe · and bereth a bisschopes  
crosse,

Is hoked on þat one ende · to halie men fro helle.

A pyke is on þat potente · to pulte adown þe wikked,  
þat wayten any wikkednesse · dowel to tene. 97

[Fol. 34 b.]

Do-well and Do-  
bet have crowned  
a king,

And dowel and dobet · amonges hem ordeigned  
To crowne one to be kyng · to reule hem bothe ;

þat ȝif dowel or dobet · did aȝein dobest, 100

108

with consent of  
Do-best."

þanne shal þe kyng come · and casten hem in yrens,

And but if dobest bede for hem · þei to be þere for  
euere.

¶ Thus dowel and dobet · and dobest þe thridde,

Crowned one to be kyng · to kepen hem alle, 104

And to reule þe Reume · bi her thre wittes,

And none other-wise · but as þei thre assented."

I thanked him,  
and asked him  
where these three  
dwelt.

¶ I thonked thouȝt þo · þat he me þus tauȝte ;

" Ae ȝete sauoureth me nouȝt þi seggyng · I coueite to  
lerne 108

How dowel, dobet, and dobest · don amonges þe peple."

"Only Wit can  
tell thee," said he.

¶ " But witte coune wisse þe," quod þouȝt · " where þo  
thre dwelle ;

Ellis wote I none þat can · þat now is alyue."

So Thought and  
I went on till we  
met Wit.

¶ þouȝte and I thus · thre days we ȝeden, 112

Disputyng vppon dowel · day after other,

94. *bothe*] hem boþe O.

95. *Is*] And is B. *hoked*] an hoke R.

96. *A*] And a B. *is*] R om. *on—potente*] on þe potente CO; in þe poynt B. *pulte*] pelte R; pilte O; putte WCB. *wikked*] helle B.

97. *wikkednesse*] wickednesse to do B.

98. *and* (2)] haþ B. *ordeigned*] ordeyneden O; ordeyneþ B; hau ordeyned W.

99. *one*] and R. R omits from to reule (*l.* 99) to kyng in *l.* 104.

100. *did*] doþ O.

101. *casten*] putte B.

102. *bede*] did C; dyde B; bidde

O. *hem*] hym CB. *þei—þere*] þei be þer O; þer to be B.

103. *dobest*] best C.

104. *be*] be (*printed the*) W; þe B. *kepen*] *so in* WCOR; *spelt* kepin L; B *has* helpe.

105. *þe*] þi O.

106. *none*] in non B. *assented*] assentes C; assenteþ B.

107. *þus*] B om.

108. *Ae ȝete*] Ae R; And yet C; And ariȝt B. *seggyng*] seying W; sayeng C; segge B. *lerne*] lere B.

110. *quod*] C om. *þo*] þei B.

111. *can*] can þe telle B. *is alyue*] lyueþ B.

112. *we*] COB om.

And ar we were ywar · with witte gan we mete.  
 He was longe and lene · liche to none other,  
 Was no pryde on his apparaille · ne pouerte noyther,  
 Saddle of his semblaunt · and of soft chiere. 117

I dorste meue no matere · to make hym to iangle,  
 But as I had pouzt þo · be mene bitwene,  
 And put forth somme purpos · to prouen his wittes,  
 What was dowel fro dobet · and dobest fram hem bothe.

¶ þanne pouzt in þat tyme · seide þise wordes, 122

“ Where dowel, dobet · and dobest ben in loude,  
 Here is wille wolde ywyte · yif witte couthe teche hym,  
 And whether he be man or [no] man · þis man fayne  
 wolde aspye, 125

And worchen as þei thre wolde · þis is his entente.”

I asked Thought  
 to ask him a  
 question for me,

and he asked him  
 where Do-well,  
 Do-bet, and Do-  
 best dwelt.

114. *we* (1)] y B. *were ywar*] were Iwitt R.

war WB; war were R. *we* (2)] I O.

119. *be*] to be B.

120. *somme*] his R.

123. *Where*] Whether R. *dobet*] and dobet B. *ben*] was CB; R om.

124. *is*] I. om. *ywyte*] wite WCOB;

125. [*no man*] so in RCB; L omits no, but the line is marked; WO have womman, which is probably corrupt. *fayne*] COB om.

126. *þis*] thus W.

## PASSUS IX. (DO-WEL I.)

*Passus nonus [de visione ; et primus de dowel.]*

- 110**  
 "Do-well dwells,"  
 said Wit, "in a  
 castle made by  
 Kind of four  
 things,  
 earth, air, wind,  
 and water.
- S**ire dowel dwelleth," quod witte · "nouzt a day  
 hennes,  
 In a castel þat kynde made · of foure kynnes þinges ;  
 Of erthe and eyre is it made · medled togideres,  
 With wynde and with water · witterly enioyned. 4  
 Kynde hath closed þere-Inne · craftily with-alle,  
 A lemman þat he loueth · like to hym-selue,  
*Anima* she hatte · ac enuye hir hateth,  
 A proude pryker of Fraunce · *prynceps huius mundi*, 8  
 And wolde winne hir away · with wyles, and he myzte.  
 ¶ Ae kynde knoweth þis wel · and kepeth hir þe bettere,  
 And hath do hir with sire dowel · is duke of þis  
 marches.  
 Dobet is hir damoisele · sire doweles douzter, 12  
 To serue þis lady lelly · bothe late and rathe.  
**111**  
 Dobest is aboue bothe · a bisschopes pere ;  
 þat he bit, mote be do · he reuleth hem alle ;  
*Anima* þat lady · is ladde bi his lerynge. 16

TITLE. Passus nonus LO; Passus  
 Nonus de visione, vt supra CR; to  
 which W adds et primus de Do-bet  
 (an obvious mistake); B adds, et se-  
 cundus de Dowel. But Crowley has  
 the correct title.

2. *kynnes*] maner R.  
 3. *eyre*] of Eyr WB; heyer R. is  
 it] is it (printed it is) W.  
 6. *like*] y-liche R.

7. *hatte*] hatteth R.  
 10. *Ae*] And CR.  
 11. *And—do*] And hath I-do R;  
 As does C; And dooþ W; As doþ B.  
*sire*] R om. þis] þe R.  
 14. *aboue*] aboute R.  
 15. *do*] don B; doon O. *reuleth*]  
 reule C.  
 16. *lerynge*] leryng R.

- ¶ Ac þe constable of þat castel · þat kepeth al þe  
wacche, The constable of  
the castle is In-  
wit [Conscience],
- Is a wys kniȝte with-al · sire Inwitte he hatte,  
And hath fyue feyre sones · bi his first wyf ;  
Sire sewel and saywel · and herewel þe hende, 20 whose sons are  
Sire worche-wel-wyth-pine-hande · a wiȝte man of 20 See-well, Say-  
strengthe, 20 well, Hear-well,  
And sire godfrey gowel · gret lordes for sothe. 20 Work-well, and  
þise fyue ben sette · to saue þis lady *anima*, 20 Go-well.”  
Tyl kynde come or sende · to saue hir for euere.” 24
- ¶ “What kynnes thyng is kynde,” *quod* I · “canstow 24 “Who is Kind ?”  
me telle ?” 24 said I.
- ¶ “Kynde,” *quod* witte, “is a creatour · of alle kynnes 24 “Kind is the  
þinges ; 24 great Creator,  
Fader and fourmour · of al þat euere was maked ; 24 who made all  
And þat is þe gret god · þat gynnyng had neuere, 28 things ;  
Lorde of lyf and of lyȝte · of lysse and of peyne. 28  
Angeles and al þing · aren at his wille.  
Ac man is hym moste lyke · of marke and of schafte ; 28 man being most  
For þorough þe worde þat he spake · wexen forth bestes, 28 like himself.
- Dixit, & facta sunt ;*  
i. adam
- ¶ And made man likkest · to hym-self one, 33 Ps. cxlviii. 5  
And Eue of his ribbe-bon · with-uten eny mene. 33 (Vulg.). [112]
- For he was synguler hym-self · and seyde *faciamus*,  
As who seith, ‘more mote here-to · þan my worde one ; 37 † An argument  
My myȝte mote helpe · now with my speche.’ 37 for the Trinity.
- Riȝte as a lorde sholde make *lettres* · and hym lakked 37 † A writer needs  
*parchemyn*, 37 both parchment  
and pen.

20. *herewel*] sire here-wel R.21. *Sire*] And CB.22. *gret lordes*] a grete lord R.23. *saue*] kepe W. *lady*] R om.25. *kynnes*] kynne R ; COB om.26. *creatour*] creature COB. *alle*  
*kynnes*] alkyng C ; alkyne R ;  
alkyns O.28. *þat—gret*] þe get (*sic*) R.29. *lysse*] blisse RB.29, 30. *Transposed* in B.31. *hym moste*] most hym R.*schafte*] schape C.32. *wexen*] *so* in LRO ; woxen  
WCB. *Dixit*] Et dixit B. *sunt*]  
sunt, &c. CB.33. *likkest*] I-likest R.34. *mene*] mede B.35. *and*] R om.36. *mote here-to*] mut þerto O.37. *now*] forþ W.38. *a*] C om.

þough he couth write neuere so wel · ȝif he had no penne,  
þe *lettre[s]* for al þe lordship · I leue were neuere  
ymaked. 40

¶ And so it semeth bi hym · as þe bible telleth,  
þere he seyde, *dixit, & facta sunt* ;

He moste worche with his worde · and his witte shewe.

† So God made  
man by His Word  
and Might.

And in þis manere was man made · þorough myȝte of  
god almiȝti,

With his worde and werkemanship · and with lyf to  
laste. 44

[Fol. 35 b.]

The castle is  
called *Caro*.

And þus god gaf hym a goost · of þe godhed of heuene,

And of his grete grace · graunted hym blisse,

And þat is lyf þat ay shal last · to al [his] lynage after.

And þat is þe castel þat kynde made · *caro* it hatte, 48

And is as moche to mene · as man with a soule ;

And þat he wrouȝt with werke · and with worde bothe,  
þorough myȝte of þe maiceste · man was ymaked.

¶ Inwit and alle wittes · closed ben þer-inne, 52

The lady is Life,  
or *Anima*, and  
dwells in man's  
heart ;

For loue of þe lady *anima* · þat lyf is ynempned ;

Ouer al in mannes body · he walketh and wandreth,

Ac in þe herte is hir home · and hir moste reste.

In-wit is in his  
head, and rules  
*Anima*.

Ac Inwitte is in þe hed · and to the herte he loketh,

What *anima* is lief or loth · he lat hir at his wille ; 57

For after þe grace of god · þe gretttest is Inwitte.

† Wo to him who  
misuses his In-  
wit.

¶ Moche wo worth þat man · þat mys-reuleth his In-  
witte,

And þat be glotouns globbares · her god is her wombe ;

39. *no*] a CB.

40. *lettres* O] *lettre* LWCRB ;  
Crowley has letters ; see l. 38.

41. *semeth*] semed R. *bible*] book  
COB. *he seyde*] it sayes C ; hit seiþ  
B ; he seyþ O.

45. *of*] þoruȝ W. *godhed*] godded  
R.

47. [*his* WR] LCOB om. *lynage*]  
lynages CO.

48. *þat*] þis R. *castel*] catel (!)  
RB.

49. *is*] þat is O.

50. *worde*] his wordes R.

52. *Inwit*] In-wyttis B. *closed*]  
I-clothed R.

54. CB omit.

55. *Ac*] And WC. *hir* (1)] his  
C : B om. *hir* (2)] his CB.

56. *Inwitte*] wytt B. *he*] R om.

57. *or*] & O. *his*] hire R.

59. *man*] wiȝt R.

60. *globbares*] glubberes WO ; glob-  
bers C ; clobberis B.

*Quorum deus venter est.*

† Philip. iii. 19.

For þei seruen sathan · her soule shal he haue ; 61  
þat liueth synful lyf here · her soule is liche þe deuel.  
And alle þat lyuen good lyf · aren like god almizti,

*Qui manet in caritate, in deo manet, &c.*

† 1 St John iv.  
16.

¶ Allas ! þat drynke shal for-do · þat god dere bouzte,  
And doth god forsaken hem · þat he shope to his lik-  
nesse ; 65

*Amen dico vobis, nescio vos : & alibi : et dimisi  
eos secundum desideria eorum.*

† Mat. xxv. 12 ;  
Ps. lxxx. 13  
(Vulg.)

¶ Foles þat fauten Inwitte · I fynde þat holieherche  
Shulde fynden hem þat hem [fauteth] · and faderelees  
children ;

[113]  
† Idiots should  
be protected by  
the church ;

And wydwes þat han nouzte wher-with · to wyumen  
hem her fode, 68

Madde men, and maydenes · þat helplees were ;  
Alle þise lakken Inwitte · and lore bihoueth.

† and so should  
widows, madmen,  
and helpless  
maidens.

¶ Of þis matere I myzte · make a longe tale,  
And fynde fele witnesses · amonges þe foure doctours,  
And þat I lye nouzt of þat I lere þe · luke bereth wit-  
nesse. 73

¶ Godfader and godmoder · þat sen her godechildren  
At myseise and at mischief · and mowe hem amende,  
Shal haue penaunce in purgatorie · but zif þei hem  
helpe. 76

† Godfathers and  
Godmothers  
should protect  
their charges.

For more bilongeth to þe litel barne · ar he þe lawe  
knowe,

þan nempnyng of a name · and he neuere þe wiser !  
Shulde no erystene creature · crien atte zate,

*venter*] venter eorum B.

RCOB] fauted LW ; marked in L.

61. *soule*] so in R ; soules WCOB.

68. CB omit.

62. *soule*] soules C. *deuel*] deuelis

72. *witnesses*] witnesse CR.

O.

63. *like*] lik to WCOB.

73. *of—þe*] I lereþe (*sic*) R.

64. *bouzte*] aboute COB.

74. *Godfader*] Godfadir OB ; God-  
fadres W. *godmoder*] godmodir OB ;  
godmodres W.

65. *he shope*] schope hem R. &  
*alibi—eorum*] R om. *eorum*] &c. CB.

75. *At*] þat is R. *at*] COB om.

66. *fauten*] faylen B.

76. *zif*] if COB ; W om.

67. *hem* (2)] R om. [*fauteth*

78. *he*] CB om.

Ne faille payn ne potage · and prelates did as þei  
shulden. 80

† A Jew would  
not see a Jew  
suffer want.

A Iuwe wolde nouȝte se a Iuwe · go iangelyng for de-  
faute,

[Fol. 36.]

For alle þe moebles on þis molde · and he amende it  
miȝte.

¶ Allas! þat a cristene creature · shal be vnkynde til  
an other,

Sitthen Iuwes þat we iugge · Iudas felawes, 84  
Ayther of hem helpeth other · of þat þat hym nedeth.

† Why should not  
Christians be  
charitable like-  
wise?

Whi nel we cristene · of cristes good be as kynde  
As Iuwes, þat ben owre lores-men? · shame to vs alle!  
þe comune for her vnkyndenesse · I drede me, shul  
abye. 88

† It is a great  
crime to give to  
unworthy objects.

¶ Bisschopes shul be blamed · for beggeres sake;  
He is worse þan Iudas · þat ȝineth a iaper siluer,  
And biddeth þe begger go · for his broke clothes:

*Proditor est prelatus cum Iuda, qui patrimo-  
nium christi minus distribuit: & alibi:  
Perniciosus dispensator est, qui res pauperum  
Christi inutiliter consumit.*

He doth nouȝt wel þat doth þus · ne drat nouȝt god  
almiȝty, 92

Ne loueth nouȝt salamoness sawes · þat sapiencie tauȝte;

[114]  
Ps. cx. 10 (Vulg.).  
Eccles. i. 16.

*Inicium sapiencie, timor domini:*

¶ þat dredeth god, he doth wel; · þat dredeth hym  
for loue,

80. *Nē*] And R.  
82. *moebles*] mebles WOB; nobles  
(!) R. *on*] of RB.  
83. *cristene* WCROB] *spelt* cres-  
tene in L. *be*] be so OB. *til*] to CB.  
84. *Sitthen*] Syn W.  
85. *Ayther—hem*] þat ayther R.  
þat þat] hem þat R. *hym*] hem W.  
86. *nel*] nyl C; nylen O; ne wil  
R; ne wille B.  
87. *shame*] to schame R.  
88. *vnkyndenesse*] wikkednesse CB.  
*abye*] abide B.

90. *a iaper*] Iapers COB.  
91. *biddeth*] bit R. *begger*] beg-  
geris B. *go*] go forþ B. *minus*] *minus*  
LCROB; *minus or mimis* W.  
*est*] O om. *Christi*] COB om.  
92. *drat*] drad R; drat, *altered to*  
drad C.  
93. *Nē*] He W.  
94, 95. COB *have one long line—*  
*Dred god for loue & þou doste wel ·*  
*but nouȝt for vengeance, and þou dost*  
*bet.*  
94. *dredeth*] drat R (*bis*).

## SUPPLEMENT TO "PIERS PLOWMAN," PART I. TEXT A.

[MS. Rowl. Poet. 137. Fol. 40.]

## PASSUS XII.

*Passus tercius de dowel.*

"Christ wot," quod clergie · "knowe hit ȝif þe lyke,  
 I haue do my deuer · þe dowel to teche ;  
 And who-so coueyteþ don betere · þan þe boke telleþ,  
 He passeþ þe apostolis lyf · and put him to aungelys ! 4  
 But I se now as I seye · as me soþ thinkytȝ,  
 þe were lef to lerne · but loþ for to stodie.  
 þou woldest konne þat I can · and carpen hit after.  
 Presumptuowsly, paraurenture · a-pose so manye, 8  
 That [hit] myȝthe turne men to tene · & theologie boþe.  
 ȝif I wiste witterly · þou woldest don þer-after,  
 Al þat þou askest · a-soylen I wolde."  
 Skornfully þo scripture · [set vp here] browes, 12  
 And on clergie criep · on cristes holy name,  
 That he shewe me hit ne sholde · but ȝif [hit] stryf were  
 Of þe kynde cardinal wit · and cristned in a font ;—  
 And seyde [hit] so loude · þat shame me thouȝthe, 16  
 "þat hit were boþe skaþe · and sklaundre to holy eherche, " Theology

"Christ knows,"  
 said Clergy, "I  
 have tried to  
 teach you Do-wel.

You want to learn  
 in order to cavil."

12 Scripture set up  
 her brows,  
 and told Clergy  
 not to tell me  
 more.

[NOTE. See the account at the end of the Passus, shewing whence this Twelfth Passus is derived.]

Pass. XII, Called Passus tercius de dowel in MS. U and MS. Rawlinson 137. See the note to Pass. XI. l. 303, on p. 154.

1. þe] ye U; but the y represents þ.

3. coueyteþ don] coueite to don U.

4. þe] U om. him] hem U; corruptly.

6. U omits.

9. [hit] it U; MS. Rawlinson omits.

men] me U.

12. þo] miswritten þe in MS. Rawlinson; U has yo = þo. [set vp here] So in U; MS. Rawlinson has sherte vp his, where at least his is wrong.

13. criep] cryede U. cristes] godis U.

14. shewe me hit] schewyt U (corruptly). [hit] it U; MS. Rowl. om.

15. kynde] U om.

16. [hit] it U; MS. Rowl. om. me] me it U.

17. boþe] U om.

forbids me to  
teach sinners.

Sitthe theologie þe trewe · to tellen hit defendeþ ;  
 Dauid godes derling · defendyþ hit al-so :

Ps. cxviii. 158  
(Vulg.).

*Vidi [preuaricantes] et tabescebam :*

I saw synful, he seyde · þerfore I seyde no-þing, 20  
 Til þo wrecches ben in wil · here synne to lete.  
 And poul precheþ hit often · prestes hit redyn,

2 Cor. xii. 4.

*Audiui archune que non licet homini loqui :*

I am not hardy, quod he · þat I herde with erys,  
 Telle hit with tounge · to synful wrecches. 24

And god graunted hit neuere · þe gospel hit witnesseth,  
 In þe passioun, whan pilat · a-posed god al-myȝthi,

[Fol. 40 b.]

And asked Ihesu on hy · þat herden hit an hundred,

Jo. xviii. 33.

*Quid est ueritas ? quod* he · verilyche tel vs ; 28

God gaf him non answeere · but gan his tounge holde.

So do not tell him  
any more "

Riȝt so I rede," quod she · " red þou no ferþer ;

Of þat he wolde wite · wis him no betere.

For he cam not by cause · to lerne to dowel, 32

But as he seyþ, such I am · when he with me carpeþ."

At this, Clergy  
withdrew.

And when scripture þe skolde · hadde þus wyt y-sheued,  
 Clergie in-to a caban · crepte anon after,

And drow þe dore after him · and bad me go dowel, 36

Or wycke, ȝif I wolde · wheþer me lyked !

But I prayed  
Scripture to  
tell me where  
her cousin  
Kind Wit  
(Common Sense)  
lived.

þan held I vp myn handes · to scripture þe wise,

To be hure man ȝif I most · for euere-more after,

With þat she wolde me wisse · wher þe toun were, 40

Kynde wit hure confessour · hure cosyn was Inne.

þat lady þan low · and lauzthe me in here armes,

And sayde, " my cosyn kynde wit · knowen is wel wide,

And his loggyng is with lyf · þat lord is of erþe. 44

And ȝif þou desyre · with him for to a-byde,

18. *Sitthe*] Scihop (*sic*) U. þe *trewe*] yat trewe is U. *to*] U *om*.

19. [*preuaricantes*] *So* in U ; MS. Rawl. *corruptly* has *preuaricationes*.

20. MS. U *ends with* *tabescebam* ; and from this line to the end, we have only MS. Rawl. *to trust to*. *seyde no-þing*] It is clear that the poet construes *tabescebam* as if it were *tacebam*.

The same idea recurs in ll. 23 and 29.

22. *Audiui*, &c. Quoted again in Text B. Pass. XVIII.

33. *such I am*] i. e. I am not to be commended ; alluding to Pass. XI. l. 286.

41. *wit*.] *The MS. has wt*, the usual contraction for *with* ; but see ll. 43 and 53 ; and *hit for hit*, l. 25.

I shal þe wisse · where þat he dwelleþ.”

And þanne I kneled on my knes · and kyste her wel “I will tell you,”  
she said.  
sone,

And þanked hure a þousand syþes · with þrobbant  
herte. 48

She called [to ken] me · a cleriouȝ þat hyȝt

*Omnia-probate* · a pore þing with alle, She said to  
*Omnia-probate*,  
“Go and show  
Will the way.”

“þou shalt wende with wil,” quod she · “whiles þat  
him lykyþ,

Til ȝe come to þe burghe · *quod-bonum-est-tenete*. 52

Ken him to my cosenes hous · þat kinde wit hyȝth,

Sey I sente him þis segge · and þat he shewe hym  
dowel.”

þus we lauȝþe oure leue · lowtyng at onys,

And wente forþ on my way · with *omnia-probate*, 56

And ere I cam to þe court · *quod-bonum-est-tenete*,

Many ferlys me by-fel · in a fewe ȝeris.

The fyrste ferly I foud · a-fyngrid me made ;

As I ȝede thurgh ȝouþe · a-ȝen prime dayes, 60

I stode stille in a stodie · and stared a-bowte ;

“Al hayl,” quod on þo, and I answered “welcome ·  
*and with whom be ȝe ?*”

“I am dwellyng with deth · and hunger I hatte,

To lyf in his lordshepe · longyt my weye, 64

I shal felle þat freke · in a fewe dayes !”

“I wolde folwe þe fayn · but fentesye me hendeþ,

Me folweþ such a fentyse · I may no ferþer walke.”

“Go we forþ,” quod þe gom · “I haue a gret boyste 68

At my bak, of broke bred · þi bely for to fylle ;

49, 50. *These two lines are written as one in the MS. Some such phrase as to ken me seems to have been lost ; see l. 53.*

50. *Omnia probate*] Compare Text B. Pass. III. l. 335.

52. *burghe*] ? burgher MS. But *burghe* = borough is meant ; it is called a court in l. 57.

58. Cf. Prologue ; l. 62. *Here fol-*

*lows the catchword*—þe ferste ferly.

60. *ȝouþe*] *miswritten ȝou þe in MS. ; the metrical dot being inserted by mistake after the letter u. But the reading is certain ; cf. Text B. Pass. XI. 17, 34, 59 ; and especially observe the whole drift of Text B. Pass. XI.*

62. *A half-line has probably been lost here.*

66. Cf. Pass. V. 5.

So we went to the court called *Quod-bonum-est-tenete*.

[Fol. 41.]

As I went through Youth, I met a man and hailed him.

I'e said he lived with Death, and his name was Hunger.

He offered me some scraps of bread.

A bagge ful, of a beggere · I bouȝþe hit at onys.”  
 Than maunged I wit · vp at þe fulle,  
 For þe myssyng of mete · no mesour I coude. 72  
 With þat cam a knaue · with a confessoures face,  
 He halsed me and I · asked him after,  
 Of when þat he were · and wheder þat he wolde.  
 “With deþ I duelle,” quod he · “dayes and nyȝtes; 76  
 Mi name is feuere, on þe ferþe day · I am a-þrest euere ;  
 I am masager of deþ · men haue I tweyne,  
 þat on is called cotidian · a courour of oure hous,  
 Tercian þat oþer · trewe drinkeres boþe ! 80  
 We han letteres of lyf · he shal his lyf [tyne ;]  
 Fro deþ, þat is oure duk · swyche dedis we brynge.”  
 “Myȝth I so, god wot · ȝoure gates wolde I holden.”  
 “Nay, wil !” quod þat wyȝth · “wend þou no ferther, 84  
 But lyue as þis lyf · is ordeyned for the,  
 þou tomblest wiþ a trepget · ȝif þou my tras folwe ;  
 And mannes merþe wrouȝþ no mor · þan he deseruyþ  
 here,  
 Whil his lyf and his lykham · lesten to-gedere. 88  
 And þer-fore do after do-wel · whil þi dayes duren,  
 þat þi play be plentevous · in paradys with aungelys.  
 þou shalt be lauȝth into lyȝth · with loking of an eye,  
 So þat þou werke þe word · þat holy wryt techeþ, 92  
 And be prest to preyeres · and profitable werkes.”  
 Wille [wiste] þurgh in-wit— · þou wost wel þe soþe—  
 þat þis speche was spedelich · and sped him wel faste,  
 And wrouȝthe þat here is wryten · and oþer werkes  
 boþe 96

Next I met one  
called Fever.

“Do not follow  
me, Will,” he  
said.

“But do well  
while your days  
last.”

[Fol. 41 b.]

So Will made  
haste to write  
his Do-wel; and  
he also wrote his  
Peres the  
Plowman.

70. *bouȝþe* cf. *wrouȝþ*, l. 87; *lauȝþe*, l. 55; &c.

71. *Corrupt*; probably two half-lines lost.

78. Fevers and Death appear in Text B. Pass. XX.

81. [*tyne*] The MS. has *tyme*, corruptly. See Pass. XI. 233.

86. *þou* miswritten *þe* in the MS.; the being the preceding word.

87. *wrouȝþ*] = *wrouȝte*. Cf. l. 70. The reading *worþe* would make better sense.

94. The word *wiste* has evidently been dropped here, probably on account of *wost* following.

96. This means that, besides the Vita de Do-wel, Do-bet, et Do-best, the author wrote Peres the Plowman.

Of peres þe plowman · and mechel puple al-so ;  
 And whan þis werk was wrouzt · ere wille myzte a-spie,  
 Deþ delt him a dent · and drof him to þe erþe,  
 And is closed vnder clom · crist haue his soule ! 100

Now he lies  
 buried under the  
 clay !

And so bad Iohan but · busily wel ofte,  
 When he saw þes sawes · busily a-legged  
 By Iames and by Ierom · by Iop and by oþere,  
 And for he medleþ of makyng · he made þis ende. 104  
 Now alle kenne creatures · þat cristene were euere,  
 God for his goudnesse · gif hem swyche happes,  
 To lyue as þat lord lykþ · þat lyf in hem putte.  
 Furst to rekne Richard · kyng of þis rewme, 108  
 And alle lordes þat louyn him · lely in herte,  
 God saue hem sound · by se and by land ;  
 Marie moder and may · for man þou by-seke ;  
 þat barn bryng vs to blys · þat bled vp-on þe rode !  
 Amen. 112

John But added  
 this ending.

God save King  
 Richard, and all  
 lords that love  
 him !

### Explicit do-Edel.

*Nomen scriptoris · tiset plenus amoris.*

98—100. These are the author's own words ; he kills himself off, by way of finishing his poem, but he lived to re-write it, nevertheless.

101—112. Obviously added, as stated, by another hand, viz. that of

John But, who made a second "end," because he was accustomed to "meddle with makyng," i. e. to compose verses.

102. *busily*] *Read* sothely? *Busily is repeated from the line above.*

## NOTE ON PASSUS XII.

THE discovery of the *unique* copy of the greater part of this Passus is due to Mr Geo. Parker, assistant in the Bodleian Library, from observation of my note at p. 154 of the volume containing Text A of Piers Plowman. It is a most important and satisfactory discovery, as offering the complete solution of the problem as to the true termination of Text A. I had made out this much; (1) that there was once a Passus XII., or more strictly a *Passus tertius de dowel*, of which 18 lines were preserved in MS. U (belonging to University College, Oxford); (2) that this Passus must have been the *concluding* one of the Poem of *Dowel* in its earliest form; (3) that it must have contained considerably less than 180 lines, as shown by the state of the Vernon MS.; (4) that it must, in fact, have consisted of less than 131 lines, as shown by the state of the University College MS. All these suppositions are now fulfilled; the missing portion—100 lines long—was found by Mr Parker in MS. Rawl. Poet. 137, in the Bodleian Library, the very existence of which was unknown to me until the Rawlinsonian MSS. were recently catalogued. This is now here printed, with various readings of the first 19 lines, one of which, the sixth, is omitted in the University College copy. This Rawlinson MS. is corrupt in places; in fact, *every* MS. of Piers Plowman is corrupt occasionally;—but it is sufficiently good to show us clearly how the poem ended. I here add a formal description of it, to supplement the descriptions on pp. xv—xxiv.

XI. MS. Rawlinson Poet. 137; on vellum; of the early part of the fifteenth century. Size, about  $9\frac{1}{2}$  in. by  $5\frac{3}{4}$ . It consists of 41 leaves bound together, containing the *whole* of Piers Plowman, Text A. The four loose leaves, mentioned below as forming part of the old cover, are numbered 42—45. It is very remarkable as being the *only perfect* copy of its kind. At the beginning is the important heading—“*Hic incipit liber qui uocatur pers plowman. Prologus;*” and this is the *only* copy of any kind I have yet seen wherein the word *Prologus* occurs. See Page 1, first footnote. At the end is the very important colophon—Explicit Do-wel, shewing that the poem really *did* end here, in its ear-



in Paradise, if he will only be regular at prayers, and ready to do profitable works. "Now William (i. e. the author) knew by his conscience that this speech required immediate attention, and so he made haste and completed the poem here written; and besides this Poem of Do-wel, he wrote the poem about Piers Plowman and many others;

and when this work was wrought, ere Will might spy,  
 Death dealt him a dint, and drove him to the earth;  
 and he is enclosed under clay; now Christ have his soul!"

It is obvious that this notice of his own death is a mere flourish, introduced for the sake of winding up the poem at a moment when he had no idea of expanding and rewriting it; which, however, he certainly did, and even used again some of the phrases and thoughts contained in this very portion at the end of which he kills himself off. And with these words—"Christ have his soul!"—the poem, in its first form, truly ends. But in the present copy we have 12 superfluous lines, added by one "Johan But," who, having read the whole poem, and being satisfied that most of the ideas in it could be well supported by quotations from James, Jerome, Job, and others, was pleased to dignify it with an ending of his own, as he had been accustomed to metrical composition himself, having before then "meddled in making," i. e. dabbled in verse. But he has very little more to say than to hope that God will bless all men and teach them to do right; and so God save King Richard and all his lords, and may Mary, mother and maiden, beseech for man, and may Christ bring us all to bliss. The commonplaceness of these lines, and the smallness of their number, is of some importance. It shews us how men fared who attempted to add to the master-poet's words, and it affords some proof of the genuineness of the numerous additions which Langland made in his later versions, and which are not in the "Johan But" style by any means.

And nouȝt for drede of veniaunce · doth þer-fore þe  
bettere ;

He doth best, þat with-draweth hym · by day and bi  
nyȝte 96

To spille any speche · or any space of tyme ;

*Qui offendit in [vno], in omnibus est reus.*

† Waste not  
speech or time  
(James ii. 10).

¶ Lesyng of tyme · treuthe wote þe sothe !

Is moste yhated vp erthe · of hem þat beth in heuene,

And sitthe to spille speche · þat spyre is of grace, 100

And goddes gleman · and a game of heuene ;

† Speech is God's  
gleman.

Wolde neuere þe faithful fader · his fithel were vn-  
tempred,

Ne his gleman a gedelynge · a goer to tauernes !

¶ To alle trew tidly men · þat trauaille desyren, 104

Owre lorde loueth hem and lent · loude other stille,

† Our Lord loves  
workers. Ps.  
xxxiii. 11 (Vulg.).

Grace to go to hem · and agon her lyfode ;

*Inquirentes autem dominum non minuentur omni  
bono.*

¶ Trewe wedded libbing folk · in þis worlde is dowel ;

[☩☩☩]  
† Truly wedded  
folk do well.

For þei mote worche & wyne · and þe worlde susteyne.

For of her kynde þei come · þat confessoures ben  
nempned, 109

Of such come  
confessors,  
martyrs, &c.

Kynges and kniȝtes · kayseres and cherles,

Maydenes and martires · out of o man come.

þe wyf was made þe weye · for to help worche, 112

And þus was wedloke ywrouȝt · with a mene persone ;

† How weddings  
should be made.

First bi þe faderes wille · and þe frendes conseille,

95. R *has*—And drad hym nauȝt  
for loue of vengeance · to do þe bettere.

96. *He doth*] thow dost COB. þat  
—*hym*] if þow withdrawe COB.

97. [*vno* WCOB] verbo LR; see p.  
184. *in—est*] est in omnibus COB.

99. *yhated*] hatid O. *vp*] vpon  
WOB.

100. *sitthe*] seche R. *spyre*] spire  
CROB; spicerie W.

101—103. C *omits from* and *in* 101  
*to gleman in* 103.

102. *his*] þis W. *ventempred*] vn-  
tymbred R.

105. *hem*] O *om. other*] eiþer O.

106. *to hem*] to hem tille R. *agon*]  
agoon RO; ofgon W.

108. *note*] musten O.

109. *þei*] he R.

110. Kayseres and kyngis · knyȝttis  
and clerkis B.

111. *o*] a COB.

113—116. R *omits from* with a  
*mene to ywrouȝte*.

And sytthenes bi assent of hem-self · as þei two myzte  
acorde.

[Fol. 36 b.] And thus was wedloke ywrouzte · and god hym-self it  
made ; 116

In erthe þe heuene is · hym-self was þe witesse.

False folk are  
conceived in an  
ill hour, like Cain.

¶ Ac fals folke faithlees · thenes and lieres,  
Wastoures and wreeches · out of wedloke, I trowe,  
Conceyued ben in yuel tyme · as caym was on Eue. 120  
Of such synful shrewes · þe sauter maketh mynde,

Ps. vii. 15 (Vulg.).

*Concepit in dolore, et peperit iniquitatem, &c. :*

[118]

And alle þat come of þat caym · come to yuel ende.

† God warned  
Seth's issue not  
to marry with  
Cain's.

For god sent to seem · and seyde bi an angel,  
þyne issue in þyne issue · I wil þat þei be wedded,  
And nouzt þi kynde with caymes · ycoupled ne  
yspoused. 125

God was wroth  
with them for so  
doing ;

¶ 3et some, aȝein þe sonde · of owre saucoure of heuene,  
Caymes kynde & his kynde · coupled togideres,  
Tyl god wratthed for her werkis · and suche a worde  
seyde, 128

‘ þat I maked man · now it me athynketh,

Gen. vi. 7.

*Penitet me fecisse hominem.’*

Wherefore He  
bade Noah build  
the ark,

¶ And come to Noe anon · and bad hym nouzt lette :  
‘ Swithe go shape a shippe · of shides and of bordes.  
þi self and þi sones three · and sithen ȝowre wyues,  
Buske ȝow to þat bote · and bideth ȝe þer-inne, 133

for the flood  
should destroy  
Cain's seed.

Tyl fourty dayes be fulfilde · þat [þe] flode haue ywasshen  
Clene away þe cursed blode · þat caym hath ymaked.

117. þe—*is*] þere heuen is R ; and  
in heuene W. *was þe*] bereþ WCB.

118. *faithlees*] and faithles R.

120. *in*] R *om.* *on*] and B.

121. *in dolore*] dolorem R. *&c.*] RB  
*om.*

123. *For*] And W. *seem*] sem B.  
*an*] þe CB.

125. *caymes*] eaym R. *ne*] nor W.

126. *saucoure*] lorde CB.

127. *his*] her B.

128, 129. CB *have one long line*—

Til god saide for wrathe · þat I maked  
man me a-thynkes.

128. *for*] wiþ O.

129. *now*] W *om.* *athynketh*] for-

þynkeþ W ; þinketh R.

130. *come*] somme C ; sente B.

131. *of* (2)] CB *om.*

132. *self*] folk B. *three*] þre (*not  
printed*) W ; B *om.*

134. [þe W] LCROB *om.* Crowley  
*retains it.* *ywasshen*] Iwasted R.

¶ Bestes þat now ben · shulle banne þe tyme, 136 **119**  
 þat euere þat cursed caym · come on þis erthe ;  
 Alle shal deye for his dedes · bi dales and bi hulles,  
 And þe foules þat fleeghen · for[th] with other bestes,  
 Excepte oneliche · of eche kynde a couple, 140  
 þat in þi shyngled shippe · shul ben ysaued.  
 Here abouzt[e] þe barne · þe belysres gultes,  
 And alle for her forfadres · þei ferden þe worse.  
 þe gospel is here-ageine · in o degre, I fynde, 144

*Filius non portabit iniquitatem patris, & pater non portabit iniquitatem filii, &c.* † Ezek. xviii. 20.

¶ Ac I fynde, if þe fader · be false and a shrewe,  
 þat somdel þe sone · shal haue þe sires tacches. 146  
 ¶ Impe on an ellerne · and if þine apple be swete,  
 Moche merueile me þynketh · & more of a schrewe,  
 þat bryngeth forth any barne · but if he be þe same,  
 And haue a sauoure after þe sire · selde seestow other ;

*Numquam [colligimus] de spinis vuas, nec de* † Mat. vii. 16.  
*tributis fycus.*

And þus þourw cursed caym · cam care vppon erthe ;  
 And al for þei wrouzt wedlokes · aȝein goddis wille.  
 For-þi haue þei maugre for here mariages · þat marye so  
 her childeren ; 153  
 For some, as I se now · soth for to telle,  
 For coueitise of catel · vnkyndeliche ben wedded.  
 As careful concepcioun · cometh of suche mariages, 156

[Fol. 37.]  
 This was all  
 because Seth's  
 seed married  
 Cain's.

Now, some marry  
 for money,

138. *bi* (2) R om.

139. *forth*] so in CWROB; L has for, but the line is marked.

140. *of eche kynde*] of ich a kynde & O. *eche*] on R.

141. *þi*] þis R.

142. *abouzte*] WCRB; bouzte O; abouzt L. *belysres*] belysre C. *gultes*] gultes WCRB.

143. *forfadres*] fadres W. *her forfadres*] his sake B.

144. *ꝯ—portabit*] nec pater R. *portabit iniq; filii, &c*] &c C; portabit, &c O; B om.

146. *þe*] of þe B. *sires*] sire CR.

147. *on*] in C; vpon R. *ellerne*] Ellere W; ellern tree B. *if*] B om.

148. *þynketh*] thynk C.

150. [*colligimus* COB] colligitur LWR. *vuas*] vua W.

152. *wedlokes*] wedlok COB.

153. *For-þi—þei*] For þei haue þe B. *for*] of W. *for—mariages*] COB om. *marye so*] so marien CO; marien B. *þat—so*] as men marien now R.

156. *As*] Ac OB; And C. *of suche*] to þat R.

As bifel of þe folke · þat I bifore of tolde.

¶ For goode shulde wedde goode · þough hij no good  
hadde ;

† Jo. xiv. 6 ;

‘ I am *via & veritas*,’ seith cryst · ‘ I may auauunce alle.’

or a young wench  
is wedded to an  
old feeble man.

¶ It is an oncomely couple · bi cryst, as me þinketh,  
To 3yuen a 3onge wenche · to an olde feble, 161  
Or wedden any widwe · for welth of hir goodis,  
þat neuere shal barne bere · but if it be in arnes !

120

Many, since the  
pestilence, have  
married ill,

Many a peire sithen þe pestilence · han plizt hem to-  
gideres ; 164

þe fruit þat þei brynge forth · aren foule wordes,  
In ialousye ioyeles · and ianglyng on bedde.

and have no  
children but  
strife.

Haue þei no children but cheste · an choppyng hem  
bitwene.

Though they go  
to Dumow,  
they never fetch  
the fitch.

¶ And þough þei don hem to donmowe · but if þe  
deuel help 168

To folwen after þe flicche · fecche þei it neuere ;  
And but þei bothe be forsworne · þat bacoun þei tyne.

Then wed not for  
money, but marry  
well, and God  
bless you !

¶ For-þi I conseille alle crystene · coueite nouzt be  
wedded

For coueitise of catel · ne of kynrede riche. 172

Ac maydenes and maydenes · macche 3ow togideres,  
Widwes and widwers · worcheth þe same.

157. þe] þat R.

158, 159. R omits.

158. For] Ther-fore W. *The gloss* i.  
boni means id est, boni. hij] þei  
WO ; huy B.

159. I] For I CB. seith] seid B.  
seith cryst] O om. alle] yow alle W.  
I—alle] as me þynkeþ B.

160, 161. B transposes these lines.

160. an oncomely] an vnkoufe C ;  
a woudur B. cryst] Ihesus R.

161. feble] febil man B.

162. widwe] wodewe W.

163. if] B om. in] in hir W.

164. þe] B om.

165. þei] W om.

166. R omits. ioyeles] geolous B.  
on bedde] abedde CB.

167. cheste] cheeste W ; chydes C ;  
iangelynge R. choppyng] clappyng  
W ; gaying (sic) R.

168—170. R has—

And for to go to dummowe · to  
fecche hom here bakon,

And whan þei haue brouzt it hom ·  
to whom is best to selle it,

And þus þei lyuen in coueytise · þe  
deuel and þei to-gyderes.

170. And] B om.

171. crystene] cristen men B. be]  
to be R.

172. catel] no catel B. kynrede]  
no kynrede B.

173. macche] make R.

174. Widwes—widwers] Wydeweres  
and wydewes R.

For no londes, but for loue · loke ȝe be wedded,  
 And þanne gete ȝe þe grace of god · and good ynogh to  
 lyue with. 176

¶ And euery maner seculer · þat may nouȝt continue, † It is better to  
 Wysly go wedde · and war hym fro synne; marry than burn.  
 For leccherye in likyng · is lymeȝerde of helle.

Whiles þow art ȝonge · and þi wepne kene, 180  
 Wreke þe with wyuyng · ȝif þow [wilt] ben excused.

*Dum sis vir fortis · ne des tua robora scortis,*  
*Scribitur in portis · meretrix est ianuæ mortis.*

¶ Whan ȝe haue wyued, bewar · and worcheth in † Observe right  
 tyme; seasons. 184

Nouȝt as Adam & Eue · whan caym was engendred.

For in vntyme, trewli · bitwene man & womman,

Ne shulde no bourde on bedde be; · but if þei bothe  
 were clene None but the  
 pure should live  
 together.

Bothe of lyf and of soule · and in parfyte charitee, 188

þat ilke derne dede · do noman ne sholde.

And if þei leden þus her lyf · it [likeþ] god almiȝti; [Fol. 37 b.]

For he made wedloke firste · and him-self it seide;

*Bonum est vt vnusquisque vxorem suam habeat,* † 1 Cor. vii. 2. **121**  
*propter fornicacionem.*

¶ And þei þat oþergatis ben geten · for gedelynges ben † Bastards are  
 holden, commonly false,  
 liars, ungracious,  
 and wasters. 192

As false folke fondelynges · faitoures and lyars;

Vngracious to gete goode · or loue of þe poeple,

Wandren and wasten · what þei cacche mowe.

175. *londes*] *laudes* (for *landes*) C.  
 ȝe] þat ȝe R.

176. *þe*] R *om.*

177—185. R *omits.*

177. *continue*] *contene* O; *con-*  
*teyne* B.

178. *go*] to B.

179. *likyng*] *lokyng* COB.

181. *Wreke*] *Werke* O. [*wilt* O]  
 wolt WCB; wil L. *Dum*] *Cum* CB.

186. *For*] And R. *in vntyme*] *vn-*  
*vnite* (!) CB.

187. *bourde*] *berde* R. *on bedde*] *a-bedde* R; on (*printed* or) *bedde* W.  
*bothe*] CB *om.*

188. *Bothe*] R *om.* and] I *really*  
*has* & and, *evidently by mistake.*

189. *ne*] R *om.*

190. *And*] But CB. *leden*] *ledden*  
 R. [*likeþ* WOB] *likes* C; *liked* LR.

191. *propter, ꝑe.*] R *om.*

193. *As*] And RB.

195. *þei*] þe C.

Aȝeines dowel þei don yuel · and þe deuēl serue, 196  
 And after her deth-day · shulle dwelle with þe same,  
 But god gyue hem *grace* here · hem-self to amende.

† Thus, Do-well  
 is, to do lawfully;  
 Do-bet, to love all  
 men; Do-best,  
 to help all.

¶ Dowel, my frende, is · to don as lawe tebeth,  
 To loue þi frende and þi foo · leue me, þat is dobet.  
 To ȝiuen and to ȝemen · bothe ȝonge and olde, 201  
 To helen and to helpen · is dobest of alle.

Or, Do-well is,  
 to fear God; Do-  
 bet, to suffer;  
 Do-best, to be  
 lowly of heart.

¶ And dowel is to drede god · and dobet to suffre,  
 And so cometh dobest of bothe · and bryngeth adoun  
 þe mody, 204  
 And þat is wikked wille · þat many werke shendeth,  
 And dryueth away dowel · þorough dedliche synnes.”

197. *shulle dwelle*] soule dwelles 203. *dowel is*] þus is dowel R. *to*  
 C; þe soule shal dwelle B. *same*] (2)] is to COB.

198. *hem*] hym C.

199—202. R *omits*.

199. *to*] CB *om.* *as*] as þe COB.

205. *werke*] a werk W; werkes R.

206. *dryueth*] dryue C. *þorough*]  
 with CB. *synnes*] syne COB.

## PASSUS X. (DO-WEL II.)

*Passus decimus de visione, & secundus [de] dowel.*

**T**Hanne hadde witte a wyf · was hote dame studye,  
 þat lene was of lere · and of liche bothe.

**122**  
 Then had Wit a  
 wife named  
 Studye.

She was wonderly wroth · þat witte me þus tauzte,

And al starynge dame studye · sternelich seyde,

**4** who sternly said  
 to him,  
 "Thou art wise  
 to teach fools!

"Wel artow wyse," quod she to witte · "any wysdomes  
 to telle

To flatereres or to folis · þat frantyk ben of wittes!"

And blamed hym and banned hym · and badde hym be  
 style,

With suche wise wordes · to wissen any sottes ; **8**

And seyde, "*noli mittere*, man · margerye perlis

Cast not pearls  
 before swine  
 (Mat. vii. 6).

Amanges hogges, þat han · hawes at wille.

þei don but dryuele þer-on · draffe were hem leuere

þan al þe precious perre · þat in paradys wexeth. **12**

I sey it bi suche," quod she · "þat sheweth bi her  
 werkes,

I speak of those  
 that prefer  
 riches to wisdom.

þat hem were leuer londe · and lordship on erthe,

Or ricchesse or rentis · and reste at her wille,

TITLE. &—*dowel*] vt supra CR; CRB. *wittes*] wytte B.  
 & tercius de dowel B; et *ijus* de 9. *man*] CB *om.* *margerye*]  
 Dowel W; & *ijus* dowel L. O *has* magerie RB.

*merely* Passus decimus.

1. *hote*] called R. *was*] þat was B.

2. *lere*] lire CB. *liche*] lichee R.

3. *wroth*] wrouzt B.

4. *seyde*] loked W.

6. *frantyk*] frenetike WO; frentik

12. *þe*] C *om.* *perre*] perree W;  
 pere B. *wexeth*] vexes (*sic*) C.

14. *on erthe*] here R.

15. *Or*] Other R; Of B. *or*] other  
 R; and of B.

## 123

Wisdom is worth  
nothing now-a-  
days, unless it is  
carded with  
Covetousness,  
like wool.

[Fol. 38.]

† Wicked men  
have this world's  
goods.

(† Job xxi. 7);  
Jer. xii. 1.

† Ps. lxxii. 12  
(Vulg.).

† Ps. x. 4  
(Vulg.).

† Jugglers and  
tale-tellers get  
most wealth.

þan alle þe sothe sawes · þat salamon seyde euere. 16  
¶ Wisdome and witte now · is nouȝt worth a carse,  
But if it be carded with coueytise · as clotheres kemben  
here wolle.

Who-so can contreue deceytes · an conspire wronges,  
And lede forth a loue-day · to latte with treuthe; 20  
He þat suche craftes can · to conseilie is clepid;  
þei lede lordes with lesynges · and bilyeth treuthe.

¶ Iob þe gentel · in his gestes witnesseth,  
þat wikked men, þei welden · þe welthe of þis worlde,  
And þat þei ben lordes of eche a londe · þat oute of  
lawe libbeth; 25

*Quare impij viuunt? bene est omnibus, qui  
preuaricantur & inique agunt?*

¶ þe saunter seyth þe same · bi suche þat don ille,  
*Ecce ipsi peccatores habundantes; in seculo  
optinuerunt diuicias.*

‘Lo!’ seith holy letterrure · ‘whiche lordes beth þis  
shrewes!’

þilke þat god moste gnyeth · leste good þei deleth, 28  
And moste vnkynde to þe comune · þat moste catel  
weldeth;

*Que perfecisti, destruxerunt; iustus autem [quid  
fecit?]*

Harlotes for her harlotrye · may haue of her godis,  
And iaperes and iogeloures · and iangelers of gestes.

¶ Ac he þat hath holy writte · ay in his mouth, 32  
And can telle of Tobye · and of þe twelue apostles,

17. *carse*] *so in R*; kerse WCOB.  
18. *it be*] he B. *kemben*] *kemen*  
B. *here*] CROB *om.*  
19. *can contreue*] *kan troue* C. *de-*  
*ceytes*] *desaytise* C.  
20. *to—with*] and letten þe R.  
22. *lordes*] *lordynges* C.  
23. *gestes*] *gestes* · *gretely* COB.  
24. *þei*] COB *om.*  
25. *of—a*] of ech COB; in *veh a R.*  
*lawe*] C *om.* (!).

26. *habundantes*] & *habundantes*  
O. *diuicias*] R *om.*  
27. *holy*] þe holy O. *letterrure*]  
*lecture* B. *lordes*] W *om.*  
28. *moste gnyeth*] *most greueth* CR;  
*gyueþ moost* W; *moost good gyueþ* O.  
29. [*quid fecit*] *supplied from* The  
Vulgate; *not in the MSS.*  
32. *In the margin of O is Nota*:  
*how good carpyng is not loued.*  
33. *þe*] W *om.*

Or prechen of þe penaunce · þat pilat wrouȝt

To Ihesu þe gentil · þat Iewes to-drowe :—

Litel is he loued · þat suche a lessoun scheweth, 36 Teachers of holy things are now

Or daunted or drawe forth · I do it on god hym-self ! little loved.

¶ But þo þat feynen hem folis · and with faityng libbeth,

Aȝein þe lawe of owre lorde · and lyen on hem-selue,

Spitten and spewen · and speke foule wordes, 40 † Lying jesters know little about music.

Drynken and dryuelen · and do men for to gape,

Lickne men and lye on hem · þat leneth hem no ȝiftes,

þei conne namore mynstraleye · ne musyke, men to glade,

Than Munde þe mylnere · of *multa fecit deus!* 44

Ne were here vyle harlotrye · haue god my treuthe, † They depend on their ribaldry.

Shulde neuere Kyng ne kniȝt · ne chanoun of seynt

Poules

ȝyue hem to her ȝeresȝiue · þe ȝifte of a grote !

¶ Ae murthe and mynstraleye · amonges men is nouthe But minstrelsy and mirth are now nothing but ribald tales.

Leccherye, losengerye · and loseles tales; 49

Glotonye and grete othes · þis murthe þei louieth.

¶ Ae if þei carpen of cryst · þis clerkis and þis lewed, 121 If they speak of Christ, it is to make a mock of the Trinity.

Atte mete in her murthes · whan mynstralles ben

stille, 52

þanne telleth þei of þe trinite · a tale other tweyne,

And bringen forth a balled resoun · and taken Bernard

to witnesse,

And putten forth a *presumpsioun* · to preue þe sothe.

34. þe] COB om. pilat] Pilat C. wikkedly W.

36. Litel] Ful litel B.

37. daunted—drame] daunteþ or drawiþ B. god] B om.

38. þo] þei B; þoo W.

39. lorde] C omits, by mistake.

41. dryuelen] drauelen O. for] for (printed fer) W. gape] Iape B.

42. Lickne] Likkene RO; Lykene C. ȝiftes] gestes CB.

44. mylnere] mulenere R; melner

46. chanoun] canoun R.

47. ȝeresȝiue] yeresȝyfte C. ȝifte] worth R; value O.

49. Leccherye] But lecherie B. losengerye] and losengerie RCOB.

50. þei] R om.

51. carpen] harpen C.

52. her] COB om. murthes] murþe W.

53. tweyne] tweye W; tweyen O.

54. forth] O om.

Thus they talk  
at the daies, and  
[Fol. 38 b.]  
are full;

but the needy  
man is driven  
from their gate  
like a dog.

Were not the poor  
kinder than the  
rich, many would  
want a meal.

See what is said in  
Ps. cxxxi. 6  
(Vulg.).

**125**  
Clerks have  
Christ in the  
mouth, but poor  
men in the heart.

þus þei dryuele at her deyse · þe deite to knowe, 56  
And gnawen god with þe gorge · whan her gutte is  
fulle.

¶ Ac þe careful may crye · and carpen atte zate,  
Bothe afyngred and a-thurst · and for chele quake;  
Is none to nyemen hym nere · his noye to amende, 60  
But [hoen] on hym as an hounde · and hoten hym go  
þennes.

Litel loueth he þat lorde · þat lent hym al þat blisse,  
þat þus parteth with þe pore · a parcel whan hym  
nedeth.

Ne were mercy in mene men · more þan in riche, 64  
Mendinant; meteles · miȝte go to bedde.  
God is moche in þe gorge · of þise grete maystres,  
Ac amonges mene men · his mercy and his werkis;

And so seith þe sauter · I haue ysseye it ofte, 68  
*Ecce audiuimus eam in efrata, inuenimus eam  
in campis silue.*

Clerkes and other kynnes men · carpen of god faste,  
And haue [hym] moche in þe mouthe · ac mene men in  
herte. 70

¶ Freres and faitoures · han founde suche questiouns  
To plesse with proude men · sithen þe pestilence tyme,  
And prechen at saint poules · for pure enuye of clerkis,  
þat folke is nouȝte fermed in þe feith · ne fre of her  
goodes, 74

56. *deyse*] deys WCOB; dayes R.  
57. *gutte—fulle*] guttis is fulle (*sic*)  
C; guttis been fulle OB; guttes fullen  
W.

59. *afyngred*] a-fyngerd C; an-  
hungred O; a-hungred B. *a-thurst*]  
a-furst W; a-þrist O; a-thrust CB.  
*chele*] chelde C.

60. *Is*] Is þer WB. *noye*] nuye R;  
anoy W. *to*] R om.

61. [*hoen on*] so in R; heon on  
LC; howen on O; howlen on B;  
hunten W. In L, the line is marked

for correction.

63. *hym*] hem O.  
66. *gorge*] gorges R.  
67. *Ac*] And B.

68. *I*] Ich R. *ysseye*] seȝen WB;  
seyen O; seen C. *inuenimus*] &  
*inuenimus* CB. *eam* (2)] eum R.

69. *kynnes*] R om.

70. [*hym* WCROB] L om. þe] B  
om.

72. *sithen*] syn W; siþ O. þe] C  
om. *tyme*] R om.

74. *is*] been O. *feith*] fayit C

Ne sori for her synnes · so is pryde waxen  
 In religioun and in alle þe rewme · amonges riche &  
 pore, 76 † Pride has so in-  
 creased that  
 prayers have no  
 power.

þat preyeres haue no power · þe pestilence to lette.  
 And zette þe wrecches of þis worlde · is none ywar bi  
 other,

Ne for drede of þe deth · withdrawe nouzt her pryde,  
 Ne beth plentynous to þe pore · as pure charite wolde, † Men lack  
 charity.  
 But in gaynesse and in glotonye · for-glotten her goode  
 hem-selue, 81

And breken nouzte to þe beggar · as þe boke techeth,  
*Frangere esurienti panem tuum, &c.* † Isaiah lviii. 7.

And þe more he wynneth and welt · welthes & richesse,  
 And lordeth in londes · þe lasse good he deleth. 84

¶ Thobyte telleth 3ow nouzt so · take hede, 3e riche,  
 How þe boke bible · of hym bereth witnessse :  
*Si tibi sit copia, habundanter tribue; si autem* † Tobit iv. 9.  
*exiguum, illud impertiri stude libenter :-*

Who-so hath moche, spene manliche · so meneth  
 Thobie,

And who-so litel weldeth · reule him þer-after ; 88  
 For we haue no *lettre* of owre lyf · how longe it shal † Life is uncer-  
 tain.  
 dure.

Suche lessonnes lordes shulde · louie to here,

75. *is pryde*] pruyde is R. *waxen*] woxen RWB; waxen C.

76. *alle*] C om. *rewme*] Reme W.

77. *þe pestilence*] þis pestilences R. *Here R has two extra lines, belonging to the C-text.*

For god is def now a dayes · and deyneth his heres to opne,  
 þat gerles for here gyltes · he for-  
 grynt hem alle.

For deyneth *we should read* deyneth not.

78. *wrecches*] wrycches C.

79. *nouzt*] nozt of B.

81. *in* (2)] CB om. *for-glotten*] forglutten WCO; for-gutten B.

83. *welt*] weldiþ B. *richesse*] richesces RB.

84. *And*] Euere as he R. *And—londes*] And lord of leedis and londis B.

85. *hede, 3e*] he þe C (*sic*).

86. *bible*] of þe bibile C; of þe bible B. *hym*] hem CB. *sit copia*] copia sit COB. *illud*] COB om. *impertiri—libenter*] impertire libenter stude R.

87. *spene*] spende WO. *manliche*] muehe C. *meneth*] seiþ W. B is corrupt.

88. *And*] B om.

89. *dure*] endure B.

And how he myzte moste meyne · manliche fynde.

† Men should not seek out feasts,

¶ Nouzt to fare as a fitheler or a frere · for to seke festes, 92

Homelich at other mennes house[s] · and hatyten her owne.

Elyng is þe halle · vehe daye in þe wyke,

[Fol. 39.]

þere þe lorde ne þe lady · liketh nonzte to sytte.

† Now rich men eat in a private parlour instead of in hall.

Now hath vehe riche a reule · to eten bi hym-selue 96

In a pryue pa[r]loure · for pore mennes sake,

Or in a chambre with a chymneye · and leue þe chief halle,

þat was made for meles · men to eten Inne ;

And al to spare to spille · þat spende shal an other.

† I have heard men at the high table cavil against God,

¶ I haue yherde hiegh men · etyng atte table, 101

Carpen as þei clerkes were · of cryste and of his miȝtes,

And leyden fautes vppon þe fader · þat fourmed vs alle,

And carpen aȝeine clerkes · crabbed wordes ;—

asking why God let the serpent deceiue Eve ;

‘Whi wolde owre saueoure suffre · suche a worme in his blisse,

þat bigyled þe womman · and þe man after, 106

þorw whiche wyles and wordes · þei went[en] to helle,

And al her sede for here synne · þe same deth suffred ?

¶ Here lyeth ȝowre lore’ · þise lordes gynmeth dispute,

‘Of þat ȝe cleikes vs kenneth · of cryst by þe gospel ;

† Ezek. xviii. 20.

*Filius non portabit iniquitatem patris, &c.*

Whi shulde we þat now ben · for þe werkes of Adam

Roten and to-rende ? · resoun wolde it neuere ; 112

91. *he myzte*] þei myzton B. *meyne*] meynee W.

92. *Nouzt*] And nouzt C ; And how nozt B ; Ac not O. *or*] or as R. *for*] R om.

93. [*houses*] so in WCROB ; house L.

94. *Elyng*] Elenge WCOB. *þe*] þat B. *wyke*] weke RC.

95. *ne*] and COB. *to*] O om.

96. *rehe*] ech WB ; ich O ; elk (*sic*) C. *hymselfe*] hem-selue C.

98. *a* (1)] B om. *with*] by R.

100. *al*] O om. *to spille*] to spende W ; and to spille (*badly*) CB. *spende*] spene R ; spille W.

101. *yherde*] herd CRB.

103. *vppon*] on CB.

107. *wenten* CRB] wente W ; went L.

109. *þise*] þat þise O.

110. *ȝe*] þe WB. *patris*] R om.

112. *to-rende*] to-rene R ; rend CB ; *renten* O. *wolde*] walde RC. *portabit —suum*] honus suum portabit R.

*Vnusquisque portabit onus suum, &c.*'

† Gal. vi. 5.

Suche motyues þei moeue · þis maistres in her glorie,  
And maken men in mysbileue · þat muse moche on her  
wordes ;

The men who  
believe them,  
disbelieve.

¶ Ymaginatyf her-afterward · shal answe're to ȝow're  
purpos. 115

¶ Augustyne to suche argueres · he telleth hem þis teme,  
*Non plus sapere quam oportet.*

Augustine refers  
us to Rom. xii. 3.

Wilneth neuere to wite · whi þat god wolde  
Suffre Sathan · his sede to bigyle,

Ac bileue lelly · in þe lore of holicherche, 119  
And preye hym of pardoun · and penaunce in þi lyue,  
And for his moche mereye · to amende ȝow here.

**126**  
Believe and pray.

For alle þat wilneth to wyte · þe weyes of god almyȝty,  
I wolde his eye were in his ers · and his fynger after,  
þat euere wilneth to wite · whi þat god wolde 124

Evil be to him  
who wants to  
know God's ways.

Suffre sathan · his sede to bigile,

Or iudas to þe iuwes · ihesu bytraye.

Al was as þow wolde · lorde, yworschipped be þow,  
And al worth as þow wolte · what so we dispute ! 128

Praised be Thou,  
O God ! Thy will  
be done !

¶ And þo þat vseth þis hanelounes · to blende mennes  
wittes,

[† Wo to him]  
who wants to  
know Do-well  
from Do-bet !

What is dowel fro dobet · now def mete he worthe,  
(Sitthe he wilneth to wyte · whiche þei ben bothe),  
But if he lyue in þe lyf · þat longeth to dowel ; 132  
For I dar ben his bolde borgh · þat dobet wil he neuere,

[Fol. 39 b.]

113. *moeue*] moeuen B ; meuen O ;  
meue WR (*mispriated* mene).

115. *her-afterward*] here-after CB.  
*answe're*] answerie R. *ȝow're*] hir W.

116. *Augustyne*] Austyn WCRB.  
*he*] WCOB *om.* *hem*] WCOB *om.*  
*þis*] his O.

117. *wite*] wete B.

119. *Ac*] And B. *bileue*] bileueþ  
WB.

122—124. *þe weyes—to wite*] CB  
*omit.*

122. *weyes*] whyes O.

126. *to—iures*] þe Iew R.

127. *þow wolde*] þow woldest  
WCOB ; he wolde R. *ȝworschipped*]  
worschipped C. *þow*] þe W.

128. *al*] C *om.*

129. *hanelounes*] hanylounes *or*  
hauylounes C ; *written so as to re-*  
*semble hanelounes in L* ; hanylounes  
O ; haelons R ; hauylouns B.  
*blende*] blynde O.

130. *now*] þat W.

131. *Sitthe*] Siche B. *bothe*] alle R.

132. *lyff*] lyue RB.

133. *bolde*] R *om.* *he neuere*] be  
nere R.

þeigh dobest drawe on hym · day after other."

Wit, hearing  
Study so talk,  
was confounded,

¶ And whan þat witte was ywar · what dame studye  
tolde,

He bicome so confus · he couth nouȝte loke, 136

And as doumbe a[s] deth · and drowe hym arrere ;

¶ And for no carpyng I couth after · ne knelyng to þe  
grounde,

I myȝte gete no greyne · of his grete wittis, 139

and signed to me  
to beseech her.

But al laughyng he louted · and loked vppon studye,

In signe þat I shulde · biseche hir of grace.

**127**  
I [bowed] to  
Study, and asked  
her to teach me  
about Do-well.

¶ And whan I was war of his wille · to his wyf gan I  
loute,

And seyde, "mercy, madame · ȝowre man shal I  
worthe,

As longe as I lyue · bothe late & rathe, 144

Forto worche ȝowre wille · þe while my lyf dureth,

With þat ȝe kenne me kyndely · to knowe what is  
dowel."

She said she  
would recommend  
me to Clergy  
(Learning),

¶ "For þi mekenesse, man," quod she · "and for þi  
mylde speche, 147

I shal kenne þe to my cosyn · þat clergye is hoten.

whose wife was  
Scripture  
(Writing).

He hath wedded a wyf · with-Inne þis syx monethes,

Is sybbe to þe seuene artz · scripture is hir name.

þei two, as I hope · after my techyng,

Shullen wissen þe to dowel · I dar it vndertake." 152

¶ þanne was I also fayne · as foule of faire morwe,

And gladder þan þe gleman · þat golde hath to ȝifte,

And axed hir þe heighe weye · where þat clergye dwelte,

134. *þeigh—drawe*] *þei* don best  
þat drawn B.

135. *what*] how R.

136. *bicome—confus*] was so y-  
seufitid (y-seumfitid ?) B.

137. *as* (2)] as WCROB; a L.  
*deth*] deaf B. *and*] he B. *hym*] al  
B; C om.

142. B omits.

143. *worthe*] worþe OB; be C.

145. *Forto*] And forto R; For y

B. *dureth*] lastes C.

146. *kenne—kyndely*] *kendely* (*hy*  
*mistake*) R.

148. *clergye*] clergise R.

149. *monethes*] monethus R;  
monþes WB.

150. *Is*] þat is B. *þe*] W om.  
*artz*] ars RB; artes C.

152. *wissen*] wise R. *it*] wel R.

153. *also*] as R. *of*] on B.

155. *axed*] hasked R; asked W.

“And telle me some token,” quod I · “for tyme is þat  
I wende.” 156

¶ “Axe þe heighe waye,” quod she · “hennes to suffre-  
Bothe-wel-&-wo · 3if þat þow wolt lerne,  
And ryde forth by ricchesse · ac rest þow nauzt þerinne,  
For if þow couplest þe þer-with · to clergye comestow  
neuere. 160

“The way  
thither is through  
Suffer-weal-and-  
wo,  
passing by Riches  
and Lechery,

¶ And also þe likerouse launde · þat leecherye hatte,  
Leue hym on þi left halue · a large myle or more,  
Tyl þow come to a courte · kepe-wel-þi-tonge-  
Fro-lesynges-and-lither-speche · and-likerouse-drynkes.  
þanne shaltow se sobrete · and symplete-of-speche, 165  
þat eche wizte be in wille · his witte þe to shewe,

till thou come to  
called the court called  
Keep-thy-tongue.

And þus shaltow come to clergye · þat can many þinges.

Then shalt thou  
see Sobriety and  
Simplicity.

¶ Saye hym þis signe · I sette hym to scole, 168

And þat I [grete] wel his wyf · for I wrote hir many  
bokes,

Coming to Clergy,  
tell him it was I  
who put him to  
school.  
[Fol. 40.]

And sette hir to sapience · and to þe sauter glose.  
Logyke I lerned hir · and many other lawes,  
And alle þe musous in mu[si]ke · I made hir to  
knowe. 172

Say I taught his  
wife the Psalter  
and Wisdom,  
logic and music.

¶ Plato þe poete · I put hym fyrste to boke,  
Aristotle and other moo · to argue I tauzte.  
Grammer for gerles · I garte first wryte,  
And bette hem with a baleis · but if þei wolde lerne.  
Of alkinnes craftes · I contreued toles, 177

I taught Plato  
and Aristotle.

156. *I*] we R.

157. *she*] studye COB.

158. *þow wolt*] þat wold B (*wrongly*).

159. *ac*] but O; and C. *þow*] OB  
*om.*

160. *clergye*] cherche R.

161. *hatte*] hattes C; is hote R;  
hatteþ B.

162. *hym*] it WCOB. *or*] and CO.

164. *Fra*] For C.

165. *sobrete*] sobere C. *speche*]  
beryng R.

168. *Saye*] Telle B. *signe*] taken  
C; tokene B. *I*] þat y B.

169. [*grete* WCB] grette LRO.

170. *to*] B *om.* *glose*] glosed B.

172. *þe*] W *om.* *musous*] muy-  
sones R. *in*] of O. *musike*] muke  
*in* L, but marked for correction;  
musik WCROB. *I*] R *om.*

173. *hym*] W *om.* *fyrste*] B *om.*

174. *Aristotle*] so in WCRO;  
Arestotle L. *moo*] R *om.* *I*] I hem B.

175. *gerles*] gildire C (*a confusion*  
*between* g[erles] and [ch]ildire).  
*wryte*] to write W.

176. *hem*] hym RB. *baleis*] wande C.

177. *contreued*] controued C.

- I also taught  
masons the use of  
level and line. Of carpentrie, of kerueres · and compassed masouns,  
And lerned hem level and lyne · pough I loke  
dymme.
- But Theology has  
vexed me often ;  
musing on it only  
makes it mistier. ¶ Ae theologie hath tened me · ten score tymes, 180  
The more I muse þere-Inne · þe mistier it semeth,  
And þe depper I denyne · þe derker me it þinketh ;  
It is no science for sothe · forto sotyle Inne ;
- But for the love  
that is in it, it  
were a sorry  
thing. 129 A ful lethy þinge it were · zif þat loue nere. 184  
Ae for it let best by loue · I loue it þe better ;  
For þere þat loue is leder · ne lacked neuere grace.
- † Love truly, if  
Do-wel pleases  
you. Loke þow lone lelly · zif þe lyketh dowl ;  
For dobet and dobest · ben of loues kynne. 188  
¶ In other science it seyth · I [seigh] it in catoun,
- Cato (Dist. i. 26)  
says differently, *Qui simulat verbis, [nec] corde est fidus amicus,*  
*Tu quoque fac simile, sic ars deluditur arte.*  
Who-so gloseth as gylours don · go me to þe same, 192  
And so shaltow false folke · and faythlees bigyle,  
þis is catounes kennyng · to clerkes þat he lereth.
- but Theology bids  
us love Ae theologie teelth nouzt so · who-so taketh zeme,  
He kenneth vs þe contrarye · azein catones wordes ;  
For he bit vs be as bretheren · and bidde for owre  
enemys, 197  
And louen hem þat lyen on vs · and lene hem whan  
hem nedeth,  
and return good  
for evil ; And do good azeines yuel · god hym-self it hoteth,

178. *carpentrie*] capentrie C.179. *lerned*] keannede O.180. *Ac*] COB om.183. *science*] sentens C. *sotyle*]

sauztele R ; subtile C ; sutile B.

184. *A*] And O. *lethy*] loþ B ;  
lyght C.185. *Ac*] And COB. *let*] leteþ W ;lect R. *þe*] C om.186. *þere þat*] þat þere R. *ne*]  
þer W. *lacked neuere*] lakkes no C ;  
lakkeþ no OB.187. *Loke*] Loue R. *þe lyketh*]  
þow thenke R.188. *För*] And O.189. [*seigh* CWO] saye LB ; seye R.190. *simulat*] so in WCROB ;  
similat L. [*nec* COB] vel LW ; vel  
in R.191. *sie*] cum O. *deluditur*] di-  
luditur R ; dilluditur O.192. *go me to*] so in LRW ; do hem  
COC<sub>2</sub> ; don hem B.195. *zeme*] gome R.196. *Ile*] And COB.197. *bit*] bid C ; biddeþ WB. *as*]  
B om.199. *And*] And also CB. *hoteth*]  
biddes C. *habenus*] est R. *ad  
omnes*] R om.

*Dum tempus habemus, operemur bonum ad* † Gal. vi. 10.  
*omnes, maxime autem ad domesticos fidei.*

¶ Poule preched þe peple · þat parfitnesse loued, 200  
To do good for goddes loue · and gyuen men þat asked,  
And nameliche to suche · þat sueth owre bileue.

And alle þat lakketh vs or lyeth vs · owre lorde techeth † We must love  
vs to loue, our enemies.

And nouzt to greuen hem þat greueth vs · god hym-self  
for-badde it, 204

*Michi vindictam, & ego retribuam.*

† Rom. xii. 19.

For-þi loke þow louye · as longe as þow durest,  
For is no science vnder sonne · so souereyne for þe  
soule.

¶ Ac astronomye is an harde þynge · and yuel forto  
knowe,

Astronomy,  
geometry, and  
[Fol. 40 b.]  
geomancy are  
evil things,

Geometrie and geomesye · is ginful of speche ; 208  
Who-so thenketh werche with þo two · thryueth ful late.

For sorcerye is þe souereyne boke · þat to þe science  
longeth. and deal with  
sorcery.

¶ 3et ar þere fybieches in forceres · of fele mennes  
makynges, 211

Experimentz of alk[en]amyē · þe poeple to deceyue,  
If þow þinke to dowel · dele þer-with neuere.

Deal not with  
alchemy.

**130**

Alle þise science[s] I my-self · sotiled and ordeyned,  
And founded hem formest · folke to deceyue.

I invented these  
sciences to de-  
ceive men."

¶ Telle clergyē þise tokenes · and scripture after, 216

201. *asked*] asketh R; asken OB.  
202. *þat*] as W. *sueth*] scheweth R.  
203. *vs* (1)] R *om.* or *lyeth vs*] and lies vs C; & *lieþ* vs O; and *bilieþ* vs B; or *lyeþ* W. *owre lorde*] god COB.

204. *hym-self—it*] þat forbedes C; þat forbediþ O; þat for-bede B. *re-tribuam*] retribuam & CB.

206. *science*] conscience CO.

207. *an*] and C; Rom. *knowe*] Com.

208. *is*] so W. *ginful*] synful B.

209. *werche*] to worche B.

210. *boke*] boik B. *þe* (2)] þat B;

*þo* R. *science longeth*] sciences bi-  
longeþ W.

211. *fybieches*] fibiche C. *mennes*] mannys B; men C.

212. *alkenamye*] so in WC; alkene-  
mye O; alconomie R; alle kyn amyē  
B; alkamyē L.

213. *þinke*] þenkist B. *dele*] dele  
þou B.

214. *sciences*] so in WRB; science  
LO; sciens C.

215. *founded*] by-fond R.

216. *þise tokenes*] þis tokene W.  
*and*] and to R.

To conseille þe kyndely · to knowe what is dowel."

¶ I seide, "graunt mercy, madame" · and mekeliche  
hir grette,

So I went on till I  
met Clergy and  
his wife,

And went wiȝtlich away · with-oute more lettynge,  
And til I come to clergye · I couthe neuere stynte. 220  
And gret[te] þe good man · as studye me tauȝte,  
And afterwardes þe wyf · and worshiped hem bothe,  
And tolde hem þe tokenes · þat me tauȝte were.

who received me  
gladly.

Was neuere come vppon þis grounde · sith god made  
þe worlde, 224

Fairer vnder-fongen · ne frendeloker at ese,  
þan my-self sothly · sone so he wist  
þat I was of wittis hous · and with his wyf dame studye.

I said I was sent  
to learn about Do-  
well, Do-bet, and  
Do-best.

[131]  
† "First, believe  
the artikles of  
faith;

I seyde to hem sothely · þat sent was I þider, 228  
Dowel and dobet · and dobest to lerne.

¶ "It is a comune lyf," quod clergye · "on holycherche  
to bileue,

With alle þe artikles of þe feithe · þat falleth to be  
knowe.

And þat is to bileue lelly · bothe lered and lewed, 232  
On þe grete god · þat gynnyng had neuere,

† in three persons,  
and one God.

And on þe sothfaste sone · þat saued mankynde  
Fro þe dedly deth · and þe deueles power,  
þorwgh þe helpe of þe holy goste · þe whiche goste is  
of bothe; 236

Three [propre] persones · ac nouȝt in plurel noubre,  
For al is but on god · and eche is god hym-selue;

217. *To*] I COB. *to—is*] for to  
knowe R.

218. *graunt mercy*] gramerey B.  
*hir*] y here B.

219. *wiȝtlich away*] miȝteliche my  
wey R; wiȝthi a-weye B.

220. *til*] R om.

221. *grette*] *so in* WCRO; grett  
B; gret L. *man*] man wel CB.  
*studye*] þe gode wif R (*which is  
better*).

224. *Was*] Was þere B. *gome*]

*mane* C. *sith*] syn C; synnes R. *þe*]  
þis O.

225. *frendeloker*] frendloker CRB;  
frendelexer O; frendlier W.

227. *þat*] That (*printed* Than) W.  
*wyf*] C om.

228. *hem*] hym COB. *was I*] I  
was R.

235. *þe* (2)] W om.

237. [*propre* R] *wrongly omitted  
in* LWCOB. *ac*] and CR.

238. *eche*] elkon C.

*Deus pater, deus filius, deus spiritus sanctus ;*

God þe fader, god þe sone · god hologicoste of bothe,  
Maker of mankynde · and of bestes bothe. 240

¶ Austyn þe olde · here-of he made bokes, † Austyn wrote  
And hym-self ordeyned · to sadde vs in bileue. books about this.

Who was his autour? · alle þe foure euangelistes ;  
And cryst clepid hym-self so · þe ewangelistes bereth  
witnesses :— 244

*Ego in patre & pater in me est ; &, qui videt* † John xiv. 9, 10.  
*me, videt et patrem meum.*

Alle þe clerkes vnder cryst · ne couthe þis assoille,  
But þus it bilongeth to bileue · to lewed þat willen [Fol. 41.]  
dowel.

For had neuere freke fyne wytte · þe feyth to dispute,  
Ne man had no merite · myzte it ben yproued : 248 † The merit of  
*Fides non habet meritum, vbi humana ratio* Faith is in want  
*prebet experimentum.* of proof.

¶ þanne is dobet to suffre · for þi soules helth, † Do-bet is to  
Al þat þe boke bit · by holycherche techyng ; suffer.

And þat is—' man, bi þi miȝte · for mercies sake, 251  
Loke þow worche it in werke · þat þi worde sheweth ;  
Suche as þow semest in syȝte · be in assay y-founde ;

*Appare quod es, vel esto quod appares :* † Be what you  
And lat no body be · bi þi beryng bygyled, seem.

But be suche in þi soule · as þow semest with-oute.'  
¶ þanne is dobest to be bolde · to blame þe gyilty, 256 † Do-best is to be  
Sithenes þow seest þi-self · as in soule clene ; blame the guilty.

240. *Maker*] Makers C ; Napeles (!) R. *yproued*] ypreued W ; proued  
RB. *prebet experimentum*] &c R.

241. *he*] WCOB *om.*

242. *ordeyned*] ordeigned it CB.

243. *Who*] Who so B.

244. *euangelistes*] euangelist COB,  
*est*] R *om.* *videt me—meum*] me  
vidit, *patrem meum vidit* R. W  
*omits this Latin quotation.*

246. *it*] C *om.* *bilongeth*] longeth  
RO. *lewed*] men COB.

247. *For*] Ne B.

248. *Ne*] For O. *merite*] mercy

249. *þi*] þe W. *soules*] soule RCB.  
*helth*] sake COB.

250. *Al*] And B. *bit*] bides C.  
*cherche*] cherches W.

252. *þi*] þis R. *worde*] werke CB.

253. *yfounde*] founden O. *vel*]  
aut R.

254. *berying*] lernynge CB. *bygyled*]  
be bygiled R.

255. *be*] COB *om.*

256. *dobest*] dobet B.

Ac blame þow neuere body · and þow be blame-worthy :  
*Si culpāre velis · culpabilis esse cauebis,*  
*Dogma tuum sordet · cum te tua culpa remordet.* 260

God in þe gospel · grymly repreueth

Alle þat lakken any lyf · and lakkes han hem-selue :

† Mat. vii. 3.

*Quid consideras festucam in oculo fratris tui,*  
*trabem in oculo tuo [non vides ?]*

Why meustow þi mode · for a mote in þi brotheres eye,  
 Sithen a beam in þine owne · ablyndeth þi-selue ? 264

† Mat. vii. 5.

*Eice primo trabem de oculo tuo, &c.,*

Whiche letteth þe to loke · lasse other more.

† I advise every  
 blind buzzard to  
 amend himself.

¶ I rede eche a blynde bosarde · do bote to hym-selue ;  
 For abbotes and for prioures · and for alle manere prelates,  
 As parsones and parisshe prestes · þat preche shulde  
 and teche, 268

Alle manere men · to amenden by here myzte ;

† Priests should  
 practise what they  
 preach.

This tixte was tolde þow · to ben war, ar 3e tauzte,

þat 3e were suche as 3e seyde · to salue with othere.

For goddis worde wolde nouzt be loste · for þat worch-  
 eth euere, 272

If it auailed nouzt þe comune · it myzte auaille þow-  
 seluen.

† Yet God's will  
 is not done.

¶ Ac it semeth now sothly · to þe worldes syght,

þat goddes worde worcheth nauzte · on lered ne on  
 lewede,

260. *tuum*] tua B. *te*] B om.

261. *grymly*] greuously W.

262. *Quid*] Qui W. OB omit all  
 after *trabem*; C all after the second  
 in; non vides is in R only.

263. *meustow*] meues þow R;  
 mouestow C; meust þow OB; *printed*  
 menestow W. *brotheres*] brother R.

264. *Sithen*] Siþe R. *ablyndeth*]  
 blyndeth O; ablendeth R. *Eice*] so  
 in LWCROB. *de*] in W.

265. *Whiche*] Witt R.

266. *a*] B om.

267. *for* (2)] COB om. *for* (3)]  
 COB am. *manere*] manere of COB.

268. *As*] And C; Ac B. *parisshe*]

*parisshe* (*printed* parishes) W.  
*shulde*] schulle R.

269. *manere*] manere of COB. *by*]  
 be CR. *myzte*] myztes W.

270. *tolde*] I-told R (*better*). *war*]  
 y-war W; ware C. *ar*] er WCOB.

271. *seyde*] seye W. *to*] to  
 (*printed* So) W. *salue*] saue B.

272. *loste*] boste R; *altered* in L  
 from boste to loste.

273. *þow-seluen*] þoure-seluen R;  
 yow C; þow B.

274. *now*] no R. *þe*] R om. *worldes*]  
 wordis B.

275. *worde*] wordes R. *on* (2)]  
 CB om.

But in suche a manere as Marke · meneth in þe gospel,

*Dum cecus ducit cecum, ambo in foueam cadunt.* † Mat. xv. 14;

Lu. vi. 39.

¶ Lewed men may likne 3ow þus · þat þe beam lithe in  
3owre eyghen, 277

And þe festu is fallen · for 3owre defaute,

In alle manere men · þourgh mansed prestes.

þe bible bereth witesse · þat alle þe folke of israel

† Remember  
Hophni and  
Phineas (1 Sam.  
iv.),  
[Fol. 41 b.]

Byttre abouzte þe gultes · of two badde prestes, 281

Offyn and Fynes ; · for her coueytise,

*Archa dei* myshapped · and ely brake his nekke.

¶ For-þi, 3e corectoures, claweth her-on · and corecteth  
fyrst 3ow-seluen, 284

And þanne mowe 3e saufly seye · as dauid made þe  
sauter :

*Existimasti inique quod ero tui similis: arguam* † Ps. xlix. 21  
*te, & statuam contra faciem tuam.* (Vulg.).

¶ And þanne shal borel clerkes ben abasched · to blame  
3ow or to greue,

And carpen nouzte as þei carpen now · and calle 3ow  
doumbe houndes,

*Canes non valentes latrare,* † Dumb dogs ;  
Isaiah lvi. 10.

And drede to wratthe 3ow in any worde · 3owre werke-  
manship to lette, 288

And be prestiore at 3owre prayere · þan for a pounde  
of nobles ;

And al for 3owre holynesse · haue 3e þis in herte.

276. a] COB *om. foueam*] fouiam R.

277. *likne*] liken C ; likken O.  
þus] COB *om.*

279. *mased*] mased C ; mansed  
(*altered to mased*) B.

280. *alle*] al W (*omitted in printed  
copy*).

281. *Byttre*] Ful bitterli B.  
*abouzte*] bouzte COB. *gultes*] giltes  
WCO ; gilt B. *two*] þo two B.

282. *Offyn*] so in WCOR ; Offny  
B. *Fynes*] Fynes C ; fynes B.

283. *myshapped*] meskapud R ;  
myschappid B.

284. 3e] CB *om. claweth*] clawes C.  
*corecteth*] corectes C. *3ow-seluen*]  
youre-seluen COB.

285. *saufly*] safly WCO ; manliche  
R. *seye*] segge R. *made*] made in  
W. *tuam*] &c B.

286. *And*] COB *om. borel*] burel  
WR. *or—greue*] R *om. to* (2)] B *om.*

287. *carpen* (2)] do COB. *and*]  
ne W. *valentes*] volentes B.

289. *prestiore*] presteore R ; prest-  
ier CO ; prester W ; more preest B.

*prayere*] preyeres R. *for*] CB *om.*  
290. *al*] B *om.*

[¶ Amonges riȝtful religiouse · þis reule schulde be holde ;

[132] Gregory the pope says,

Gregorie þe grete clerke · and þe goed pope 292  
Of religioun þe reule · reherseth in his morales,  
And seyth it in ensauple · for þei schulde do þere-  
after,

as fish die out of water, so does Religion when out of a convent.'

' Whenne fisses failen þe flode · or þe fresche water,  
þei deyen for drouthe · whanne þei drie ligge ; 296  
Riȝt so, quod Gregorie · religioun roileth,  
Sterueth and stynketh · and steleth lordes almesses,  
þat oute of couent and cloystre · coueyten to libbe.'

† If heaven be on earth, it is in a cloister.

For if heuene be on þis erthe · and ese to any soule,  
It is in cloistere or in scole · be many skilles I fynde ;  
For in cloistre cometh [no] man · to chide ne to fiȝte,  
But alle is buxumnesse þere and bokes · to rede and to  
lerne.] 303

¶ In scole þere is scorne · but if a clerke wil lerne,  
And grete loue and lykyng · for eche of hem loueth  
other.

But now, Religion is a rider, and a buyer of land ;

Ac now is religioun a ryder · a rowmer bi stretes,  
A leder of louedayes · and a londe-bugger,  
A priker on a palfray · fro manere to manere, 308  
An heep of houndes at his ers · as he a lorde were.  
And but if his knaue knele · þat shal his cuppe  
brynge,

† and behaves like a great lord.

He loueth on hym and axeth hym · who tauȝte hym  
curteisye ?

† Lords ought not

Litel had lordes to done · to ȝyue londe fram her  
heires 312

- 291—303. *In R only ; cf. Text A and Text C. See the Critical Note.*  
297. *Gregorie] here miswritten Grigori ; but see l. 297. roileth] miswritten rolleth ; but see A xi. 206.*  
302. *[no] supplied from Text C ; R om.*  
304. *scorne] a scorn B. scorne—wil] skile · and scorne but ȝif he R.*  
306. *Ac] And CO. rowmer — stretes] Romere aboute W. 307. a] R om. bugger] bygger CO ; biere B. 309. An] And C. ers] ars B. 310. if] B om. his (2)] hym C ; hym þe OB. cuppe] coppe WC. 311. hym (2)] COB om. 312. done] so in RB ; doñ L ; doon WC ; do O ; see p. 170, l. 37.*

To Religious, þat haue no reuthe · þough it reyne on to give to monks.  
here auteres.

¶ In many places þer hij persones ben · be hem-self at  
ese,

Of þe pore haue þei no pite · and þat is her charite ;  
Ac þei leten hem as lordes · her londe lith so brode.

¶ Ac þere shal come a kyng · and confesse 3ow re- + But a king shall  
ligiuouses, 317 come and reform  
Religion.

And bete 3ow as þe bible telleth · for brekyng of 3owre  
reule,

And amende monyales · monkes and chanouns,  
And putten hem to her penaunce · *ad pristinum statum*  
*ire,* 320

And Barounes with Erles beten hem · þorough *beatus* † Ps. i. 6.  
*virres* techyng,

þat here barnes claymen · and blame 3ow foule :

*Hij in curribus, [et] hij in equis ; ipsi obligati* † Ps. xix. 8, 9  
*sunt, &c.* (Vulg.).

¶ And þanne Freres in here freitoure · shal fynden a  
keye

Of costantynes coffres · in which is þe catel 324  
þat Gregories god-children · han yuel dispended.

¶ And þanne shal þe abbot of Abyndoun · and alle † Then shall the  
[his] issu for euere receive a knock  
from the king ;

Haue a knobbe of a kyng · and incurable þe wounde.

¶ That þis worth soth, seke 3e · þat oft ouer-se þe bible :

313. *reuthe*] ryghte C.

314. *places*] place C. *þer*] or B.  
*hij*] þei WO ; thay C. *persones ben*] ben persons W. *þe*] be (*pr.* by) W.

315. *þe*] O *om.* *her*] his C ; hir pure R.

316. *Ac*] And COB. *londe lith*] londes Iyen W.

317. *religiouses*] religiouse O ; religiouus B.

318. *þe*] C *om.*

319. *monyales*] monial C.

320. *hem*] W *om.* *ad*] B *om.*

321. *with*] and COB. *beten*] biten R. *virres*] so in LWR ; vir-is B ; vir CO.

322. *Hiij*] so in the MSS. in both places, except that C has *Hijs* in the first case. [*et* WCROB] L *om.*

324. *coffres*] tresore COB.

325. *god-children*] gode childerne R.

326. *Abyndoun*] Abyngton C. [*his* WCROB] L *om.* *issu*] vssue R.

328. *þis*] is (*corruptly*) B. *þe*] 3oure B. *cedencium*] credencium CB. *insanabili*] insabili CRB.

[Fol. 42.]

† Isaiah xiv. 4, 5, 6.

*Quomodo cessavit exactor, quieuit tributum ;  
contrivit dominus baculum impiorum,  
et virgam dominancium cedencium plaga in-  
sanabili, &c.*

† Before that  
king comes, Cain  
will awake.

¶ Ac ar þat kyng come · cayme shal awake. 329  
Ac dowel shal dyngen hym adoune · and destruyen his  
myzte."

“þanne is dowel and dobet,” quod I · “*dominus* and  
kniȝthode.”

**133**

Kinghood and  
knight hood help  
not to heaven.

¶ “I nel nouȝt scorne,” quod scripture · “but if  
seryueynes lye ; 332

Kynghod ne knyȝthod · by nauȝt I can awayte,  
Helpeth nouȝt to heueneward · one heres ende,  
Ne ricchesse riȝt nouȝt · ne reaute of lordes.

Paul says the  
rich cannot win  
heaven (1 Tim.  
vi. 9).

¶ Poule preueth it impossible · riche men [to] haue  
heuene, 336

Salamon seith also · þat syluer is worst to louye :

† Ecclus. x. 10.

*Nichil iniquius quam amare peccuniam.*

And eaton kenneth vs to coueiten it · nauȝt but as  
nede techeth,

† Cato, Dist. iv. 4.

*Dilige denarium, set parce dilige formam.*

And patriarkes and prophetes · and poetes bothe 340  
Wryten to wissen vs · to wilne no ricchesse,

† Wise men all  
praise poverty.”

And preyseden pouerte with pacience ; · þe apostles  
bereth witnessse,

þat þei han heritage in heuene · and bi trewe riȝte,  
þere riche men no riȝte may clayme · but of reuthe and  
*grace.*” 344

“I deny it,” I  
said ; “I refer  
you to Peter”  
(Mark xvi. 16).

¶ “*Contra,*” quod I, “bi cryste · þat can I repreue,  
And preue it bi Peter · and bi poule bothe,

330. *Ac*] And COB ; But W. [*to* WOB] LRC *om.*  
*dyngen*] dygen C.

333. *ne*] & OB ; a C.

334. *heres*] heris WB.

335. *reaute*] Reautee W ; realte  
RB.

336. *it*] O *om.* *impossible*] so in  
R ; impossible O ; impossible WCO.

338. *it—techeth*] not but as it  
nediþ OB ; nouȝt · but as it nedes C.  
*as—techeth*] at pure nede R.

341. *wilne*] wille B.

344. *men*] man R. *no*] noȝt B.

*may*] mowen O ; CB *om.*

345. *repreue*] reherce CB.

þat is baptized beth sauf · be he riche or pore."

¶ "þat is *in extremis*," quod scripture · "amonges saracenes and iewes ; 3 8 "That refers to Saracens and Jews," said she.

þei mowen be saued so · and þat is owre byleue,  
þat an vncristene in þat cas · may crysten an hethen,  
And for his lele byleue · whan he þe lyf tyneth,  
Haue þe heritage of heuene · as any man crystene. 352

¶ Ac crysten men with-oute more · may nouzt come to heuene, "The rule for Christians is given in [† Col. iii. 1;]

For þat cryst for cristen men deyde · and confermed þe lawe,

þat who-so wolde and wylneth · with cryste to aryse,

*Si cum Christo surrexistis, &c.,*

He shulde louye & leue · and þe lawe fulfille. 356

þat is—'loue þi lorde god · leuest aboue alle, and in Lu. x. 27.

And after, alle crystene creatures · in comune, eche man other,'

And þus bilongeth to louye · þat leueth to be saued.

And but we do þus in dede · ar þe daye of dome, 360

I[t] shal bisitten vs ful soure · þe siluer þat we kepen, † We should not hoard silver or clothes.

And owre bakkes þat moth-eten be · and sen beggers go naked,

Or delyte in wynand wylde foule · and wote any in defaute.

For euery cristene creature · shulde be kynde til other,

And sithen hethen to helpe · in hope of amendement.

God hoteth bothe heigh and lowe · þat no man hurte

other, 366

347. CB omit. is] been O. beth sauf] been saued O. he] þei O.

348. saracenes] Sarzens W.

350. an (1) on R. þat] þis CB. hethen] haythen C.

351. his] is C.

354. men] man B. deyde] deyede RO; deide W; dede C; dide B.

355. surrexistis] resurexistis C; resurexisti B.

357. þi] þe B. þi—god] god þi lorde R. aboue alle] of alle thynges CB; aboue al þing O.

359. to (2)] W om.

360. ar] er O; or CB; at W.

361. [It WCROB] IL (line marked).

362. bakkes] glossed i. panni in L, and elopes in C; B has bakelopis. moth] mote R; motthis B. be] B om.

363. delyte] delite vs COB, and (1)] & in R. wote] wite W; woot O; wyten B.

365. CB omit.

366. B omits. hoteth] bedes C. bothe] W om.

134  
[Fol. 42 b.]  
Christians ought  
to help each  
other.

- And seith, 'slee nouzt þat semblable is · to myne owen liknesse,
- See Lu. xviii. 20." But if I sende þe sum tokne'; · and seith, *non mecaberis*,  
Is, slee nouzt, but suffre · and al for þe beste. 369
- Rom. xii. 19. [For, *Michi vindictam, & ego retribuam.*]  
' For I shal punysshem hem in purgatorie · or in þe putte  
of helle,  
Vche man for his mysdedes · but mercy it lette.' "
- † "This is a long lesson," said I. ¶ "þis is a longe lessoun," quod I · "and litel am I þe wyser ; 372  
Where dowel is, or dobet · derkelich 3e shewen ;  
Many tales 3e tellen · þat theologie lerneth ;  
And þat I man made was · and my name yentred  
In þe legende of lyf · longe er I were, 376  
Or elles vnwritten for somme wikkednesse · as holywrit wytnesseth,
- John iii. 13. *Nemo ascendit ad celum, nisi qui de celo descendit.*  
¶ I leue it wel," quod I, "bi owre lorde · and on no letterure bettere.
- Solomon, who wrote Wisdom— For Salamon þe sage · þat sapience tauzte,  
God gaf hym grace of witte · and alle his godes after,  
[To reule þe reume · and riche to make ;] 381  
He demed wel & wysely · as holy writte telleth.  
Aristotle & he · who wissed men bettere ?  
† who taught men better than he and Aristotle? Maistres þat of goddis mercy · techen men and prechen,  
Of here wordes þei wissen vs · for wisest as in here tyme,

367. *seith*] saide C. *semblable is*]  
is sembland C; is semblable B.

368. *seith*] sayde C. *mecaberis*] *so in* WCRB; *necaberis* L (*with n altered from m*); *necabis* O. *The mistake is the author's. See the Critical Note.*

369. *Is*] I COB. [*For—retribuam*]  
*in R only*; cf. Text A; and see l. 204.

370. *hem*] R om.

370, 371. *or in—mysdedes*] CB  
*omit.*

374. *theologie*] *teologie* R.

375. *I man*] y am B.

376. *lyf*] seyntis O.

377. *vnwriten*] *writen* O. *somme*]  
COB om. *writ*] C om. *wytnesseth*]  
telleth R; *witnesse* C. *descendit*]  
*miswritten* descendit *in* L.

378. *I*] And I R. *quod I*] R om.;  
CB *place it after* lorde.

380. *gaf*] gaf (*printed* gat) W.  
*his*] R om.

381. *In* R only. Cf. C-text.

385. *wisest*] *visest* C. *as*] R om.

And al holicherche · holdeth hem bothe ydampned !

¶ And if I shulde worke bi here werkes · to wynne me  
heuene,

387

þat for her werkes and witte · now wonyeth in pyne,  
þanne wrouzte I vnwysely · what-so euere 3e preche.

¶ Ac of fele witty in feith · litel ferly I haue,  
þough her goste be vngraciouse · god for to plese.

For many men on þis molde · more sette here hertis 392

In good þan in god · for-þi hem *grace* failleth,

At here moste myschief · whan þei shal lyf lete.

As Salamon dede, and such other · þat shewed gret  
wittes,

Ac her werkes, as holy wrytte seyth · was euere þe con-  
trarye.

396

For-þi wyse witted men · and wel ylettred clerkes,

As þei seyen hem-self · seldom done þer-after,

*Super cathedra* [m] *moysy, &c.*

¶ Ac I wene it worth of many · as was in Noes tyme,

þo he shope þat shippe · of shides and bordes ; 400

Was neuere wrizte saued þat wrouzt þer-on · ne oþer  
werkman elles,

† The flood des-  
troyed all but  
Noah.

But briddes and bestes · and þe blissed Noe,

And his wyf with his sones · and also here wyues ;

[Fol. 43.]

Of wriptes þat it wrouzte · was none of hem ysaued. 404

¶ God leue it fare nouzt so bi folke · þat þe feith techen

Of holicherche, þat he[r]berwe is · and goddes hous to  
saue,

† May Holy  
Church prove to  
be Noah's ark !

386. *at*] as C. *holdeth*] *holt* O.

387. *here*] his CB. *werkes*] *wekes*  
(*wrongly*) C.

388. *and*] and here R.

389. *wrouzte*] *wrouzte* (*printed*  
*wroughe*) W. *so*] B *om.*

390. *Ac*] And COB. *of*] O *om.*

392. *men*] man R. *hertis*] *herte* R.

394. *At here*] Ac þe OB; And þe  
C. *myschief*] *myscheef* is O. *lyf*]  
þe lif B.

395. *dede—other*] and other *dede* R.

396. *Ac*] And C. *werkes*] *wordes*

(*wrongly*) CB. *seyth*] R *om* (!). *was*]  
*so in* LCROB; were W.

397. *and*] ne R.

398. *selden*] *selde* W; *senden* (!)

C. *cathedram*] *so in* RO; *cathedra*  
LWCB.

399. *it*] I R.

400. *shope*] *shoop* W. *and*] and of  
WR.

404. COB *omit.* *wriptes*] *wightes*  
W. *ysaued*] *saued* R.

406. *herberwe* WCOB] *herberw* R;  
*heberwe* L; (*the line is marked*).

135  
Yet are they both  
in hell!  
Were I to do as  
they taught, and  
yet go to hell,  
I were unwise  
indeed.

† But many men  
rather seek goods  
than God.

Mat. xxiii. 2.  
[Cf. 132.]

And shelden vs fram shame þer-inne · as noes sluppe  
did bestes ;

And men þat maden it · amydde þe flode adreynten.  
þe eulorum of þis clause · curatoures is to mene, 409  
þat ben carpenteres holykirke to make · for crystes  
owne bestes,

† Ps. xxxv. 7  
(Vulg.).

*Homines & inmenta saluabis, domine, &c.*

[At domes-day þe [diluuye] worth · of deth and [fyr]  
at ones ;

For-þi I conseil 3ow clerkes · of holy cherche þe wriþtes,  
Wercheth 3e werkes as 3e seen I-write · lest 3e worth  
nauþt þer-inne.] 413

But the thief on  
the cross was  
saved, because he  
shrove him to  
Christ ;

¶ On gode fridaye I fynde · a feloun was ysaued,  
þat had lyued al his lyf · with lesynges and with theftes ;  
And for he biknewe on þe crosse · and to cryste sc[h]rof  
hym, 416

and so a  
robber escaped  
purgatory.

He was sonnere saued · þan seynt Iohan [þe] Baptiste,  
And or Adam or ysaye · or eny of þe prophetes,  
þat hadde yleine with Lueyfer · many longe 3eres.  
A robbere was yraunceouned · rather þan þei alle, 420  
With-uten any penaunce of purgatorie · to perpetuel  
blisse.

Who did worse  
than Mary  
Magdalen, or  
Paul ?

¶ þanne Marye Magdaleyne · what womman dede  
worse ?

Or who worse þan dauid · þat vries deth conspired ?  
Or Poule þe apostle · þat no pitee hadde, 424  
Moche crystene kynde · to kylle to deth ?

407. *shelden*] shilden W ; schilde  
RCOB. *noes*] Noe C.

408. *adreynten*] adrugend (*sic*) C.

409. *clause*] cause O. *curatoures*  
in curatoures R.

411—413. *In R only*. Cf. C-text.  
[*diluuye*] so in MS. Camb. Univ. Lib.  
Ff. 5. 35 ; R *wrongly has deluue*.  
[*fyr*] so in MS. Ff. ; R *has feer*.

414. *On gode*] For a goed R.  
*ysaued*] saued O.

415. *lyued*] I-lyued R.

416. *biknewe on*] beknede to W.  
*schrof WRB*] I *has scrof* ; *but the line*  
*is marked for correction* ; schroue CO.

417. *saued*] I-saued R ; y-saued W.  
[þe WCROB] L om.

418. *or* (1)] er COB ; ar R.

419. *yleine*] I-lyen R ; yleyen WC.

420. *yraunceouned*] raunceoned C ;  
raunsomed B.

422. *þanne*] And CB.

423. *þau*] dede þau R.

425. R *omits*.

And [now] ben þise as souereynes · wyth seyntes in  
 heuene, 426 Yet they are now  
in heaven.

þo þat wrouȝte wikkedlokest · in worlde þo þei were.

¶ And þo þat wisely wordeden · and wryten many bokes  
 Of witte and of wisdomē · with dampned soules wonye. † But many witty  
men are in hell.  
 þat salamon seith, I trowe be soth · and certeyne of vs  
 alle, 430

[*Sunt iusti atque sapientes · & opera eorum in manu dei sunt, &c. ;* † Eccles. ix. 1.

¶ þere aren witty and wel libbynge · ac her werkes ben  
 yhudde

In þe hondes of almiȝty god · and he wote þe sothe 432  
 Wher for loue a man worth allowed þere · and his lele  
 werkes,

Or elles for his yuel wille · & enuye of herte,  
 And be allowed as he lyued so ; · for bi lyther, men † By the evil,  
men know the  
good.  
 knoweth þe gode ;

¶ And wherby wote men whiche is whyte · if alle þinge  
 blake were, 436

And who were a gode man · but if þere were some  
 shrewe ?

For-þi lyue we forth with lither men · I leue fewe ben  
 gode.

For *quant oportet vident en place · yl ny ad que PATI,* † When necessity  
is upon us, we  
must suffer.  
 And he þat may al amende · haue mercy on vs alle ;

426. [*now* WCOB] LR *om.*; *but the line is marked in L. wyth*] and CO. *souereynes wyth*] souereyne B.

427. *wikkedlokest*] wikkedest COB. *in*] in þe B. *þo*] þe C.

428. *wordeden*] wrouȝten B.

429. *of* (2) B *om.* *wisdomē*] *wis-*  
*dames* O. *wonye*] *wonnes* C.

430. [*Sunt* R] *Sine* LCOW ; B *has*  
*Sint.*

431. *þere*] *Thay* C ; *þey* B. *witty*] *willy* CB (*corruptly*). *libbynge*] *likyng* B. *ac*] and COB. *yhudde*] *hid* O.

433. *Wher for*] *so in* LRO (*wher = whether*) ; *Wher-fore* WCB. *loue*]

W *om.* *a*] of B.

434. *ȝ*] and for W.

435. *as*] for R. *so*] *þere* O. *bi*] *by* þe W. *so—lyther*] *so lither* C ; *þere* as *liþen* O ; *so liþer* B. *þe*] CB *om.*

436. *wote*] *wite* C ; *witen* O ; *wiste* WB. *is*] *were* W.

438. *lither*] *oþere* W. *I—ben*] *thay ben few* C ; *I leue fewe* O ; *hij beþ fewe* B.

439. *quant*] *so in* LC ; *quant* W ; *quantz* R ; *whan* B. *eyent*] *vyn* R ; *comeþ* WCOB. *en*] in COB. *yl ny ad*] *il nad* CO. *yl—pati*] B *om.*

440. *on*] of COB.

† Ps. xiii. 1  
(Vulg.).

For sothest worde þat enere god seyde · was þo he  
seyde, *nemo bonus.* 441

**136**

Christ never  
commended  
[Fol. 43 b.]  
clergy (learning);  
see Mark xiii. 9,  
11,  
which says,  
'When ye are  
brought before  
kings,' &c.

¶ Clergye þo of crystes mouth · commended was it litel,  
For he seyde to seynt Peter · and to suche as he loued,  
*Dum steteritis ante Reges et presides, &c.;*

þough 3e come bifor kynges · and clerkes of þe lawe,  
Beth nouȝte abasched · for I shal be in ȝoure mouthes,  
And ȝyue ȝow witte at wille · and kunnyng to conclude  
Hem alle þat aȝeines ȝow · of crystenedome disputen.

† Cf. Ps. exviii. 46  
(Vulg.).

¶ Dauyd maketh mencion · he spake amonges kynges,  
And miȝte no kyng euercome hym · as bi kunnyng of  
speche. 449

But witte ne wisdom · wan neuere þe maystrye,  
Whan man was at myschief · with-oute þe more grace.

Augustine says  
(Confess. Lib. viii.  
c. 8),

¶ þe doughtiest doctour · and denynoure of þe trinitee,  
Was Augustyn þe olde · and heighest of þe foure, 453  
Sayde þus in a sarmoun · I seigh it writen ones,

*Ecce ipsi idioti rapiunt celum, ubi nos sapientes  
in inferno mergimur :*

And is to mene to englisshe men · more ne lasse,  
Aren none rather yrauȝshed · fro þe riȝte bylene 456  
þan ar þis cunnyng clerkes · þat conne many bokes ;

'Wise clerks are  
often sunk in hell,

whilst poor  
ploughmen and  
shepherds attain  
heaven.'

¶ Ne none sonner saued · ne sadder of bileue,  
þan plowmen and pastoures · & pore comune laboreres.  
Souteres and shep[h]erdes · suche lewed iottes 460

441. *For*] For þe B. *was*] COB

442. *þo*] O *om.* *it*] CB *om.*

443. *Dum*] Cun W.

445. *Beth*] Bees C. *abasched*] abassed C.

446. *ȝow*] B *om.* *at*] and WCOB. *and*] R *om.*

447. *of*] R *om.*

449. *And*] Al R. *as*] B *om.* *as bi*] and be C.

450. *ne*] and W. *wan*] ne wan CB. *þe*] B *om.*

452. *doughtiest*] douȝtirokest R.

453. *Augustyn*] Austyn WCROB. *þe olde*] y-holde B. *þe*] hem R.

454. *seigh*] sauȝ B. *idioti*] so in LRW; ydiote COB. *rapiunt*] rapiunt (printed irapiunt) W. *nos*] O *om.* *mergimur*] C *om.*

455. *to—men*] to men W; on English COB. *more*] to more COB. *ne*] and to COB. *lasse*] losse C.

456. *rather*] oþere raþer OCB.

457. *conne*] knowe R; kunnen B.

458. *saued*] I-saued R.

459. *pastoures*] portours B. *pore*] pouer R; oþere WCOB.

460. B *omits.* *shepherd*] so in W; *miswritten* sheperdes in L.

*suche*] and oþere W; and swich C. *iottes*] Iuttes W.

Perce[n] with a *pater-noster* · þe paleys of heuene,  
 And passen *purgatorie* penaunceles · at her hennes  
 party[n]ge,

by help of but one  
*Pater-noster* !

In-to þe blisse of paradys · for her pure byleue,  
 þat inparfitly here · knewe and eke lyued. 464

¶ þee men knowe clerkes · þat han cursed þe tyme,  
 þat euere þei couth or knewe more · þan *credo in deum*  
*patrem* ; † Clerks are often  
 sorry they ever  
 knew more than  
 that.

And princypaly her *pater-noster* · many a persone hath  
 wisshed. 467

¶ I se ensamples my-self · and so may many an other,  
 þat seruau[n]tes þat seruen lordes · selden falle in arrerage,  
 But þo þat kepen þe lordes catel · clerkes and reues. † Not common  
 servants, but  
 stewards, run in  
 arrears.

Riȝt so lewed men · & of litel knowynge,  
 Selden falle þei so foule · and so fer in synne, 472

As clerkes of holikirke · þat kepen crystes tresore,  
 þe which is mannes soule to saue · as god seith in þe  
 gospel :

† So fares it with  
 them that keep  
 Christ's treasure."

*Itē vos in vineam meam.*"

† Mat. xx. 4.

461. *Perce[n]* ] þat persen B.  
 462. *passen* ] passen þurgh B.  
 464. *inparfitly* ] in parfit lif B.  
*here* ] R om. *eke* ] R om.  
 465. *þat—cursed* ] cursen R.  
 466. *couth—knewe* ] kouþe on þe  
 book COB. *patrem* ] COB om.  
 467. *her* ] þe R. a ] C om. *wished* ]  
 I-wished R.

468. *In margin of O is Exemplum*  
*bonum. may many* ] mowen O. *an* ]  
 WCOB om.  
 469. *arrerage* ] rerage R ; areragis  
 O.  
 470. *But* ] But (*printed And*) W.  
*þe* ] R om.  
 471. *knowynge* ] kunnyng R.  
 472. *þei* ] R om.

## PASSUS XI. (DO-WEL III.)

*Passus xj<sup>us</sup>.*

[Compare this with the conclusion of the A-text; page 136\* of vol. i.]

**T**Hanne scripture scorned me · and a skile tolde,  
And lakked me in latyne · and liȝte by me she sette,

And seyde, “*multi multa sciunt, & seipos nesciunt.*”

[Fol. 44.]

Again I slept, and had a marvellous dream.

þo wepte I for wo · and wratth of her speche,  
And in a wynkyng wratth · wex I aslepe. 4

A merueillouse meteles · mette me þanne,  
þat I was rauished riȝt þere · and fortune me fette,  
And in-to þe londe of longyng · allone she me brouȝte,

Fortune bade me gaze in the mirror called the World.

And in a myroure þat hiȝt mydlerd · she mad me to biholde. 8

Sitthen she seyde to me · “here myȝtow se wondres,  
And knowe þat þow coueytest · and come þer-to, par aunter.”

TITLE. Passus vndecimus & (*sic*) supra C; Passus vndecimus W; Passus xus de vis. vt supra R; B adds & quartus de Dowel.

1. *scorned*] serued C.  
2. *in*] a R. *she*] he R; COB om.  
3. *wratth*] wrapþe O; sorwe R.  
4. *wynkyng*] wyndyng COB. *wratth*] wrath R; wrapþe W; wrapþe O; wratthe CB; wrath in Crowley. *wex I*] so in LCOB; weex I W; til I was R.

5. *A*] A ful B. *meteles*] sweuene COB. *me*] I me O. *mette—þanne*] me tydde to dreme R.

6. *þat*] For R. *and*] for R.

7. *And*] B om. *in-to*] to C. *allone*] & loue R.

8. *And*] O om. *mydlerd*] so in LCB; mydlerd O; myddelerd R; middelerþe W. *to*] COB om.

9. *Sitthen*] Sone W. *to*] vnto O.

10. *par aunter*] par aunter R; par- aduerture B.

¶ þanne hadde fortune folwyng hir · two faire damoy-  
seles,

*Concupiscencia-carnis* · men called þe elder mayde, 12

And coueytise-of-eyes · ycalled was þat oþer,  
Pryde-of-parfyte-lyuyng · pursued hem bothe,  
And badde me, for my contenance · acounte clergye  
lizte.

¶ *Concupiscencia-carnis* · colled me aboute þe nekke, 16

And seyde, “ þow art zonge and zepe · and hast zeres  
ynowe,

Forto lyue longe · and ladyes to louye ;

And in þis myroure þow myzte se · myrthes ful manye,  
þat leden þe wil to lykyng · al þi lyf tyme.” 20

¶ þe secoude seide þe same · “ I shal suwe þi wille ;

Til þow be a lorde and haue londe · leten þe I nelle,  
þat I ne shal folwe þi felawship · if fortune it lyke.”

“ He shal fynde me his frende ” · quod fortune þer-after ;

“ þe freke þat folwed my wille · failed neuere blisse.”

¶ Thanne was þere one þat hizte elde · þat heuy was of  
chere, 26

“ Man;” quod he, “ if I mete with þe · bi Marie of heuene,

þow shalt fynde fortune þe faille · at þi moste nede,

And *concupiscencia-carnis* · clene þe forsake.

Bitterliche shaltow banne þanne · bothe dayes and niztes

Coueytise-of-eyghe · þat euere þow hir knewe, 31

And pryde-of-parfyt-lyuyng · to moche peyl þe bryng.”

¶ “ 3ee, recche þe neuere,” quod recchelesnes · stode  
forth in ragged clothes,

“ Folwe forth þat fortune wole · þow hast wel fer til  
elde ;

Fortune had two  
damsels, named  
Lust-of-the-Flesh  
and Lust-of-the-  
Eyes.

Lust-of-the-Flesh  
embraced me, and  
bade me reioice in  
my youth.

The second  
maiden said the  
same.

But a man named  
Elde (Old Age)  
threatened me,  
and bade me be-  
ware.

“Never mind  
him,” quoth  
Recklessness.

11. *damoyseles*] damesels C.

12. *mayde*] B om.

13. *ycalled*] called CB.

19. *in*] R om. *myrthes*] myztes W.

20. *wil*] wole W; wyl C; wel R;  
wollen B.

22. *a*] B om.

25. *folwed*] folweþ CR; folwiþ B.

26. *of chere*] C om.

27. *mete*] mette B.

30. *bothe*] bothe þe C.

31. *hir*] it CO; hit B.

32. *of*] of þi R. *bryng*] brougt  
CB.

33. *stode*] stonde B.

34. *fer*] fare C. *til*] to RCB.

A man may stoupe tymes ynow · whan he shal tyne þe  
croune. 35

Man proposes,  
God disposes.

¶ “*Homo proponit,*’ quod a poete · and plato he hyght,  
‘And *deus disponit,*’ quod he · lat god done his wille.

If trewthe wil witnesse it be wel do · fortune to folwe,  
*Concupiscencia-carnis* · ne coueityse-of-eyes  
Ne shal nouzt grene þe gretly · ne bigyle þe, but þow  
wolt.” 40

¶ “Ȝee, farewel phippe!” quod fauntelte · and forth gan  
me drawe,

[Fol. 44 b.]

Til *concupiscencia-carnis* · acorded alle my werkes.

Old Age and  
Holiness  
mourned.

¶ “Allas, eye!” quod elde · and holynesse bothe,

“þat witte shal torne to wrecchednesse · for wille to  
haue his lykyng!” 44

Lust-of-the-Eyes  
comforted me;

¶ Coueityse-of-eyghes · confortd me anon after,

And folwed me fourty wynter · and a fyfte more,  
þat of dowel ne dobet · no deyntee me ne þouzte;

I had no lykyng, leue me if þe leste · of hem auzte to  
knowe. 48

¶ Coueityse-of-eyes · cam after in mynde

þan dowel or dobet · amonge my dedes alle.

Coueytise-of-eyes · confortd me ofte,

and bade me con-  
fess to a friar  
when I pleased.

And seyde, “haue no conscience · how þow come to  
gode; 52

Go confesse [þe] to sum frere · and shewe hym þi synnes.

For whiles fortune is þi frende · Freres wil þe louye,

35. *tymes*] tyme WOB. þe] B om.

36. *poete*] poete þo R.

40. *gretly*] graythly R. þe (2)] W  
om. þow wolt] if þow wolt þi-selue  
W.

41. *phippe*] fipp R. *quod*] so in  
W (but printed and). *forth*] he B.

42. *alle*] til alle R; wiþ alle B.

43. *eye*] eize W; eyghe C; eyze  
RB; ye O.

44. *wille*] wil W.

45—48. R omits.

45. *anon*] sone COB.

46. *folwed*] folow C. and—*fyfte*]

or fifty or O; or fifty and CB.

47. *no*] no (printed Ne) W. *ne* (2)]  
WCOB om. *þouzte*] thynke C.

48. *leue—leste*] ne no luste CB;  
ne lust O.

49. *mynde*] my mende R; my  
mynde O.

50. *þan*] And (!) C.

51. CB omit.

53. [þe RCB] þee WO; L om., but  
the line is marked.

54. *Freres*] sum frere R. *wil*] wol  
WC; wolen OB.

And fecche þe to her fraternite · and for þe biseke,  
 To her priour prouyncial · a pardoun forto haue, 56  
 And preyen for þe, pol bi pol · 3if þow be *pecuniosus*."

*Set pena pecuniaria non sufficit pro spiritualibus delictis.*

¶ By wissyng of þis wenche I wrouzte · here wordes I did as she bade,  
 were so swete,

Tyl I for3at 3outhe · and 3arn in-to elde.

And þanne was fortune my foo · for al hir faire biheste,  
 And pouerte pursued me · and put me lowe, 61

And þo fonde I þe Frere aferde · and flyttyng bothe, In my old age the  
 friar avoided me,

A3eines owre firste forward · for I seyde I nolde

Be buryed at her hous · but at my parisshe cherche. 64 because I wanted  
 to be buried at my  
 parish church.

For I herde onys · how conscience it tolde,

þat þere a man were crystened · by kynde he shulde be  
 buryed,

Or where he were parisshe · rizt þere he shulde be  
 grauen.

And for I seyde þus to freres · a fool þei me helden, 68

And loued me þe lasse · for my lele speche.

Ac 3et I cryed on my confessoure · þat helde hym-self I asked my con-  
 fessor why he  
 did so.

so kunnyng,

"By my feith, frere," quod I · "3e faren lyke þise  
 woweres, 71

þat wedde none wydwes · but forto welde here godis ;

Rizte so, by þe Rode · rouzte 3e neuere

Where my body were buryed · bi so 3e hadde my siluer.

Ich haue moche merneille of 3ow · and so hath many I said that I  
 wondered at him.

an other, 75

55. *fecche*] *fette* R. *biseke*] *by-*  
*seche* R.

57. *pecuniosus* WC] *pecuniosus* L;  
*pecuniosus* R; *peccunious* B. *Set*] R  
*om. pecuniaria* WCOB] *written* *pe-*  
*cuniaria in* L; *pecularia* R.

58. *wrouzte*] *dede* R.

59. *3arn*] *yarne* C; *3erne* O; *ran* R.

60. *biheste*] *speche* W.

62. *aferde*] *vntable* B. *flyttyng*]

*flettyng* C; *flityng* R.

64. *buryed*] *burial* (*sic*) B.

67. *were*] *were* a R.

70. *Ac*] *And* CB.

72. *welde*] *wedden* B. *godis*] *goolis*  
 WC; *goodis* B; *goed* R.

73. *3e*] *þei* B.

74. *buryed*] *y-buried* B. *my*] *the*  
 CB.

75. *an other*] *other* RCOB.

- Why 3owre couent coueyteth · to confesse and to burye,  
 Rather þan to baptise barnes · þat ben catekumelynges.  
 Baptizing and burying · bothe ben ful nedeful,  
 Ac moche more merytorie · me þynke[þ] it is to baptize.  
 For a baptized man may · as maistres telleth, 80  
 þorough contricioun come · to þe heigh heuene ;  
*Sola contricio [delet peccatum.]*
- [Fol. 45.] ¶ Ac a barne with-oute bapteme · may nouȝt so be  
 sauēd ;  
*Nisi quis renatus fuerit [ex aqua, &c. ;]*  
 Loke, 3e lettred men · whether I lye or do nouȝte.”
- Loyalty looked  
 upon me, And lewte loked on me · and I loured after. 84  
 “Wherfore lourestow?” quod lewte · and loked on me  
 harde,  
 “3if I durste,” quod I, “amonges men · þis meteles  
 auowe !”  
 and bade me  
 speak out, “3e, bi peter and bi poule,” quod he · “and take hem  
 bothe to witesse,  
*Non oderis fratres secreta in corde tuo, set  
 publice argue illos.”*
- ¶ “þei wol alleggen also,” quod I · “and by þe gospel  
 preuen, 88  
*Nolite iudicare quemquam.”*
- Mat. vii. 1. ¶ “And wher-of serueth lawe,” quod lewte · “if no lyf  
 vndertoke it,  
 Falsenesse ne faytrye ; · for sumwhat þe apostle seyde,  
*Non oderis fratrem.*
77. *catekumelynges*] cathecumyns do] COB om.  
 O; catekounelyns CB. 84. *lewte*] lewete þo R; leaute B.  
 78. *bothe*] hath CB. *ben*] beþ WR. *loked*] lok C.  
 79. *Ac*] And C. *þynkeþ*] so in WOR; þynkiþ B; thyngket C; þynke  
 L. *it*] CO om. 85. *lourestow*] lourest þou OB.  
 80. *as*] as þise W; as wel as B. *take*] so in LR; took WC; toke OB.  
 81. *to*] til R. [*delet peccatum*  
 COB] LWR *merely hare* &c. 86. *þis meteles*] þeise metelis O.  
 82. *a*] W om. *so*] CB om. *sauced*] *hem*] COB om. *publice*] puplice O.  
 ysaued R. [*ex aqua, &c* COB] LWR *om.* 88. *quemquam*] R adds &c.  
 83. *whether*] whetur R; wher C. 89. *lewte*] leute þanne R. *it*] *erased in O.*  
 CB. 90. *ne*] and CB. *apostle*] gospel

And in þe sauter also · seithe dauid þe prophete,  
*Existimasti inique quod ero tui similis, &c.*

It is *licitum* for lewed men · to segge þe sothe, 92  
 If hem lyketh and leste · eche a lawe it graunteth,  
 Excepte persones and prestes · and prelates of holy  
 cherche,

Ps. xlix. 21  
 (Vulg.).  
 "Even the  
 ignorant may  
 publish the truth."

It falleth nouȝte for þat folke · no tales to telle,  
 þough þe tale were trewe · and it touched synne. 96  
 ¶ Þinge þat al þe worlde wote · wherfore shuldestow  
 spare

[To] reden it in Retoryke · to arate dedly synne?  
 Ac be neuere more þe fyrste · þe defaute to blame;  
 þouȝe þow se yuel, sey it nouȝte fyrste · be sorye it nere  
 amended. 100

But be not the  
 first to find fault."

No þinge þat is pryue · publice þow it neuere,  
 Neyther for loue laude it nouȝt · ne lakke it for enuye;  
*Parum lauda, vitupera parcius."*

¶ "He seith sothe," quod scripture þo · and skipte an  
 heigh, & preched;

Scripture ap-  
 proved of this,

Ac þe matere þat she mened · if lewed men it knewe,  
 þe lasse, as I leue · louyen it þei wolde. 105

¶ This was her teme and her tyxte · I toke ful gode  
 hede;

‘*Multi* to a maungerye · and to þe mete were sompned,  
 And whan þe peple was plenere comen · þe porter vn-  
 pynned þe ȝate, 108

referring to Mat.  
 xxii. 1—14.

91. *also*] CB *om.*

92. *licitum*] leueful O; lefsum B.

93. *and*] or O. *a*] CB *om.*

94. *cherche*] cherches R.

95. *no*] none RB.

96. *uere*] be W. *touched*] touche W.

97. *þinge*] Ac þinge R. *shuldestow*] shuldyst þou OB.

98. [*To* W] And LCROB. *arate*] a-raten R.

99. *Ac*] And C. *þe* (2)] þe (*omitted in printed copy*) W.

100. *sey*] ne seie B. *amended*] amendite R.

101. *No*] And CO; A B. *publice*] puplice O; publice RB.

102. *laude*] preise W; lakke R; lab B. *parcius*] propicius, &c B.

103. *sothe*] þe sothe R. *þo*] CB *om.*

104. *Ac*] And C. *she*] he COB. *if*] R *om.* *knowe*] knowe R.

105. *After this line* R *has an extra line*—þe bileue þat lord · þat lettred men techeth; *where the first þat should be of oure.* Cf. Text C.

108. *plenere*] al plener B. *porter*] C *om.* *ȝate*] gate COB.

And plukked in *pauci* priueliche · and lete þe remenauzt  
go rowme !'

I pondered upon  
my election to  
grace.

¶ Al for tene of her tyxte · trembled myn herte,  
And in a were gan I waxe · and with my-self to dispute,  
Whether I were chosen or nouzt chosen ; · on holi-  
chereche I þouzte, 112

þat vnderfonge me atte fonte · for one of goddis chosen ;  
For cryste cleped vs alle · come if we wolde,  
Sarasenes and scismatikes · and so he dyd þe iewes,

Isa. lv. 1.

*O vos omnes scientes, venite, &c. ;*

[Fol. 45 b.]

And badde hem souke for synne · sauflly at his breste,  
And drynke bote for bale · brouke it who so myzte.

"Christ saves all  
men," said I.

¶ "þanne may alle crystene come," quod I · "and  
cleyme þere entre, 118

By þe blode þat he bouzte vs with · and þorough bap-  
tesme after,

Mk. xvi. 16.

*Qui crediderit & baptizatus fuerit, &c.*

For þough a crystene man coueyted · his crystenedome  
to reneye,

Riztfulliche to renye · no resoun it wolde. 121

"A churl must  
have his lord's  
leave to sell his  
goods ;

¶ For may no cherle chartre make · ne his catel selle,  
With-uten leue of his lorde · no lawe wil it graunte.  
Ac he may renne in arrerage · and rowme so fro home,  
And as a reneyed caityf · recchelesly gon aboute, 125  
Ac Resoun shal rekne with hym · [and rebuken hym at  
þe laste,

109. *rowme*] rome WRB ; roome  
CO.

110. *trembled*] tremeled R.

111. *a*] C om. *were*] weer W. *to*  
COB om.

112. *ehosen*] chose R (*in both  
places*). *chosen* (2)] COB om.

113. *vnderfonge*] vnder-fonged W ;  
vndir-fenge OB ; vnder-fange C. *atte*  
at þe RCB. *fonte*] funt B ; fount C.  
*one*] oen R. *ehosen*] chosne L ; *but  
see* l. 112.

115. *Sarasenes*] Sarzens W. *sei-  
cientes*] so in LRCOB ; sicientes W.

116. *sauflly*] saue R ; safly B.

117. *brouke*] broke C.

118. *may*] mowen O.

119. *þat*] R om. *with*] R om.

120. *reneye*] receyue R ; forsake C.

122. *eherle*] ehereche (!) C.

124. *arrerage*] arreragis B. *rowme  
so*] renne R.

125. *a reneyed*] he renneth R.  
*gon*] rennen W ; RCOB om.

126. *Ac*] And WC.

126, 127. *The last half of* l. 126,  
*and first half of* l. 127, *are found in  
R only. But see* Text C.

And conscience a-counte with hym] · and casten hym  
in arrerage,

And putten [hym] after in a prisone · in purgatorie to  
brenne, 128 but he can be imprisoned for debt."

For his arrerages rewarden hym þere · to þe daye of  
dome,

But if contricioun [wol] come · and crye, bi his lyue,  
Mercy for his mysdedes · with mouth or with herte."

¶ "þat is soth," seyde scripture · "may no synne  
lette Scripture bade me trust to God's mercy.

Mercy alle to amende · and mekenesse hir folwe, 133

For þey beth as owre bokes telleth · aboute goddes  
werkes,

*Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius."* Ps. cxliv. 9 (Vulg.).

¶ "þee! baw for bokes!" quod one · was broken oute  
of helle,

Hizte *troianus*, had ben a trewe knyzte · toke witnesse  
at a pope, 136 Trajan declares how he was released from hell.

How he was ded and dampned · to dwellen in pyne,  
For an vncristene creature; ·—"clerkis wyten þe sothe,  
þat al þe clergy vnder cryste · [ne] mihte me cracche  
fro helle,

But onliche loue and leaute · and my lawful domes.

¶ Gregorie wist þis wel · and wilned to my soule 141  
Sauacioun, for sothenesse · þat he seigh in my werkes. "Pope Gregory prayed for my release."

And, after þat he wepte · and wilned me were graunted

128. [hym WROB] LC om. a] eius (1)] O om.  
COR om. 135. 3ee] þhe O; Ye RC.  
129. For] And for R. arrerages] 136. Hizte] þat hizte B. had]  
arrerage CB; arerage O. to] rihte to & hadde B. a] þe COB.  
R; til B. 137. ded] dede R; deed B. pync]  
130. [wol WC] wole OB; miswrit- peyne COB.  
ten wel in LR, but the line, in L, is 138. wyten] wite W.  
marked for correction. lyue] leue R. 139. þe] C om. [re W] LCROB  
131. or] and W. om. me] hym B; C om.  
132. seyde] quod COB. may] þat 140. leaute] my leute R. and (2)]  
may B. of R.  
133. alle to] may al R. and] þat 141. wilned] wilneth COB.  
R. hir folwe] he folweth R. 142. for] for þe R. scigh in] seith  
134. beth] bee C. bokes] boke R. of R. in] CB om.

- Grace, wyth-outen any bede byddyng · his bone was  
vnderfongen, 144
- And I sauē, as ȝe may se · with-oute syngyng of masses ;  
By loue, and by leryng · of my lyuyng in treuthe,  
Brouȝte me fro bitter peyne · þere no biddyng myȝte.”
- “ See how this pagan was saved ! ” said Loyalty. ¶ “ Lo, ȝe lordes, what leute did · by an Emperoure of Rome, 148
- þat was an vncrystene creature · as clerkes fyndeth in bokes.
- Nouȝt þorw preyere of a pope · but for his pure treuthe Was þat sarasene sauē · as seynt Gregorie bereth witnesse.
- “ Ye lords, think upon Trajan. Wel ouȝte ȝe lordes, þat lawes kepe · þis lessoun to haue in mynde, 152
- And on *troianus* treuth to thenke · and do treuthe to þe peple.
- This matter is dark. [¶ þis matir is merke for mani of ȝow · ac, men of holy cherehe, þe legende *sanctorum* ȝow lereþ · more larger þan I ȝow telle !
- Ac þus lele loue · and lyuyng in treuthe 156
- Pulte oute of pyne · a paynym of rome.
- Blessed be Truth that so saved that Saracen ! I-blessed be treuthe · þat so brak helle ȝates,  
And sauē þe Sarasyn · fram Sathanas and his power,  
þere no elergie ne couthe · ne kunnyng of lawes. 160
- Loue and leute · is a lele science ;  
For þat is þe boke blessed · of blisse and of ioye :—  
God wrouȝt it and wrot hit · with his on fynger,  
And toke it moyses vpon þe mount · alle men to lere.]
- [Fol. 46.] ‘ Lawe with-outen loue,’ quod *troianus* · ‘ leye þere a bene, 165

144. *bede*] *bede* (*printed bene*) W.  
*In the margin of O is the note—Nota.*  
þe ground of trentalis.

145. *may*] *mowen O*; now R; W  
*om. syngyng*] *syngen C.*

146. *By*] *R om.*

148. *did*] *R om.*

149. *fyndeth*] *fynde CB.*

150. *In R, the word pope is erased,*  
*and in the margin (by a later hand)*

*is—in Episcopum Romanum.*

151. *sarasene*] *Sarsen W.*

152. *ȝe*] *þise B. to*] *COB om.*

154—164. *In R only.*

Or any science vnder sonne · þe seuene artz and alle,  
But if þei ben lerned for owre lordes loue · loste is alle  
þe tyme : '—

"Learning without love is profitless," said Trajan.

For no cause to cacche siluer þere-by · ne to be called a  
mayster, 168

But al for loue of owre lorde · and þe bet to loue þe  
peple.

For seynte Iohan seyde it · and soth aren his wordes,  
' *Qui non diligit, manet in morte*—

1 John iii. 14  
(Vulg.).

¶ Who so loueth nouzte, leue me · he lyueth in deth-  
deyinge '—

And þat alle manere men · enemys and frendes, 172  
Louen her eyther other · and lene hem as her-selue.

Men should love each other,

Who so leneth nouzte, he loueth nouzte · god wote þe  
sothe,

And comaundeth eche creature · to confourme hym to  
louye,

And souereynelyche pore poeple · and here ennemys  
after. 176

and especially their enemies and the poor.

For hem þat hateth vs · is owre meryte to louye,  
And pore peple to plesse ; · here prayeres may vs helpe.

For owre ioye and owre hele · Ihesu cryst of heuene,  
In a pore mannes apparaille · pursueth vs euere, 180

For Christ wears the poor man's apparel.

And loketh on vs in her liknesse · and þat with louely  
chere,

To knowen vs by owre kynde herte · and castyng of  
owre eyen,

167. B omits. *if*] WCRÖB om. *loste*] I-lost R.

169. *bet*] better C. *peple*] pope (!) B.

170. *aren*] arn WB.

171. *leue*] leueþ B. *deth*] deepþ B ; deep (printed deep) W.

173. *Louen*] Loue W. *lene*] so in O ; in other MSS., it is more like leue ; see the Critical Note. *hem*] hym C. *her-selue*] hem-selue W.

174. *Who*] For who R. *leneth*] leueþ O ; in other MSS., it looks like

leueþ. *god*] oure lorde R.

175. *And*] Crist W. *comaundeth*] comaunded R ; comande C. *eche*] ech a W ; vch R ; iche O ; ilk C. *confourme*] conformen W.

176. *pore*] þe pouere W. *here*] hir WC.

179. *For*] And W. *hele*] heele W ; euel (!) R. *Ihesu*] is ihesu R.

180. *pursueth*] pursued W.

181. B omits.

182. *eyen*] eighe C ; eiþe B ; ye O ; eyes R.

Wheþer we loue þe lordes here · byfor owre lorde of  
blisse ;

¶ And exciteth vs bi þe euangelye · þat, when we  
maken festes, 184

We shulde nouzte clepe owre kynne þer-to · ne none  
kynnes riche ;

Luke xiv. 12.

*' Cum facitis conuiuia, nolite inuitare amicos ;*

Ac calleth þe careful þer-to · þe croked and þe pore,  
For 3owre frendes wil feden 3ow · and fonde 3ow to quite  
3owre festyng and 3owre faire 3ifte ; · vche frende  
quyteth so other. 188

Christ repays  
what is given to  
the poor.

¶ Ac for þe pore I shal paye · and pure wel quyte her  
trauaille,

þat 3iueþ hem mete or moneye · and loueth hem for  
my sake.'

For þe best ben somme riche · and somme beggers and  
pore. 191

We are all  
brethren of one  
blood,

For alle are we crystes creatures · and of his coffres riche,  
And bretheren as of o blode · as wel beggares as erles.

For on caluarye of crystes blode · crystenedome gan  
sprynge,

viz. of the blood  
shed at Calvary.  
1 Pet. ii. 2.

And bloody bretheren we bycome þere · of o body ywonne,  
As *quasi modo geniti* · and gentil men vche one, 196

No beggere ne boye amonges vs · but if it synne made ;

John viii. 34.

*Qui facit peccatum, seruus est peccati, &c.*

¶ In þe olde lawe · as holy *loltre* telleth,

183. *Wheþer*] *miswritten* Wherþer  
in L. *owre*] þe W.

184. *euangelye*] euangeliste B.

185. *shulde*] shal C. *none kynnes*] none kyne R ; no kyn OB.

186. *Ac calleth*] And calles C.

187. *3owre*] oure C. *wil feden*] wolen fede RB ; wol fenden C. *fonde*] fonden R.

188. *festyng*] fastyng B. *3ifte*] 3ifte W ; 3iftes RO ; 3iftis B ; giftes C. *quyteth*] quit R.

189. CB *omit.* *pure*] puire R. *quyte*] quiten R.

190. *moneye*] mone R. *and*] or W. *After* l. 190 R *inserts an apparently spurious line*—

¶ *Almi3ty god hath made riche · men if he wolde.*

191. *For*] Ac for R.

192. *his*] CB *om.*

193. *And*] As R. *o*] oo W ; COB *om.* *wel*] O *om.*

194. *on*] at R.

195. *bycome*] bicome (*printed* bicomen) W. *o*] one R ; a CB.

198. *holy*] þe R. *telleth*] techþ B.

- Mennes sones · men called vs vchone,  
 Of adames issue and Eue · ay til god-man deyde; 200  
 And after his resurreccioun · *Redemptor* was his name,  
 And we his bretheren, þough hym ybouzt · bothe riche and pore. Both rich and poor are Christ's brethren.
- For-þi loue we as leue bretheren shal · and vche man laughe vp other, [Fol. 46 b.]
- And of þat eche man may forbere · amende þere it nedeth, 204
- And euery man helpe other · for hennes shal we alle;  
*Alter alterius onera portate.* Gal. vi. 2.
- And be we nouzte vnkynde of owre catel · ne of owre kunnyng neyther,
- For noet no man how neighe it is · to be ynome fro bothe. 207
- For-þi lakke no lyf other · þough he more latyne knowe, Let no man blame another overmuch.  
 Ne vnder-nym nouzte foule · for is none with-oute faute.
- For what euere clerkis carpe · of crystenedome or elles,  
 Cryst to a comune woman seyde · in comune at a feste,  
 þat *fides sua* shulde sauē hir · and saluen hir of alle synnes. Luke vii. 48. 212
- ¶ þanne is byleue a lele helpe · aboute logyke or lawe;  
 Of logyke ne of lawe · in *legenda sanctorum* Logie and law are of but small account.  
 Is litel allowaunce made · but if bileue hem helpe.  
 For it is ouerlonge ar logyke · any lessoun assoille, 216

199. *called*] callen WO; calliþ B.200. *man*] mand (*sie*) C. *deyde*] deyede R; deyed CB.202. *ybouzt*] y-bouzt (*printed* y-brought) W; bouzt OB; bought C.203. *loue*] lyue O. *bretheren*] childern R. *shal*] schul O; W *om. laughe*] lawghe O. *vp*] so in LR; of W; on O; vp-on C; vppon B.204. *And*] For O. *of*] if COB.205. *other*] oþer here R. *shal*] shul W; schulle R.206. *vnkynde*] vnkende R. *neyther*] nouthen C; noþer R.207. *noet*] so in LR; noot O; wootW; not C; B *places* not after man. *neighe*] COB *om. be*] ben W. *ynome*] bynome C. *to—ynome*] ne how sone he take B.209. *for*] C *om. is*] þer is B. *faute*] defaute WR.211. *a* (2)] the CB.212. *hir of*] of hir CB. *alle*] WCOB *om.*213. *aboue*] abue (*sie*) R.214. *ne*] or W.215. *allowaunce — bileue*] allowed þei both · but by-leue R.216. *ar*] er WO; or CB.

- And lawe is loth to louye · but if he lacche syluer.  
 Bothe logyke and lawe · þat loueth nouȝte to lye,  
 I conseilte alle crystene · cleue nouȝte þer-on to sore.  
 For sum wordes I fynde ywryten · were of faithes  
 techynge, 220  
 þat saued synful men · as seynt Iohan bereth wytnesse ;  
 Mat. vii. 2. *Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecciatur  
 vobis.*
- ¶ For þi lerne we þe lawe of loue · as owre lorde  
 tauȝte,  
 And as seynte Gregory seide · for mannes soule helthe,  
*Melius est scrutari scelera nostra, quam naturas  
 rerum.*
- ¶ Why I moue þis matere · is moste for þe pore, 224  
 For in her lyknesse owre lorde · ofte hath ben y-knowe.  
 Luke xxiv. 13. Witnesse in þe Paske wyke · whan he zede to Emaus ;  
 Cleophas ne knewe hym nauȝte · þat he cryste were,  
 For his pore paraille · and pylgrymes wedes ; 228  
 Luke xxiv. 31. Tyl he blessed and brak · þe bred þat þei eten,  
 So bi his werkes þei wisten · þat he was Ihesus ;  
 Ac by clothyng þei knewe hym nouȝte · ne bi carpyng  
 of tonge.
- ¶ And al was in ensample · to vs synful here, 232  
 þat we shulde be low · and loueliche of speche,  
 And apparaille vs nouȝte ouer proudly · for pylgrymes  
 ar we alle ;

217. *louye*] loue C. *lacche*] take C.  
 218. *Bothe*] But O. *to*] for to R.  
 219. *crystene*] cristen men CB.  
*cleue*] clyue W; to cleue B. *sore*] soore W.  
 220. *ywryten*] writen WCB; write R. *were*] þat were W; þa were B.  
 221. *remecciatur*] remeseiatur R; remenciatur B.  
 224. *moue*] meue WROB; moeue C. *for*] C om.  
 225. *her*] here R; hir W; his COB. *ofte*] of R. *ben*] be R. *y-knowe*] knawen C.

226. *Paske*] Pask W; Pasqe R; Passe C. *wyke*] woke R; weke C.  
 227. *ne*] COB om.  
 228. *paraille*] apparaille W; appa-  
 paralle C; apparayle B. *wedes*] wede B.  
 229. *blessed*] blisshed RCB.  
 230. *bi*] be R. *his*] hise WC.  
 231. *Ac*] And C. *by*] be R. *bi*] be R.  
 232. *in ensample*] ensaunple for sothe R.  
 234. *ouer*] to CB. *ar*] er C.

And in þe apparaille of a pore man · and pilgrymes  
lyknesse

Many tyme god hath ben mette · amonge nedly peple,  
þere neuere segge hym seigh · in secte of þe riche. 237

¶ Seynt Iohan and other seyntes · were seyne in pore  
clothyng, St John and other  
saints had poor  
clothing.

And as pore pilgrymes · preyed mennes godis.  
Ihesu cryste on a iewes douȝter alyȝte · gentil woman [Fol. 47.]  
þough she were, 240

Was a pure pore mayde · and to a pore man wedded. The virgin Mary  
was poor.  
Martha com-  
plained of Mary.  
¶ Martha on Marye magdeleyne · an huge pleynte she  
made,

And to owre saueour self · seyde þise wordes,  
*Domine, non est tibi cure quod soror mea reliquit* Luke x. 40.  
*me sola[m] ministrare, &c. ?*

¶ And hastiliche god answered · and eytheres wille  
folwed, 244

Bothe Marthaes and Maries · as Mathew bereth witnesse, Christ praised  
Mary most.  
Ac pouerte god put bifore · and preysed it þe bettere ;  
*Maria optimam partem elegit · que non [aufere-  
tur ab ea.]* Luke x. 42.

¶ And alle þe wyse þat euere were · by auȝte I can  
aspye,

Preysen pouerte for best lyf · if pacience it folwe, 248 Wise men praise  
poverty.  
And bothe bettere and blisseder · by many folde þan  
ricchesse.

235. *in þe]* in C; B *om. ap-  
paraille]* paraile R.

236. *mette]* y-mette R; at þe mete  
B.

237. *segge]* mane i. segge C.

238. *seyne]* seyen W; seyn RCB.  
*in]* C *om. pore]* oþer B.

239. *preyed]* preyude R; prayden  
C; preieden B. *mennes]* men R.  
*godis]* goodes W; goedes R; goddes  
C; goodis B.

240. *alyȝte]* liȝte W. *she]* a R.

241. *Was]* A was R. *pure]* puir  
R. *pure pore]* pore pure B. *mayde]*  
mayden RB. *wedded]* y-wedded WR.

242. *In the margin of Lis*—Martha  
& Maudelene. *an]* and (!) RC. *she]*  
sho C; W *om.*

243. *solan]* so in WCOB; sola L.  
R *omits all after cure*; COB *omit*  
*ministrare.*

244. *hastiliche]* stilleliche B.

245. *Marthaes]* in Marthas CB.  
*Maries]* in Maries CB. *as]* and B.

246. *Ac]* And C. *it]* þat W.  
*[auferetur—ea]* supplied from COB.

247. *þe]* CB *om. wyse]* wyes B.

248. *Preysen]* Preiseden W. *folwe]*  
folwed W; wolde R.

249. *blisseder]* blesseder W.

- Al though it be soure to suffre · þere cometh swete after ;  
 As on a walnot with-oute · is a bitter barke,  
 And after þat bitter barke · (be þe shelle aweye), 252  
 Is a kirmelle of conforte · kynde to restore ;  
 So is, after, pouerte or penaunce · pacientlyche ytake.  
 For it maketh a man to haue mynde in gode · and a  
 grete wille  
 To wepe and to wel bydde · wher-of wexeth mercy, 256  
 Of which cryst is a kirmelle · to conforte þe soule.  
 And wel sykerer he slepyth · þe [segge] þat is pore,  
 And lasse he dredeth deth · and in derke to be robbed,  
 þan he þat is riȝte ryche · resoun bereth wytnesse ; 260  
*Pauper ego ludo, dum tu diues meditaris.*  
 ¶ Al þough salamon seide · as folke seeth in þe bible,  
*Diuicias nec paupertates, &c.,*  
 Wyser þan salamon was · bereth witnesse and tauȝte,  
 þat parfyte pouert was · no possessioun to haue, 264  
 And lyf moste lykyng to god · as luke bereth witnesse,  
*Si vis perfectus esse, vade & vende, &c. ;*  
 And is to mene to men · þat on þis molde lyuen,  
 Who so wil be pure parfyt · mote possessioun forsake,  
 Or selle it, as seith þe boke · and þe syluer dele 268  
 To beggeres þat gone and begge · and bidden good for  
 goddes loue.  
 ¶ For failed neuere man mete · þat myȝtful god serued ;  
*[Non vidi iustum derelictum, nec semen eius  
 querens panem ;]*  
 As dauid seith in þe sauter · to suche þat ben in wille
- The walnut has a bitter husk, but a sweet kernel.
- Such is poverty.
- Christ is the kernel.
- Prov. xxx. 8.
- Mat. xix. 21.
- To be perfect, we must sell all.
- Ps. xxxvi. 25 (Vulg.).

250. *Al*] For W ; And COB ; Alle R. *þere—after*] þer-after comeþ swete W.  
 254. *is*] CB *om.*  
 255. *For it*] R *om.* a (1)] COB *om.*  
 257. O *omits.*  
 258. [*segge* R] man LWCOB ; cf. l. 237.  
 259. *robbed*] yrobbed W ; rubbid B.  
 262. *Al*] Alle R ; And OB. *folke* seeth] men seth R. *In the margin of L is—parfite povertee.*  
 265. *as*] and C.  
 266. *mene*] many (!) C.  
 267. *pure*] pouere C ; pore OB. *mote*] moot WC.  
 269. *gone*] gaen C ; goon W ; gon RB.  
 270. *serued*] serueþ WR. [*Non—panem*] in O *only.*  
 271. *þat*] as B.

To serue god godeliche · ne greueth hym no penaunce,

*Nichil impossibile volenti,*

[Cf. Mat. xvii.  
20.]

Ne lakketh neuere lyflode · lynnene ne wollen, 273

*Inquirentes autem dominum non minuentur  
omni bono.*

Ps. xxxiii. 11  
(Vulg.).

If prestes weren parfyt · þei wolde no syluer take

[Fol. 47 b.]

For masses ne for matynes · nouȝte her mete of vsureres, Priests should decline presents.

Ne neither kirtel ne cote · þeigh þey for colde shulde deye, 276

And þei her deuo[i]r dede · as dauid seith in þe sauter,

*Iudica me, deus, & discerne causam meam.*

Ps. xlii. 1 (Vulg.).

*Spera in deo* speketh of prestes · þat haue no spendyng syluer,

Ps. xxxvi. 3  
(Vulg.).

þat ȝif þei trauaille trewlich · and trusten in god almiȝti,

Hem shulde lakke no lyflode · noyther wollen ne lynnene.

And þe title þat [ye] take ordres by · telleth ȝe ben auanced; 281

þanne nedeth nouȝte ȝow to take syluer · for masses þat ȝe syngen.

Priests should not take money for masses.

For he þat toke ȝow ȝowre tyle · shulde take ȝow ȝowre wages,

Or þe bisshop þat blesseth ȝow · if þat ȝe ben worthy.

The bishop should pay them.

¶ For made neuere kyng no knyȝte · but he hadde catel to spende, 285

272. *no*] nouȝt no B. R reads—

With eny wel or wo (*half-line blank*)

To serue god godeliche · ne greueth

hem no penaunce,

*nichil difficile volenti, &c.*

273. *neuere*] noyther R. *lyflode*] C om.

274. *parfyt*] wise R. *no*] no

(*printed ne*) W. *In the margin of*

O—Of annuleris prestis.

277. *deuoir*] *so in* WCOB; deour

L; deuer R. *dede*] R om. *seith*] says

C; seide R. *discerne*] *so in* W, but

*printed* decerne.

278. *deo*] deo &c CB. *haue*] han

R; haueþ B.

279. *trusten*] tristen RB; trist C.

280. *Hem*] thaim C. *wollen*—

*lynnene*] lynnene ne wollen W.

281. *þat*] COB om. [*ye WR*] þei

LCOB. *ordres*] ordre O; her ordre

B. *telleth*] til CB. *ȝe*] þei B.

282. *nouȝte—to*] naught yow C; not

ȝow O; yow noȝt to WRB. *syngen*] syngeth R.

283. *ȝow* (1)] R om. *shulde*] shal C.

284. *Or*] Of C. *blesseth*] blessed

W; blisses C; blissip B.

285. *neuere*] neuere no L; but as

the other MSS. omit this first no, it is

unnecessary to retain it.

- As bifel for a kniȝte · or fonde hym for his strengthe ;  
 It is a careful kniȝte · and of a caytyue kynges makyunge,  
 þat hath no londe ne lynage riche · ne good loos of his  
 handes. 288
- þe same I segge for sothe · by alle suche prestes,  
 þat han noyther kunnyng ne kynne · but a croune one,  
 And a tyle, a tale of nouȝte · to his lyfode at myschiefe,  
 He hath more bileue, as I leue · to lacche þorw his  
 croune 292
- Cure; þan for konnyng · or—‘knownen for elene of  
 berynge.’
- I haue wonder [for] why · and wherfore þe bisshop  
 Maketh suche prestes · þat lewed men bytrayen. 295
- ¶ A chartre is chalengeable · byfor a chief iustice ;  
 If false latyne be in þe *lettre* · þe lawe it inpugneþ,  
 Or peynted parenterlinarie · [or] parceles ouer-skipped ;  
 þe gome þat gloseþ so chartres · for a goky is holden.  
 ¶ So is it a goky, by god · þat in his gospel failleþ,  
 Or in masse or in matynes · maketh any defaute, 301
- Qui offendit in vno, in omnibus est reus, &c.*
- And also in þe sauter · seyth dauyd to ouerskippers,  
*Psallite deo nostro, psallite ; quoniam rex terre  
 deus israel ; psallite sapienter.*
- þe bisshop shal be blamed · bifor god, as I leue,  
 þat crouneth suche goddes kniȝtes · þat conneth nouȝt  
*sapienter* 304
286. *fonde*] foond W; fonde, *altered*  
 to fande C; fynde B.  
 287. *a* (2)] CO *om.*  
 288. *no*] noþer R; neiþer B. *riche*]  
 R *om.* *loos*] los RB. *handes*] hondes  
 R; hand B.  
 289. *suche*] swiche WRC.  
 290. *one*] oon C; on hede B.  
 291. *at*] at his W.  
 292. *lacche*] laechen R.  
 293. *knownen*] knowyng COB. *for*]  
 or for B. *of*] WB *om.*  
 294. [*for* W] and RC; & LO; B  
 and Crowley *om.*
297. *þe*] þat RCOB; þat (*printed*  
 the) W. *inpugneþ*] impugneþ WR;  
 impugnes C.  
 298. *parenterlinarie*] par enterlin-  
 arie R. [*or* W Crowley] LRCOB *om.*  
*ouer-skipped*] ouer-kipped C.  
 299. *goky*] gooky C.  
 301. *in* (2)] CO *om.* *est reus*] R  
*om.*  
 302. *ouerskippers*] ouerkippers C.  
 304. *crouneth*] crowned CB; O *om.*  
*conneth*] kuuneth R; kuunen B;  
 kunne O; konnes C.

- Synge ne psalmes rede · ne segge a messe of þe day. Of unfit priests.  
 Ac neuer neyther is blameles · þe bisshop ne þe  
 chapleyne,  
 For her eyther is endited · and þat of 'ignorancia  
*Non excusat episcopos · nec idiotes prestes.*' 308  
 ¶ þis lokyng on lewed prestes · haþ don me lepe fram  
 pouerte,  
 þe whiche I preyse þere pacyence is · more parfyt þan  
 richesse."  
 ¶ Ac moche more in metyng þus · with me gan one  
 dispute,  
 And slepyng I seigh al þis · and sithen cam kynde, [Fol. 4s.]  
 And nempned me by my name · and bad me nymen  
 hede, 313  
 And þorw þe wondres of þis worlde · wytte for to take. Nature had me  
 And on a mountaigne þat mydeleerd hyzte · as me þo behold the won-  
 þouzte, ders of the world.  
 I was fette forth · by ensaumples to knowe, 316  
 þorough eche a creature and kynde · my creatoure to louye.  
 I seigh þe sonne and þe see · and þe sonde after, I saw the sun, the  
 And where þat bryddes and bestes · by here make[s] sea, and the sea, d.  
 þei zeden,  
 Wylde wormes in wodes · and wonderful foules, 320 beasts, worms,  
 With flekked fetheres · and of fele coloures. and fowls,  
 Man and his make · I myzte bothe byholde; man and his  
 mate.

305. *segge*] seye WCO; syng B.  
 306. *Ac*] And WC. *ne*] and R.  
 þe (2)] C om.  
 307. *her*] euere O; her euer B.  
 of] is W.  
 308. *idiotes*] idiotos B.  
 309. *on*] of O. *don*] doon W; do  
 R. *lepe*] luppe R.  
 310. *þe*] CB om. *þere*] here B.  
 is] B om.  
 311. L has only a faint paragraph-  
 mark, but it is certain that a new  
 paragraph begins here.  
 313. *nempned*] called C. *ny*] COB  
 om. *nymen*] nemen B.

314. *wondres*] wordes RB. *þis*] þe  
 R.  
 315. *mydeleerd*] mydel erde R;  
 myddel erþe W; midilerd B. *þo*]  
 than C; W om.  
 316. *fette*] fet WC; feet B. *en-  
 saumples*] ensampel C.  
 318. *see*] sehe O. *sonde*] sande C.  
 319. *And*] B om. [*makes* W]  
 make LCRO; mak B; but see l. 335.  
*þei*] WO om.  
 320. *in*] and R.  
 321. *fetheres*] federes R.  
 322. *and*] hadde O. *bothe byholde*]  
 se bothe R.

- poverty and  
plenty,  
bliss and bale. Pouerte and plente · bothe pees and werre,  
Blisse and bale · bothe I seigh at ones, 324  
And how men token Mede · and mercy refused.
- I saw that Reason ¶ Resoune I seighe sothly · suen alle bestes  
ruled all beasts; In etynge, in drynkyng · and in engendryng of kynde ;  
And after course of concepcioun · none toke kepe of  
other, 328  
As whan þei hadde ryde in rotey tyme ; · anon riȝte  
þer-after,
- males withdrew  
from females  
after breeding  
time. Males drowen hem to males · a mornynge bi hem-self,  
And in euenynges also · ȝe[de] males fro femeles.  
þere ne was cow ne cowkynde · þat conceyued hadde,  
þat wolde belwe after boles · ne bore after sowe ; 333  
Bothe horse and houndes · and alle other bestes  
Medled nouȝte wyth here makes · þat with fole were.
- I saw birds  
making their  
nests, and  
wondered. ¶ Briddes I bihelde · þat in buskes made nestes ; 336  
Hadde neuere wey witte · to worche þe leest.  
I hadde wonder at whom · and where þe pye lernel  
To legge þe stykkes · in whiche she [leyeþ] and bredeth ;  
þere nys wriȝte as I wene · shulde worche hir neste to  
paye ; 340  
If any masoun made a molde þer-to · moche wonder it  
were.
- Some birds hid  
their eggs. ¶ And ȝet me merueilled more · how many other briddes  
Hudden and hileden · her eggis ful derne

324. at] al at W.

325. hōw] O om.

326. suen] sewen W ; schewen R ;  
suwen CB.

327. in (2)] &amp; O. kynde] kende R.

328. of (2)] til R.

329. As] And COB.

330. a] on O. mornynge] mor-  
wennynges WROB ; morwenges C.331. And] O om. ȝede] so in R ;  
miswritten ȝe in L, but the line is  
marked for correction ; in other MSS.  
we find—þe males ben fro femelles W ;  
the males fro femeles C ; þe males fro  
þe femeles OB.

332. þere] þe R. ne (1)] COB om.

333. belwe] belwen R.

336. buskes] busches R.

337. neuere] nere R. weye  
R ; wiȝth B.339. legge] laye C. þe] R om.  
she] he COB ; a R. [leyeþ W] layes  
C ; in L badly spelt leythe ; leuth R ;  
leyȝeþ B.340. wys wriȝte] is no wit R.  
neste] nestes W.

342. And] Ac W. how] R om.

343. Hudden] Hidden W. hileden]  
heleden CR ; helieden B. eggis]  
egghe C ; eeggis B ; eyren O.

In mareys and mores · for men sholde hem nouȝt fynde,  
And hudden here egges · whan þei þere-fro wente, 345  
For fere of other foules · and for wylde bestis.

¶ And some troden her makes · and on trees bredden, Some bred upon trees.  
And brouȝten forth her bryddes so · al aboute þe grounde ;  
And some bryddes at þe bille · þorwgh brethyngce conceyued ; 349

And some kauked, I toke kepe · how pekokes bredden. I observed the peacocks.  
Mocche merucilled me · what maister þei hadde,  
And who tauȝte hem on trees · to tymbre so heighe,  
þere noither buirn ne beste · may her briddes rechen. [Fol. 48 b.]

¶ And sythen I loked vpon þe see · and so forth vpon  
þe sterres, 354 Then I looked at the sea and stars,

Many selcouthes I seygh · ben nought to seye nouthe.

¶ I seigh floures in þe fritthe · and her faire coloures, the flowers, and the grass.  
And how amonge þe grene grasse · grewe so many hewes,  
And somme soure and some swete · selcouthe me þouȝte ;  
Of her kynde and her coloure · to carpe it were to longe.

¶ Ac þat moste moened me · and my mode chaunged, Reason rule 1 all beasts except man.  
þat resoun rewarded · and reuled alle bestes, 361

Saue man and his make ; · many tyme and ofte  
No resoun hem folwed · and þanne I rebuked

Resoun, and riȝte · til hym-seluen I seyde, 364 I aske 1 Reason why this was so.

“I haue wonder of þe,” quod I · “þat witty art holden,  
Why þow ne suwest man and his make · þat no mysfait  
hem folwe ?”

345. *hudden*] hidden W. *egges*] egges C ; eegis B ; eggys O.

348. *brouȝten*] bredde R.

349. CB *omit. bille*] bile W ; bible (!) O. *brethyngce*] bredyng (!) O.

350. *kauked*] kaekeled C ; kakeleden O ; kakelid B. *I*] I (*printed* and) W. *kepe*] hede R. *pekokes*] pacokkes C. *bredden*] bredden R.

351. *þei hadde*] hem made W.

353. *noither*] neiþer WB ; noþer R. *buirn*] burn W ; barne C ; barn OB. *may*] ne may R.

354. *vpon* (1)] on COB. *see*] sehe

O. *forth vpon*] on COB.

355. *ben*] beth R ; þat ben B. *seye*] segge R ; seyn B.

356. *in*] of R.

357. *grewe*] greuȝ R ; grewed W ; grewen B.

359. *her* (2)] of here R.

360. *mode*] moed R ; mood W.

362. CB *omit. tyme*] tymes R.

363. *No*] Ne CB.

364. *I*] COB *om.*

365. *holden*] holde R.

366. *suwest*] schewest R. *mysfait*] mysfeet W ; mysfait C ; misfeith R ; mysfait B.

Reason would  
not tell me.

¶ And resoun arated me · and seyde, “recche þe neuere,  
Whi I suffre or nouȝt suffre · þi-self hast nouȝt to  
done; 368

Amende þow it, if þow myȝte · for my tyme is to abyde.  
Suffraunce is a souereygne vertue · and a swyfte veni-  
aunce.

“Who is more  
long-suffering  
than God?”

Who suffreth more þan god?” *quod* he · “no gome, as  
I leue!

He miȝte amende in a Minute while · al þat mys  
standeth, 372

Ac he suffreth for somme mannes good · and so is owre  
bette.

[¶ Holy writt,” *quod* þat weye · “wisseth men to suffre;”  
*Propter deum subiecti estote omni creature.*

1 Pet. ii. 13.

Freneche men and fre men · affeyteth þus her childerne,

Patience is a fair  
virtue.

*Bele vertue est soffrance · mal dire est pety[t] veniance,  
Bien dire et bien soffrir · fait lui soffrant a bien venir.*

For-þi I rede,” *quod* reson · “rewle þi tonge bettere,  
And ar þow lakke [eny] lyf · loke if þow be to preyse!

No creature can  
make himself.

For is no creature vnder criste · can formen hym-seluen;  
And if a man miȝte make · hym-self goed to þe poeple,  
Veh a lif wold be lakles · leue þow non other. 382

Few can bear  
blame.

Ne þow schalt fynde but fewe · fayne for to here  
Of here defautes foule · by-for hem rehersed.]

¶ þe wyse and þe witty · wrote þus in þe bible,

Eccles xi. 9.

*De re que te non molestat, [noli] certare.*

For be a man faire or foule · it falleth nouȝte for to  
lakke 386

367. *And*] And þo B.

369. *it*] COB *om.* *is*] is nouȝt CB.

370. *a* (1)] COB *om.* *a* (2)] of O.

371. *suffreth*] suffres C; suffrede  
WO. *gome*] man (*with* i. *gome writ-  
ten above*) C.

372. *Minute*] litel (*corrected to  
mynute*) C.

373. *suffreth*] suffres C; suffrede O.  
*is*] it is W.

374—384. *In* R *only*. Cf. Text C,  
*where some of these lines may be*

*found.*

376. *Bele*] *written* Vele in R; *but  
see* Text C. *petyt*] *written* pety; *but  
petit* in MS. Cott. Vesp. B. 16.

377. *soffrir*] soffrer R; *but the  
rime requires* soffrir. *lui*] le in MS.  
Cott.; ly in Whitaker; *but lui* in  
MS. Camb. Dd. 3. 13.

379. [*eny*] *so* in MS. Cott.; *mis-  
written* my in R.

385. *þe* (2)] C *om.* *que te*] quiete  
R. [*noli* WCOB] *noly* L; *nolite* R.

þe shappe ne þe shafte · þat god shope hym-selue ;  
For al þat he did was wel ydo · as holywrit witnesseth,

*Et vidit deus cum[c]ta que fecerat, et erant valde* Gen. i. 31.

*bona ;*

¶ And badde euery creature · in his kynde encrees, God bad man in-  
crease and multi-  
ply.  
Al to murthe with man · þat most woo tholye 390

In fondyng of þe flesshe · and of þe fende bothe.

For man was made of suche a matere · he may nouȝt  
wel astert 392

þat ne some tymes hym bitit · to folwen his kynde ;

Catoun acordeth þere-with · *nemo sine crimine viuít.* Cato, Distich. i. 5.

¶ Tho cauȝte I coloure anon · and comsed to ben Then I awoke,  
aschamed,

And awaked þer-with ; · wo was me þanne 396 and was very  
þat I in meteles ne myȝte · more haue yknowen. sorry to dream no  
more.

And þanne seyde I to my-self · and chidde þat tyme ;

“Now I wote what dowel is,” *quod* I · “by dere god,  
as me þinketh !”

And as I caste vp myn eyghen · one loked on me, and [Fol. 49.]  
Then saw I one,  
axed 400

Of me, what þinge it were ? · “ywisse, sire,” I seide,

“To se moche and suffre more · certes,” *quod* I, “is  
dowel !”

¶ “Haddestow suffred,” he seyde · “slepyng þo þow who rebuked me  
for my im-  
patience.  
were,

þow sholdest haue knowen þat clergie can · and *con-*  
ceiued more þorough resoun ; 404

388. *þat he*] L has þe, corrected to  
þat he in the margin ; þat he WCROB.  
*did*] wrouȝt R. *ydo*] do O. *wit-*  
*nesseth*] witness CB.

389. *euery*] to veh a R. *encrees*] *encreesse* W ; *encresee* CR.

390. *most*] moste W ; moost O ;  
maest C. *tholye*] tholieth RO ;  
tholde C.

393. *ne*] R om. *tymes*] tyme  
WCOB. *bitit*] bitid CO ; bitidiþ B.

394. *þere-with*] with-al R ; herwip  
O.

396. *And*] And I O.

397. *haue*] hauen R.

399. *wote*] woot WC ; wot RB.  
*dere*] CB om.

400. *And*] B om. *eyghen*] eyen C ;  
eyes R ; yen O. *one*] oon WC ; on  
RB. *axed*] asked WR.

403. *Haddestow*] Haddest þow RO ;  
Haddist B.

404. *knowen*] yknowe CO ; knowe  
RB. *conceiued*] contreued W. *þorough*] *bi* B.

For resoun wolde haue reherced þe · riȝte as clergie  
saide. 405

Ac for þine entermetyng · here artow forsake ;

*Philosophus esset, si tacuisses.*

“Adam, while he  
held his peace,  
was in Paradise.

¶ Adam, whiles he spak nouȝt · had paradys at wille,  
Ac whan he mameled aboute mete · and entermeted to  
knowe 408

þe wisdom and þe witte of god · he was put fram blisse ;  
And riȝt so ferde resoun bi the ; · þow with rude speche  
Lakkedest, and losedest þinge · þat longed nouȝt to be  
done ;

þo hadde he no lykyng · forto lere þe more. 412

Pride and pre-  
sumption will  
accuse thee.

¶ Pruide now and presumeioun · per auenture, wole þe  
appele,

That clergie þi compaignye · ne kepeth nouȝt to sue.  
Shal neuere chalangyng ne chydyng · chaste a man  
so sone

Shame brings  
amendment.

As shal shame, and shenden hym · and shape hym to  
amende. 416

If a drunken man  
fall into a ditch,  
let him lie there.

For lat a dronken daffe · in a dyke falle,  
Late hym ligge, loke nouȝte on hym · til hym lest to  
ryse ;

For þough resoun rebuked hym þanne · [recceth [he]  
neuere, 419

Of clergie ne of his conseil · he counteth nouȝt a rusche ;

406. *Ac*] And CO. *artow*] art þow  
ROB.

407. *whiles*] *miswritten* whiles in  
L; þe whiles R; whilis B.

408. *entermeted*] entermet hym C;  
entirmetid hym B.

409. *and*] of COB. *was*] C om.  
*fram*] fram þe R; fra C; fro B.

410. *rude*] þi rude WCB.

411. *losedest*] losest C. *longed*]  
longed þe W; longþ B. *to be done*]  
þe to done R; to doone W; to done  
O; to be doute CB.

412. *lere*] lerne O.

413. *wole*] wol WR; wolen OB;  
wyl C.

414. *þi*] in þi R. *ne*] W om. *to  
sue*] este to sitte R.

415. *Shal*] For schal R. *chaste*]  
chastie C; chastise O; caste B.

416. *shape*] schapen R.

417. *dyke*] dyk W; diehe OB.

418. *lest*] liste WC; list RB. *to  
ryse*] aryse W.

419—421. [*recceth*—*þanne*] in R  
*only*; but necessary, and occurs in  
Text C. [*he*] supplied from MS. Cot-  
ton; R *wrongly* has hym. [*To blame*]  
supplied from MS. Cotton; R *wrongly*  
omits. For various readings see Text  
C.

[To blame] or for to bete hym þanne] · it were but  
pure synne.

Ac whan nede nymeth hym vp · for doute lest he  
sterue, 422 When he recovers,  
shame tells him  
his fault."

And shame shrapeth his clothes · & his shynes wassheth,  
þanne wote þe dronken daffe · wherfore he is to blame."

¶ "Ze seggen soth," quod I · "ich haue yseyne it ofte, "You blame me,"  
I said, "for re-  
buking Reason."

þere [smit] no þinge so smerte · ne smelleth so soure,  
As shame, þere he sheweth him · for euery man hym  
shonyeth ;

Why ze wisse me þus," quod I · "was for I rebuked  
resoun." 428

¶ "Certes," quod he, "þat is soth" · and shope hym "Yes," hereplied.  
for to walken ;

And I aros vp rizt with þat · and folwed hym after, Then I prayed  
him to tell me  
his name.  
And preyed hym of his curteisye · to telle me his name.

422. *nymeth*] takes C; *nyme* B. *no þinge*] non R. *smelleth*] cumlleth  
423. *shrapeth*] *shrapet* (*sic*) C. (*altered to stumleth or semulleth*) R.  
*shynes*] *hondis* B. *wassheth*] *was-*  
*shede* C. *soure*] *foule* R.  
425. *soth*] *soth* by my soule R. *427. for—shonyeth*] *noman loueth*  
426. [*smit* R] *smyt* WO; *smytes* his *felachippe* R.  
C; *smyteþ* B; *badly spelt smitte in* L. *429. he*] I R. *shope*] *schope* R;  
*shoop* W. *walken*] *waken* R.

## PASSUS XII (DO-WEL IV).

*Passus duodecimus.*

"I am Imaginative," he said.

"I have followed thee for 45 years.

Amend in thy middle age.

[Fol. 49 b.]  
Luke xii. 38.  
Thou hast often been warned.

Prov. iii. 12.  
Rev. iii. 19.

"I am ymagynatyf," quod he · "Idel was I neuere,  
þouze I sitte bi my-self · in sikenesse ne in helthe.  
I haue folwed þe in feithe · þis fyue and fourty wyntre,  
And many tymes haue moeued þe · to þinke on þine  
ende, 4

And how fele fernzeres are faren · and so fewe to come,  
And of þi wylde wantounesse · þo þow zonge were,  
To amende it in þi myddel age · lest miȝte þe faylled  
In þyne olde elde · þat yuel can suffre 8  
Pouerte or penaunce · or preyeres bidde ;

*Si non in prima vigilia, nec in secunda, &c.*

Amende þe while þow myȝte · þow hast ben warned ofte  
With poustees of pestilences · with pouerte and with  
angres ;  
And with þise bitter baleyses · god beteth his dere  
childeren, 12

*Quem diligo, castigo.*

- TITLE. Passus xij *us* LW ; Passus R. *arc*] be R ; an (!) C ; an B.  
Duodecimus CO ; *wrongly called* 6. *of*] B *om.*  
Passus xij *us* de visione, vt *supra* R ; 7 *faylled*] faille RB ; faille C.  
*also* B *wrongly adds* et quintus [*read* 8. *elde*] eelde R. *yuel*] so yuel CB.  
*quartus*] de dowel. 9. *bidde*] to bidde W.  
2. *ne*] nor W ; and COB. 10. *while*] þe while R. *ben*] be CB.  
4. *moeued*] meued WRB. 11. *of*] and CB. *pestilences*] pesti-  
5. *fernzeres*] fernyers C ; ferneres lence C ; penaunce R.

And dauid in þe sauter seith · of suche þat loueth  
Ihesus,

'*Virga tua & baculus tuus, ipsa me consolata* Ps. xxii. 4  
*sunt, &c.* (Vulg.)

Al-pough þow stryke me with þi staffe · with stikke or  
with ȝerde,

It is but murth as for me · to amende my soule.'

And þow medlest þe with makynges · and myȝtest go You make poetry  
sey þi sauter, 16 instead of saying  
your psal er.

And bidde for hem þat ȝiueth þe bred ; · for þere ar  
bokes ynowe

To telle men what dowel is · dobet, and dobest bothe, There are books  
And prechoures to preue what it is · of many a peyre and preachers  
freres." enough."

¶ I seigh wel he sayde me soth · and, somewhat me to  
excuse, 20

Seid[e], "catoun confortd his sone · þat, clerke pough I referred him to  
he were, Cato—

To solacen hym sum tyme · as I do whan I make ;

*Interpone tuis interdum gaudia curis, &c.* (Cato, Distich. iii.  
7),

¶ And of holy men I herde," quod I · "how þei other-  
while 24

Pleyden, þe parfiter to be · in many places.

Ac if þere were any wight · þat wolde me telle

What were dowel and dobet · and dobest atte laste, but asked once  
more about Do-  
wel.

Wolde I neuere do werke · but wende to holicherche,

And þere bydde my bedes · but whan ich eet or  
slepe."

13. R omits this line, and the quo-  
tation. *ipsa*] ipse C. *consolata*]  
consolata (printed *consolati*) W.

14. *or with*] other CO ; *oper wip* B.  
16. *makynges*] *makyng* R ; *mais-*  
*tries* CB.

17. *ȝiueth*] *geues* C ; *ȝeuen* B. *þe*]  
me B. *ar*] ben O. *ynowe*] *y-knowe*  
W ; O om.

18. *men*] me O. *is*] CB om.

19. *preue*] *proue* CB. *a*] C om.

20. *and*] ac R.

21. *Seide*] Seid L ; And seide R ;  
Seide W ; Saide C. *conforted*] con-  
forted me W ; to conforte CB.

22. *as*] and R. *I*] ich R.

24. *of*] R om. *herde*] here R ;  
hard C.

25. *places*] a place R.

26. *Ac if*] And if C ; ȝif R.  
*wight*] wit R.

28. *do werke*] *worche* B ; *wyrke* C.

- "Paul tells you," he said. ¶ "Poule in his pistle," quod he · "preueth what is dowel ; 30
- 1 Cor. xiii. 13. *Fides, spes, caritas ; & maior horum, &c.*  
Feith, hope, and charitee · and alle ben good,  
And sauen men sundry tymes · ac none so sone as  
charite. 32
- "To act loyally is to do well. For he doth wel with-oute doute · þat doth as lewte techeth ;  
þat is, if þow be man maried · þi make þow louye,  
And lyue forth as lawe wole · while 3e lyuen bothe. 36
- If a monk, keep your rule. ¶ Riȝt so if þow be Religious · renne þow neuere ferther 36
- Run not to Rome or Roquemadour (in Guienne). To Rome ne to Rochemadore · but as þi reule techeth,  
And holde þe vnder obedyence · þat heigh wey is to  
Leuene.  
¶ And if þow be mayden to marye · and mizte wel  
contynue,  
Seke þow neuere seynt forther · for no soule helthe. 40
- Be warned by Lucifer, Solomon, Sampson, Job, For what made Lucyfer · to lese þe heigh heuene,  
Or salamon his sapience · or sampson his strengthe ?  
Iob þe Iewe his ioye · dere he it abouȝte,  
Arestotle and other mo · ypocras, & virgyle ; 44
- Aristotle, Hippocrates, Virgil, Alexander, Alisaundre þat al wan · elengelich ended.  
¶ Catel and kynde witte · was combraunce to hem  
alle.
- Felice, and fair Rosamond. Felyce hir fayrnesse · fel hir al to sklaundre ;  
[Fol. 50.] And Rosamonde riȝt so · reufully bysette, 48

30. *Poule*] With poule R. *pistle*] pistles R. *preueth*] proues C. *ȝ*] R *om. horum*] R *om.*

31. *and* (2)] R *om. good*] goed R.

32. *ac*] and C.

34. *þow*] he CB.

35. *And*] R *om. while*] þe while R. *bothe*] here COB.

36. *ferther*] þe ferþer B.

37. *Rochemadore*] Rochemadour CROB; Rochemador W.

38. *heigh*] þe hiȝe B.

39. *mayden*] mayde & R. *contynue*] contene O.

40. *neuere*] nere R. *no*] thy CB.

42. *or*] other R.

43. *C omits. dere he it*] dere it he O; dere he B; ful deere W.

45. *Alisaundre*] Alexander C. *ended*] endeden O.

46. *combraunce*] a combraunce B.

48. *reufully*] reuful B. *bysette*] besette R; to bileue W.

þe bewte of hir body · in badnesse she dispended.

Of many suche I may rede · of men and of wommen,

þat wyse wordes wolde shewe · and worche þe contrarye,

*Sunt homines nequam bene de virtute loquentes.* 52

¶ And riche renkes riȝt so · gaderen and sparen,

And þo men þat þei moste haten · mynistrē it atte  
laste ;

Riche men get  
money, and their  
enemies spend it.

And, for þei suffren & se · so many nedy folkes,

And loue hem nouȝt as owre lorde byt · lesen her soules ;

*Date & dabitur vobis, &c.*

Luke vi. 38.

[So catel and kende wit · acombred ful many ; 57

Wo is hym þat hem weldeth · but if he hem [wel]

despende ;

*Scientes et non facientes varijs flagellis vapula-* Cf. Luke xii. 17,  
*bunt ;* 48.

Sapience, seith þe boke · swelleth a mannes soule,

*Sapientia inflat, &c. ;*

1 Cor. viii. 1.

¶ And richesse riȝt so · but if þe Rote be trewe ; 60

Ac grace is a grasse þer-of · þo greuances to abate.

Ac grace ne groweth nouȝte · but amonges lowe ;

Pacience and pouerte · þe place is þere it groweth,

Grace grows only  
among the lowly.

And in lele lyuyngē men · and in lyf holy, 64

And þorough þe gyfte of þe holygoste · as þe gospel  
telleth,

49. *badnesse she*] badd vse R ;  
wickednesse she B.

50. *I may*] men may I R. *may*  
miȝte COB.

51. *wolde shewe*] can say CB ; kun  
seye O. *worche*] werchen R. *con-*  
*trarye*] contrarye L (*by mistake*).  
CB *place bene after* virtute.

53. *renkes*] men þenken B.  
*gaderen*] þat gadren B ; gadderand  
C. *sparen*] sparynge C.

54. *þo*] to C. *atte*] at þe WCOB.  
*laste*] leste C. ·

56. *owre lorde*] god CB. *byt*] bit  
WCRO ; bytt B ; *badly spelt* bytte in  
L. *lesen*] þci lesen W ; aud lesen B.  
*her*] your R.

57—59. *In R only ; but necessary*  
*to the sense ; cf. C-Text.*

58. [*rel*] *so in Cotton MS. ; R has*  
*wil.*

*Scientes — vapulabunt*] R *has —*  
*Scienti et non facienti varijs flagellis*  
*vapulabit. I correct it by the Cotton*  
*MS.*

60. *richesse*] riche C.

61. *þer-of*] þere-fore R. *þo gre-*  
*uances*] the greuance COB.

62. *ne*] B *om.* *lowe*] þe lowe O.

63. *Pacience*] Of pacience R. *is*  
hiȝte W.

65. *þe* (1)] R *om.* *gyfte*] siȝt B.  
*vult*] wlt R.

John iii. 8.

*Spiritus ubi vult spirat, &c.*

Clergye and kynde witte · comth of sizte and tech-  
yuge,

As þe boke bereth witnessse · to buirnes þat ean rede,

John iii. 11.

*Quod scimus, loquimur; quod vidimus, testamur.*

Of *quod scimus* cometh elergye · and connynge of  
heuene, 68

And of *quod vidimus* cometh kynde witte · of sizte of  
dyue[r]se peple.

Grace springs  
from love.

Ac grace is a gyfte of god · and of gret loue  
spryngeth;

Knewe neuere clerke how it cometh forth · ne kynde  
witte þe weyes,

John iii. 8.

*Nescit aliquis vnde venit, aut quo vadit, &c.*Learning is to  
be commended.

Ac 3it is elergye to comende · and kynde witte bothe,  
And namely elergye, for crystes loue · þat of elergye is  
rote. 73

For Moyses witnesseth þat god wrote · for to wisse þe  
peple,

Moses said an  
adulteress was to  
be stoned  
(Lev. xx. 10).

In þe olde lawe, as þe lettre telleth · þat was þe lawe  
of iewes,

· þat what woman were in auoutrie taken · were she  
riche or pore, 76

With stones men shulde hir stryke · and stone hir to  
deth.

A womman, as we fynden · was guilty of þat dede,

Ac cryste of his curteisye · þorw elergye hir saned;

67. *As*] And CB. *buirnes*] burnes  
WO; barnes CRB. *ean*] konne C;  
kun O; kunnen B.

68. *and*] a R.

69. *of*] C om. *quod*] B om.  
*dyuerse*] *miswritten* dyuese in L;  
diuerse WCROB.

70. *Ac*] And CB.

71. *Knewe*] Know C. *ne*] þe (!) O.  
þe] his R.

73. *of*] B om.

74. *witnesseth*] witnessse C. *wrote*]

wroot WC. *wisse*] wise R.

75. *þat*] R om.

76. in WCROB] L has the word in  
the margin. *auoutrie*] deuoutrie R.  
*were she*] were he R; COB om. or]  
other COB.

77. *stones*] stanes C. *stryke*]  
striken R. *stone*] stonen RB; stonye  
C. *deth*] dede R.

78. R omits. *we fynden*] I fynde  
W.

79. *þorw*] and þoru3 R.

For þow carectus þat cryst wrot · þe iewes knewe hem-  
seluen 80 But Christ, by  
his writing,  
saved one such  
(John viii. 6.)

Gultier as afor god · and gretter in synne

þan þe woman þat þere was · and wenten away for  
schame.

þe cleryge þat þere was · confortd þe womman.

Holykirke knoweth þis · þat crystes writyng saued ; 84

So cleryge is conforte · to creatures þat repenten,

And to mansed men · myschief at her ende

¶ For goddes body myzte nouzte be · of bred, with-  
outen cleryge,

þe which body is bothe · bote to þe riztful, 88

And deth and dampnacioun · to hem þat dyeth yuel.

As crystes carecte confortd and bothe · coupable  
shewed

þe womman þat þe iewes brouzte · þat Ihesus pouzte to  
saue ;

*Nolite iudicare, et non iudicabimini, &c.*

Rizt so goddes body, bretheren · but it be worthily  
taken, 92

Dampneth vs atte daye of dome · as þe carectes dede  
þe iewes.

For þi I conseille þe for cristes sake · cleryge þat þow  
louye,

For kynde witte is of his kyn · and neighe cosynges bothe  
To owre lorde, lene me ; · for þi lone hem, I rede ; 96

80. *For*] And W. *carcetis—wrot*] cristes carectus R; carrectis þat crist wrouzte CO.

81. *Gultier*] Giltier WCO; Gilty B. *gretter in*] in gretter O.

84. *kirke*] cherche R. *knoweth*] knew B. *saued*] saued hire W.

85. *þat*] þat hem B.

86. *mansed*] mased C; manasid B.

88. *is*] is bote to B. *bote*] boote WC; B *om.*

89. *dyeth*] dyen CB.

90. *carecte*] carrectes C; caractes

O; carectes B; carette R. *conforted*] counforteden O. *coupable*] coupile C; couple B. *shewed*] scheweden O.

91. *þe*] R *om.* *brouzte*] bouzte R. *non*] non (*printed not*) W.

92. *body*] B *om.* *but*] but if W.

93. *Dampneth*] Dampned R. *carctes*] caractes W. *þe—dede*] dede þe carette R.

94. *þat þow*] to COB.

95. *neighe*] ny3 B.

96. *hem*] hym C.

It was His learn-  
ing that saved  
her.

Transubstantia-  
tion requires  
learning to  
accomplish it.

[Fol. 50 b.]  
Mat. vii. 1.

Therefore love  
learning.

Learning and  
common sense  
a. e. our mirrors.

For bothe ben as miroures · to amenden owre defautes,  
And lederes for lewed men · and for lettred bothe.

¶ For-þi lakke þow neuere logyke · lawe, ne his eus-  
tumes,

Ne countreplede clerkes · I conseilte þe for eure. 100

Clerks learn  
from books.

For as a man may nouzt se · þat mysseth his eyghen,  
Namore can no klerke · but if he cauzt it first þorough  
bokes.

Al-þough men made bokes · god was þe maistre,  
And seynt spirit þe saumplarye · and seide what men  
sholde write. 104

And riht as syzte serueth a man · to se þe heighe strete,  
Riht so ledeth letterure · lewed men to resoun.

Like a bliud man  
in battle,

And as a blynde man in bataille · bereth wepne to fihte,  
And hath none happ with his axe · his enemye to hitte,

so is one with  
common sense  
but untaught.

Namore kan a kynde witted man · but clerkes hym  
teche, 109

Come for al his kynde witte · to crystendome and be  
saued ;

Whiche is þe coffre of crystes tresore · and clerkes kepe  
þe keyes,

To vnlouken it at her lykynge · and to þe lewed peple  
þyue merey for her mysdedes · if men it wole aske 113  
Buxomelich & benygneliche · and bidden it of grace.

Levites kept  
the ark,

¶ *Archa dei* in þe olde lawe · levites it kepten ;  
Hadde neuere lewed man leue · to leggen honde on þat  
chest, 116

99. *lawe*] is lawe B.

101. *eyghen*] sizte R.

102. *if*] C om. *cauzt*] cacche O.

104. *þe*] his COB. *men*] man R.

105. W omits. *Found in* LCROB  
C2.

106. *ledeth*] lereth R. *letterure*] clergie CB.

107. *And as*] As as (*sic*) C. *bereth*] bere R.

108. *his*] C om. *enemye*] emny C; enemyes O.

109. *kynde witted*] kende wedded R. *but*] but if O. *clerkes*] clergie CB.

112. *vnlouken*] vnloken WCOB.

113. *þyue*] Gyfe C; For R. *wole*] wol C; wolen B; wole (*printed* wolde) W.

114. *bidden*] biden C. *af*] as R.

115. *olde*] holde R.

116. *leggen*] lygge C. *þat*] the COB. *chest*] kyste C.

But he were *preste* or *prestes* sone · patriarke or *pro-* and no others.  
phete.

[¶ Saul, for he sacrificed · sorwe hym be-tydde, Saul did wrong  
in sacrificing;  
(1 Sam. xiii. 12).

And his sones al-so · for þat synne myscheued,  
And many mo other men · þat were no leuites, 120  
þat with *archa dei* zeden · in reuerence and in wor-  
chippe,

And leyden honde þer-on to liften it vp · and loren hir cf. 2 Sam. vi. 7.  
lif after.

For-þi I conseil alle creatures · no clergie to dispise, Never despise  
learning or  
clerks.  
Ne sette schort be here science · what so þei don hem-  
selue. 124

Take we her wordes at worthe · for here witness be  
trewe,

And medle we nauzt muche with hem · to meuen any Meddle not with  
such.  
wrathe,

Lest cheste chafen vs · to choppe vche man other ;  
*Nolite tangere christos meos, &c.*

¶ For clergie is kepere · vnder cryst of heuene ; 128 Ps. civ. 15  
(Vulg.).

Was þere neuere no knyzte · but clergie hym made.

Ac kynde witte cometh · of alkynnes sijtes,

Of byddes and of bestes · of tastes of treuthe, and of  
deceytes.

¶ Lyueres to-forn vs · vseden to marke 132 Men in old  
times thought  
much of science,

þe selkouthes þat þei seighen · her sones for to teche,

And helden it an heighe science · her wittes to knowe.

Ac þorough her science sothely · was neuere no soule  
ysaued,

118—127. *In R only ; but see Text*

C. 122. *loren*] *miswritten* boren in R,  
*but altered* to loren.

126. *medle we*] ne medle we R ;  
medele we in Cotton MS.

127. *chafen*] chasen R ; a-chaufe  
in Cotton MS. ; chaufe in Whitaker,  
p. 232.

128. *is*] is kyng and R. *kepere*]  
kepere þer-of B.

130. *Ac*] A (*sic*) C ; And B. *al-*  
*kynnes*] alle kynnes W ; alle kyns O.

131. *of tastes*] CB *om.*

132. *Lyueres*] Lyuyers CB. *to-forn*]  
to-foren R. *marke*] make R.

133. *þe*] For W. *selkouthes*] sel-  
couthe C ; selcouþe OB. *seighen*]  
seye R.

134. *an*] and C.

135. *Ac*] And C. *sothely*] shortly  
B. *no*] CB *om.* *ysaued*] saued CRB.

but their books  
brought none  
to bliss.

Ne brouzte by her bokes · to blisse ne to ioie ; 136  
For alle her kynde knowynges · come but of dyuerse  
sightes.

¶ Patriarkes and prophetes · repreued her science,  
And seiden, her wordes ne her wisdomes · [was] but a  
folye ;

As to þe cleryge of cryst · counted it but a truffe ; 140

1 Cor. iii. 19.

*Sapientia huius mundi, stulticia [est] apud deum.*

For þe heihe holigoste · heuene shal to-cleue,  
And lone shal lepe out after · in-to þis lowe erthie,  
[Fol. 51.] And clennesses shal cacchen it · and clerkes shullen it  
fynde ;

Luke ii. 15.

*Pastores loquebantur ad inuicem.*

¶ He speketh þere of riche men riȝt nouȝt · ne of riȝt  
witty, 144

Ne of lordes þat were lewed men · but of þe hexte  
lettred oute,

Mat. ii. 1.

*Ibant magi ab oriente, &c.*

¶ If any frere were founde þere · Ich zif þe fyue shil-  
lynges ;

Ne in none beggares cote · was þat barne borne,  
But in a burgeys place · of bethlem þe best ; 148

Luke ii. 7.

*Set non erat locus [eis] in diuersorio ; & pauper  
non habet diuersorium.*

The angel  
appeared to the  
shepherds,

¶ To pastours and to poetes · appiered þat aungel,  
And bad hem go to bethlem · goddis burth to honoure,

136. *brouzte*] bouȝte R.

137. *knowynges*] knowynges CB.  
*come*] cam R.

138. *repreued*] repreueth RB ; re-  
preuenden W ; reproued C. *science*]  
sightes C ; siȝtis B (*cf. line 137*).

139. *ne*] and W. *wisdomes*] wis-  
dome R. [*was* R] nas LWCOB ; *but*  
*observe the alliteration.*

140. *As*] And W. *it*] COB *om.*  
*truffe*] trefle R. [*est* WCB] LRO  
*om. deum*] R *om.*

141—148. R *omits.*

142. *þis*] þe W ; his O.

143. *shullen*] schal C ; shal B.

144. *riȝt nouȝt*] noȝt B ; nouȝt C.

145. *hexte*] hyste WO ; heighest  
C ; heiȝeste B.

146. *Ich*] I WCOB.

147. *beggares*] burgeises W.

148. *burgeys*] Burgeises W. *beth-*  
*lem*] bedlem O. [*eis*] *supplied from*  
*the Vulgate* ; W *has ei* ; LCOB *om.*  
*locus*] CB *om.*

149. *To*] fo B. *þat*] þe WCOB ;  
an R.

150. *bethlem*] bedlem O ; bethelem  
C ; bthlem (*sic*) R. *burth*] sone B.

- And songe a songe of solas · *gloria in excelsis deo!* Luke ii. 14.  
 [Riche men rutte þo · and in here reste were, 152  
 þo it schon to [þe] schepherdes · a schewer of blisse.]  
 ¶ Clerkes knewe it wel · and comen with here presentz, The Magi.  
 And deden her homage honourably · to hym þat was  
 almyȝty. 155  
 Why I haue tolde [þe] al þis— · I toke ful gode hede I say this because  
 How þow contraryedest clergie · with crabbed wordes, you slandere. I  
 ‘How þat lewed men liztloker · þan lettred were saued, learned men;  
 þan clerkes or kynde witted men · of crystene peple.’ (see p. 166).  
 ¶ And þow seidest soth of somme · ac se in what  
 manere :— 160  
 Take two stronge men · and in themese caste hem, Throw two men  
 And bothe naked as a nelle · her none syker[er] þan into the Thames,  
 other,  
 þat one hath connyng · and can swymmen and dyuen, one who can  
 þat other is lewed of þat laboure · lerned neuere swim and one  
 swymme ; who cannot ; 164  
 Which trowestow of þo two · in themese is in moste which is in  
 drede ? danger? ”  
 He þat neuere ne dyued · ne nouȝt can of swymmyng,  
 Or þe swymmere þat is sauf · bi so hym-self lyke,  
 þere his felaw flet forth · as þe flode lyketh, 168  
 And is in drede to drenche · þat neuere dede swymme ?”

151. *songe*] syngen R; sange C.  
 152, 153. *In R only; and in C-Text.*  
 153. [þe] from Cotton MS.; R om.  
 154. *Clerkes*] And clerkes R.  
 155. *her*] W om. After this line  
 C inserts—And goddes sone that  
 sittes in heuene · and shal saue vs  
 alle; B has the same, except was  
 sytтыþ for sittes. This line is not in  
 the Cotton MS. Vesp. B. 16.  
 156. [þe CRB] þee O; LW om.  
 157. *contraryedest*] contrariest C.  
 158. *liztloker*] liztliker O. *saued*]  
 I-saued R.  
 159. *clerkes*] clergie B.  
 160. *ac*] and C. *se*] se ȝit OB; se  
 yit C. *what manere*] whanere (!) R.  
 161. *themese*] Themise C; temese  
 R; tamise OB. *caste hem*] hem caste  
 O.  
 162. *her*] er C; arn O; þat B.  
*sykerer*] miswritten syker in L, siker  
 in R; sikerer WCOB.  
 163. *dyuen*] driuen R.  
 164. *lerned*] þat lerned W; and  
 lerned B. *swymme*] to swymme COB.  
 165. *þo*] hem CB; þe O. *in  
 themese*] þat W. *themese*] temese  
 RO; tamyse B. *in moste*] most in  
 B; in oost (!) C.  
 166. *ne* (1)] R om.  
 167. *lyke*] likiþ B.  
 168. *flet*] flette C; fletеþ WB.

"He who cannot swim," I said.

¶ "þat swynne can nouȝt," I seide · "it semeth to my wittes."

"So," said he, "can a learned man sooner leave sin."

¶ "Riȝt so," *quod* þe Renke · "resoun it sheweth, þat he þat knoweth clergye · can sonner aryse 172

Out of synne and be sauf · þough he synne ofte, If hym lyketh and lest · þan any lewed lelly.

For if þe clerke be konnyng · he knoweth what is synne,

And how contricioun with-oute confessioun · conforteth þe soule, 176

As þow seest in þe sauter · in psalme one or tweyne, How contricioun is commended · for it caccheth away synne ;

Ps. xxxi. 1 (Vulg.).

*Beati quorum remisse sunt iniquitates, & quorum tectu sunt [peccata,] &c.*

Clerks do not despair.

And þis conforteth vch a clerke · and keuereth hym fram wanhope,

In which flode þe fende · fondeth a man hardest ; 180 þere þe lewed lith stille · and loketh after lente,

[Fol. 51 b.]

And hath no contricioun ar he come to shryfte · & þanne can he litel telle,

Unlettered men have to learn as they are taught.

And as his lores-man leres hym · bileueth & troweth ;

And þat is after person or parisch prest · and, *par- auenture*, [bothe] 184

Vnconnyng to lere lewed men · as luk bereth wit- nesse,

170. R *omits. smeth*] comeþ B. *my*] C *om.*

171. þe] that CB. *Renke*] frek B.

173. and] and he R. *synne*] senege R.

174. *lyketh*] likes C ; likid B. *lest*] list CB.

175. *knoweth*] knowe C.

177. *As*] And CB. þe] thy COB. *psalme*] psalmes CB ; Salmes WO.

178. [*peccata*] in R only.

179. *keuereth*] couereþ W ; kenneth R.

181. *lente*] leaut (*sic*) C, *from confusion with leute* ; leaute B.

182. ar] er her (*sic*) C. þanne] R *om. he—telle*] C *om.*

183. And] But W. *his*] is C.

184. and] þe whiche ben W. *par- auenture*] par auenter R. [*bothe*] R] he O ; LWCB *om.* ; cf. C-Text. Crow- ley *has* he is.

185. to] te O. *lere*] lerne B. *eccus*] secus B. *ecum*] secum B. [*ambo in foucam*] in OC2 only ; cadunt *I have supplied.*

*Dum cecus ducit cecum, [ambo in foueam Mat. xv. 14.  
cadunt.]*

¶ Wo was hym marked · þat wade mote with þe lewed !

Wel may þe barne blisse · þat hym to boke sette ; 187 Well for him  
who can read !

þat lyuyng after letterure · saued hym lyf and soule !

*Dominus pars hereditatis mee* · is a meri verset, Ps. xv. 5 (Vulg.).

þat has take fro tybourne · twenti stronge þeues ; Reading has  
saved thieves  
from Tyburn.

þere lewed theues ben lolled vp · loke how þei be saued !

þe thef þat had *grace* of god · on gode fryday as þow speke,  
Was, for he ʒelte hym creaunt to cryst on þe crosse · The penitent  
thief was saved,  
& knewleched hym gulty, 193

And grace axed of god · [þat to graunten it is] redy

[To hem] þat boxomeliche biddeth it · and ben in wille  
to amenden hem.

Ac þough þat þef had heuene · he hadde none heigh but had a low  
place in heaven;  
blisse, 196

As seynt Iohan and other seyntes · þat asserued hadde  
bettere.

Riʒt as *sum* man ʒene me mete · and sette me amydde as if I were to  
sit on the floor  
of the hall to eat.  
þe flore,

Ich haue mete more þan ynough · ac nouʒt so moche  
worship

As þo þat seten atte syde table · or with þe souereignes  
of þe halle, 200

186. R omits.

187. *blisse*] blesse þat man W.  
*to—sette*] sette to scole R.

188. *saued*] saueþ W.

189. *meri*] murye W; myrie C.  
*verset*] verset R.

191. *be*] ben RB.

192. *on*] a R. *þow speke*] þu speke  
R; thow spake C; þow spekest W; ʒe  
speken O.

193. *Was*] þat was B. *he*] þat he  
B. *ʒelte*] yald W; ʒelde R; yelde C;  
ʒalte O; ʒald B. *creaunt*] reereant  
R. *on—ʒ*] & vpon a cros R. *knew-  
leched*] know C; knewe O; knew B.  
*hym*] R om.

194. R omits. [*þat—is*] *so in* W;

and he is euer LCOB.

195. [*To hem*] *from* W; LCROB  
*om.* *þat*] þam B. *biddeth*] bid C.  
*hem*] hym B; hem (*not printed*) W.

196. *Ac*] And CB. *þef had*] CB  
*om.* *none*] no C; but not so B.

197. *asserued*] deserued WCOB.  
*In margin of L—in domo meo multe  
sunt mantiones.*

198. *sum man*] som men C; if men  
B. *ʒene*] gyf C. *sette—flore*] amydd-  
de þe floor sette me W.

199. *Ich haue*] I haue CB; And  
hadde W. *þan*] þa B. *ac*] and C.

200. *atte*] at þe WCROB. *syde*]  
COB *om.* *þe* (1)] COB *om.*

- But sitte as a begger bordelees · bi my-self on þe  
grounde.
- So he is not with the apostles, So it fareth bi þat feloun · þat a gode fryday was  
saued ;
- He sit neither with seynt Iohan · Symonde, ne Iude,  
Ne wyth maydenes ne with martires · confessoures ne  
wydwes, 204
- but by himself. But by hym-self as a soleyne · and serued on þe erthe.  
For he þat is ones a thef · is euermore in daungere,  
And as lawe lyketh · to lyue or to deye ;
- De peccato propiciato, noli esse sine metu.*
- And forto seruen a seynt · and such a thef togyderes,  
It were noyther resoun ne riȝt · to rewarde hem bothe  
aliche. 209
- Trajan dwelt not deep in hell; ¶ And riȝt as *troiannus* þe trewe knyȝt · tilde nouȝt depe  
in helle,
- þat owre lorde ne had hym liztlich oute · so leue I þe  
thef be in heuene.
- and the thief is lowest in heaven. For he is in þe lowest of heuene · if owre bileue be  
trewe, 212
- And wel loselyche he lolleth þere · by þe lawe of holy-  
cherche,
- P's. lxi. 13 (Vulg.). *Quia reddidit unicuique iuxta opera sua, &c.*
- ¶ And why þat one thef on þe crosse · creaunt hym ȝelt  
Rather þan þat other thef · þough þow wolde appose,  
Alle þe clerkes vnder cryst · ne couthe þe skil assoille ;
- Quare placuit, quia voluit.*

201. *sitte*] sete W ; settiþ B. a  
begger] beggers COB.

202. *a*] on CB.

203. *sit*] *so in* WC ; sitt RB ; sittip  
O ; sitte L. *with*] by CB. *seynt*] R  
om. *Symonde*] ne Symond R.

204. *confessoures*] ne confessoures  
R. *with*] C om.

205. *But*] CB om. *soleyne*] so'ayn  
C. *þe*] W om.

208. *forto*] to C.

209. *were*] war C. *to*] C om.

210. *tilde*] tilte O ; dwelte W.

211. *þe*] þat þe B. *thef*] R om.

212. *of*] COB om.

213. *wel loselyche*] wollosliche R ;  
wel lowselych C ; wel loselych O ; wel  
looselyche B. *Quia*] Qui WB ; And  
R. *reddit*] redde R.

214. *And*] Ac R. *on*] vpon B.  
*ȝelt*] yald W ; ȝelde R ; ȝelte OB ;  
ȝylty (!) C.

215. *wolde*] woldest WRO.

216. *þe* (2)] R om. *assoille*] telle R.

And so I sey by þe · þat sekest after þe whyes, 217 Inquire not into reasons.

And aresonedest resoun · a rebukyng as it were,

And of þe floures in þe fryth · and of her feire hewes,

Wherē-of þei cacche her coloures · so clere and so briȝte,

And willest of briddes and of bestes · and of hire You wished to know too much.  
bredyng to knowe, 221

Why somme be alowe and somme alofte · þi lykynge it were,

And of þe stonnes and of þe sterres · þow studyest, as I leue, [Fol. 52]

How euere beste or brydde · hath so breme wittes : 224

¶ Clergye ne kynde witte · ne kewe neuere þe cause,

Ac kynde knoweth þe cause hym-selue · [and] no creature elles.

He is þe pyes patroun · and putteth it in hire ere, Nature is the pie's patron.

þat þere þe þorne is thikkeste · to buylden and brede ;

And kynde kenned þe pecok · to cauken in swich a kynde, 229

And kenned Adam · to knowe his pryue membres,

And tauȝte hym and Eue · to hylien hem with leues.

¶ Lewed men many tymes · maistres þei apposen, Men sometimes ask why Adam did not cover up his mouth first.

Why Adam ne hiled nouȝt firste · his mouth þat eet þe apple, 233

Rather þan his lykam a-low · lewed axen þus clerkes ;

Kynde knoweth whi he dede so · ac no clerke elles.

217. *why*s] whaies C ; wyes B. COB om.  
 218. *aresonedest*] resonedest CB. 228. *þat*] W om. *þere*] CB om.  
 219, 220. R *inserts these lower* to] þere to R. *buylden*] byggen C ;  
*down, after l. 222.* bilden in B. *and*] and to C.  
 219. *her*] C om. 229. *kenned*] kenneth COB, *pecok*]  
 220. *cacche*] caughte C ; lauȝte B. pakok C ; pocok O. *cauken*] kauken  
 221. *of* (2)] WRO ; CB om. ; *very* COB.  
*faint in L. to*] COB om. 230. *kenned*] kende kenned R.  
 222. *be*] so CB. *alowe*] alouȝ W ; *knowe*] knowen R.  
 lowe CB ; low R. 231. *hylien*] helien WCRB ; hilen  
 223. *þe* (1)] R om. O.  
 224. *euere*] euery B. *or*] ouȝer 232. *þei*] COB om.  
 W ; other R. 233. *ne*] COB om. *hiled*] huled  
 226. *Ac*] And C. *hym-selue*] CB R ; hilled C ; heliede B.  
 om. [*and* WCOB] LR om. 234. *lykam*] likame W ; likham CR.  
 227. *is*] his C. *pyes patroun*] pye *a-low*] alogh W. *lewed*] þe lewid B.  
 patroen R. *putteth*] put R. *it*] 235. *ac*] and COB.

- Ac of briddes and of bestes · men by olde tyme 236  
 Ensamples token and termes · as telleth þis poetes,  
 And þat þe fairest foule · foulest engendreth,  
 And feblest foule of flyght is · þat fleegheth or swym-  
 meth ;  
 And þat is þe pekok & þe pohenne · proude riche  
 men þei bitokneth, 240
- The fairest fowl  
is the feeblest of  
flight.
- The peacock's tail  
is in his way.
- For þe pekok, and men pursue hym · may nouȝte  
 fleighe heighe ;  
 For þe trailling of his taille · ouertaken is he sone,  
 And his flesshe is foule flesshe · and his feet bothe,  
 And vulouelich of ledene · and laith for to here. 244  
 ¶ Riȝt so þe riche · if he his richesse kepe,  
 And deleth it nouȝt tyl his deth day · þe taille of al  
 sorwe.  
 Riȝt as þe penne of þe pecock · [peyneth] hym in his  
 flizte,
- His voice is  
harsh.
- The rich man's  
wealth is like  
the peacock's tail.
- So is possession payne · of pens and of nobles 248  
 To alle hem þat it holdeth · til her taille be plucked.  
 And þough þe riche repente þanne · and birewe þe tyme,  
 þat euere he gadered so grete · and gaf þere-of so litel,  
 þough he crye to cryst þanne · with kene wille, I leue  
 His ledne be in owre lordes ere · lyke a pyes [chiteryng].  
 And whan his caroigne shal come · in caue to be buried,  
 I leue it flaumbe ful foule · þe folde al aboute, 255
236. *Ac*] And C.  
 237. *token*] toke R. *þis*] so also  
 in R; thise CB; þe WO.  
 239. *fleegheth*] fleep W; fleth R; *pe-  
 cok*] pocok O; pacok C. [*peyneth*  
 flieth CB; flyep O.  
 240. *is*] W om. *pekok*] pokok O;  
 pacok C. *pohenne*] so in COB;  
 Pehen W; pohen R. *proude*] CB om.  
 þei] W om.  
 241. *pekok*] pocok O; pacok C.  
*pursue*] pursuen R. *may*] ne may  
 R.  
 243. *his* (2)] is C.  
 244. *of*] on O. *ledene*] cryeng C.  
*laith*] loep W; laithe R; loth C;  
 layp O; loþly B.  
 245. *his*] is C.  
 247. *as*] so as W. *as*] so CB.  
*pekok*] pocok O; pacok C. [*peyneth*  
 WOB] payned LR; peyned C.  
 248. *and*] or CB.  
 250. *repente*] repente hym O.  
 252. *kene*] clen CB.  
 253. *be*] is COB. *lyke*] yliche O;  
 yl] (*sic*) R. [*chiteryng* W] LCROB  
 om.; but the line is marked in L.  
 254. *his*] is C. *caue*] graue C.  
 255. *flaumbe*] flawme WRO;  
 flambe CB.

And alle þe oþer þer it lyth · [enuenymeþ] þorgh his  
attre. 256

By þe [po feet] is vnderstonde · as I haue lerned in  
aunnete, His executers  
are like the  
peacock's feet.

Excecutoures, fals frendes · þat fulfille nouzt his wille  
þat was written, and þei witnesse · to worche riȝt as it  
wolde.

þus þe poete preues þat þe pecok · for his fetheres is  
reuerenced, 260

Riȝt so is þe riche · bi resoun of his godis.

¶ þe larke, þat is a lasse foule · is more louelich of ledne,  
And wel away of wenge · swifter þan þe pecok, The lark has a  
sweeter voice  
than the peacock.  
And of flesch, by fele folde · fatter and swetter. 264

To lowe lybbyng men · þe larke is resembled ;  
Arestotle þe grete clerke · suche tales he telleth ;

¶ Thus he lykneþ in his logyk · þe leste foule oute. [Fol. 52 b.]  
And where he be sauf or nouzt sauf · þe sothe wote no  
clergy, Whether  
Aristotle is  
sawed, none  
knows. 268

Ne of sortes ne of salamon · no scripture can telle.

Ac god is so good, I hope · þat siȝth he gaf hem wittis  
To wissen vs weyes þere-with · (þat wissen vs to be sawed,  
And þe better for her bokes) · to bidden we ben holden,  
þat god for his grace · gyue her soules reste ; 273  
For lettred men were lewed men ȝut · ne were lore of  
her bokes."

God, who gave  
the heathen wit  
to teach us, will  
perhaps save  
them."

256. *And*] CB *om.* oþer] erþe O ;  
schere B. [enuenymeþ WCOB] en-  
uened LR. attre] attre W ; attre  
RCO ; attir B.

257. [po feet WR] poo feet CO ;  
pownes feet B ; profeet (1) L. vnder-  
stonde] vnderstande W ; vnderstonde  
R. haue] COB *om.* aunnete] ayn-  
nettes C.

258, 259. þat fulfille—witness] C  
*om.* witness] witnesses R. riȝt]  
COB *om.* it] he R.

260. þat] O *om.* pecok] pocok  
O.

261. riche] riche man B.

263. wenge] wyng WCO ; whenge  
B.

266. Arestotle] For aristotel R ;  
Aristole C. he] COB *om.*

267. logyk] glosinge R. leste]  
leeste W.

268. where] wheiþer W. sauf (1)]  
saue C. sauf (2)] COB *om.* no]  
þe (1) O.

269. of (2)] COB *om.*

271. weyes] wayes C.

273. soules] soule R.

274. men (2)] CB *om.* ȝut] yet  
WO ; yit CB. ne were] nere CB : ner  
O. lore] loore W. her] þe R.

"Clerks deny  
salvation to  
Saracens and  
Jews," said I.

¶ "Alle þise clerkes," quod I þo · "þat on cryst  
leuen,

Seggen in her sarmones · þat noyther sarasenes ne  
iewes,

Ne no creature of cristes lyknesse · with-uten crysten-  
dome worth sauēd." 277

¶ "Contra," quod ymagynatyf þo · and comsed for to  
loure,

1 Pet. iv. 18.

And seyde, "*saluabitur vix iustus in die iudicij.*

¶ *Ergo saluabitur,*" quod he · and seyde namore latyne.

"Trajan was  
sawed, though  
never baptized,"  
said he.

"Troianus was a trewe knyȝte · and toke neuere cristen-  
dome, 280

And he is sauēf, so seith þe boke · and his soule in  
heuene.

"There is also a  
laptism by *blood*,  
and one by *fire*."

For þere is fullyng of fonte · and fullyng in blode  
shedyngē,

And þorough fuire is fullyng · and þat is ferme bilene ;  
*Aduenit ignis diuinus, non comburens, sed  
illuminans, &c.*

True men, that  
never trespass,  
must be approved  
of by a true God.

¶ Ac trewth þat trespassed neuere · ne transuersed  
azeines his lawe, 284

But lyueth as his lawe techeth · and leueth þere be no  
bettere,

And if þere were, he wolde amende · and in suche wille  
deyeth,

Ne wolde neuere trewe god · but treuth were allowed ;

And where it worth or worth nouȝt · þe bileue is grete  
of treuth, 288

275. *quod*] quo B. *on*] in W.

276. *Seggen*] Seyen W; Sayand C.  
*noyther sarasenes*] no sarazyns C;  
no Sarsyn B.

278. *comsed*] bygane C.

281. *is*] R *om.* *sauf*] saaf W; O  
*om.* *so*] as COB.

282. *For*] Ae R. *fonte*] founte C.

283. *fuire*] fuir R; fir WO; fier B;  
fire C. *sed*] set C.

284. *Ae*] And C. *transuersed*] so

*also in R; trauersed WCOB. azeines*  
*azen R.*

285. *lyueth*] lyued R. *techeth*  
*tauȝte R.*

286. *if*] B *om.*

287. *treuth*] trewe treuthe R.

288. *where*] wheiper W; were  
RCOB. *it*] it be W. *worth nouȝt*  
worth nauȝte R; nouȝt worȝ W; nouȝt  
C; nouȝt B; not O.

And an hope hangyng þer-inne · to haue a Mede for his  
treuthe. 289 There is much  
hope of such.

For, *Deus dicitur quasi dans vitam eternam  
suis, hoc est, fidelibus; et alibi:*

*si ambulauero in medio vmbre mortis, [ſc.]*

Ps. xxii.  
(Vulg.).

þe gloſe graunteth vpon þat ver · a gret mede to treuthe,  
And witt and wiſdome, ” quod þat wye · “ was ſomme Wit and wiſdom  
were once  
thought to be the  
wealth of a  
nation.”  
tyme treſore,  
To kepe with a comune · no katel was holde bettere,  
And moche murth and manhod: ”—and riȝt with þat Then he  
vanished.  
he vanesched. 293

289. a] CB om. for] B om. For] 291. wye] weye R.  
Quia COB. [ſc CROB] LW om. 293. manhod] manhede R; manhed  
290. treuthe] trewe R. C. with] myd R.

## PASSUS XIII (DO-WEL V).

*Passus terciodecimus.*

Then I awoke,  
and thought  
much about my  
dream—

how Fortune  
failed me,

and friars would  
bury no poor,

[Fol. 53.]

and evil priests  
betrayed men to  
final doom;

And I awaked þere-with · witles nerehande,  
And as a freke þat fre were · forth gan I walke  
In manere of a mendynaunt · many a ȝere after,  
And of þis metyng many tyme · moche þouȝt I hadde. 4  
First, how fortune me failed · at my moste nede,  
And how þat elde manaced me · myȝt we euere meten ;  
And how þat freris folwed · folke þat was riche,  
And folke þat was pore · at litel prys þei sette, 8  
And no corps in her kirkeȝerde · ne in her kyrke was  
buried,  
But quikke he biquethe hem auȝte · or shulde helpe  
quyte her dettes.  
And how þis coueitise ouercome · clerkes and prestes,  
And how þat lewed men ben ladde · but owre lorde  
hem helpe, 12  
þorough vnkonnynge curatoures · to incurable peynes.

TITLE. Passus terciodecimus LCO;  
Passus xiiijus, &c. W; Passus duode-  
cimus (!) de visione, vt supra R;  
Passus tercius decimus et Sextus [read  
Quintus] de dowel B.

1. *awaked*] wakede O.
2. *a*] C om. *fre*] fere R; fey B.  
*walke*] walken R.
3. *a mendynaunt*] amendement (!)  
B. *a* (2)] RCOB om.
4. *tyme*] tymes R.

6. *manaced*] mansed R. *myȝt*—  
*euere*] we miȝte neuere COB.

7. *was*] weren O.
8. *was*] weren O.
9. *ne*] nor W. *her* (2)] hir  
(printed his) W; C om. *was*] were R.
10. *quikke*] þei quyk B. *he*] CB  
om. *hem*] hym B; W om. *or*—  
*quyte*] to quyte wiþ W.
11. *þis*] COB om.; þus R.
13. *peynes*] peyne C.

¶ And how þat ymagynatyf · in dremeles me tolde,  
Of kynde and of his connyng · and how curteise he is  
to bestes,

and how Imaginative taught me how loving Nature is;

And how louyng he is to bestes · on londe and on  
water ;

16

Leneth he no lyf · lasse ne more ;

þe creatures þat crepen · of kynde ben engendred.

And sitthen how ymagynatif seyde · *vix iustus sal-*  
*uabitur,*

and how he spoke of the difficulty of salvation, and then vanished.

And whan he had seyde so · how sodeynelich he  
passed.

20

¶ I lay down longe in þis þouzte · and atte laste I  
slepte,

And, as cryste wolde, þere come conscience · to conforte  
me þat tyme,

Again I dreamt, and beheld Conscience, who said I should dine with Clergy.

And bad me come to his courte · with clergye sholde I  
dyne.

¶ And for conscience of clergye spake · I come wel þe  
rather,

24

And þere I say a maistre · what man he was I neste,  
þat lowe louted · and loueliche to scripture.

Then saw I a master, who went with Conscience to dinner.

¶ Conscience knewe hym wel · and welcomed hym  
faire ;

þei wesshen and wypeden · and wenten to þe dyner. 28

Ac pacience in þe paleis stode · in pilgrymes clothes,  
And preyde mete for charite · for a pore heremyte.

Patience stood without.

¶ Conscience called hym in · and curteisliche seide,

Conscience called him in.

14—20. R omits.

14. *dremeles*] *dremes* C.

15. *his*] COB *om.*

16. *is*] *his* C. *bestes*] *briddes* W.

17. *Leneth*] *Leueþ* or *Lenep* (*printed*  
Leneth) W.

19. *sitthen*] COB *om.* *iustus*] W  
*om.*

21. *down*] CB *om.*

22. *þat*] *in þat* R.

23. *me*] O *om.* *sholde*] *shul* C.

24. *come*] *com* WC ; *cam* RB.

25. *say*] *sei*; WCO. *neste*] *so in*  
LRC; *nyste* WOB.

26. *louted*] *a-loutid* B.

27. *Conscience*] *Conscien* C. *wel*  
B *om.*

28. *wesshen*] *wasscheden* O ; *wes-*  
*shenden* (*sie*) C. *wypeden*] *wipten*  
B. *wenten*] *wente* R ; *went* C. *þe*  
COB *om.*

29. *Ac*] And WC.

30. *for* (1)] *par* WO ; *pur* B.

“Welcome, [wye!] go and wasshe · þow shalt sitte  
sone.” 32

The master sat  
in the best place.

¶ Þis maister was made sitte · as for þe moste worthy,  
And þanne clergye and conscience · and pacience cam  
after.

Patience and I  
sat at a side-  
board.

¶ Pacience and I · were put to be macches,  
And seten by owre selue · at a syde-borde. 36  
¶ Conscience called after mete · and þanne cam  
scripture,

And serued hem þus sone · of sondry metes manye,  
Of austyn, of ambrose · of alle þe foure euangelistes ;

Luke x. 7.

*Edentes & bibentes que apud eos sunt.*

Ac þis maister ne his man · no manere flesshe eten, 40

The master and  
his man ate  
costly dishes, but  
their sauce was  
over-sour.

Ac þei ete mete of more coste · mortrewes and potages ;  
Of þat men mys-wonne · þei made hem wel at cse.

Ac her sauce was ouer soure · & vnsauourely grounde,  
In a mortar, *post-mortem* · of many bitter peyne, 44  
But if þei synge for þo soules · and wepe salt teres :

*Vos qui peccata hominum comeditis, nisi pro eis  
lacrimas & orationes effunderitis, ea que in  
delicijs comeditis, in tormentis euometis.*

Conscience hade  
Scripture bring  
[Fol. 53 ]  
bread for  
Patience and me.

Conscience ful curteisly þo · comaunded scripture  
Bifor pacience bred to brynge · and me þat was his  
macche.

He sette a soure lof to-for vs · and seyde, “*agite peni-  
tenciam,*” 48

32. [wye WO] weye R; wy C; L  
wye, altered to wye] ȝe; B om.

33. as] and COB.

34. And] COB om.

35. put] pote R. be macches] ben  
mettes R.

36. seten] sitten C. a] þe W

38. hem] hym R.

39. of alle] and of W. *Edentes*]  
Edentes (*printed Edentis*) W.

40. Ae] And C. ne] nor W.

41. Ae] And C. ete mete] hadde  
metes R. mortrewes] mortreux C.

42. wel] B om.

43. Ae] And C. ouer] euere COB.  
grounde] y-grounde CB.

44. many] many a W. peyne]  
peynes O.

45. þo] the COB. and wepe] with  
many R. lacrimas] lacrimis C. L  
has in the margin—contra sacerdots.

46. ful] L has for altered to ful;  
ful WR; COB om.

47. macche] make COB; mete R.

48. lof] lafe C. to-for] to-foru W.

- And sith he drough vs drynke · [*diu*]-*perseuerans*. Mat. iii. 2;  
cf. x. 22.
- “As longe,” *quod* I, “as I lyue · and lycame may dure!”
- “Here is propre seruice,” *quod* pacience · “per fareth  
no prynce bettere;”
- ¶ And þanne he brouȝt vs forth a mees of other mete · Ps. 1. (Vulgate).  
of *Miserere-mei-deus*; 52
- And he brouȝt vs of *Beati-quorum* · of *beatus-virres* Ps. xxxi. 1, 2.  
makyngē,
- Et-quorum-tecta-sunt* · *peccata* in a disshe Ps. xxxi. 1.
- Of derne shrifte, *dixi* · and *confitebor tibi!* Ps. xxxi. 6.
- “Bryngē pacience some pitaunce” · pryueliche *quod*  
conscience; 56
- ¶ And þanne had pacience a pitaunce · *pro-hac-orabit-*  
*ad-te-omnis-sanctus-in-tempore-oportuno*; Patience had a  
pittance of Ps.  
xxx. 6.
- And conscience confortēd vs · and carped vs mery tales,  
*Cor contritum & humiliatum, deus, non de-* Ps. 1. 19.  
*spicies.*
- ¶ Pacience was proude · of þat propre seruice,  
And made hym muirth with his mete · ac I morned I mourned to see  
the doctor drink  
so much wine.  
euere, 60
- For þis doctoure on þe heigh dese · dranke wyn so faste;  
*Ve vobis qui potentes estis ad bibendum vinum!* Isa. v. 22.
- ¶ He eet many sondry metes · mortrewes and puddynges, He ate all sorts of  
good dishes.  
Wombe-cloutes and wylde braune · & egges yfryed  
with grece.

49. *W has*—And sippe he brouȝt vs drynke · *Dia perseuerans*—(omitted in printed copy). [*diu* OB] *dia* LWR; *dya* C.

50. *As*] Also B. *I* (1)] he RO. *I lyue*] lif R.

51. *is*] C om.

52. *vs*] COB om. *a mees of*] COB om. *deus*] R om.

53. *he—vs*] COB om. *vs*] R om. of (2)] and of R. *virres*] so in LW; vir COB; vir his R.

54. *Et*] And R.

55. *and*] & W.

56. *Bryngē*] And bryngē CB.

*pitaunce*] CB om. *pryueliche*] O om.

57. *And*] R om. C begins—And thanne come to pacience · a pitaunce ybroughte; O *has the same*; B *the same, with com þer for come. pro*] Of pro COB. *ad te*] R om.

58. *humiliatum*] miswritten *humilitatum in L*.

60. *mete*] mene R. *ac*] and C.

61. *on—dese*] vp-on þis hey deyes R. *dranke*] dronk R. *vinum*] CB om.

62. *He*] And R. *eet*] ete CB. *mortrewes*] mortreux C; mortrels B.

63. *yfryed*] fryed R; fried CB

þanne seide I to my-self · so pacience it herde, 64

“Only 4 days ago he preached from 2 Cor. xi. 27,” said I.

“It is nouzt foure dayes þat þis freke · bifor þe den of poules,

Preched of penaunces · þat poule þe apostle suffred,

In fame & frigore · and flappes of scourges ;

2 Cor. xi. 25, 24.

*Ter cesus sum, & a iuleis quinquies quadragenas, &c.*

“They forget St Paul’s words in 2 Cor. xi. 26,

¶ Ac o worde þei ouerhuppen · at ech a tyme þat þei preche, 68

þat poule in his pistel · to al þe peple tolde ;

*Periculum est in falsis fratribus.*

which I will not translate.

Holywrit bit men be war · I wil nouzt write it here

On englisch, an auenture · it shokde be rehersed to ofte,

And greue þere-with þat good men ben · ac gramarienes shul rede ; 72

*Vnusquisque a fratre se custodiat, quia, et dicitur, periculum est in falsis fratribus.*

I never heard a friar preach from that text !

¶ Ac I wist neuere freke þat as a frere zede · bifor men on englisshe

Taken it for her teme · and telle it with-uten glosynge.

þei prechen þat penaunce · is profitable to þe soule,

And what myschief and malese · cryst for man tholed,

Ac þis goddes gloton,” quod I · “with his gret chekes,

Hath no pyte on vs pore · he performeth yuel ; 78

þat he precheth he preueth nouzt” · to pacience I tolde,

65. *is*] C om. *den*] deen WB ; dene C. *of*] of seynt R.

66. *penaunces*] penaunce C.

67. *&*] and C ; et R.

68. *Ac*] And C. *ouerhuppen*] ouerhippen CB. *a*] CB om. *preche*] prechen RCB.

69. *pistel*] epistle O. *al*] O om. *Periculum—in*] Et in periculo R. *in*] O om.

70. *bit*] biddiþ B ; bides C. *write*] writen R ; writte C.

71. *On*] In WRB. *an*] on W ; in B. *auenture*] aunter O.

72. *þat*] W om. *men*] COB om. *ben*] W om. *ac*] an C. *rede*] redde W.

73. *Ac*] And C ; R om. *a*] R om. *on*] an R.

74. *her*] his W. *telle*] tellen R.

75. *þei*] Ac þei R.

76. *and*] or COB. *malese*] male ese WRO ; mal esse C ; malaise B. *tholed*] tholde C.

77. *Ac*] And C.

78. *pore*] pore men OB ; pouere men C. *performeth*] performeþ B.

79. *he—nouzt*] and preueth R.

And wissched witterly · with wille ful egre, 80

þat disshes a[nd] doblers · bifor þis ilke doctour,

Were [molten] led in his maw · and Mahoun amyddes !

“I shal iangle to þis Iurdan · with his iust wombe,

To telle me what penaunce is · of which he preched  
rather.”— 84

Paciencie perceyued what I thouȝt · and wynked on me  
to be stille,

And seyde, “þow shalt se þus sone · whan he may no  
more,

He shal haue a penaunce in his paunche · and puffe at  
ech a worde,

And þanne shullen his guttis godele · and he shal  
galpen after ; 88

For now he hath dronken so depe · he wil deuyne sone,

And preuen it by her pocalips · and passioun of seynt  
Auerays,

þat neither bacoun ne braune · blan[c]mangere ne mor-  
trewes

Is noither fische [ne] flesshe · but fode for a penaunte.

And þanne shal he testifye of a trinitee · and take his  
felawe to witesse, 93

What he fonde in a freyel · after a freres lyuyng,

80. *wissched*] wissed C. *witterly*] ful witterly W. *ful*] for (*corrected to* ful) L; ful WCROB.

81. *and*] *miswritten a in* L. *doblers*] doublers WC; doubleris O; dubbleris B. *ilke*] ille B; R *om.*

82. [*molten* WCOB] molte R; moltoun L. *led*] leded (!) C. *his*] here R.

83. *iust*] mysty R; Iutte, *corrected to* Iuste O.

84. *me*] men O. *rather*] þere ay R.

85. *wynked—to*] bad me R.

86. *shalt*] salt C.

87. *a* (1)] C *om.* *a* (2)] CB *om.*

88. *godele*] godle R; goþele WC; groþele O; gruwe B.

89. *wil*] wole WRB. *deuyne*] dyuye (*sic*) B. *In the margin of* O—Doctors of freris.

90. *by*] R *om.*; by-for C. *her pocalips*] þe apoccalipsis B.

91. *blanmangere*] *so in* WCO; blaumanger or blanmanger L; bla-manger B; ne blanmanger R. *mortreues*] mortreux C; mortrels B.

92. *fische*] fisse C. [*ne* CROB] nor W; no L. *fische—fleshe*] fleisch ne fisch B. *a penaunte*] þe penauntes R; a penaunce C.

93. *þanne*] C *om.* *a*] þe W. *felawe*] felawes COB.

94. *freyel*] frayel WCB; freiel R. *a* (2)] COB *om.* *freres lyuyng*] frere leyunge R.

I wished the good dishes had been molten lead in his maw.

[Fol. 54.]

Paciencie said the doctor would do penance soon,

and prove that such dishes are a penitent's food.

"He will begin  
and talk lies.

And but if þe fyrst lyne be lesyng · leue me neuere  
after!

Then ask him  
about Do-well."

And þanne is tyme to take · and to appose þis doctoure  
Of dowel and of dobet · and if dobest be any pe-  
naunce."— 97

¶ And I sete stille, as pacience seyde · and þus sone  
þis doctour,

Soon the doctor  
coughed and  
talked.

As rody as a rose · rubbed his chekes,  
Coughed and carped · and conscience hym herde, 100  
And tolde hym of a trinite · and toward vs he loket.

"Is Do-well pen-  
ance?" said I.

¶ "What is dowel? sire doctour," quod I · "is dowel  
any penaunce?"

"Do-well," said  
he, and drank,  
"is to do no evil."

¶ "Dowel?" quod þis doctour— and toke þe cuppe  
and dranke—

"Do non yuel to þine euene-crystene · nouȝt by þi  
powere." 104

"Then you do  
not well," I said,  
"for you have  
eaten up our  
pudding!"

¶ "By þis day, sire doctour," quod I · "þanne be ȝe  
nouȝt in dowel;

For ȝe han harmed vs two · in þat ȝe eten þe pud-  
dyng,

Mortrewes, and other mete · and we no [morsel] hade!  
And if ȝe fare so in ȝowre fermorie · ferly me þinketh,  
But chest be þere charite shulde be · & ȝonge ehildern  
dorste pleyne! 109

I wolde permute my penaunce with ȝowre · for I am in  
poynte to dowel!"

95. *if*] W om. *þe—lyne*] he first  
lyue W; þe first leef O; the first lif  
C; þe frust lif B.

96. *take*] talke R. *to* (2)] COB  
om.

97. *of* (2)] WO om. *dobest*] dowel  
W. *be*] do B.

98. *sete*] sat WCROB. *as*] an  
(*sic*) C.

99. *As*] Al so B. *rubbed*] robbed  
R.

100. *Coughed*] Couȝwede R; Com-  
sed B.

101. *rs*] vs al C; vs alle B.

102. *is* (1)] his C. *dowel*] do-best  
R; it W.

103. *toke—dranke*] dronk after R.

104. *Do*] Is do W; Crowley *also*  
*inserts* Is; *but see* C-Text; and *cf.* l.  
115.

105. *day*] O om. *þanne*] COB om.

106. *han*] haue R.

107. *Mortrewes*] Mortreux C; Mor-  
trels B. [*morsel* WCB] mussel LRO.

108. *if*] R om. *fermorie*] Fer-  
merye WCR.

109. *chest*] cheeste W. *be*] O om.  
*ȝonge*] CB om.

¶ þann̄ conscience curteisliche · a contenance he made, Then Conscience asked him the same.  
 And preynte vpon pacience · to preie me to be stille,  
 And seyde hym-self, “sire doctour · and it be ȝowre wille, 113

What is dowel and dobet? · ȝe deynours knoweth.”

¶ “Dowel,” quod þis doctour · “do as clerkes techeth, “Do-well,” said he, “obeys; Do-bet teaches; Do-best both teaches and obeys.”  
 And dobet is he þat techeth · and trauailleth to teche other, 116

And dobest doth hym-self so · as he seith & precheth :—

*Qui facit et docuerit, magnus vocabitur in regno celorum.* Mat. v. 19. ·

¶ “Now þow, clergye,” quod conscience · “carpest what is dowel.”

“I haue seuene sones,” he seyde · “seruen in a castel, The seven sons of Clergy (i. e. the seven sciences).  
 þere þe lorde of lyf wonyeth · to leren hym what is dowel; 120

¶ Til I se þo seuene · and my-self acorden, I am vnhardy,” quod he · “to any wyȝt to preue it.

For one pieres þe ploughman · hath inpugned vs alle, [Fol. 54 b.] “Piers the Ploughman says all is worthless except love.”  
 And sette alle sciences at a soppe · saue loue one, 124  
 And no tixte ne taketh · to meyntene his cause,

But *dilige deum* · and *domine, quis habitabit, &c.*

And seith þat dowel and dobet · aren two infinites, Whiche infinites, with a feith · fynden oute dobest, 128  
 Which shal saue mannes soule · þus seith piers þe ploughman.”

¶ “I can nouȝt her-on,” quod conscience · “ac I knowe wel pieres ;

111. *curteisliche*] ful curteislich lerne COB. *hym*] hem CB; WO R. *he*] WCOB *om.*

112. *preynte*] prentede R; pryntid 122. *to preue*] proue R.  
 B. *pacience*] penaunce B. *to* (2)] 124. *sciencs*] science RO. *soppe*] COB *om.* soep R; sope W.

115. *do*] dos R.

117. *doth*] doo C.

118. *carpest*] capest (*by mistake*) *tro*] twa C.

C. 128. *a*] oo B.

119. *seuene*] R *om.* *in*] at COB. 129. *þe*] CB *om.*

120. *wonyeth*] woneth CB. *leren*] 130. *ac*] and C. *wel*] COB *om.*

Conscience says  
they must wait  
till Piers comes.

He wil nouȝt aȝein holy writ speken · I dar wel vnder-  
take ;

þanne passe we ouer til piers come · and preue þis in  
dede. 132

Paciencie hath be in many place · and perautre  
cnoweth

þat no clerke ne can · as cryst bereth witnessse ;

*Pacientes vincunt, &c.*"

Cf. Mat. x. 22.

" At ȝowre preyere," quod pacyence þo · " so no man  
displese hym ;

" Learn, and do  
well ; teach, and  
do better ; love,  
and do best.

*Disce,*" quod he, "*doce · dilige inimicos.*" 136

*Disce,* and dowel · *doce,* & dobet ;

*Dilige,* and dobest · þus tauȝte me ones

A lemman þat I loued · loue was hir name.

' With wordes and with werkes,' quod she · ' and wille  
of þyne herte, 140

þow loue lelly þi soule · al þi lyf tyme ;

And so þow lere þe to louye · for þe lordes loue of  
heuene,

þine enemye in al wyse · euene forth with þi-seluc.

Cast coals upon  
thine enemy's  
head.

Cast coles on his hed · and al kynde speche, 144

Bothe with werkes and with wordes · fonde his loue to  
wynne ;

And lay on hym þus with loue · til he la[u]ghe on þe ;

And but he bowe for þis betyng · blynde mote he  
worthe !

¶ Ac for to fare þus with þi frende · foly it were, 148

131. *aȝein*] *aȝeynes* R. *dar wel*] et dilige.  
dar O ; CB *om.* *vndertake*] vnder-  
stonde B.

133. *place*] places CB ; a place  
R. *perautre*] par auenture RCO.  
*cnoweth*] knoweth RO ; knowiþ B ;  
knowes C ; mouþed W.

134. *ne can*] can R ; knoweþ O.

135. *At*] *so in* CROB ; *written like*  
Ac in LW. *hym*] hem R.

136. *quod*] quod (*printed quo*) W.  
*doce*] & doce O. *dilige*] and dilige  
COB. *In margin of* L—*disce, doce,*

138. O *omits.*

140. *with* (2)] COB *om.*

141. *þow*] R *om.*

142. *þow*] to R. *þe* (1)] and R.  
*þe* (2)] oure W.

144. *and*] of WRB.

145. *werkes—wordes*] werke and  
word COB.

146. *lay*] ley R ; leye WO ; lye C ;  
beie B. *laughe* C] lauge W ; laughe  
R ; lawȝhe O ; lauzghe B ; laghe L.

148. *Ac*] And C.

For he þat loueth þe lelly · lyte of þyne coueiteth.

Thy friend needs  
not such treat-  
ment.

Kynde loue coueiteth nouȝte · no catel but speche,

With half a laumpe lyne in latyne · *ex vi transicionis.*'

¶ I bere þere-inne aboute · fast ybounde dowel, 152

I bear about Do-  
well, fast bound,"  
said Patience.

In a signe of þe saterday · þat sette firste þe kalendare,

And al þe witte of þe wednesday · of þe nexte wyke  
after;

þe myddel of þe mone · is þe miȝte of bothe.

And here-with am I welcome · þere I haue it with me."

¶ "Vndo it, late þis doctour deme · if dowel be þer-  
inne;

For, bi hym þat me made · miȝte neuere pouerte, 158

"No evil can  
harm him who  
has Charity.

Miseise, ne myselief · ne man with his tonge,

Colde, ne care · ne compaignye of theues,

Ne noither hete, ne haille · ne non helle pouke,

Ne noither fuire ne flode · ne fere of þine enemy 162

Tene þe eny tyme · and þow take it with þe;

*Caritas nichil timet.*

1 John iv. 18.

[And eek, haue god my soule ! · and þow wilt it craue,

þere nys neyther emperour ne emperesse · erl, kyngge,

ne baroun, 165

Pope, ne patriareh · þat puyre reson ne schal make

þe meyster of alle þo men · þoruȝ miȝt of þis redeles;

Nouȝt thoruȝ wicche-crafte, but thoruȝ wit · (& þow  
wilt þi-selue) 168

Reason, by help  
of Charity, will  
make thee master  
of all men."

Do kyngge and quene · and alle þe comune after

ȝyue þe alle þat þei may ȝiue · as [for þe] best ȝemere,

149. *lyte*] *litel* WCB; *litol* O. *coueiteth*] *desireth* R.

151. *transicionis*] *transgressionis* O.

152. *aboute*] a *beaut* C; a *beaute* B. *In margin of L*—*Solucion.*

154. *And*] In O. *þe* (2)] *Com. wednesday*] *wodnesday* W; *wednesday* R. *wyke*] *woke* O.

155. *is*] as W. *miȝte*] *nyght* WCB.

157. *late*] and *late* R. *deme*] *dem* C; *se* R; *sen* (*altered to deme*) L. *if*] *where* R. *þer-inne*] *here-inne* R.

159. *Miseise*] *Misaise* B. *ne*] *ne* no W.

161. *noither*] *nother* R; *neiþer* WOB; *nouther* C.

162. *noither*] *nother* R; *neiþer* OCB; W *om. enemy*] *enemies* O.

164—171. *In R only; but cf. C*—Text, *which has a passage epitomized from it.*

170. [*for þe*] *such is my conjecture; the MS has þe for.*

And, as þou demest, wil þei do · alle here dayes after ;  
*Pacientes vincunt, &c.*”]

“Nonsense,” said  
 the doctor ;  
 [Fol. 55.]

¶ “It is but a dido,” quod þis doctour · “a dysoures tale.  
 Al þe witt of þis worlde · and wizte mennes strengthe  
 Can nouȝt confourmen a pees · bytwene þe pope and  
 his enemys, 174

“no one can  
 reconcile two  
 Christian kings!”

Ne bitwene two cristene kynges · can no wizte pees  
 make,

Profitable to ayther peple ” · and put þe table fro hym,  
 And toke clergye and conscience · to conseille, as it  
 were, 177

þat pacience þo moste passe · for pilgrimes kunne wel lye.

Conscience rose  
 up to go.

¶ Ac conscience carped loude · and curteislich seide,  
 “Frendes, fareth wel ” · and faire spake to clergye, 180  
 “For I wil go with þis gome · if god wil ȝine me *grace*,  
 And be pilgryme with pacience · til I haue proued more.”

¶ “What?” quod clergye to conscience · “ar ȝe  
 coueitouse nouthe

Clergy says he  
 will fetch him a  
 bible.

After ȝeresȝyues or ȝiftes · or ȝemen to rede redeles?  
 I shal brynge ȝow a bible · a boke of þe olde lawe, 185  
 And lere ȝow, if ȝow lyke · þe leest poynte to knowe,  
 þat pacience þe pilgryme · *perfitly* knewe neuere.”

¶ “Nay, bi cryste,” quod conscience to clergye · “god  
 þe forȝekle, 188

For al þat pacience me *profreth* · proude am I litel.

Conscience  
 wishes to mourn  
 for his sins.

Ac þe wille of þe wye · and þe wille [of] folke here  
 Hath moeued my mode · to mourne for my synnes.

173. *and*] ne R. *wizte*] wiȝ O ;  
 wiȝth B.

174. *þe pope*] W *om. enemys*] *enmye* B ; *enmye* C.

175. *wizte*] wiȝth B.

178. *pacience*] *pacien (sic)* C. *þo*] *þoo* O ; *þow* W. *moste*] *moost* C ;  
*mote* R.

179. *Ac*] And C. *loude*] *aloude* R.

181. *mē*] the CB.

183. *ar*] er C.

184. *or* (1)] an C ; & O ; and B.

*or* (2)] other R. *to*] ye to C ; ȝe to  
 B. *redeles*] *rideles* CO.

186. *ȝow lyke*] ȝe liken R. *leest*] *best* COB.

187. *þet*] R *om. neuere*] *eure* R.

188. *to clergye*] CB *om.*

189. *litel*] ful litil O ; but litile CB.

190. *Ac*] And C. *þe* (2)] that CB.  
*þe wille* (2)] ȝe wolen O ; ye wille  
 CB. [*of WO*] LCRB *om.*

191. *moeued*] *meued* WRO ; *moued*

C.

þe good wille of a wizte · was neure bouzte to þe fulle ;  
For þere nys no tresore þerto · to a trewe wille. 193

¶ Haued nouzt Magdeleine more · for a boxe of salue,  
þan zacheus for he seide · *dimidium bonorum meorum* Luke xix. 8.  
*do pauperibus ?*

And þe pore widwe · for a peire of mytes, 196 Luke xxi. 3.  
þan alle þo that offreden · in-to *gazafilacium ?*"

¶ þus curteislich conscience · congeyde fyrst þe Frere, Conscience bids  
farewell to all.

And sithen softliche he seyde · in clergyes ere,  
" Me were leuer, by owre lordle · and I lyue schulde, 200  
Haue pacience *perfitlich* · þan half þi ʒakke of bokes !"

¶ Clergye to conscience · no congeye wolde take, Clergy will  
not say farewell  
to him.  
But seide ful sobrelliche · " þow shalt se þe tyme,  
Whan þow art wery for-walked · wilne me to con-  
saille." 204

¶ " þat is soth," seyde conscience · " so me god helpe ! Conscience and  
Clergy together  
might reform the  
world.  
If pacience be owre partyng felawe · and pryue with vs  
bothe,

There nys wo in þis worlde · þat we ne schulde amende,  
And confourmen Kynges to pees · and al kynnes londes,  
Sarasenes and surre · and so forth alle þe iewes 209  
Turne in-to þe trewe feithe · and in-til one byleue."

¶ " þat is soth," quod clergye · " I se what þow menest, Clergy says he  
will do his duty.  
I shal dwelle as I do · my deuore to shewen, 212

And conformen fauntekynes · and other folke ylered, [Fol. 55 b.]  
Tyl pacience haue preued þe · and parfite þe maked."

192. *a*] vch a R. *neure*] nere R.  
193. *nys*] is CB. *þerto*] for soþe W.  
194. *Haued*] Hadde WCOB. *Mag-  
deleine*] marie magdeleyne R; Mau-  
deleyne W.  
195. *do*] da C.  
197. *gazafilacium*] Gazophilacium  
W; gazofilacium R.  
198. *fyrst*] O om.  
199. *softliche*] sothliche CB.  
201. *þi*] this CB.  
202. *to*] of W; and R.  
204. *for-walked*] of-walked W.  
*wilne*] wille W.

205. *seyde*] quod WCOB.  
207. *nys*] ne is R; is no COB.  
208. *al kynnes*] alle kynnes W;  
alle kynne R; al kyns O.  
209. *Sarasenes*] And Sarasynes R.  
*surre*] al Surrie B; surry C; Surrie  
R. *þe*] R om.  
210. *Turne*] Turmen R; Torne C.  
*one*] oure B.  
212. *deuore*] denoir WCOB; deuer  
R.  
213. *conformen*] so in R; confer-  
men WCO; confirmen B; cf. l. 208.  
214. *preued*] serued O.

Conscience and  
Patience set out  
as pilgrims.

¶ Conscience þo with pacience passed · pilgrymes as it  
were.

þanne had pacience, as pylgrymes han · in his poke  
vittailles, 216

Sobrete, and symple speche · and sothfaste byleue,  
To conforte hym and conscience · if þey come in place  
þere vnkyndenesse and coueytise is · hungrye contrees  
· bothe.

Soon they meet  
with a minstrel.

¶ And as þei went by þe weye · of dowel þei carped ;  
þei mette with a mynstral · as me þo þouzte. 221

Pacience apposed hym fyrste · and preyed hym he  
sholde hem telle

Patience asks  
him who he is.

To conscience, what crafte he couthe · an to what  
contree he wolde.

"I am *activa-  
vita*," he says,  
"a wafer-seller.

¶ "I am a mynstral," *quod* þat man · "my name is  
*actiua vita* : 224

Alle ydel ich hatye · for of actyf is my name.

A wafrere, wil 3e wite · and serue many lordes,

And fewe robes I fonge · or furred gounes. 227

Couthe I lye to do men laughe · þanne lacchen I shulde  
Other mantel or money · amonges lordes mynstralles.

Because I can  
play neither on  
tabour, trump,  
nor pipe,

Ac for I can noither tabre ne trompe · ne telle none  
gestes,

Farten, ne fythelen · at festes, ne harpen,

Iape ne iogly · ne gentlych pype, 232

I get no gifts,

Ne noyther sailly ne saute · ne syngre with þe gyterne,

I haue none gode gyftes · of þise grete lordes,

215. *passed*] *passip* B.

219. *hungrye contrees*] *honger con-  
treyes* R.

220. *þei*] *þe* W. *of*] and of R.  
*þei* (2)] R *om.* *carped*] *carpeden* O.

221. *mette*] *metten* R O. *mynstral*] *ministrale* R. *þo*] B *om.*

222. *fyrste*] *þoo* O. *hym* (2)] CB *om.*  
225. *Alle*] And alle O. *ydel*] *ydel-  
nesse* W. *of*] O *om.*

226. *wil*] *wol* WCB; *welle* R.

227. *And*] I C; A B.

228. *Couthe*] *Coude* R. *lye*] *lee* C.  
*to*] and R.

229. *money*] *mone* R. *mynstralles*] *or mynstrals* W.

230. *Ac*] And C. *tabre*] *taborne*  
C. *none*] no WO; noon C.

232. CB *om.* *iogly*] *Iogele* WO;  
*iangele* R.

233. *sailly*] *saille* WO; *sayle* RB.  
*saute*] *santre* C.

234. *none*] no WO; na C. *þise*] *bis* RC.

For no bred þat I brynge forth · saue a beneson on þe save a blessing on  
sonday, Sunday.

Whan þe prest preyeth þe peple · her *pater-noster* to  
bidde 236

For peres þe plowman · and þat hym profite wayten.

And þat am I, actyf · þat ydelnesse hatye, I hate idleness.

For alle trewe *trauailours* · and tilieres of þe erthe ;  
Fro mychelmesse to mychelmesse · I fynde hem with  
wafres. 240

¶ Beggeres and bidderes · of my bred crauen, Beggars, friars,  
Faitoures and freres · and folke with brode crounes. and the pope  
I fynde payne for þe pope · and prouendre for his have bread from  
palfrey, me.

And I hadde neuere of hym · haue god my treuthe, 244  
Noither prouendre ne *parsonage* · ȝut of þe popis ȝifte,  
Saue a pardoun with a peys of led · and two pollis  
amydde !

Hadde iche a clerke þat couthe write · I wolde caste The pope ought  
hym a bille, to send me a  
þat he sent me vnder his seel · a salue for þe pesti- cure for the  
lence, pestilence. 248

And þat his blessing & his bulles · bocches miȝte de-  
stroye :

*In nomine meo demonia [eiciunt], & super egros* Mark xvi. 17, 18.  
*manus imponent, & bene habebunt.*

And þanne wolde I be prest to [þe] peple · paste for to  
make,

And buxome and busy · aboute bred and drynke

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 235. <i>brynge</i> ] brouȝt R.                     | 246. <i>peys</i> ] payes C. <i>amydde</i> ]     |
| 236. <i>preyeth</i> ] preches C; prechip           | amyddes W.                                      |
| B.   | 247. <i>iche</i> ] ech C; ich WR.               |
| 237. <i>peres</i> ] pier C. <i>þat</i> ] þo þat B. | 248. <i>sent</i> ] sende B. <i>In margin of</i> |
| <i>wayten</i> ] wayteth RB.                        | R—laus & vis Indulgentiarum.                    |
| 238. <i>am I</i> ] I am CROB.                      | 249. <i>And</i> ] R om. <i>þat</i> ] B om.      |
| 239. <i>Ffor</i> ] Of R. <i>þe</i> ] COB om.       | <i>bocches miȝte</i> ] myȝte bocches O.         |
| 240. <i>with</i> ] wiȝ my W; O om.                 | [ <i>eiciunt</i> ] so in WCROB; eiciunt L.      |
| 241. <i>bidderes</i> ] bilderis B.                 | 250. [þe WCROB] L om. <i>paste</i> ]            |
| 243. <i>prouendre</i> ] prouende B.                | paast W; past B.                                |
| 245. <i>þe</i> ] W om. <i>ȝifte</i> ] ȝiftes R.    | 251. <i>busy</i> ] bisy be B.                   |

For hym and for alle his · fonde I þat his pardoun 252  
 Miȝte lechen a man · as I bileue it shulde.

Surely the pope  
 has the pot with  
 the salve!

[Fol. 56.]  
 Acts iii. 6.

For sith he hath þe powere · þat peter hym-self hadde,  
 He hath þe potte with þe salve · sothly, as me þinketh :

*Argentum & aurum non est mihi; quod autem  
 habeo, [hoc] tibi do; in nomine domini, surge  
 & ambula.*

Perhaps men are  
 not worthy!

¶ Ac if miȝte of miracle hym faille · it is for men ben  
 nouȝt worthy 256

To haue þe grace of god · & no gylte of þe pope.

For may no blyssyng done vs bote · but if we wil  
 amende,

Ne mannes masse make pees · amonges cristene peple,  
 Tyl pruyde be purelich fordo · and þat þourgh payn  
 defaute. 260

I have to work  
 hard at baking.

¶ For ar I haue bred of mele · ofte mote I swete,  
 And ar þe *commune* haue corne ynough · many a colde  
 mornynge;

So, ar my wafres ben ywrouȝt · moche wo I tholye.

All London likes  
 my wafers.

¶ Alle Londoun I leue · liketh wel my wafres, 264  
 And lowren whan þei lakken [hem]— it is nouȝt longe  
 ypassed,

þere was a carful *commune* · whan no carte come to toune  
 With [bake] bred fro stretforth · þo gan beggeres wepe,  
 And werkmen were agaste a litel · þis wil be þouȝte  
 longe. 268

There was a  
 dearth there

252. *his* (1)] *hisse* C; *hise* B.

253. *I*] B *om.* *it*] O *om.*

254. *sith*] *sethe* R.

255. *hath*] *hase* C. *potte*] *poot* B.  
 [hoc RO] LWCB *om.* *in—domini*] O  
*om.*

256. *Ac*] And C. *ben*] *beth* R.

257. *þe* (1)] no R. *þe* (2)] W  
*om.*

258. *For*] R *om.* *wil*] *wolen* B.

260. *purelich*] *prueliche* R. *þat*]  
*a'le* R; W *om.*

261. B *omits.* *ar*] er WCO. *afte*]  
 erst CO.

262. *ar*] er WCOB. *a*] COB *om.*  
*colde*] *calde* C.

263. *ar*] er WCOB. *ywrouȝt*]  
 wrought COB. *wo*] *wa* C.

264. *Alle*] Al (*printed* At) W; Al  
 COB.

265. CB *omit.* [hem WR] it LO.

267. [bake R] LWCOB *om.*; *but it  
 improves the line.* *stretforth*] Strat-  
 forde WCOB; *staforde* R. *gan*] gon-  
 nen WCO; *gunnen* B.

268. *litel*] *lite* W; *litol* COB.  
*wil*] *wel* R. *þouȝte*] *þouȝt* on B.

In þe date of owre dryȝte · in a drye appriȝle, in April, 1370,  
 A þousande and thre hondreth · tweis thretty & ten,  
 My wafres þere were gesen · whan chichestre was when Chichester  
was mayor."  
 Maire." 271

¶ I toke gode kepe, by cryst · and conscience bothe,  
 Of haukyn þe actyf man · and how he was y-clothed.  
 He hadde a cote of crystendome · as holykirke bileueth, I observed how  
soiled Haukyn's  
coat was.  
 Ac it was moled in many places · with many sondri  
 plottes,

Of pruyde here a plotte, and þere a plotte · of vnboxome  
 speche, 276

Of scornynge and of scoffynge · and of vnskilful berynge, It was spotted  
with PRIDE.  
 As in aparaille and in porte · proude amonges þe peple,  
 Otherwyse þan he hath · with herte or syȝte shewynge ;  
 Hym willynge þat alle men wende · he were þat he is  
 nouȝte. 280

For-why he bosteth and braggeth · with many bolde  
 othes,

And in-obedient to ben vndernome · of any lyf luyngge, He was dis-  
obedient,  
 And so syngulere by hym-self · as to syȝte of þe poeple,  
 Was none suche as hym-self · ne none so [pope]-holy,  
 Y-habited as an hermyte · an ordre by hym-selue, 285 under no rule,  
 Religioun sanz reule · and resonable obedience ;  
 Lakkyng lettred men · and lewed men bothe,

269. *drye appriȝle*] druye auerel R.

270. *hondreth*] hundred WOB ;  
 hondrede R. *thretty*] so also in R ;  
 twenty WCB ; twenti O.

271. *þere*] COB om. *gesen*] gesene  
 WR ; *looks like gefene in B. was*]  
 were R.

272. *gode*] grete R.

273. *haukyn*] in L, *this word (here  
 and elsewhere) looks more like hankyn.  
 y-clothed*] clothed CB.

274. *cote*] Cite (!) C ; citee B.  
*kirke*] chirche CB.

275. *Ac*] And C. *places*] place R.

276. *here*] hire C ; he R.

279. *hath*] hym haþ W. *with*]  
 wytt B. *or*] and R. *syȝte*] eye C ;

ye O ; eize B.

280. *willynge*] wilnyngge R. *wende*]  
 wenden O ; wente R. *nouȝte*] not O.

281. *bosteth*] bosted C. *braggeth*]  
 bragged C.

283, 284. W *has*—And noon so  
 singuler by hym-self · ne so pomp  
 holy ; COB *have*—And so singuler by  
 hym-self · ne noon so poppe (*sic*) holy.  
 L and R are alike, except that for  
 pompe (L) we find pope in R, a read-  
 ing which I have adopted. See Criti-  
 cal Note.

285. *Y-habited*] In habyte O ; In  
 abite B. *an* (2)] and C.

286. *and*] or W.

- a liar in soul; In lykynge of lele lyf · and a lyer in soule; 288  
 With Inwit and with outwitt · ymagenen and studye,  
 As best for his body be · to haue a badde name,  
 And entermeten hym ouer-al · þer he hath nouzt to done,  
 boasting of his strength, Wilnyng þat men wende · his witte were þe best, 292  
 [Or for his crafty kunnyng · or of clerkes þe wisest,  
 Or strengest on stede · or styuest vnder gurdel,  
 good looks, And louelokest to loken on · and lelest of werkes,  
 And non so holy as he · ne of lif clenmere, 296  
 Or feyrest of feytures · of fourme and of schafte,  
 fine voice, And most sotyl of songe · other sleyest of hondes,  
 And large to lene · losse þere-by to cacche;]  
 and liberality. And if he gyueth ouzte pore gomes · telle what he  
 deleth; 300  
 Pore of possessioun · in purse and in coffre,  
 And as a lyon on to loke · and lordeliche of speche.  
 ¶ Baldest of beggeres · a bostour þat nouzt hath,  
 He was the boldest of beggars, In towne and in tauernes · tales to telle, 304  
 [Fol. 56 b.] And segge þinge þat he neuere seigh · and for soth  
 sweren it;  
 boasting of what he never did, Of dedes þat he neuere dyd · demen and bosten,  
 And of werkes þat he wel dyd · witnesse and seggen—  
 “Lo! if 3e leue me nouzt · or þat I lye wenen, 308  
 Axeth at hym or at hym · and he 3ow can telle,  
 What I suffred and seighe · and some tymes hadde,  
 And what I couth and knewe · and what kynne I  
 come of.” 311

289. *With* (1) B om. *with* (2) R om.; Crowley also omits. *with outwitt*] with oute wit C.

290. *badde*] bolde R.

291. *to*] do B.

292. *Wilnyng*] Willyng WCB; wilnyng R.

293—299. *In R only; yet found in the C-text in a different part of the poem; see Critical Note.*

300. *gyueth*] gyue O; gyfues C. *pore*] to pouere W; the pouere CB. *telle*] til C; tellip B. *deleth*] delet C.

301. *coffre*] cofre boþe W; coffres bothe COB.

302. *ou*] R om.; vpon B.

303. *Baldest*] Boldest WCROB. *a*] as a B.

305. *segge*] saies C. *seigh*] er sawe C; sau; B.

307. *seggen*] siggen W.

308. *3e*] þou OB; thow C. *wenen*] 3ee wenen B.

310. *What*] Whan C. *tymes*] tym C.

311. *knewe*] knowe C.

Al he wolde þat men wiste · of werkes and of wordes, wishing men to  
know him.  
Which myzte plese þe peple · and praysen hym-  
seluen : 313

*Si hominibus placerem, Christi seruus non essem ;* Gal. i. 10.

*Et alibi : nemo potest duobus dominis seruire.* Mat. vi. 24.

¶ “Bi criste,” quod conscience þo · “þi best cote,  
haukyn,

Hath many moles and spottes · it moste ben ywasshe.”

¶ “Ȝe, who so toke hede,” quod haukyn · “byhynde Haukyn admits  
his coat is  
soiled.  
and bifore, 316

What on bakke and what on bodyhalf · & by þe two  
sydes,

Men sholde fynde many frounces · and many foule  
plottes.”

¶ And he torned hym as tyte · and þanne toke I hede,

It was fouler by felefolde · þan it firste semed. 320

It was bidropped with wratthe · and wikked wille,

I saw that it  
was spotted with  
WRATH, ENVY,

With enuye and yuel speche · entysyng to fyzte,

Lyinge and laughyng · and leue tonge to chyde ;

Al þat he wist wykked · by any wizte, tellen it, 324

And blame men bihynde her bakke · and bydden hem and slander.  
meschaunce ;

And þat he wist bi wille · tellen it watte,

He told Will's  
faults to Wat,

And þat watte wiste · wille wiste it after,

And made of frendes foes · þorough a false tonge, 328

“Or with myzte of mouthe · or þorough mannes  
strengthe

Auenge me fele tymes · other frete my-selue

312. *of* (2)] R *om.*

313. *hym-seluen*] hem-seluen CRO.

315. *it*] and B. *ywasshe*] ywasshen  
C ; *ywaischen* B ; *ywasschid* O ; *wa-*  
*schen* R.

316. *Ȝe*] *Ȝe* O ; *Ȝee* B.

317. *and*] C *om.* *what*] RO *om.*  
*bodyhalf*] *bodye* CB. *tro*] to R.

319. *tyte*] *tit* CB ; *tijt* O ; *tyd* W.

320. *felefolde*] *felfolde* R.

322. *enuye*] *eneuye* R.

323. *Lyinge*] *Lyzyng* R. *laugh-*  
*yng*] *lakkyng* R (*which is perhaps*  
*the true reading*). *and leue*] a *lef*  
R ; and *leef* O.

324. *þat*] the that C. *tellen*] to  
tellen B.

326. *it*] it to ROB.

328. *of*] B *om.* *þorough*] *through* C.

329. *of*] or with W. *mannes*]  
*mennes* W.

330. *Auenge*] *Auenged* R.

or else fretted  
himself like a  
pair of shears.

Wyth-inne, as a shepster shere ;"— I-shrewed men &  
cursed !

*Cuius malediccionis os plenum est, & amaritudine ;  
sub lingua eius labor & dolor :*

Ps. x. 7.

Ps. lvi. 5 (Vulg.).

& *alibi : filij hominum, dentes eorum arma &  
sagitte, & lingua eorum gladius acutus :—*

Haukyn confesses  
that no one  
trusts him.

¶ " þere is no lyf þat I louye · lastyng any while, 332  
For tales þat I telle · no man trusteth to me,  
And whan I may nouzt haue þe maistrye · with malen-  
colye I take,

þat I cacche þe crompe · þe cardiake some tyme,  
Or an ague in suche an angre · and some tyme a  
feure, 336

"In illness I  
trust to a witch  
of Southwark or  
Shoreditch,"  
he said.

þat taketh me al a twelf-moneth · tyl þat I dispyse  
Lechecrafte [of] owre lorde · and leue on a wicche,  
And segge, þat no clerke ne can · ne cryste, as I leue,  
To þe souter of southwerke · or of shordyche dame  
emme ! 340

And segge, þat no goddes worde · gaf me neuere bote,  
But þorw a charme had I chaunce · & my chief hele !"

Then I saw that  
his coat was  
soiled with  
LECHERY,  
[Fol. 57.]

¶ I wayted wisloker · and þanne was it soiled  
With lkyng of lecherye · as by lokyng of his eye. 344  
For vche a mayde þat he mette · he made hir a signe  
Semyng to-synne-ward · and some tyme he gan taste  
Aboute þe mouth, or bynethe · bygynneth to grope,  
Tyl eytheres wille waxeth kene · and to þe werke ȝeden,

331. *shepster*] shepsteres WO ;  
shapsteris B. *I-*] In B. *men*] man  
W ; ef. C-Text. & (1)] R *om. labor*  
& *dolor*] & e COB. & *alibi—acutus*]  
R *om. gladius acutus*] & e O.

332. *I louye*] I loue RC ; me loueþ  
W.

334. *with*] which R ; swich W.

335. *þe* (2)] and þe W.

336. *ague*] aguwe B. *suche*] swich  
WCO.

337. *taketh*] hit holdeþ B.

338. [*of* WCOB] or LR ; *but the*  
*line is marked for correction in L.*

339. *segge*] seye WB ; seggeþ O.

340. *shordyche*] sordich O.

341. *segge*] seye WB ; saye ; seggeþ  
O. *no*] none of B. *worde*] B *om.*  
*gaf me*] ȝaueþ B.

343. *wisloker*] bisiloker CB. *þanne*  
*was*] that C. *it soiled*] I-soyled R.

344. *as by*] and by CO ; and B.  
*his*] myn R. *Here follows the catch-*  
*word in L—*for eche a mayde þat he  
mette.

345. *signe*] syngne R.

348. *eytheres*] either C.

As wel in fastyng-days & frydayes · and forboden  
 nyȝtes ; 349  
 And as wel in lente as oute of lente · alle tymes ylyche,  
 Suche werkes with hem · [were] neuere oute of sesoun ; which with him  
 Tyl þei myȝte namore · and þanne had merye tales, 352 was never out  
 of season.  
 And how þat lechoures louyen · lauȝen an iapen,  
 And of her harlotrye and horedome · in her elde tellen.  
 ¶ Thanne pacience parceyued · of poyntes [of] his cote, His coat was  
 Was colmy þorw coueityse · and v[n]kynde desyrynge ; also solled with  
 More to good þan to god · þe gome his loue caste, 357 AVARICE,  
 And ymagyned how · he it myȝte haue  
 With false mesures and mette · and with false wisesse ; false mesures,  
 Lened for loue of þe wedde · and loth to do treuthe, and false witness.  
 And awaited þorwgh which · wey to bigile, 361  
 And menged his marchaundyse · and made a gode  
 moustre ;—  
 “ þe worste with-in was · a gret witte I lete hit,  
 And if my neighbore had any hyne · or any beste elles, “ If my neigh-  
 More profitable þan myne · many sleightes I made, 365 bour had what  
 I wanted,” said  
 How I myȝte haue it · al my witte I caste, he, “ I stole it.  
 And but I it had by other waye · atte laste I stale it,  
 Or prynliche his purse shoke · vnpiked his lokkes, 368  
 Or by nyȝt or by day · aboute was ich euere,  
 þorwgh gyle to gadren · þe good þat ich haue.

349. *in*] R *om.* &] as COB. *and*] *vnkynde*] *vkynde* L; but marked for  
 as W. correction.

350. *as* (1)] also B. *wel*] *lef* R. 359. *mesures*] *measure* O. *mette*] *met* WCO.  
*lente*] *leynten* B (*twice*).

351. *Suche*] *Swiche* WCO; *Seche* 360. *for*] *it* for O. *wedde*] *weed* B.  
 B. *hem*] *hym* C. [*were* WRCB] 361. *awaited*] *I awaytede* O; way-  
 weren O; was L. tid B. *which*] *whitus* R. *wey*] *weyus*

352. *had*] *hadde* R; *hadden* OB; R. *to*] *he myȝte best* B.  
 W *om.* 363. *a*] O *om.*

353. *lechoures*] *leccherous* C. 364. *if*] CO *om.* *any*] *an* R.  
*lauȝen*] *lawen* R. *iapen*] *iapeng* 367. *I*] *if I* R. *it*] COB *om.* *other*] *ooþer* W; *a-noþer* B.

354. *And—harlotrye*] Or *herlotrie* 368. *shoke*] *schoke* R; *shook* WC  
 R. *in*] *and in* R. O; *shok* B. *vnpiked*] *and vnpikede*  
 W.

355. [*of* WCOB] LR *om.* 369. *Or*] *Other* R (*twice*).  
 356. *Was*] *so in* LRCOB; That were  
 W. *colmy*] *colomy* WC; *culmy* O.

In ploughing, I  
took a piece of  
his field.

¶ 3if I 3ede to þe plow · I pynched so narwe,  
þat a fote londe or a forwe · fecchen I wolde, 372  
Of my nexte neighbore · nymen of his erthe ;  
And if [I] rope, ouer-reche · or 3af hem red þat ropen,  
To seise to me with her sykyl · þat I ne sewe neure.

I was sure to win  
from him.

¶ And who so [borwed] of me · abou[3]te þe tyme, 376  
With presentes priueliche · or payed *somme certeyne*.  
So, walde he or nouzt wolde he · wynnem I wolde ;  
And bothe to kyth and to kyn · vnkynde of þat ich  
hadde.

I made men who  
bought of me  
pay too much.

¶ And who so cheped my chaffare · chiden I wolde,  
But he profred to paye · a peny or tweyne 381  
More þan it was worth · and 3et wolde I swere,  
þat it coste me moche more · swore manye othes.

At mass, I only  
mourned over my  
losses.

¶ In halydayes at holicherche · whan ich herde masse,  
Hadde [I] neuere wille, wot god · witterly to biseche  
Mereye for my mysdedes · þat I ne morned more 386  
For losse of gode, leue me · þan for my lykames giltes

[Fol. 57<sup>v</sup>.]

As if I had dedly synne done ; · I dred nouzt þat so  
sore, 388  
As when I lened and leued it lost · or longe ar it were  
payed.

So if I kydde any kyndenesse · myn euen-cristene to  
helpe,

371. *pynched*] puched C; pikid B.

372. *fecchen* I] *fecche* Ich R.

373, 374. *nymen—reche*] R *om.*  
*nymen*] and *nymen* W. [I WCOB]  
L *om.* *rope*] *so* in C; *repe* WO;  
rippe B. *ouer-reche*] y *ouerreche* B.  
*or*] or (*printed* of) W; & O. *red*]  
reed WO; *rede* R. *ropen*] *repen* RB.  
Line 374 is marked for correction in  
L.

375. *To*] And COB. *seise*] *seyssed*  
B. *her*] my COB. *ne*] OB *om.*

376. [*borwed* WR] *borweth* LCOB.  
*abouzte*] he *bouzte* B; *miswritten*  
*aboute* in LR.

377. *presentes*] *present* CB.

378. *walde he*] *so* in R; *wolde* he

COB; *he wolde* W. *he* (2)] R *om.*  
*nouzt—he*] *he nolde* COB.

381. *to*] *me to* COB.

383. *me*] R *om.* *swore*] and *so*  
*swoor* W; & *swore* OB.

384. *In*] On W. *at*] in O; and  
CB. *herde*] *here* O.

385. [I WCOB] LR *om.*; *but the*  
*line is marked in L.* *neuere*] *ner*  
R.

387. *För*] For (*printed* Nor) W.  
*ny*] R *om.* *giltes*] *gilte* CB.

388. *As*] And C. *dred*] *dredde*  
WO; *drede* CB; *dradde* R.

389. *lened—it* (1)] *haue lent* hit  
and is B. *and*] CO *om.* *were*] *be* B.

Vpon a cruel coueityse · myn herte gan hange.

And if I sent ouer see · my *seruauntz* to Bruges, 392 If I sent my servants abroad,

Or in-to Pruslonde my prentys · my *profit* to wayten,  
To marchaunden with monoye · and maken her es-  
chaunges,

Miȝte neuere me conforte · in þe mene tyme,

Neither messe ne matynes · ne none manere siȝtes, 396 I kept thinking about my bargains at prayer-time."

Ne neuere penaunce perfourned · ne *pater-noster* seyde,  
þat my mynde ne was more · on my gode, in a doute,  
þan in þe grace of god · and his grete helpes :

*Vbi thesaurus tuus, ibi & cor tuum."* Mat. vi. 21.

[ȝet [þe] glotoun with grete othes · his [garnement]  
hadde soyled, 400

And foule be-flobered it · as with fals speche ;

þere no nede ne was · [tok] godes name an Idel,

Swore þere-by swithe ofte · and al by-swatte his cote.

And more mete ete and dronke · þen kende miȝt Next Haukyn confesses his GLUTTONY, and is in despair.  
defie— 404

“And kauȝte seknesse *sum-tyme* · for my sorfetes  
ofte ;

And þanne I dradde to deye · in dedlich synne”—

þat in-to wanhope he [worthe] · and wende nauȝt to be  
saued,

þe whiche is sleuthe so slow · þat may no slithes  
helpe it, 408

391. *a]* O *om.* *herte]* consience R.

392. *if]* O *om.* *see]* sehe O. *seruauntz]* *seruaunt* B.

393. *Pruslonde]* pruyis londe R ;  
Pruce lond W ; spruce land (*sic*) C.

394. *marchaunden]* marchaundisen  
B. *monoye]* so in R ; moneie WCOB.  
*eschaunges]* chaunges R.

395. *neuere]* nere R. *tyme]* while  
W.

396. *none]* no RC. *siȝtes]* shytes  
R.

398. *on]* in R. *a]* O *om.*

399. *Vbi]* Vbi est R.

400—409. *In* R only, and the text  
is corrupt. The reason for inserting

*it is given in the Critical Note.*

400. [þe] must be inserted ; R *om.*  
[garnement] miswritten granement ;

but garnement (= garment) is right.  
402. þere] miswritten As þere,  
which is nonsense ; it is repeated  
from Pass. V. l. 377, which see. [tok]  
must be inserted ; R *om.*

404. kende] such is the usual spell-  
ing in R, wherever L has kynde.

405. sorfetes] miswritten forfetes ;  
but sense and alliteration decide it.

407. [worthe] miswritten wrathe  
in R.

408. slithes] a better spelling is  
sleiȝtes (= sleights) ; cf. l. 365.

Ne no mercy amenden · þe man þat so deyeth.]

The branches of  
SLOTH.

¶ Which ben þe braunches · þat bryngeth a man to  
sleuth? 410

[Is whanne a man] morneth nouȝte for his mysdedes ·  
ne maketh no sorwe,

Ac penaunce þat þe prest enioigneth · perfourneth yuel,  
Doth none almes-dede · dret hym of no symne, 413

With the sloth-  
ful, every day is  
a holiday.

Lyueth aȝein þe bileue · and no lawe holdeth ;

Vch day is haliday with hym · or an heigh ferye ;

And if he auȝte wole here · it is an harlotes tonge. 416

Whan men carpeth of cryst · or of clenness of soule,

He wexeth wroth & wil nouȝte here · but wordes of  
myrthe.

He hates to hear  
the legends of  
the saints.

Penaunce and pore men · and þe passioun of seyntes

He hateth to here Jere-of · and alle þat it telleth. · 420

þise ben þe braunches, beth war · þat bryngeth a man  
to wanhope !

3e lordes and ladyes · and legates of holicherche,

þat fedeth foles sages · flatereres and lyeres, 423

And han likyng to lythen hem · to do ȝow to lawghe ;

Luke vi. 25.

*Ve vobis qui ridetis, &c. :*

And ȝiueth hem mete and Mede · and pore men  
refuse,

In ȝowre deth-deyinge · I drede me ful sore,

410. *Which*] Ac whiche R. *bryng-eth*] bryngen WOB ; brynges C.

411. [*Is whanne a man* O] Is whan man B ; He þat W ; LRC *have the extraordinary false reading* His woman ; *but, fortunately, the C-Text helps us out.* (Is = it is, as elsewhere.) *mysdedes*] dedis O.

412. *Ac*] And WRC. *enioigneth*] enioyned B. *perfourneth yuel*] *performe* hij nylleþ B ; *parfourned* C.

413. *Doth*] Doos C. *almes-dede*] almesse W. *dret*] drat R ; dred W ; drede CB ; dredip O.

414. *holdeth*] haldes C.

415. *Vch—is*] Ilce day or Ilc C ; Eche day or eche B. *is*] is an O.

*with hym*] O *om.* or] & O ; as B.

417. *Whan*] And whanne O. *carp-eth*] carpen WCOB. *of* (2)] COB *om.* *soule*] saule C ; soules W.

418. *wexeth*] waxes C ; waxip B.

419. *and* (1)] of W. *þe*] O *om.* *passioun*] *possessioun* C.

421. *beth*] be CB.

422. *ȝe*] þe R ; also R *repeats* þe lordes. *cherche*] *cherches* R ; kirce C.

423. *foles*] fole R. *sages*] sage O. *lyeres*] leers C.

424. *han*] hase C. *lythen*] heren B ; listem (*sic*) C. *to* (3)] R *om.*

426. *ful*] R *om.*

Lest þo thre maner men · to moche sorwe þow brynge :

*Consencientes & agentes pari pena punientur.*

Patriarkes & prophetes · and prechoures of goddes  
wordes 428 Preachers save  
men's souls,

Sauen þorw her sarmoun · mannes soule fram helle ;

Riȝt so flater[er]es and foles · aren þe fendes disciples,  
To entice men þorw her tales · to synne and harlotrye. but flatterers are  
the fiend's  
disciples.

Ac clerkes þat knowen holywryt · shulde kenne lordes,

What dauid seith of suche men · as þe sauter telleth :

*Non habitabit in medio domus mee, qui facit* Ps. c. 7 (Vulg.).  
*superbiam & qui loquitur iniqua :*

Shulde none harlote haue audience · in halle ne in  
chambres,

þere wise men were · witnesseth goddes wordes ; 435

Ne no mysproude man · amonges lordes ben allowed.

[¶ Clerkes and kniȝtes · welcometh kynges ministrales,  
And for loue of þe lorde · litheth hem at festes ; Clerks welcome  
the king's  
ministrals.

Muche more, me thenketh · riche men schulde

Haue beggeres byfore hem · þe whiche ben goddes  
ministrales, 440 So also the rich  
should welcome  
beggars.

As he seyth hym-self · seynt Iohan bereth witnessse :

*Qui vos spernit, me spernit.*

Luke x. 16.

For-thi I rede þow riche · reueles whan ȝe maketh

For to solace þoure soules · suche ministrales to haue ; Ye rich, entertain  
God's ministrals,  
the poor,

þe pore, for a fol sage · syttinge at þe heyȝ table, 444

And a lered man, to lere þe · what oure lorde suffred, have a learned  
man to teach you,

For to saue þi soule · fram Sathan þin enemy,

427. þo] þe CO. to moche] to  
muche to mykil (sic) C. þow] R om.  
punientur] puniendi sunt R.

429. sarmoun] sermons W ; ser-  
moun CO ; sermon B. mannes soule]  
manne saule C.

430. flatereres] miswritten flateres  
in L ; but the line is marked for cor-  
rection. aren] and CO.

431. entice] eten (!) C. and] and  
to WB.

432. Ae] And C.

433. suche] swiche WO ; swile C.  
ȝ] R om.

434. harlote] harlotes CB. ne]  
nor WR. chambres] chambre WB.

435. witnesseth] witnessse C.

437—454. In R only ; but found in  
C-Text. The passage is fairly cor-  
rect.

442. reueles] at reueles R ; but at  
should probably be omitted, as in MS.  
Cotton Vesp. B 16.

And fithel þe, with-out flaterynge · of gode friday þe  
storye ;

also a blind man  
for a jester, or a  
bedridden woman  
to cry *largesse*.

And a blynd man for a bourdeoure · or a bedrede  
womman, 448

To crie a largesse by-for oure lorde · 3oure gode loos to  
schewe !

þise thre maner ministrales · maketh a man to lawhe,  
And, in his deth-deyinge · þei don him grete conforte,  
þat bi his lyue lythed hem · and loued hem to here.

These solace the  
soul.

þise solaseth þe soule · til hym-selue be-falle 453

In a wel [gode] hope, [for he wrouzte so] · amonges  
worthi seyntes.]

¶ Ac flat[er]eres and foles · þorw her foule wordes,  
Leden þo þat louen hem · to luciferes feste, 456

With *turpiloquio*, a lay of sorwe · and luciferes fithle.

[Fol. 58.]

Thus haukyn þe actyf man · hadde ysoiled his cote,

Conscience  
asks Haukyn  
why he had not  
brushed his coat.

Til conscience acouped hym þere-of · in a curteise  
manere,

Whi he ne hadde wasshen it · or wyped it with a  
brusshe. 460

454. [gode] R om. [for he wrouzte  
so] R om. But cf. C-Text.

455. Ac] And C; þere R. flat-  
ereres] *miswritten* flateres in LR.

456. louen] loued R.

457. lay] lady (*sic* in MS.) W.  
sorwe] sowe (*sic*) R.

458. ysoiled] soyled R; ysuyled O.

460. wasshen] whasshen W; wais-  
chen B; wasched R. it (2)] O om.

## PASSUS XIV (DO-WEL VI).

*Passus xiiij<sup>us</sup>.*

“ I Hauē but one [hool] hatere,” quod haukyn · “ I am  
 þe lasse to blame  
 þough it be soiled and selde clene · I slepe þere-inne on  
 niȝtes ;

“ I have but one  
 suit, which I  
 sleep in,” said  
 Haukyn.

And also I haue an houswyf · hewen and children—

*Vxorem duxi, & ideo non possum venire —*

Luke xiv. 20.

þat wolen bymolen it many tyme · maugre my chekes !

¶ It hath ben laued in lente · and oute of lente bothe,  
 With þe sope of sykenesse · þat seketh wonder depe, 6

“ It has been  
 washed with the  
 soap of sickness.

And with þe losse of catel · loth forto agulte

God or any gode man · bi auȝte þat I wiste ;

And was shryuen of þe preste · þat gaue me, for my  
 synnes,

To penaunce, pacyence · and pore men to fede, 10

Al for coueitise of my crystenedome · in clennessē to  
 kepen it.

TITLE. Passus quarto-decimus de  
 visione, vt supra CR (*but R has xiiijus*) ;  
 Passus xiiijus, &c WO ; B *adds et vijus*  
 [*read vjus*] de dowel.

1. *one*] oon WC ; on RB ; an O.  
 [hool WCOB] LR *om.*

2. *soiled*] sould B ; suyled C.  
*selde elene*] foule COB. *on*] o W.

3. *an houswyf*] a wif CB ; a wijf  
 O. *hewen*] and hewen B. *venire*]  
 &c. R.

4. *wolen*] walden C ; wolden O.  
*bymolen*] bifoule C ; defoule B.  
*tyme*] tymes R. *maugre*] maugree  
 W ; magre B.

5. *lente*] lnten R ; leaute B  
 (*twice*).

6. *seketh*] sekest CB.

7. *loth*] bathe C ; boþe B.

8. *or*] ar R ; or (*indistinct, and*  
*printed* of) W.

- But I could never keep it clean an hour," ¶ And couthe I neuere, by cryste · kepen it clene an  
houre, 12  
þat I ne soiled it with syzte · or sum ydel speche,  
Or þorough werke or þorough worde · or wille of myn  
herte,  
þat I ne flobber it foule · fro morwe tyl eue."
- "Contrition shall clean your coat," said Conscience. ¶ "And I shal kenne þe," quod conscience · "of con-  
tricioun to make, 16  
þat shal clawe þi cote · of alkynnes filthe,  
*Cordis contricio, &c. :—*
- "Do-well shall wash it;" Dowel [shal] wasshen it and wryngen it · þorw a wys  
confessour,  
*Oris confessio, &c. :—*
- Do-bet shall beat and dye it; Dobet shal beten it and bouken it · as bryzte as any  
scarlet,  
And engreynten it with good wille · and goddes grace  
to amende þe, 20
- Do-best shall sew it. And sithen sende þe to satisfaccioun · for to sowen it  
after,  
*Satisfaccio dobest.*
- ¶ Shal neuere myste bimolen it · ne moth after biten it,  
Ne fende ne false man · defoulen it in þi lyue ;  
Shal none heraulde ne harpoure · haue a fairere garne-  
ment 24  
þan haukyn þe actyf man · and þow do by my techyng ;  
Ne no mynstral be more worth · amonges pore &  
riche,
- No harper shall have a fairer garment."
12. *couthe*] coude R. *neuere*] nouȝt R. *kepen it*] *precedes* bi crist in B.  
13. *soiled*] soulid B; fouled C.  
14. *þorough* (2)] CROB *om. worde*] thouȝt R. *or* (3)] and other R.  
15. *þat*] But CO. *flobber*] floboure C.  
16. *kenne*] telle B.  
17. *clawe þi cote*] þi cote make clene B. *clawe*] C *om.*  
18. [*shal* W] schal O; LCRB *om. it* (1)] it (*but omitted in printing*) W.  
19. *shal*] þat schal R. *it* (1)] R *om.*  
20. *engreynten*] engreynten *or* engreyuen (*printed* engreyuen) W.  
21. *sorenen*] sewe O; souuen R. *Satisfaccio dobest*] Satisfaccio &c. COB.  
22. *Shal*] Do-best shal C; Dobet schal B. *myste*] cheeste W. *bimolen*] bynolnen CB; by-mole R. *moth*] mought C; moche B. *biten*] beten B.  
24. *nouȝt*] no CRB. *garneмент*] garment R.  
25. *þow*] þo B. *by*] C *om.*

þan Haukynnes wyf þe wafrere · with his *actiua vita*."

¶ "And I shal *purueye þe paste*," quod pacyence · "I will also  
"þough no plow erie, 28 provide you  
paste and flour,"  
said Patience.

And floure to fede folke with · as best be for þe soule,  
þough neuere greyne growed · ne grape vppon vyne.  
Alle þat lyueth and loketh · lyflode wolde I fynde,  
And þat ynough shal none faille · of þinge þat hem  
nedeth. 32

We shulde nouȝt be to busy · a-bouten owre lyflode,  
*Ne solliciti sitis, &c. : volucres celi deus pascit,* Mat. vi. 25, 26.  
*&c. : pacientes vincunt, &c.* [Fol. 18 b.]

¶ þanne laughed haukyn a litel · and liztly gan swerye,  
"Who so leueth ȝow, by owre lorde · I lene nouȝte he  
be blisset !"

¶ "No," quod pacyence patiently · and out of his poke Then Patience  
hente 36 drew forth  
victuals of great  
virtue,

Vitailles of grete *vertues* · for al manere bestes,  
And seyde, "Io! here lyflode ynough · if owre byleue  
be trewe !

For lente neuere was lyf · but lyflode were shapen,  
Wher-of or wherfore · or where-by to lybbe. 40

¶ Firste þe wylde worme · vnder weet erthe, saying, "As all  
Fissch to lyue in þe flode · and in þe fyre þe crykat, living things  
þe corlue by kynde of þe eyre · moste elennest flesch of have food given  
bryddes, them,

And bestes by grasse and by greyne · and by grene  
rotis, 44

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 27. <i>with his</i> ] which is R.                 | R.   |
| 28. <i>þe</i> ] þee W. <i>þough</i> ] þouȝ þow    | 37. <i>Vitailles</i> ] Vitales R.                  |
| R.  | 38. <i>ynough</i> ] I-nowe RB.                     |
| 29. <i>þe</i> ] thy COB.                          | 39. <i>neuere</i> ] nere R. <i>lyff</i> ] þere lif |
| 30. <i>growed</i> ] growe B. <i>vyne</i> ] þe     | R.   |
| vyne B.   | 40. <i>or</i> (2)] and RO.                         |
| 31. <i>Alle</i> ] To alle W.                      | 41. <i>wret</i> ] þe wete B.                       |
| 32. <i>ynough</i> ] Inought C; y B; I-            | 42. <i>fyre</i> ] fuir R; fyer B. <i>crykat</i> ]  |
| now R.  | eriket WO; erikat RCB.                             |
| 33. <i>Nē</i> ] Dum B.                            | 43. <i>corlue</i> ] Corlew WR; curlowe             |
| 34. <i>laughed</i> ] lawhed R; lowȝ O.            | C; curlu B.  |
| <i>swerye</i> ] swere RCOB.                       | 44. <i>by</i> (2)] COB <i>om</i> .                 |
| 35. <i>leueth</i> ] loucþ B. <i>by</i> ] noȝer be |  |

- so man lives by  
belief and love. In menyngre þat alle men · myzte þe same 45  
Lyue þorw lele byleue · and loue, as god witnesseth ;  
John xiv. 13. *Quodcumque pecieritis a patre in nomine meo,*  
*&c. : & alibi,*
- Mat. iv. 4. *Non in solo pane uiuit homo, set in omni uerbo,*  
*quod procedit de ore dei."*
- ¶ But I loked what lyfode it was · þat pacience so  
preysed,
- Mat. vi. 10. And þanne was it a pece of þe *pater-noster* · *fiat*  
*uoluntas tua.* 48
- Take and eat  
this when  
hungry. ¶ "Haue, haukyn !" *quod* pacyence · "and ete þis  
whan þe hungryth,
- Or whan þow clomsest for colde · or clyngest for drye.  
Shal neuere gyues þe greue · ne grete lordes wrath,  
Prisone ne peyne · for—*pacientes uincunt.* 52
- Only be always  
sober, ¶ Bi so þat þow be sobre · of syzte and of tonge,  
In etyngre and in handlyngre · and in alle þi fyue  
wittis,  
Darstow neuere care for corne · ne lynnen cloth ne  
wollen,
- and let all else  
be at God's will. Ne for drynke, ne deth drede · but deye as god lyketh,  
Or þorw hongre or þorw hete · at his wille be it ; 57  
For if þow lyuest after his lore · þe [shorter] lyf þe  
better :
- Si quis amat cristum, mundum non diligit istum.*  
¶ For þorw his breth bestes wexen · and abroad ȝeden,  
*Dixit & facta sunt, &c. :*
- Ps. cxlviii. 5  
(Vulg.). *Ergo* þorw his breth mowen · men & bestes lyuen, 61

45. *myzte*] myzt se CB ; myzten  
do O. *þe*] C om.

46. *a patre*] R om. *de ore dei*  
&e CB.

47. *what*] what þat R. *it*] R om.

48. *it*] R om.

49. *ete*] et W.

50. *elyngest*] chillist O. *drye*] drouȝthe R.

51. *Shal*] And schal R ; Schulden  
O ; Shulde B ; Shul C. *gyues*] fey-

toures R ; gomes O ; synne B.

54. *in* (3)] COB om.

55. *Darstow*] Thardestow C ; Tharst  
þow ROB.

58. *lyuest*] lyue W. [*shorter*  
WC] *schorter* ORB ; *miswritten* shot-  
ter in L, but the line is marked for  
*correction*. *better*] leuere R.

60. *bestes*] mowen men and bestis  
B. *wexen*] woxen W ; wexeth R.

61. *lyuen*] libben R.

As holywrit witnesseth · whan men segge her graces,

*Aperis tu manum tuam, & implet omne animal* Ps. cxliv. 16.  
*benediccionem.*

¶ It is founden þat fourty wynter · folke lyued with-  
outen tulyinge,

The Israelites  
lived 40 years in  
the wilderness.

And oute of þe flynte spronge þe flode · þat folke &  
bestes dronke, 64

And in Elyes tyme · heuene was yclosed,

Heaven was  
closed  
in the time of  
Elias.

þat no reyne ne rone ; · þus rede men in bokes,

þat many wyntres men lyueden · and no mete ne  
tulyeden.

Seuene slepe, as seith þe boke · seuene hundreth wynter,

Seven men (at  
Ephesus) slept  
700 years.

¶ And lyueden with-oute lyflode · and atte laste þei  
woken, 69

[Fol. 59.]

And if men lyued as mesure wolde · shulde neuere  
more be defaute

Amonges cristene creatures · if crystes wordes ben trewe.

Ac vnkyndnesse [*caristia*] maketh · amonges crystene  
peple, 72

Dearth causes  
unkindness, and  
plenty pride; but  
moderation is  
pricelless.

And ouer-plente maketh pruyde · amonges pore &  
riche ;

Ac mesure is so moche worth · it may nouȝte be to dere,

For þe meschief and þe meschaunce · amonges men of  
sodome, 76

The sin of Sodom  
was due to  
excess of food  
and sloth.

Wex þorw plente of payn · & of pure sleuthe ;

*Ociositas & habundancia panis peccatum turpis-*  
*simum nutriuit.*

62. *witnesseth*] wisse C. *segge*] dre C.  
seye WOB; sayes C. *graces*] grace R.

63. *tulyinge*] tilyng OB; tilyng C.

64. *bestes*] best B.

65. *Elyes*] helyes CB.

66. *rone*] roon W; roen R; raynde C; ron B. *rede*] rett R. *in*] on R.

67. *wyntres*] wynter R. *lyueden*] lyued R. *tulyeden*] teleden R; tylied C; tiliden O; tilieden B.

68. *slepe*] slepen ROB. *seith*] sayes C. *hundreth*] hundred WOB; hun-

dre C.

69. *atte*] at þe WROB; þe C.

70. *more*] COB *om. be defaute*] defaute be B.

72. *Ac*] And C. [*caristia* RCOB] *caristiam* W; *carestia* L. *crystene*] *cristes* R.

73. *pruyde*] pryde WO; CB *om.*

74. *Ac*] Ther-fore W; And C. *so*] W *om.*

75. *In margin of* O—Of Sodom & Gomor.

- For þei mesured nouȝt hem-self · of þat þei ete and  
dronke,
- They sinned,  
an I sank into  
hell.
- Diden dedly synne · þat þe deuēl lyked,  
So vengeaunce fel vpon hem · for her vyle synnes ;  
þei sonken in-to helle · þo citees vchone. 80
- ¶ For-þi mesure we vs wel · and make owre faithe owre  
scheltroun,
- Contrition comes  
through faith,
- And þorw faith cometh contricioun · conscience wote wel,  
Whiche dryueth away dedly synne · and doth it to be  
venial.
- And þough a man myȝte nouȝte speke · contricioun  
myȝte hym saue, 84
- and saves men.
- And brynge his soule to blisse · by so þat feith bere  
witness,
- þat, whiles he lyued, he bileued · in þe lore of holy-  
cherche ;
- Ergo* contricioun, feith, and conscience · is kyndelich  
dowel,
- And surgienes for dedly synnes · whan shrifte of mouth  
failleth. 88
- Confession is yet  
worthier,
- ¶ Ac shrifte of mouth more worthy is · if man be  
i[n]liche contrit ;
- and slays sins.
- For shrifte of mouth sleeth synne · be it neuere so dedly ;  
*Per confessionem* to a prest · *peccata occiduntur*,  
þere contricioun doth but dryueth it down · in-to a  
venial synne, 92
- Ps. xxxi. 1  
(Vulg.).
- As dauid seith in þe sauter · *et quorum tecta sunt  
peccata.*

78. *Diden*] Thei didn W.  
79. *So*] And B. *fel*] fil W.  
*synnes*] synne B.  
80. *þo*] þe WROB. *rchone*] Ilcone  
C.  
81. *scheltroun*] sheltrom WO ;  
*shyltroun* C ; *sheltrun* B.  
82. *wote*] woot it O.  
84. CB omit.  
85. *by*] for W ; COB om. *berc*]  
heer O.

86. *in*] COB om. *þe*] CO om.  
88. *surgienes*] surgyanes R ; surgien  
O. *synnes*] synne RB. *failleth*]  
faylede O.  
89. *Ac*] And C. *is*] C om. *be*] C  
R om. *inliche*] in-lich R ; inlich O ;  
y-liche WC ; iliche L ; ilich B.  
90. *synne*] synnes CB. *it*] þei CB.  
92. *dryueth*] dryues C. *down*] CB  
om.  
93. *As*] And COB.

Ac satisfaccioun seketh oute þe rote · and bothe sleeth  
and voideth, Satisfaction  
uproots sin. '

And, as it neuere had ybe · to nouȝt bryngeth dedly  
synne,

þat it neuere eft is seen, ne sore · but semeth a wounde  
yheled." 96

¶ "Where woneth charite?" quod haukyn · "I wiste  
neuere in my lyue "Where is  
charity?" said  
Haukyn.

Man þat with hym spake · as wyde as I haue passed!"

¶ "þere parfit treuthe and pouere herte is · and  
pacience of tonge, "Where truth  
and humility  
are."

þere is charitee, þe chief chaumbriere · for god hym-  
selue!" 100

¶ "Whether paciente pouerte," quod haukyn · "be  
more plesaunte to owre driȝte "Is patient  
poverty better  
than well-spent  
wealth?"

þan richesse riȝtfulliche ywonne · and resonablelich  
yspended?"

¶ "Ȝe, *quis est ille?*" quod pacience · "quik *laudabi-  
mus eum.*

þough men rede of richesse · riȝt to þe worldes ende,  
I wist neuere renke þat riche was · þat whan he rekne  
sholde, "What rich man  
is out of dread  
for spending ill?"

Whan it drow to his deth-day · þat he ne dred hym sore,  
And þat atte rekenyng in arrerage fel · rather þan oute  
of dette.

94. *Ac*] And C.

95. *And*] And (*printed* An) W.  
*ybe*] be R.

96. *it*] it is COB. *is*] COB *om.*  
*ne*] COB *om.* *semeth*] semees C; as  
B. *yheled*] heled CB.

97. *Where*] ȝe where R. *woneth*]  
wonyeþ W; wonnes C. *In margin*  
*of O*—Where is charite. *neuere*]  
nere R.

99. *and*] & þanne O.

100. *þe*] B *om.* *chaumbriere*]  
chamber C; chaumbre R; chaum-  
ber B.

101. *paciente*] pacience and R;

pacience or B; pacience C. *driȝte*]  
lord R; sight C; siȝt B.

102. *ywonne*] I-wonne R; wonne  
WCB; wonnen O. *yspended*] de-  
spended W; spende C; spendid OB.

103. *ȝe*] ȝhe O; ȝee B.

104. *þough*] Thouȝt C. *rede*] red-  
den O.

105. *renke*] freik B. *þat* (2)] þan  
B.

106. *it*] he WCOB. *dron*] drogh  
W; droue C; drouȝ B. *dred*] dredde  
WOB; dradde R.

107. *þat*] R *om.* *atte*] at þe WRC  
OB.

- ¶ There þe pore dar plede · and preue by pure resoun,  
 To haue allowaunce of his lorde · by þe lawe he it  
 cleymeth, 109
- Ioye þat neuere ioye hadde · of riȝtful iugge he axeth,  
 And seith, ‘lo ! briddes and bestes · þat no blisse ne  
 knoweth,
- And wilde wormes in wodes · þorw wyntres þow hem  
 greues, 112
- And makest hem welnyegh meke · and mylde for  
 defaute,
- And after þow sendest hem somer · þat is her souereigne  
 Ioye,  
 And blisse to alle þat ben · bothe wilde and tame.  
 þanne may beggeres, as bestes · after bote waiten, 116  
 þat al her lyf han lyued · in langour and in defaute.
- But god sent hem some tyme · some manere ioye,  
 Other here or elles where · kynde wolde it neuere ;  
 For to wrotherhele was he wrouȝte · þat neuere was  
 ioye shaped. 120
- ¶ Angeles þat in helle now ben · hadden ioye some  
 tyme,  
 And diues in deyntees lyued · and in *douce rye* ;  
 Riȝte so resoun sheweth · þat þo men þat were riche,  
 And her makes also lyued · her lyf in murthe. 124
- ¶ Ac god is of a wonder wille · by þat kynde witte  
 sheweth,  
 To ȝiue many men his mercymonye · ar he it haue de-  
 serued.  
 Riȝt so fareth god by some riche · reuthe me it pinketh,

111. *knoweth*] couthe COB.      woo oþer wele B ; ouer myche woo O.  
 112. *hem*] hym B.      was *ioye*] ioye was R.  
 114. *hem*] hym CB. *her*] B om.      122. *in* (1)] in (*printed* in the) W.  
 116. *as*] and RCOB. *bestes*] bid-      *douce rye*] doute vrrie (*sie*) B.  
 ders (*corrected* to *beestes*) O. *bote*]      123. *þo*] þe W ; þoo O. *þat*—  
 bothe C.      *riche*] R om.  
 117. *langour*] hungur B. *in* (2)]      125. *Ac*] And C. *a*] W om.  
 B om.      126. *men—mercymonye*] man his  
 118. *hem*] hym CB.      mede W.  
 120. *wrotherhele*] wo other wel C ;

The poor claim  
 joy hereafter.  
 [Fol. 59 b.]

Beasts and birds  
 are grieved by  
 the winter,

but have  
 summer after-  
 wards.

Beggars will  
 have bliss  
 some time.

Dives had joy  
 once.

For þei han her hyre here · an heuene as it were,  
 And is gret lykug to lyue · with-oute labour of body ;  
 And whan he deyeth, ben disalowed · as dauid seith in  
 þe sauter, 130

God gives some  
 rich men their  
 reward here.

*Dormierunt, & nichil inuenerunt ;*

Ps. lxxv. 6  
 (Vulg.).

And in an other stede also · *velud sompnium surgencium,*  
*domine, in ciuitate tua, & ad nichilum rediges.*

Ps. lxxii. 20.

Allas ! þat riches shal reue · and robbe mannes soule  
 Fram þe loue of owre lorde · at his laste ende ! 133

Alas ! that riches  
 should rob man's  
 soul of God's  
 love!

¶ Hewen þat han her hyre afore · aren euermore nedy,  
 And selden deieth he out of dette · þat dyneth ar he  
 deserue it,

And til he haue done his deuor · and his dayes iourne.  
 For whan a werkman hath wrouȝte · þanne may men  
 se þe sothe, 137

What he were worthi for his werke · and what he hath  
 deserued ;

Workmen are  
 not paid before-  
 hand.

And nouȝt to fonge bifore · for drede of disalowyng.

¶ So I segge by ȝow riche · it semeth nouȝt þat ȝe shulle  
 Haue heuene in ȝowre here-beyng · and heuene her-after ;  
 Riȝt as a seruauȝt taketh his salarye bifore · & sitth  
 wolde clayme more, 142

A servant, if  
 paid beforehand,  
 claims no more.

As he þat none hadde · and hath huyre atte laste.

It may nouȝt be, ȝe riche men · or matheu on god lyeth ;

*De delicijs ad delicijs, [difficile] est transire.*

Cf. Mat. xix. 23.

¶ Ac if [ye] riche haue reuthe · and rewarde wel þe pore,

128. *her—here*] here her salarium  
 B. *an*] and WCO ; her B.

129. *is*] his B ; eke O ; W *om.*  
*lyue*] þe lif R.

131. *&*] RO *om.* *rediges*] eorum  
*rediges* R. See Note.

134. *Hewen*] þay B. *hyre afore*] huyre to-fore R.

135. *he* (1)] R *om.* *ar he*] or þei R.

136. *deuor*] deuoir WC ; deuer RB.  
*dayes*] C *om.*

137. *may*] mowen O ; may (*printed*  
 many) W. *may men*] men may B.

138. *he were*] were he B.

140. *nouȝt*] R *om.*

141. *heuene in*] to heuenes for R.  
*here*] hiȝe B ; hee C. *beyng*] beryng  
 CB ; dwellyng W. *heuene* (2)] heuene  
 also W. *her-after*] þer-after WR.

142. *as*] so as W. *salarye*] hire C.  
*sitth*] after C. *more*] huyre R.

143. *none*] non ne R. *huyre*] huyre R. *atte*] at þe WROB.

144. *god*] yow CB. *De*] De (*printed*  
 Yæ) W. [*difficile* WCROB] deficile  
 L. *transire*] ascendere R.

145. *Ac*] And C. [*ye* WCROB]  
 þe L.

Yet good rich  
men may win  
heaven,

And lyuen as lawe teclheth · done leute to alle, 146  
Criste of his curteysie · shal conforte 3ow atte laste,  
And rewarde alle dowble ricchesse · þat reuful hertes  
habbeth. 148

[Fol. 60.]  
as when a paid  
servant receives  
a bounty.

And as an hyne þat hadde his hyre · ar he hygonne,  
And whan he hath done his deuor wel · men doth hym  
other bounte,

3yueth hym a cote aboute his couenaunte · ri3te so cryst  
3iueth heuene

Bothe to riche and to nou3te riche · þat rewfullich  
lybbeth ; 152

The righteous  
have a double  
reward.

And alle þat done her deuor wel · han dowble hyre for  
her trauaille,

Here for3yuenesse of her synnes · and heuene blisse after.  
¶ Ac it nys but selde yseyn · as by holy seyntes bokes,  
þat god rewarded double reste · to any riche wye. 156  
For moche murthe is amonges riche · as in mete and  
clothyng,

Even wild beasts  
enjoy the  
summer, but  
beggars suffer in  
winter.

And moche murthe in Maye is · amonges wilde bestes,  
And so forth whil somer lasteth · her solace dureth.

Ac beggeres aboute Midsomer · bredlees þei soupe, 160  
And 3it is wynter for hem worse · for wete-shodde þei  
gange,

A-fyrst sore and afyngred · and foule yrebuked,

And arated of riche men · þat reuthe is to here. 163

146. *lawe*] þe lawe CB. *done*] and  
doon WB. *leute*] leaute WCB; lewte  
O. *to*] to hem WCOB.

147. *atte*] at þe WOB; att þe R.

148. *habbeth*] hases (*sic*) C.

149. *þat*] O *om.*

151. *3yueth*] Gyfe C. *cote*] Cite  
C; citee B.

152. *to nou3te*] no3t to B. *rew-  
fullich*] ri3tfullich R.

153. *deuor*] connande C. *hyre*] B  
*om.*

154. *Here*] CB *om.*

155—159. R *omits.*

155. *Ac*] And C. *nys*] is W.

*selde*] seldom B. *yseyn*] so seyn C;  
so seien B. *bokes*] lyues O.

158. *moche*] mykyl C.

160. *Ac*] And C; R *om.* *Mid-  
somer*] myssomer CR. *soupe*] soupem  
O; slepe W.

161. *wete-shodde*] watschod R.  
*gange*] gangen O; gone W.

162. *A-fyrst*] A-first CO; A-furst  
WR; a-frust B. *A-fyrst sore*] Sore  
a-frust B. *afyngred*] affyngred CR;  
an-hungrid B. *foule yrebuked*] foul-  
iche rebuked COB.

163. *men*] O *om.*

Now, lorde, sende hem somer · and some manere ioye, The Lord send them summer hereafter,  
 Heuene after her hennes goyng · þat here han suche  
 defaute!

For alle myȝtest þow haue made · none mener þan other,  
 And yliche witty & wyse · if þe wel hadde lyked.  
 And hane reuthe on þise riche men · þat rewarde nouȝte  
 þi prisoneres ; 168

Of þe good þat þow hem gyuest · *ingrati* ben manye ;  
 Ac, god, of þi goodnesse · gyue hem grace to amende. and giue th<sup>r</sup> rich grace to amend;  
 For may no derth ben hem dere · drouth, ne weet,

Ne noyther hete ne haille · haue þei here hele, 172

Of þat þei wilne and wolde · wanteth hem nouȝt here.  
 ¶ Ac pore peple, þi prisoneres · lorde, in þe put of  
 myschief,

Conforte þo creatures · þat moche care suffren and comfort the poor that here suffer so much.  
 þorw derth, þorw drouth · alle her dayes here, 176

Wo in wynter tymes · for wantyng of clothes,  
 And in somer tyme selde · soupen to þe fulle ;  
 Conforte þi careful · cryst, in þi ryehe,  
 For how þow confortest alle creatures · clerkes bereth  
 witnesse, 180

*Conuertimini ad me, & salui eritis :* Cf. Isa. xxx. 15.

¶ þus, *in genere* of his [gentrice] · Ihesu cryst seyde,  
 To robberes and to reueres · to riche and to pore.

þow tauȝtest hem in þe Trinitee · to take baptesme, Baptism cleanses us first of all.  
 And be clene þorw þat crystennyng · of alle kynnes  
 [synnes] ; 184

167. *þe wel*] thy wille COB.  
 168. *And*] But lord W. *om*] of CB.  
*prisoner*es] prisoners R.  
 169. *ingrati*] vnkynde O.  
 170. *Ac*] And C. *hem*] vs O.  
 171. *þen*] O *om*. *weet*] weet hem greue W.  
 172. *Ne*] B *om*. *ne*] nor C.  
 174. *Ac*] And C. *þi*] þei B. *prisoner*es] prisoners R.  
 176. *þorw* (2)] and CO; of B.  
*drouth*] drouȝe OB.  
 177. *wynter tymes*] wyntres tyme R.

178. *selde*] seldeu C.  
 179. *þi* (2)] B *om*. *ryeche*] richesse W.  
 181. *his*] alle his R; WCOB *om*.  
 [gentrice O] gentries W; gentrise CB;  
 genitricie LR.  
 182. *and*] R *om*. *reueres*] reueris WCOB. *After* l. 182, R *adds*—To hores, to harlotes · to alle maner poeple.  
 184. *be*] to be W. [synnes RCO] synne WB; L *om*.; *but the line is marked*.

Confession  
amends us  
afterwards.

And [if] vs fel þorw folye · to falle in synne after,  
Confessioun, and [knowlechyng] · & crauyng þi mercy  
Shulde amende vs as many sithes · as man wolde desire.  
Ac if þe [pouke] wolde plede here-azeine · and punyssh  
vs in conscience, 188  
He shulde take þe acquitance as quik · and to þe qued  
schewe it,

*Pateat, &c., per passionem domini,*

The parchment  
of our patent  
of pardon is made  
of poverty and  
[Fol. 60 b.]  
patience.

And putten of so þe pouke · and preuen vs vnder borwe.  
Ac þe perchemyn of þis patent · of pouerte be moste,  
And of pure pacience · and parfit bileue. 192  
Of pompe and of pruyde · þe parchemyn decorreth,  
And principaliche of alle peple · but þei be pore of herte.  
Ellis is al an ydel · al þat euere we writen,  
Pater-nostres and penaunce · and pilgrimage to Rome.  
But owre spences and spendyng · spryng of a trewe  
[wille], 197

Christians should  
have wealth in  
common.

Elles is al owre labour loste ; · lo ! how men writeth  
In fenestres atte freres · if fals be þe fundament ;  
For-þi crystene sholde ben in comune riche · none  
coucitouse for hym-selue. 200

¶ For seuene synnes þat þere ben · assailen vs euere,  
þe fende folweth hem alle · and fondeth hem to helpe,  
Ac wiþ richesse þat Ribaude · rathest men bigyleth.

185. [if WR] LCOB *om.* fel] fille  
W. synne] som C ; somer (!) B.

186. [knowlechyng CORB] *mis-*  
*written* knelechyng in L ; *but the line*  
*is marked* ; knowlichyng W. *Con-*  
*fessioun—knowlechyng*] Knowlechyng  
and confession R. ð] in W.

187. *as* (2) B *om.*

188. *Ac*] And WCR. [pouke R]  
pope (!!!) LWCOB ; *see* l. 190. *here-*  
*azeine*] þere-azeine RB ; her-ayein  
(*printed* ayein) W. *punyssh*] pun-  
ischen on R.

189. *He*] Ho R. *to*] do R.

190. *so*] COB *om.*

191. *Ac*] And C. *moste*] muste O.

192. *pure*] pouere C ; pore B.

193. *decorreth*] decoureff WR.

194. *alle*] al þe W.

195. *we*] W *om.* *writen*] written C.

196. *Pater-nostres*] Pater noster  
CROB. *penaunce*] penaunces R. *pil-*  
*grimage*] Pilgrymages W.

197. *But*] And R. *spences*] spence  
C. *and*] and oure RB. [*wille* WCO]  
welle LRB.

199. *atte*] at þe WCR.

200. *ben*] O *om.* *coucitouse*]  
coueite COB.

201. *þat*] WCOB *om.* *ben*] ben þat  
W. *rs*] þee O.

203. *Ac*] And C. *þat*] þo R.  
*Ribaude*] ribalde C ; ribaudes R.  
*rathest*] he rafest W.

For þere þat richesse regneth · reuerence folweth, 204 Where wealth  
reigns, reverence  
follows.  
And þat is plesaunte to pryde · in pore and in riche.

And þe riche is reuerenced · by resoun of his richesse,  
þere þe pore is put bihynde · and *par* auenture can more  
Of witte and of wysdom · þat fer away is better 208  
þan richesse or reaute · and rather yherde in heuene.

For þe riche hath moche to rekene · and riȝte softe Riches hinder  
men on their  
way to heaven.  
walketh,

þe heigh waye to-heuene-ward · oft richesse letteth,

*Ita [in] possibile diuiti, &c.,*

¶ þere þe pore preseth bifor þe riche · with a pakke at  
his rugge, 212

*Opera enim illorum sequuntur illos.*

Rev. xiv. 13.

Batauntliche as beggeres done · and baldeliche he  
craueþ,

For his pouerte and his pacience · a perpetuel blisse ;

*Beati pauperes, quoniam ipsorum est regnum  
celorum.* Mat. v. 3.

¶ And pryde in richesse regneth · rather þan in pouerte, Pride reigns  
in riches,  
Arst in þe Maister þan in þe man · some mansioun he  
hath. 216

Ae in pouerte þere pacyence is · pryde hath no myȝte, but pacience in  
poverty.  
Ne none of þe seuene synnes · sitten ne mowe þere  
longe,

Ne haue powere in pouerte · if pacyence it folwe.

For þe pore is ay prest · to plesse þe riche, 220 The poor man  
has no pride ;  
And buxome at his byddyng · for his broke loues ;

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 204. <i>reuerence</i> ] reuerences R.          | 212. <i>preseth</i> ] <i>precheth</i> R. <i>rugge</i> ] |
| 205. <i>pore</i> ] pouerte C ; pouert B.       | rygge CO. <i>sequuntur</i> ] sequuntur LCRB.            |
| 206. <i>And</i> ] Ac R. <i>reuerenced</i> ]    | 213. <i>Batauntliche</i> ] <i>Batanlich</i> C.          |
| reuerenced C.                                  | 214. <i>his</i> (2)] COB om.                            |
| 207. <i>þere</i> ] That C.                     | 215. <i>And</i> ] Ac R. <i>pouerte</i> ] pouert         |
| 208. <i>fer</i> ] B om. <i>away</i> ] wei R.   | RB.   |
| 209. <i>reaute</i> ] realte O ; rente B.       | 216. <i>Arst</i> ] Or R. <i>þan</i> ] or R.             |
| <i>yherde</i> ] herde C ; herd OB.             | þe] O om. <i>he</i> ] R om. <i>hath</i> ] haueþ         |
| 210. <i>riȝte softe</i> ] many tyme hym        | WR ; has C.   |
| þat W.   | 217. <i>Ae</i> ] And C.                                 |
| 211. <i>heigh</i> ] riȝt R. <i>oft</i> ] W om. | 219. <i>it</i> ] W om.                                  |
| <i>richesse</i> ] riche R ; Richesse hym W.    | 221. <i>byddyng</i> ] biddynges W. <i>loues</i> ]       |
| [ <i>impossible</i> W] possibile LCRÖB.        | looues O.   |

- And buxomenesse and boste · aren euer-more at werre,  
 And ayther hateth other · in alle manere werkes.  
 he resists not *wrath*, If wratthe wrastel with þe pore · he hath þe worse  
 ende; 224
- For if þey bothe pleyne · þe pore is but fieble,  
 And if he chyde or chatre · hym chieueth þe worse;  
 [For loulich he loketh · and loueliche is his speche,  
 þat mete or mone · of other men mote asken. 228  
 And if glotonie greue pouerte · he gadereth þe lasse,  
 For his rentes ne wol nauzte reche · no riche metes to  
 bugge ;
- And þouȝ his glotonye be to gode ale · he goth to cold  
 beddyngē,
- And his heued vn-heled · vn-esiliche I-wrye ; 232
- For whan he streyneth hym to streche · þe strawe is  
 his schetes ;
- not for other  
 lullies,
- If he yields to  
*sloth*, he suffers  
 for it.
- So for his glotonie and his grete sleuthe · he hath a  
 greuous penaunce,  
 þat is welawo whan he waketh · and wepeth for colde,  
 And sum tyme for his synnes · so he is neuere murie,  
 Withoute mornynge amonge · and mischief to bote.]
- ¶ And if coueitise wolde cacche þe pore · þei may  
 nouzt come togideres, 238
- And by þe nekke namely · her none may hente other.  
 For men knoweth wel þat coueitise · is of a kene wille,  
 And hath hondes and armes · of a longe lengthe,  
 And pouerte nis but a petit þinge · appereth nouzt to  
 his naule, 242
- having too long  
 arms
- And louely layke was it neuere · bitwene þe longe and  
 þe shorte.
- for fair wrestling  
 with him,

222. *more*] CB *om.*223. *ayther*] eiper WOB.224. *wrastel*] wrystel C.225. *for*] And WO.227—237. *In R only.* Cf. C-Text.238. *if*] þouȝ R. *wolde*] walde R ;  
 WCOB *om.*239. *her*] for B. *hente*] henten R.240. *wel*] O *om.* a] W *om.*241. *a longe*] longe R ; ful greet  
 W.242. *nis*] ne is R ; is O. a] O *om.**petit*] pety R. *naule*] nauele WCR ;  
 name (!) B ; *in margin of L*—vmbilii-  
 c*is.*243. *it*] COB *om.*

And þough auarice wolde angre þe pore · he hath but [Fol. 61.]  
litel myȝte, 244

For pouerte hath but pokes · to putten in his godis, What is a  
þere auarice hath almaries · and yren-bounde coffres ; beggar's bag to  
an iron co'er?

And whether be liȝter to breke? · lasse boste it maketh,  
A beggeres bagge · þan an yren-bounde coffre ! 248

¶ Lecherye loueth hym nouȝt · for he ȝeueþ but lytel  
syluer, Lechery loves  
not the poor.

Ne doth hym nouȝte dyne delycatly · ne drynke wyn oft.  
A strawe for þe stuwes ! · it stode nouȝt, I trowe,  
Had þei [no þyng] but of pore men · her houses were  
vntyled ! 252

¶ And þough sleuthe suwe pouerte · and serue nouȝt  
god to paye, He is save l  
from stoth by  
adversity.

Mischief is his maister · and maketh hym to thynke,  
þat god is his grettest helpe · and no gome elles,  
And his seruaunt, as he seith · and of his sute bothe.  
And where he be or be nouȝte · he bereth þe signe of  
pouerte, 257

And in þat secte owre saueoure · saued al maukynde.  
For-thi al pore þat paciente is · may claymen and asken We'll may the  
patient poor  
claim heaven!

¶ Moche hardier may he axen · þat here myȝte haue  
his wille

In londe and in lordship · and likyng of bodye, 262 Much more may  
he that forsakes  
his wealth,  
And for goddis loue leueth al · an lyueth as a beggere ;

244. *angre*] C om. *but*] but a B.

245. *godis*] soddes C; soddis B.

247. *lasse—it*] so in LCROB; and  
lasse boost W.

248. *beggeres*] begger C. *coffre*]  
coffires (*sic*) C.

250. *nouȝte*] B om.

251, 252. R omits. *stuwes*] styue-  
hous B. *it*] hit ne B; þei W. [no  
þyng WCOB] none L. *pore men*] a  
pore man B. *were*] stode W; stood  
C; stoden O; stonden B; *probably*  
*owing* to stode in l. 251. *vntyled*]  
vntyled O; *which* is perhaps right.

253. *god*] C om.

255. *his*] RB om. *gome*] man C;  
*with* i. *gome* above it.

256. *Follows* l. 257 in B. *his* (1)  
*so* in LOB; is C; he his (*printed* he  
is) W; he is R. *sute bothe*] suyte  
bethe C; suyte boþe B.

257. *where*] wheiþer WC; wheþer  
OB. *be* (2)] C omits.

259. *al pore*] alle pore R; euery  
poore W; al pouerte COB. *paciente*]  
paciens C.

262. *londe*] lorde R.

263. *an*] and WCROB.

And as a mayde for mannes loue · her moder forsaketh,  
 Hir fader and alle her frendes · and folweth hir make,  
 Moche is suche a mayde to louie · of hym þat such one  
 taketh, 266

as a betrothed  
 maid forsakes  
 her kindred.

More þan a mayden is · þat is maried þerw brokage,  
 As bi assent of sondry partyes · and syluer to bote,  
 More for coueitise of good · þan kynde loue of bothe ;—

For so is he  
 who forsakes  
 wealth."

¶ So it fareth bi eche a persone · þat possessioun for-  
 saketh, 270

And put hym to be pacient · and pouerte weddeth,  
 þe which is sybbe to god hym-self · and so to his  
 seyntes."

"What is  
 poverty?" said  
 Haukyn.

¶ "Haue god my trouthe," quod Haukyn · "ȝe preyse  
 faste pouerte ;

What is pouerte with pacience," quod he · "propely  
 to mene?" 274

See Vineent of  
 Beauvais,  
*Speculum  
 Historiale*, l. x.  
 e. 71.

¶ "*Paupertas*," quod pacience · "*est odibile bonum,  
 Remocio curarum, possessio sine calumpnia,  
 donum dei, sanitatis mater ;  
 Absque solitudine semita, sapiencie temperatrice,  
 negocium sine dampno ;  
 Incerta fortuna, absque solitudine felicitas.*"

"What is this  
 in English?"

¶ "I can nouȝt construe al þis," quod Haukyn · "ȝe  
 moste kenne [me] þis on englisch." 276

"In englisch," quod pacyence, "it is wel harde · wel  
 to expounen ;

Ac somdel I shal seyne it · by so þow vnderstonde.

264. *for*] for a R.

265. *Hir*] And O. *folweth*] folowes  
 C; folwed R.

266. *suche a*] þat R. *Moche—  
 louie*] Muehe moore is to loue W.

267. *More—is*] Than is þat maiden  
 W. *is* (2)] C om.

268. *As*] And COB.

271. *put*] puttes C; puttiþ OB.

272. *þe*] R om. *to—seyntes*] neȝ  
 is pouerte R.

273. *ȝe—faste*] þat huyre faste B.

preyse R.

274. *wit*] R om. *quod he*] O om.

275. *sanitatis*] sanitas CB (*also  
 sanitas in MS. W*); semita R. *so-  
 licitudine*] solitudine R (*once*); B  
*(twice)*.

276. *al*] COB om. *ȝe*] þe R. *kenne  
 me þis*] so in WR; kenne þis L; seye  
 it O; seyn hit B; sayn C.

277. *wel* (1)] ful B.

278. *Ac*] And CR. *þow*] ye C; ȝee

Pouerte is þe first poynte · þat pryde moste hateth,  
 Thanne is it good by good skil · al þat agasteth pryde.

1. "Poverty is  
 hateful to pride,

Rizte as contricioun is comfortable þinge · conscience  
 wote wel, 281

And a sorwe of hym-self · and a solace to þe sowle,

[Fol. 61 b.]

So pouerte propreliche · penaunce, and ioie,

and health to the  
 body.

Is to þe body · pure spiritual helthe, 284

*Ergo paupertas est odibile bonum,*

And contricioun confort · & *cura animarum.*

¶ Selde [sit] pouerte · þe sothe to declare,

2. It has few re-  
 sponsibilities.

Or as iustyce to iugge men · enioigned is no pore,

Ne to be a Maire aboue men · ne mynystre vnder kynges ;

Selden is any pore yput · to punysshyn any peple ; 289

*Remocio curarum.*

*Ergo* pouerte and pore men · *performen* þe comaunde-  
 ment,

*Nolite iudicare quemquam.* þe þridde :—

¶ Selde is any pore riche · but of riztful heritage ;

Wynneth he nauzt with weghtes fals · ne with vnseled

3. The poor do  
 not win wealth  
 falsely.

mesures,

292

Ne borweth of his neighbores · but þat he may wel paye,

*Possessio sine calumpnia.*

¶ þe fierthe is a fortune · þat florissbeth þe soule

4. Poverty is the  
 gift of God.

Wyth sobrete fram al synne · and also zit more ;

It affaiteth þe flesshe · fram folyes ful manye, 296

A collateral conforte · crystes owne zifte,

280. *it*] C *om.*

281. *wote*] it woot O.

282. *a* (2)] COB *om.*

284. *spiritual*] *perpetuel* O.

285. *animarum*] COB *add the words* the secunde, *which is really only a title to the paragraph following.* Cf. l. 290.

286. [*sit* WR] *sitte* (*which is inferior spelling*) LCO ; *sytteþ* B.

287. Or] For W. *as*] a B. *en-  
 ioigned—pore*] R *om.*

288. *to*] for to R. *a*] W *om.*  
*aboue*] ouere R. *kynges*] kyng O.

289. *any*] enemye (!) R. *yput*] putte CB.

290. *The words þe þridde are really only a title to the paragraph following.* Cf. l. 294.

291. *any pore*] pore rizt R. *of*] of his R.

292. *weghtes*] wizes W ; weightes C ; weyztis OB ; wittes R. *with* (2)] COB *om.*

294. *fierthe*] ferþe WROB ; ferde C. *is*] it is R. *a*] B *om.*

295. *synne*] synnes O.

*Donum dei.*

5. It is the mother of health.

¶ þe fyfte is moder of helthe · a frende in alle fondynges,  
And for þe land euere a leche · a lemman of al elennesse,

*Sanitatis mater.*

6. The poor may walk unrobbed through the pass of Alton;

¶ þe sexte is a path of pees · 3e, þorw þe pas of altoun  
Pouerte myzte passe · with-oute peril of robbynge, 301  
For þere þat pouerte passeth · pees folweth after,  
And euere þe lasse þat he bereth · þe hardyer he is of  
herte;

so poverty is a safe path.

For-þi seith seneca · *paupertus est absque solitudine semita,* 304

And an hardy man of herte · amonge an hepe of þeues;

Juvenal, Sat. x. 22.

*Cantabit [pauper] coram latrone viator.*

7. It is a source of wisdom.

¶ þe seueneth is wellle of wisdome · and fewe wordes  
sheweth,

For lordes alloweth hym litel · or lysteneth to his reson,  
He tempreth þe tonge to-treuthe-ward · and no tresore  
coueiteth; 308

*Sapientie temperatrix.*

8. It deals fairly with others.

¶ The eigteth is a lele laborere · and loth to take more  
þan he may wel deserue · in somer or in wynter,  
And if [he] chaffareth, he chargeth no losse · mowe he  
charite wynne;

*Negotium sine dampno.*

9. It is an uncertain fortune, [Fol. 62.]

¶ The nyneth is swete to þe soule · no sugre is swettere;  
For paeyence is payn · for pouerte hym-selue, 313  
And sobrete swete drynke · and good leche in sykenesse,

298. *is*] it is þe R. *helthe*] hele R.

299. *land*] *so in* W; *lawde* RC;  
lewede O; lewid B. *Sanitatis*] Sani-  
tatis CB (*and in MS.* W).

300. *sexe*] *sixte* it R. *path*] *paþþe* O; *paap* B. *pas of*] *pa (sic)* R. *altoun*] *Aultone* WC; *aultoun* O; *altone* RB.

303. *þat*] O *om.* *he* (2)] R *om.*

304. *solicitudine*] *solitudine* ROB.

305. [*pauper* O] *paupertas* LWCR  
B; *see Note.* *viator*] *viatore* W.

306. *is*] it is R. *welle*] *wille* CB.

307. *Før*] *Ther-fore* W. *litel*] *lite* R.

308. *He*] *For* he W. *and*] *þat* R. *Sapientie, &c.*] R *om.*

309. *eigteth*] *eighte* CB. *is*] it is R. *a*] B *om.* *laborere*] *labour* WCOB.

311. [*he* WCOB] L *om.*; *but the line is marked.* *chaffareth*] *chaffare* COB. *wynne*] *wynte* R.

312. *nyneth*] *nythe* it (*sic*) R; *ny-  
gente* B. *to*] for O. *is* (2)] COB *om.*

þus lered me a lettred man · for owre lordes loue,  
 Seynt austyn, a blissed lyf · with-ouren bysynesse, 316  
 For body and for soule · *absque solitudine felicitas*.  
 Now god, þat al good gyueth · graunt his soule reste,  
 þat þus fyrst wrote to wysse men · what pouerte was  
 to mene!"

¶ "Allas!" quod haukyn þe actyf man þo · "þat, after  
 my crystendome, 320

and a blessing  
 without care."

I ne hadde ben ded and doluen · for doweles sake!  
 So harde it is," quod haukyn · "to lyue and to do synne.

Synne suweth vs euere," quod he · and sori gan wexe,  
 And wepte water with his eyghen · and weyled þe tyme,  
 þat euere he dede dede · þat dere god displest; 325

Then he wept  
 for his sins,

Swowed and sobbed · and syked ful ofte,  
 þat euere he hadde londe or lordship · lasse other more,  
 Or maystrye ouer any man · mo þan of hym-self. 328

"I were nouȝt worthy, wote god," quod haukyn · "to  
 were any clothes,

declaring him-  
 self unworthy to  
 wear more  
 clothes than a  
 shirt.

Ne noȝther sherte ne shone · saue for shame one,  
 To keure my caroigne," quod he · and cryde mereye faste,  
 And wepte and weyled · and þere-with I awaked. 332

The dreamer  
 awakes.

315. *lettred*] lered R. *loue*] loue *dede*] dide dede WCO.  
 of heuene W.

316. *a*] CB *om. bysynesse*] bisy-  
 nesse ladde W. Cf. C-Text.

326. *Swowed*] Swounded (*printed*  
 Swound) W; Swonde C; He swounded  
 B.

317. *for* (2)] COB *om. absque*] R  
*om. solitudine*] solitude B.

327. *or*] ouȝer W. *lordship*] larde  
 (*corrected to lord*) O.

319. *þus*] þis WCO.

329. *wote god*] wite god R; COB  
*om. were*] werien W; werie CR.

320. *þe—þo*] R *om.*

321. *doweles*] dowel C.

330. *Ne*] B *om. noȝther*] nouthur  
 C; neiȝer WOB.

322. *do*] do (*printed do no*) W.

See Note.

323. *suweth*] scheweth R.

331. *caroigne*] cariogne C; careyne  
 W; caroyne R; caroyne wiȝ B.  
*mereye faste*] fast mereye COB.

324. *tyme*] thyme C.

325. *euere he*] he euere WO. *dede*

332. *awaked*] waked C.

## PASSUS XV (PROLOGUE TO DO-BET).

*Passus xv<sup>us</sup>: finit dowel, & incipit dobet.*

It took me long  
to make out what  
Do-well was.

Many thought  
me a fool,

because I  
reverenced not  
lords.

Again I slept.

I saw one  
without tongue  
or teeth,

Ac after my wakyng · it was wonder longe,  
Ar I couth kyndely · knowe what was dowel.  
And so my witte wex and wanyed · til I a fole were,  
And somme lakked my lyf · allowed it fewe, 4  
And leten [me] for a lorel · and loth to reuerencen  
Lordes or ladyes · or any lyf elles,  
As persones in pellure · with pendauntes of syluer ;  
To seriautz ne to suche · seyde nouzte ones, 8  
'God loke 3ow, lordes !' · ne louted faire ;  
þat folke helden me a fole · and in þat folye I raued,  
Tyl resoun hadde reuthe on me · and rokked me aslepe,  
Tyl I seigh, as it sorcerye were · a sotyl þinge with-al,  
One with-uten tonge and teeth · tolde me whyder I 13  
shulde,  
And wher-of I cam and of what kynde ; · I conjured  
hym atte laste,

TITLE. *So in W* ; Passus xiiijus de visione, vt supra R ; Passus xvus. Explicit de do-wel, & Incipit primus de do-bet C ; Passus xvus de dowel. Et incipit primus de dobet B ; Passus quintodecimus O.

1. *Ac*] As B ; An C. *wakyng*] walkynge RB. *wonder*] C om.
2. *couth*] koude WC ; coude RB.
3. *a*] B om.

5. [*me* WRB] LCO om.
7. *with*] and with COB.
8. *ne*] and R. *seyde*] and seide R ; seide I W.
10. *me*] C om.
12. *it*] it of R. *a*] & O.
13. *whyder*] wonder R.
14. *of*] COB om. *of—kynde*] whider I schulde R.

If he were crystes creature · for crystes loue me to  
tellen.

¶ “I am crystes creature,” quod he · “and crystene in  
many a place, 16

who said he was  
Christ's creatu. e.

In crystes courte I-knowe wel · and of his kynne a  
partye.

Is noyther peter þe porter · ne poule with his fauchoune,  
þa[t] wil defende me þe dore · dyngge ich neure so  
late. and known to  
Peter and Paul.

At mydnyȝt, at mydday · my voice so is yknowe, 20  
þat eche a creature of his courte · welcometh me fayre.”

¶ “What ar ȝe called,” quod I, “in þat courte · I asked him his  
amonges crystes peple?” name.

“þe whiles I quykke þe corps,” quod he · “called am I *anima*;  
[Fol. G2 b.]  
“*Anima*,” he  
said,

And whan I wilne and wolde · *animus* ich hatte; 24 “also *animus*,

And for þat I can and knowe · called am I *mens*; *mens*,

And whan I make mone to god · *memoria* is my name; *memoria*,

And whan I deme domes · and do as treuthe techeth,  
þanne is *racio* my riȝt name · resoun an englisshe; 28 *ratio*.

And whan I fele þat folke telleth · my firste name is  
*sensus*, *sensus*,

And þat is wytte and wisdome · þe welle of alle craftes ;

And whan I chalange or chalange nouȝte · chepe or  
refuse,

þanne am I conscience ycalde · goddis clerke and his *conscientia*,  
notarie; 32

15. *creature*] creature quod he B.  
for—*loue*] anoon W.

16. *crystes*] criste C. a] R om.

17. *crystes*] crist C. his] CB om.

18. *ne*] ne (*printed* Nor) W. his]  
þe R.

19. *þat*] so in WCROB; þa L; but  
marked for correction.

20. *so is*] is so R. *yknowe*] knowe  
W; known O.

21. *eche*] Ich R; Ilke C.

22. *quod I*] follows courte in COB.

23. *quykke*] quykne (*printed* quikne)  
W; quikye R; quik was in COB.  
*corps*] body C. *called*] I-cald R.

24. *and*] or O. *animus*] anima B.

25. *and*] W om. *mens*] mens.  
thouȝte R.

28. *resoun*] & resoun O. *an*] on  
WCOB.

29. *firste*] CB om.

31. *I*] O om. *chepe*] clepe O.

32. *conscience*] C om.

And whan I loue lelly · owre lorde and alle other,  
*amor.* þanne is lele loue my name · and in latyn *amor* ;  
 And whan I flye fro þe flesshe · and forsake þe caroigne,  
*and spiritus."* þanne am I spirit specheles · and *spiritus* þanne ich  
 hatte. 36

Austyn and ysodorus · ayther of hem bothe  
 Nempned me þus to name ; · now þow myzte chese,  
 How þow coueitest to calle me · now þow knowest alle  
 my names.

See Isidore,  
 Etymol. lib. xi.  
 c. 1.

*Anima pro diuersis actionibus diuersa nomina  
 sortitur : dum uiuificat corpus, anima est ;  
 dum vult, animus est ; dum scit, meus est ;  
 dum recolit, memoria est. Dum iudicat, ratio  
 est ; dum sentit, sensus est ; dum amat, amor  
 est ; dum negat vel consentit, consciencia est ;  
 dum spirat, spiritus est."*

"You have as  
 many names as a  
 bishop," said I.

¶ "Ȝe ben as a bisshop," quod I · al bourdyng þat  
 tyme, 40

"For bisshopes yblessed · þei bereth many names,  
*Presul* and *pontifex* · and *metropolitanus*,  
 And other names an hepe · *episcopos* & *pastor*."

"I suppose you  
 would fain know  
 what they  
 mean ?" said he.

¶ "þat is soth," seyde he · "now I se þi wille ! 44  
 þow woldest knowe and kunne · þe cause of alle her  
 names,

And of myne, if þow myztest · me þinketh by þi  
 speche !"

"Yes," said I.

¶ "Ȝe, syre," I seyde · "by so no man were greued.  
 Alle þe sciences vnder sonne · and alle þe sotyle  
 craftes 48

34. *and*] C om.

35. *flye*] fle R.

36. *I*] I a W. *and*] WCOB om.

37. *ayther*] oþer B.

38. *nor*] and now W. *myzte*] myztist O.

39. *nor*] for now W. *þow know-*  
*est*] knawestow C ; knowest þow B.  
*alle*] W om. *vult*] wlt (*sic*) R. C.  
*scit*] B om. ; sit R.

40. *as*] B om.

41. *þei*] COB om.

42. *metropolitanus*] metropolitanus

R.

45. *her*] my W.

46. *myne*] me W.

47. *so*] so þat B.

48. *sciencēs*] science ROB ; sciens

I wolde I knewe and couth · kyndely in myne herte!"

¶ "þanne artow inparfit," quod he · "and one of prydes knyȝtes; "Then you are too proud," said he.

For such a luste and lykyng · lucifer fel fram heuene :

*Ponam pedem meum in aquilone, & similis ero* Isalah xiv. 14.  
*altissimo.*

¶ It were aȝeynes kynde," quod he · "and alkynnes "No one can expect to know everything.  
resoun, 52

þat any creature shulde kunne al · excepte cryste one.

Aȝein such salomon speketh · and dispiseth her wittes,

And seith, *sicut qui mel comedit multum, non est* Prov. xxv. 27.  
*ei bonum : Sic qui scrutator est maiestatis,*  
*opprimitur a gloria.*

To englich men þis is to mene · þat mowen speke & Too much honey cloyeth the maw.  
here,

þe man þat moche hony eteth · his mawe it englymeth ;

And þe more þat a man · of good mater hereth, 57

But he do þer-after · it doth hym double scathe :

*Beatus est*, seith seynt Bernard · *qui scripturas legit*, [Fol. 63.]

*Et verba vertit in opera* · fullich to his powere. 60 Cf. John xiii. 17.

Coueytise to kunne · and to knowe science

Pulte out of paradys · Adam and Eue,

*Sciencie appetitus hominem immortalitatis [gloria] spoliavit.* Lust of knowledge caused the fall.

And riȝte as hony is vuel to defye · and englymeth þe mawe,

Riȝt so þat þorw resoun · wolde þe rote knowe 64

49. *I (2)* OB *om.* *knewe*] knowe  
COB. *couth*] kunne O.

50. *inparfit*] vnparfit CB. *prydes*] *fullich*] follich R.  
pride C.

52. *alkynnes*] alle kynnes W; alle  
kyne R; al kyus O; alkyn B.

53. *one*] R *om.*

54. *opprimitur*] opprimatur R.

56. *eteth*] eet R; eteis C. *it englymeth*] it englames C; is englymed R; is englymed B.

59. *est*] B *om.*

60. *verba vertit*] vertit verba R.

61, 62. *C omits.*

61. *sciencie*] sciences W.

62. *Pulte*] *so in* R; Putte WB;  
Pullede O. [*gloria* WO] *gloriam*  
LCRB.

63. *riȝte*] ȝet R.

64. *þat*] he þat W.

Of god and of his grete myztes · his graces it letteth.  
For in þe lykyng lith a pryde · and a lycames  
coueitise,

Azein crystes conseille · and alle clerkes techyng,

Rom. xii. 3.

That is, *non plus sapere quam oportet sapere.*

Freres and fele other maistres · þat to þe lewed men  
prechen, 68

þe moeuen materes inmesurables · to tellen of þe  
Trinite,

þat ofte tymes þe lewed peple · of hir bileue douten.

Doctors should  
leave hard  
matters, and  
talk of the seven  
sins,

Bettere byleue were mony · doctoures such techyng,

And tellen men of þe ten comaundementz · and touchen  
þe seuene synnes, 72

And of þe branches þat burgeouneth of hem · and  
bryngeth men to helle,

And how þat folke in folyes · myspenden her fyue  
wittes,

and foolish  
spending of  
money.

As wel freres as other folke · folilich spenen

In housyng, in haterynge · and in-to hiegh clergye  
shewyng, 76

More for pompe þan for pure charite · þe poeple wote  
þe sothe

þat I lye nouzt, loo ! · for lordes 3e plesen,

And reueren þe riche · þe rather for her syluer ;

Ps. xvi. 7  
(Vulg.).

*Confundantur omnes qui adorant scul[p]tilia ;*

*ꝛ alibi :*

65. *of*] C *om.* *grete*] COB *om.* *graccs*] *grace* COB.

66. *þe*] þat B. *lith*] lyges C. *a* (2)]  
in a CB ; W *om.*

68. *fcle*] R *om.* *þc*] WO *om.*

69. *3e*] COB *om.* *inmesurables*]  
*so in* CB ; *imesurables* O ; *vnmesur-*  
*able* W ; *vnmesurables* R.

70. R *omits.*

71. Better it were to manye doc-  
tours · to leuen swich techyng W ;  
Betere by-leue by mone · doctoures  
techyng R ; Better to leue wer many ·  
doctours swich techyng CB ; O like L,

*with* to bileue for byleue.

72. *And*] To C. *þe* (1)] C *om.*

73. CB *om.* *burgeouneth*] *burionep*  
W ; *bourgeleth* R.

75. *spenen*] *so in* RC ; *spenden* W ;  
*þei* *spenden* O ; *speken* B. *In margin*  
*of* O—Pride of Freres.

76. *and*] R *om.* *in-to*] COB *om.*

77. *poeple*] *pople* R ; *peple* W ; *pe-*  
*pile* C.

78. *lye*] *ne lye* O.

79. *þe* (2)] R *om.* *sylyuer*] *goodis*  
O. [*sculptilia* WCROB] *scultilia* L.  
*mendacium*] &c. R.

*Vt quid diligitis vanitatem, & queritis mendacium?* Ps. iv. 3 (Vulg.).

Go to þe glose of þe verse · 3e grete clerkes ; 80 Ye elerks, cringe  
If I lye on 3ow to my lewed witte · ledeth me to for money's sake.  
brennyng!

For as it semeth, 3e forsaketh · no mannes alnesse, Nota: de fratri-  
Of vsureres, of hores · of auarous chapmen, bus [margin of L.]

And louten to þis lordes · þat mowen lene 3ow nobles,  
A3eine 3owre reule and Religioun · I take recorde at  
Ihesus, 85

þat seide to his disciples · *ne sitis personarum acceptores.* Cf. Deut. i. 17;  
¶ Of þis matere I my3te · make a longe bible, xvi. 19.

Ac of curatoures of crystene peple · as clerkes bereth  
witnessse, 88

I shal tellen it for treuth sake · take hede who so  
lyketh!

¶ As holynesse and [honeste] · oute of holicherche  
spredeth As good teachers  
spread holiness,  
so evil teachers  
spread sin.

þorw lele libbyng men · þat goddes lawe techen,  
Ri3t so out of holicherche · alle yueles spredeth, 92

There inparfyt presthod is · prechoures and techeres.

And se it by ensample · in somer tyme on trowes,

þere somme bowes ben leued · and somme bereth none ; Some boughs  
þere is a myschief in þe more · of suche manere bowes. some are bare.

Ri3t so persones and prestes · and prechoures of holy  
cherche, 97

þat aren rote of þe ri3te faith · to reule þe peple ;

Ac þere þe rote is roten · reson wote þe sothe,

80. þe] þise W.

83. of (3)] and R.

85. and] & 3oure R. at] of COB.

86. *personarum acceptores*] R  
transposes.

88. of (2)] ouer R. In margin of  
O—Curatis.

89. *treuth*] truþes WCOB. *hede*] he (!) C. *lyketh*] lokes C.

90. *As*] And B. [*honeste* WCRO  
B] honestete L.

91. *lawe*] lawes R.

92. *yueles*] euel B. *spredeth*] spredes C; spreden O; spryngeþ W.

93. *prechoures*] and prechoures R.

94. *And*] I W. *trowes*] trewes R.

96. *more*] more (printed morre)  
W; moore O.

97. *so*] so bi W. *cherche*] cherches  
R.

98. *þat aren*] Is þe R.

99. *Ac*] And WC.

[Fol. 63 b.]  
If ye clerkes  
would leave  
rich clothing,

unlearned men  
would amend.

Hypocrisy is a  
snow-hidden  
dunghill, or a  
whited wall.

"Fairer wordes"  
[in margin of C].

Shal neuere floure ne frute · ne faire leef be grene. 100  
For þi, wolde 3e lettred lene · þe lecherye of clothyng,  
And be kynde, as bifel for clerkes · and curteise of  
crystes goodes,

Trewe of 3owre tonge · and of 3owre taille bothe,  
And hatien to here harlotrye · and nouzt to vnderfonge  
Tythes of vntrewe þinge · ytilied or chaffared, 105

¶ Lothe were lewed men · but þei 3owre lore folwed,  
And amenden hem þat mysdon · more for 3owre en-  
samples,

þan forto prechen & preue it nouzt · ypoecrysie it  
semeth. 108

For ypoecrysie in latyn · is lykned to a dongehul,  
þat were bysnewed with snowe · and snakes wyth-  
inne ;

¶ Or to a wal þat were whitlymed · and were foule  
wyth-inne.

Rigt so many prestes · prechoures and prelates, 112  
3e aren enblanched with *bele paroles* · and with  
clothes also,

Ac 3owre werkes and 3owre wordes þere-vnder · aren  
ful vnlouelich.

¶ *Iohannes crysostomus* · of clerkes speketh and prestes,  
*Sicut de templo omne bonum progreditur, sic de  
templo omne malum procedit.*

101. 3e] þe RB. *lettred*] lettred  
men O.

102. *bifel*] fel O. *curteise*] cur-  
tesie C.

103. *taille*] taile R; tail WCOB.

104. *hatien*] hauen (!) C. *nouzt*]  
auzt R.

105. *Tythes*] Tethes C. *of vntrewe*]  
of trewe R; but of trewe W. *ytilied*  
—*chaffared*] I-tyled or I-chafared R.

107. *amenden*] amendeden W.  
þat] þat þei R.

109. *For ypoecrysie*] The which W.  
*is lykned*] likned is CB. *dongehul*]  
dongoun R.

111. CB *omit. whitlymed*] whyzt-  
lymed wipout O. *neue*] O *om.*

113. 3e] CB *om. aren*] Er C.  
*also*] R *om.*

114. *Ae*] And RC. *3owre* (2)]  
COB *om. þere*] B *om. ful*] B *om.*  
*vnlouelich*] wlueliche (*sic*) R.

115. *crysostomus*] criostomus R.  
*progreditur*] egreditur COB; *procedit*  
R. *floret*] floreret O. *corruptum*] co-  
rupta R. *omnium*] omnium (*printed*  
omnis) W. *sacerdotium*] sacerdos R.  
*peccandum*] peccatum R. *pallidam*  
—*marcidam*] mareidam & pallidam  
OCB. *intelligis*] In-tellis R.

*Si sacerdocium integrum fuerit, tota floret  
ecclesia; si autem corruptum fuerit, omnium  
fides marcida est.*

A sound  
priesthood makes  
a flourishing  
church,

*Si sacerdocium fuerit in peccatis, totus populus  
co[n]uertitur ad peccandum.*

*Sicut cum videris arborem pallidam & mar-  
cidam, inteligis quod vicium habet in radice,*

but, as a  
withered tree  
has an evil root,  
so a wicked  
people shews  
an unsound  
priesthood.

*Ita cum videris populum indisciplinatum & ir-  
religiosum, sine dubio sacerdocium eius non  
est sanum.*

¶ If lewed men wist · what þis latyn meneth, 116  
And who was myn auctor · moche wonder me þinketh,  
But if many a prest bere · for here baselardes and here  
broches,  
A peyre bedes in her hande · and a boke vnder her  
arme.

Sire Iohan & sire Geffray · hath a gerdel of syluer, 120  
A basellarde, or a ballokknif · with botones ouerygylte.  
Ac a portous þat shulde be his plow · *placebo* to  
segge,

Sir John and  
Sir Geoffrey  
have a silver  
girdle.

Hadde he neure seruyse to saue syluer þer-to · seith it  
with yvel wille!

Allas! ȝe lewed men · moche lese ȝe on prestes, 124  
Ac þinge þat wykkedlich is wonne · and with false  
sleigthes,

Things wickedly  
won go to wicked  
men.

Wolde neure witte of witty god · but wikked men it  
hadde;

116. *In margin of O*—Prestis.

117. *who*] B om.

118. *a*] R om. *bere*] heer O.  
*here* (2)] B om. *for—broches*] for  
here broches and for here baselardes  
R.

119. *peyre*] peire of W. MS. O  
(*which in l. 118 has heer for bere*)  
*has a totally different line here, viz.*  
Schulden go syngre seruyseles · wip  
sire philip þe sparwe.

120. *hath—gerdel*] han gyrdles O.

121. *or a*] and a CB; & O. *with*

*botones*] & *barres* O.

122. *Ac*] And C. *portous*] port-  
hors WB; *portous* C; *portous* O;  
*portos* R. *segge*] saye C.

123. *saue*] haue R. *seith*] sayes  
C. *it*] B om. *seith—wille*] for  
spendyng at ale O. *yvel*] euel R;  
ydel WCOB.

125. *Ac*] And C.

126. *witte*] þe wit WCOB. *witte*  
*—god*] of witty god þe wit COB.  
*hadde*] maked R.

- þe which aren prestes inparfit · and prechoures after  
 syluer, 127  
 Sectoures and sudenes · somnoures and her lemmannes.  
 Evil got is evil spent. þis þat with gyle was geten · vngraciouslich is spended ;  
 So harlotes and hores · ar hulpen with such goodis,  
 And goddes folke for defaute þer-of · forfaren and  
 spillen.  
 Covetous elerks die intestate, ¶ Curatoures of holykirke · as clerkes þat ben auerouse,  
 Litzlich þat þey leuen · loselles it habbeth, 133  
 Or dyeth intestate · and þanne þe bissshop entreth,  
 And maketh murthe þere-with · and his men bothe,  
 and are blamed after death. And seggen, ‘ he was a nygarde · þat no good myzte  
 [aspere] 136  
 To frende ne to fremmed · þe fende haue his soule !  
 For a wrecched hous he helde · al his lyf tyme ;  
 [Fol. 64.] And þat he spared and bispered · spene we in murthe.’  
 ¶ By lered, by lewed · þat loth is to spende, 140  
 þus gone her godes · be þe goste faren.  
 Good men are lamented.” Ac for good men, god wote · gret dole men maken,  
 And bymeneth good mete-zyueres · and in myude  
 haueth,  
 In prayers and in penaunces · and in parfyt charite.”  
 ¶ “ What is charity ? ” said I. ¶ “ What is charite ? ” quod I þo · “ a childissh þinge,”  
 he seide ; 145

128. *Sectoures*] Seketoures R; Executours W. *sudenes*] Sodenes WRB; suddenes CO. *somnoures*] Somonours W.

129. *þis*] That W. *spended*] spened R; despended W.

130. *hulpen*] so in R; holpe WO; holpen C. *with*] þoruþ O. *goodis*] godeth (!) R.

131. *And*] Ac R.

133. *habbeth*] hase C; haþ B.

134. *þanne*] þer B.

135. *þere-with*] þer-myrd W.

136. [*aspere* WCRB] spare O; as-spere L.

137. *fremmed*] fremde C; frem B.

138. *he helde*] held he W.

139. *bispered*] bi-spered R; bisperde O; bispered CB. *spene*] so in R; spende COB; dispense W. *we*] we hit B; C om.

140. *By—lered*] Be þei lered be þei lewide O; Be he lewid be he lerid B. *spende*] spene R; dispense W.

141. *gone*] goon WC; goen R. *be*] by C.

142. *dole*] deel O; del B; doel WC.

143. *in*] C om. *haueth*] hem haueth RB.

144. *penaunces*] penaunee COB.

145. *childissh*] childist B. *sient*] sient W (*but not printed*). *in—celorum*] &c O. *In margin of L—quid est caritas.*

"*Nisi efficiamini sicut paruuli, non intrabitis* Mat. xviii. 3.  
*in regnum celorum;*

With-outhe fauntelte or foly · a fre liberal wille."

¶ "Where shulde men fynde such a frende · with so  
fre an herte ?

I haue lyued in londe," quod I · "my name is longe "My name,"  
said I, "is Long  
Wille; I have  
never found  
charity.  
wille, 148

And fonde I neuere ful charite · bifore ne bihynde !

Men beth mercyable · to mendynantz & to pore,

And wolen lene þere þei leue · lelly to ben payed.

¶ Ac charite þat poule preyseth best · and most  
plesaute to owre saueoure, 152

*As non [inflatur,] non [est] ambiciosa, non querit* 1 Cor. xiii. 4, 5.  
*que sua sunt,*

I seigh neuere such a man · so me god helpe,

That he ne wolde aske after his · and otherwhile coueyte All whom I have  
seen are  
covetous."  
þinge þat neded hym nouzt · and nyme it if he myzte !

¶ Clerkis kenne me þat cryst · is in alle places ; 156

Ac I seygh hym neuere sothly · but as my-self in a  
miroure,

*It[a] in enigmate, tunc facie ad faciem.* 1 Cor. xiii. 12.

And so I trowe trewly · by þat men telleth of charite,

It is nouzt championes fyzte · ne chaffare, as I trowe."

¶ "Charite," quod he, "ne chaffareth nouzte · ne "Charity," said  
he, "is no  
trader.  
chalengeth, ne craueth. 160

As proude of a peny · as of a pounde of golde,

146. *fauntelte*] fauntee O.

147. *fynde*] CB om.

148. *I* (1)] B om. *lyued*] CB om.  
*I* (2)] he W. *longe*] lange C. *In*  
*margin of L*—nota. the name of  
thauctour (*in a later hand*). *In*  
*margin of R and O*—Longe Wylle.

150. *pore*] þe pore O.

151. *leue*] loue C. *payed*] apayed  
R.

152. *Ac*] And C. *preyseth*] pre-  
chep O. *plesaute to*] pleses C ;  
pleseþ OB. *oure saucoure*] oure lord

W; god R. *As*] Is W; CB om.  
[*inflatur* WCROB] inflatus L. [*est*  
WCROB] L om.

155. *neded hym*] nedeth hym CO ;  
hym neded R. *nyme*] take C. *he*]  
thay C.

156. *kenne*] tellen O.

157. *Ac*] And C. *neuere*] O om. (!)  
*a*] R om. [*Ita* COB] It L; Hie R ;  
W om.

158. *And so*] Also B.

160. *ne* (2)] noþer R.

161. *of* (1)] as CB.

- And is as gladde of a gounne · of a graye russet  
As of a tunicle of tarse · or of trye scarlet.
- He is ever glad. He is gladde with alle gladde · and good ty[1] alle  
wykked, 164
- And leueth and loueth alle · þat owre lorde made.
- Ho curses no one. Curseth he no creature · ne he can bere no wratthe,  
Ne no lykyngge hath to lye · ne laughe men to scorne.  
Al þat men seith, he let it soth · and in solace taketh,  
And alle manere meschiefs · in myldenesse he suffreth ;
- He covets not. Couciteth he none erthly good · but heuene-riche  
bli se.”
- ¶ “Hath he any rentes or ricchesse · or any riche  
frendes?”
- ¶ “Of rentes ne of ricchesse · ne reccheth he neuere. 172  
For a frende þat fyndeth hym · failed hym neuere at  
nede ;
- Mat. vi. 10. *Fiat-voluntas-tua* · fynt hym euer more.
- Ps. xli. 6 (Vulg.). And if he soupeth, ette but a soppe · of *spera-in-deo*.  
[Fol. 61 b.] He can putreie wel þe *pater-noster* · and peynte it  
with *aues*, 176
- And other-while is his wone · to wende in pilgrymage,  
þere pore men and prisonnes liggeth · her pardoun to haue.  
þough he bere hem no bred · he bereth hem swetter  
lyflode,
- He visits men in prison. Loueth hem as owre lorde biddeth · and loketh how  
þei fare. 180

163. *tarse*] Carse C; say B. *trye*] tried CO; fyn B.

164. *tyl*] til WCRO; to B; *mis-written ty in L*; but marked for correction.

165. *And*] He R.

166. *Curseth*] Corseþ W; Cursees C.

167. *hath to*] haue R. *men*] me R.

168. *let*] leet W; lat O.

170. *good*] godes R.

172. *ne* (1)] nor W. *ne* (2)] COB *om. reccheth*] rekkeþ W.

173. *fyndeth*] fynt R. *failed*] failles C. *hym* (2)] hy R.

174. *fynt*] fyndes C; fyndiþ OB.

175. *soupeth*] soupe CO. *ette*] eet R; eteþ W; he ete C; he etiþ OB.

176. *wel*] O *om. aues*] aue R; C *om.*

177. *is his wone*] is wone R; he is woned WB; he is wonte C; he is wone O. *in*] on W; o R; C *om. pilgrymage*] pilgrymages WCOB.

178. *prisonnes*] prisoners COB. *liggeth*] lygges C; been O.

179. *hem* (1)] hym C. *lyflode*] O *om.*

180. *biddeth*] bit R.

¶ And whan he is wery of þat werke · þanne wil he  
some tyme

Labory in a lauendrye · wel þe lengthe of a myle,

He works in the  
laundry,

And 3erne in-to 3outhe · and 3epliche speke

Pryde with al þe appurtenaunce · and pakken hem to-  
gyderes, 184

And bouken hem at his brest · and beten hem clene,

washing clean  
all proud things;  
Ps. vi. 7 (Vulg.).

And leggen on longe · with *laboraui in genua meo*,

And with warme water at his eyghen · wasshen hem  
after.

And þanne he syngeth whan he doth so · & some tyme  
seith wepyng, 188

*Cor contritum & humiliatum, deus, non de- Ps. l. 19 (Vulg.).  
spiciet.*

¶ “By cryst, I wolde þat I knewe hym,” quod I · “no  
creature leuere!”

¶ “With-outen helpe of Piers plowman,” quod he · “his  
persone seestow neuere.”

Only Piers  
Plowman can  
shew him to you.

¶ “Where clerkes knowen hym,” quod I · “þat kepen  
holykirke?”

¶ “Clerkes haue no knowyng,” quod he · “but by  
werkes and bi wordes. 192

Ac piers þe plowman · parceyueth more depper

What is þe wille and wherfore · þat many wyzte suffreth,

*Et vidit deus cogitaciones eorum.*

Mat. ix. 4; Luke  
xi. 17.

For þere ar ful proude-herted men · paciente of tonge,

181. *tyme*] B om.

182. *Labory*] so in R; Labouren  
WCOB. a (1)] WCOB om. *wel*] O  
om.

183. *3outhe*] þouzt B. *speke*] seeche  
R (*which seems better*).

184. *appurtenaunce*] appurten-  
aunces W; appurtenantz C; purten-  
aunce R.

186. *leggen*] lyggen C. *on*] a B.

187. *eyghen*] eyzes R; yen O.

188. *And*] R om.

189. *quod I*] COB om.

190. *Piers*] peres þe R. *seestow*]

seest þow ROB.

191. *Where*] Wheiper W. *clerkes  
knowen*] clergie knew CB. *þat*] þa  
R. *kirke*] cherche RCB.

192. *knowyng*] knowlcchyng R.  
*bi*] COB om.

193. *Ac*] An C. *parceyueth*] per-  
ceyued CO.

194. [*What* W] þat LR (*marked in  
L*) Wher COB. *þe*] R om. *wille*]  
welle CB. *wyzte*] wit R; a wzt O.  
*Et*] And R. *vidit*] vidis C.

195. *ar*] er C; arn O; is B;  
*herted*] herte R.

- Some proud men  
are servile. And boxome as of berynge · to burgeys and to lordes,  
And to pore peple · han peper in þe nose, 197  
And as a lyoun he loketh · þere men lakketh his werkes.  
¶ For þere ar beggeres and bidderes · bed[e]men as it  
were,
- Some beggars  
feign innocence. Loketh as lambren · and semen lyf-holy, 200  
Ac it is more to haue her mete · with such an esy  
manere,  
þan for penaunce and parfitnesse · þe pouerte þat such  
taketh.
- Man is known  
only by his will. ¶ Þere-fore by coloure ne by clergye · knowe shaltow  
hym neuere,  
Noþther þorw wordes ne werkes · but þorw wille one.  
And þat knoweth no clerke · ne creature in erthe, 205
- Piers is Christ;  
1 Cor. x. 4. But piers þe plowman · *petrus, id est, christus.*  
For he ne is nouzte in lolleres · ne in lande-leperes  
hermytes,  
Ne at ances, þere a box hangeth · alle suche þei faiten.  
Fy on faitoures · and *in fautores suos!* 209
- Charity is God's  
champion. For charyte is goddis champioun · and as A good chyld  
hende,  
And þe meryest of mouth · at mete where he sitteth.  
þe loue þat lith in his herte · maketh hym lyzte of  
speche, 212  
And is [companable] and confortatyf · as cryst bit hym-  
selue,

196. *burgeys*] burgeises W.199. *ar*] aren R; arn O: er C.  
[*bedemen* WROB] bedmen LC.200. *lambren*] lambroun R; lam-  
bern C. *semen*] semed R. *lyf*] ful  
W.201. *Ac*] And C. *nith*] on R; in  
COB. *an*] COB *om.*202. *and*] or COB.203. *coloure*] colon B. *hym*] hem  
C; W *om.* Cf. l. 189.205. *ne*] in (!) C. *in*] on W; an  
R.206. *id est*] i. W; hit is B.207. *ne is*] nys WR; is COB.  
*lolleres*] losellis O; freris B. *lande-*  
*leperes*] land-lepyng B.208. *at*] in B.209. *faitoures*] a faytour B. *in*]  
on C.211. *meryest*] merþe B. *mouth*]  
muthe R.212. *þe*] To R.213. [*companable* RCO] compaign-  
able WB; compenable L. *confort-*  
*atyf*] confortif C. *fieri—&c.*] tristis  
fieri sicut yporerite (*sic*) R.

*Nolite fieri sicut ypocrite, tristes, &c.*

Mat. vi. 16.

For I haue seyn hym in sylke · and somme tyme in  
russet,

[Fol. 65.]  
He wears both  
silk and russet.

Bothe in grey and in grys · and in gulte herneys,  
And as gladlich he it gaf · to gomes þat it neded. 216

¶ Edmonde and Edwarde · eyther were kynges,  
And seyntes ysette · tyl charite hem folwed.

Edmund and  
Edward were  
kings and  
saints.

¶ I haue seyne charite also · syngen and reden,  
Ryden and rennen · in ragged wedes, 220

Ac biddyng as beggeres · bihelde I hym neuere.

Ac in riche robes · ratherst he walketh,

Ycalled and yerimiled · and his crowne shaue,

[And clenlich yeloped · in cipres & in tartaryne.] 224

He once wore a  
friar's frock,  
long ago.

And in a freres frokke · he was yfounde ones,

Ac it is ferre agoo · in seynt Fraunceys tyme ;

In þat secte sitthe · to selde hath he be knowen. 227

¶ Riche men he recomendeth · and of her robes  
taketh,

þat with-ouen wyles · leden her lyues,

*Beatus est diues, qui, &c.*

Eccles. xxxi. 8.

¶ In kynges courte he cometh ofte · þere þe conseilie is  
trewe,

Ac if coueityse be of þe conseilie · he wil nouzt come  
þer-inne.

In courte amonge iaperes · he cometh but selde, 232

He seldom  
comes amongst  
scoffers.

214. *seyn*] seyen W; seen O.

215. *gulte*] gilt WCOB. *herneys*] hernes C.

216. *as*] also B.

217. *eyther*] ayther C; eyþer of hem B; boþe W.

218. *tyl*] so R; for W.

219. *seyne*] yseyen WR. *reden*] redend (altered to red) And C.

221. *Ac*] And C. *beggeres*] a begger B. *bihelde*] biholde C. I] CB om.

222. *Ac*] And C.

223. *and*] O om. *yerimiled*] I-erymeled R; y-erymyled W; yerymaylid O; crymailed C. *shaue*] y-

shaue WR; sehauen O.

224. *From* O; also in CB; LWR omit. *cipres*] cipyrs C; purple B. *in* (2)] B om. *tartaryne*] tarterine C. *Possibly a spurious line; not in Crowley.*

225. *freres*] frere R.

226. *Ac*] And C. *ferre*] so in R; fer COB; fern W.

227. *In*] And in COB. *he*] O om. *knowen*] knowe R; founde W.

228. *of*] B om.

229. *est*] B om.

231. *Ac*] And C. *nouzt*] C om.

232. *but*] nozt but WOB; nozt be C.

For braulyng and bakbytyng · and beryng of fals  
witnessse.

He is seldom in  
the consistory.

¶ In þe constorie bifor þe comissarie · he cometh nouzt  
ful ofte,

For her lawe dureth ouer-longe · but if þei lacchen  
syluer ;

And matrimoigne for monye · maken & vrmaken, 236

And þat conscience and cryst · hath yknitte faste,

þei vndon it vnworthily · þo doctours of lawe.

Once he lived  
with bishops,

[¶ Amonges erchebischopes and oþer bischopes · And  
prelates of holy cherehe,

For to wonye with hem · his wone was *sum* tyme, 240

And cristes patrimonye to þe pore · *parcel-mel* dele.

but now avarice  
bears the keys.

Ac auerice hath þe keyes now · and kepeth for his  
kynnesmen,

And for his seketoures & his *seruants* · & *somme* for  
here children.]

¶ Ac I ne lakke no lyf · but lorde, amende vs alle, 244

And gyue vs grace, good god · charite to folwe !

For who so myzte mete with hym · such maneres hym  
eyleth,

He neither  
blames nor bans,  
nor craves more.

Noyther he blameth ne banneth · bosteth, ne prayseth,  
Lakketh, ne loseth · ne loketh vp sterne ; 248

Craneth, ne conceiteth · ne crieth after more,

Ps. iv. 9.

*In pace in id-ipsium dormiam, &c.*

þe moste lyfode þat he lyueth by · is loue in goddis  
passioun,

Noyther he biddeþ, ne beggeth · ne borweth to  
zelde ;

233. *braulyng*] braggyng B.

234. *þe*] B *om.* *constorie*] *so in*  
RB ; *Consistorie* WCO. *ful*] *ful*  
(*printed* but) W.

236. *mony*] mone R.

237. *yknitte*] knyt C.

238. *þei*] þat C. *þo*] the C.

239—243. *In* R *only*. Cf. C-Text.

244. *CB omit*.

245. *And*] But B. *god*] C *om.*

246. *with*] *myd* W. *eyleth*] *ayliþ*  
OB ; C *om.*

247. *blameth ne banneth*] *bannes*  
ne *blamed* C ; *banneþ ne blameþ* O ;  
*blanneþ ne blameþ* B.

248, 249. *Transposed in* COB. *In*  
*pace—&c.*] R *om.* *id*] C *om.*

250. *þat*] COB *om.* *by*] R *om.*

251. *he*] he ne R. *ne* (1) ne he C.

- Misdoth he no man · ne with his mouth greueth. 252
- ¶ Amonges cristene men · þis myldnesse shulde laste ;  
 In alle manere angres · haue þis at herte—  
 þat þough þei suffred al þis · god suffred for vs more, God suffred yet  
 In ensample we shulde do so · and take no veniaunce more for us.  
 Of owre foes þat doth vs falsenesse · þat is owre fadres  
 wille. 257
- For wel may euery man wite · if god hadde wolde hym-  
 selue, All was by God's  
 permission.
- Sholde neuere Iudas ne iuwe · haue Ihesu don on  
 Rode,
- Ne han martired peter ne Poule · ne in prisoun holden. [Fol. 65<sup>b</sup>.]
- Ac he suffred in ensample · þat we shulde suffre also,  
 And seide to suche þat suffre wolde · þat *pacientes*  
*vincunt.*
- ¶ *Verbi gratia,*” quod he · “and verrey ensamples  
 manye,
- In *legenda sanctorum* · þe lyf of holy seyntes, 264 Read the Lives  
 of the Saints,  
 What penaunce and pouerte · and passioun þei suffred,  
 In hunger, in hete · in al manere angres.
- Antony and Egidie · and other holi fadres of Anthony  
 and Egidius,  
 Wonenen in wildernesse · amonge wilde bestes ; 268  
 Monkes and mendynauntz · men bi hem-selue,  
 In spekes an in spelonkes · selden speken togideres.
- Ac noyther antony ne Egidy · ne hermite þat tyme  
 Of lions ne of leoperdes · no lyflode ne toke, 272 who were fed  
 chiefly by birds.  
 But of foules þat fleeth · þus fynt men in bokes.  
 Excepte þat Egydie · after an hynde cryede,

254. *at*] *atte* R.255. *god*] *go* R.256. *shulde*] *schul* C. *no*] R *om.*257. *owre*] O *om.*258. *wel—man*] euery man may  
 wel R. *hadde*] R *om.* *wolde*] wold  
 W ; walde C. *selue*] sulue R.259. *Sholde*] Shul C. *ne*] þe B.260. *han*] haue RB.261. *Ac*] And C. *shulde*] CB *om.*266. *in* (2)] and in COB. *manere*]*maneres* C.268. *wildernesse*] wildernesses R.  
*amonge*] amonges R.270. *an*] and WCROB. *in*] RCOB  
*om.* *spelonkes*] spekelonkes CB.271. *Ac*] And C.272. *lions*] lions W ; lions R ;  
 lyouns COB. *ne* (2)] þei B.273. *foules*] þe foules R ; foloughes (!)  
 C. *fleeth*] fleigh C ; flyen O. *þus*]  
 þat B. *fynt*] fyndeþ W ; fyndes C.

Egidius was  
sustained by  
a hind,

And þorw þe mylke of þat mylde best · þe man was  
susteyned ;

And day by day had he hir nouzt · his hunger forto  
slake, 276

But selden and sondrie tymes · as scith þe boke and  
techeth.

Anthony by a  
bird.

¶ Antony a dayes · aboute none tyme,

Had a bridde þat brouzte hym bred · þat he by  
lyued ;

And þough þe gome hadde a geste · god fonde hem  
bothe. 280

Paul the first  
hermit founded  
the Augustine  
friars.

¶ Poule *primus heremita* · had parroked hym-selue,

þat no man miȝte hym se · for mosse and for leues ;

Foules hym fedde · fele wynteres with alle,

Til he founded freres · of austines ordre. 284

St Paul made  
baskets.

Poule, after his prechyng · panyers he made,

And wan with his hondes · þat his wombe neded.

St Peter fished.

Peter fished for his fode · and his felawe andrewē ;

Some þei solde and some þei sothe · and so þei lyued  
bothe. 288

Mary Magdalen  
lived in desert  
places.

And also Marie Magdeleyne · by mores lyued and  
dewes,

Ac moste þorw deuocioun · and mynde of god almiȝty.

I shulde nouzt þis seuene dayes · seggen hem alle,

þat lyueden þus for owre lordes loue · manye longe  
ȝeres. 292

275. *mylde*] meke R; hynde B. *susteyned*] ysusteyned R.

276. *And*] Ac R (*which seems better*).

277. *tymes*] tyme R. *scith*] sayes C. *techeth*] teches C.

278. *a dayes*] on a day R. *none*] þe noon O.

279. *bred*] his brede R.

281. *had parroked*] and parroke (!) C; hadde parroked in R.

284. *ordre*] ordre or ellis freris Iyen B.

285. *Poule*] An-ofer poule O.

*panyers*] payneres R.

286. *his* (1)] R om.

288. *solde*] shalde C. *sothe*] soþen O; seþ B; sethed C; soden W; eeten R.

289. *Magdalcyne*] Maudeleyne W R O. *lyued*] R om. *and*] and by R.

290. *Ae*] And C.

291. *shulde*] shol C. *seggen*] tellen C.

292. *manye—ȝeres*] amonges wilde bestes R.

Ac þere ne was lyoun ne leopart · þat on laundes  
wenten,

No lion, leopard,  
nor wild beast  
harned them.

Noyther bere, ne bor · ne other best wilde,

þat ne fel to her feet · and fauned with þe tailles.

And if þei couth han yearped · by cryst, as I trowe,

þei wolde haue fe lde þat folke · bifor wilde foules. 297

[For alle þe curteisie þat bestes kunne · þei kidde þat  
folke ofte

In likkyng and in lowynge · þere þei on laundes ȝede.]

Ac god sent hem fode bi foules · and by no fierse  
bestes,

God fed them  
by birds, not by  
beasts.

In menyng þat meke þinge · mylde þinge shulde fede ;

As who seith, religious · ryȝtful men shulde fynde, 302

And lawful men to lyf-holy men · lyfode bryngne.

And þanne wolde lordes and ladyes · be loth to agulte,

Lords would not  
exact too much,  
if friars took  
less alms.

And to take of her tenauntz · more þan treuth wolde,

Fonde þei þat Freres · wolde forsake her almesses, 306

And bidden hem bere it · þere it was yborwed.

For we ben goddes foules · and abiden alwey, 308

[Fol. 66.]

Tyl briddes bryngne vs · þat we shulde lyue by.

For had ȝe potage and payn ynough · and peny-ale to  
drynke,

Pottage and  
bread and penny-  
ale should  
suffice you.

And a messe þere-mydde · of o manere kynde,

ȝe had ryȝt ynough, ȝe Religious · and so ȝowre reule me

telde :

312

293. *lyoun*] leon W. *leopart*]

leopard W; leopartz R; lyberde C.

295. *ne*] hit ne B. *fel*] fil WB.

*þe*] hir C; here B. *tailles*] taile R.

298, 299. *In R only.*

300. *Ae*] And C. *foules*] fowle C.

*no*] none B.

301. *shulde*] schul C.

302. *As*] As (*printed Ae*) W. *re-*

*ligious*] Religiouses WO. *shulde*]

schol C. *fynde*] fede W.

303. *bryngne*] sholde bryngne W.

306. *Fonde*] *so in R*; Founde

(*printed Foulde*) W; Founde CB;

Founden O. *almesses*] almesse CR;

almysse B.

307. *hem*] hym B. *yborwed*]

borwed R.

308. *In margin of O*—Dietyng of  
religious.

309. *rs*] vs meet C; vs mete OB.

310. *had*] haue O. *ynough*] O *om.*

311. *a messe*] a mees W; on messe

R. *þere-mydde*] therwith C; þe

mydde B. *o*] on R; any COB.

312. *had*] han O. *rugit*] *so in R*;

*rugit* WCOB. [*onager* WCROB] *oner-*

*ger* L. *herbam habuerit*] habuerit

herbam R. *brutorum—sufficiat*] R

*om. quia*] O *om.*

Job vi. 5.

*Nunquam, dicit Iob, rugi[e]t [onager] cum herbam  
habuerit? aut mugiet bos cum ante plenum  
presepe steterit?*

*brutorum animalium natura te condemnat, quia  
cum eis pabulum commune sufficiat; ex aliis  
prodiit iniquitas tua.*

Unlearned men  
might hence  
learn to give less.

¶ If lewed men knewe þis latyn · þei wolde loke whom  
þei zeue,

And anyse hem bifore · a fyue dayes or sexe,  
Or þei amortesed to monkes · or chanouns her rentes.

Why should  
lords leave lands  
away from their  
heirs?

Allas! lordes and ladyes · lewed conseilie hane ze 316  
To zyue fram zowre eyres · þat zowre ayeles zow lefte,  
And ziueþ to bidde for zow · to such þat ben rieke,  
And ben founded and fessed eke · to bidde for other.

¶ Who perfourneth þis prophceye · of the peple þat  
now lybbeth, 320

Ps. exi. 9 (Vulg.).

*Dispersit, dedit pauperibus, &c.?*

Truly, 'tis the  
friars that give  
to the poor!

If any peple perfourme þat texte · it ar þis pore  
freres!

For þat þei beggen abouten · in buildyng þei spene,  
And on hem-self sum · and such as ben her laboreres,  
And of hem þat habbeth þei taken · and zyue hem þat  
ne habbeth! 324

Rieh men add  
trees to a forest.

¶ Ac clerkes & knyghtes · and comuneres þat ben rieke,  
Fele of zow fareth · as if I a forest hadde,  
þat were ful of faire trees · and I fonded and caste

313. *whom*] wham R. *zeue*] gyfue  
C.

314. *a*] RO *om.*

315. *Or*] Er WOB; Ar RC.  
*amortised*] amortiseden C; mortise-  
den O; enmorteysed B. *rentes*]  
rente W.

317. *zowre* (2)] C *om.* *ayeles*]  
Ailes C. *zow lefte*] hadde CB.

318. *ziueþ*] zyueþ it WB. *to* (2)]  
to (*misprinted* Fo) W. *þot*] as li.

319. *founded*] I-founded R.

320. *þis*] the COB. *dedit*] deus B.

321. *þat*] this COB. *ar*] er C.

*þis*] þe B. *In margin of O*—Deri-  
dendo.

322. *spene*] spenen O; spende RB;  
spende it WC.

323. *such as*] on hym þat B. *as*]  
R *om.*

324. *hem* (1)] CB *om.* *þei taken*]  
y-take B. *and*] B *om.* *zyue*] zyueþ  
W; zeuen B; gyfes C. *ne*] na C;  
nede B; W *om.*

325. *Ac*] And C; As B.

327. *I*] B *om.* *fonded and*] fond  
and B; foondand C.

How I myzte mo þer-inne · amonges hem sette. 328

Riȝt so, ȝe riche · ȝe robeth þat ben riche,

Ye rich clothe  
the rich,

And helpeth hem þat helpeth ȝow · and ȝiueth þere no  
nede is.

As who so filled a tonne · of a fresshe ryuer,

and add water  
to the Thames.

And went forth with þat water · to woke with themese,

Riȝt so, ȝe riche · ȝe robeth and fedeth 333

Hem þat han as ȝe han ; · hem ȝe make at ese.

¶ Ac Religious þat riche ben · shulde rather feste  
beggeres

þan burgeys þat riche ben · as þe boke techeth ; 336

*Quia sacrilegium est res pauperum non pauperibus dare.*

Peter Cantor,  
cap. 47.  
S. Hieron.

*Item, peccatoribus dare, est demonibus immolare.*

Epist. 66. 8.

*Item, monache, si indiges et accipis, potius das quam accipis. Si autem non eges, & accipis, rapis.*

Peter Cantor,  
cap. 47.  
Id. cap. 48.

*Porro, non indiget Monachus, si habeat quod nature sufficit.*

For-þi I conseilte alle cristene · to confourmen hem to  
charite ;

For charite with-oute chalengynge · vnchargeth þe  
soule,

Charity delivers  
souls from  
purgatory.

And many a prisone fram purgatorie · þorw his preyeres  
he delyu[e]reth.

Ac þere is a defaute in þe folke · þat þe faith kepeth ;

Wherefore folke is þe feblere · and nouȝt ferme of  
bilieue. 341

329. ȝe (1)] þe B. *robeth*] so in W ;  
robet C ; robbeth R ; robben O ; rob-  
biþ B. See l. 333.

331. *tonne*] *tonne or tonne* W ; *tonne*  
ful R ; *tunne* OB. *fresshe*] ful R.

332. *woke—themese*] *wooke wiþ þe*  
*temse* O. In margin of O—*Quid est*  
*dare impijs.*

333. *robeth*] so in WC ; robbeth R ;  
robben O ; robbiþ B.

335. *Ac*] And C. *feste*] *fede* R.

336. *burgeys*] *burgeises* W. *I-*  
*tem* (1)] *Item idem* R. *Item* (2)—  
*rapis*] R om.

337. *confourmen*] *conforte* B.

338. *þe soule*] R om.

339. *his*] is B. *he*] COB om. ; is  
R. *delyuereth*] so in WOB ; *delineres*  
C ; *deliuered* R ; *delyuereth* L.

341. *Wherefore*] *Where* R. *is*] *been*  
O. *feblere*] *fibler* C.

Of counterfeit  
coin.

As in lussheborwes is a lyther alay · and zet loketh he  
lyke a sterlynge,

þe merke of þat mone is good · ac þe metal is fieble ;

[Fol. 66 b.]

And so it fareth by some folke now · þei han a faire  
speche, 344

Man's soul is  
aloyed with sin.

Croune and crystendome · þe kynges merke of heuene,  
Ae þe metal, þat is mannes soule · with synne is foule  
alayed ;

Bothe lettred and lewede · beth allayed now with  
synne,

That no lyf loueth other · ne owre lorde, as it semeth.

For þow werre and wykked werkes · and wederes vn-  
reasonable 349

Weatherwise  
men are now-a-  
days at fault.

Wedewise shipmen · and witti clerkes also

Han no bilieue to þe lifte · ne to þe lore of filosofres.  
¶ Astrymyanes alday · in her arte failen, 352

þat whilum warned bifore · what shulde falle after.

Shipmen and shep[h]erdes · þat with shipp & shepe  
wenten,

Wisten by þe walkene · what shulde bityde ;

As of wederes and wyndes · þei warned men ofte. 356

Tillers could once  
calculate the  
yield of the soil ;

Tilieres þat tiled þe erthe · tolden her maistres,

By þe sede þat þei sewe · what þei selle miȝte,

And what to lene and [what] to lyue by · þe londe was  
so trewe. 359

Now failleth þe folke of þe flode · and of þe londe bothe,

342. *As*] And COB. *lyther*] luþer  
vr.

343. *mone*] moneie C ; monee W.  
*ae*] and C.

346. *Ae þe*] And þat C. *mannes*]  
man C. *alayed*] allaiied C.

347. CB *omit*.

348. *it semeth*] I leue O.

349. *For*] For what R.

350. *witti*] O *om*.

351. *lifte*] lif B. *philosofres*] phi-  
losophie B.

352. *Astrymyanes*] Astrimyanes R ;  
Astromyans OB ; Astronomiens WC.

353. *falle*] byfalle R.

354. *Shipmen*] Chapmen CB.  
*sheperdes*] so in W ; schepherdes R ;  
sheperdes L ; scheperdis B ; shiperdes  
C ; heerdis O. *shepe*] shipmen CB.

355. *walkene*] walkne W ; wolken  
C ; welken OB ; wakkne R.

356. *As*] And B. *and*] and of RB.

357. *tiled*] tilien B.

358. *By*] Whi B.

359. [*what* WCOB] LR *om*. *lyue*]  
leue RB.

360. *þe* (2)] O *om*.

Shep[h]erdes and shipmen · and so do þis tilieres ; 361

Noither þei kunneth ne knoweth · one cours bi-for an- but are now at  
a loss.  
other.

Astrymyanes also · aren at her wittes ende ;

Of þat was calculated of þe element · þe contrarie þei  
fynde. 364

Gramer, þe grounde of al · bigyleth now children ;

For is none of þis newe clerkes · who so nymeth hede, None of these  
new clerks  
can versify,  
þat can versifye faire · ne formalich enditen ;

Ne nouzt on amonge an hundreth · þat an auctour can  
construe, 368

Ne rede a *lettre* in any langage · but in latyn or in nor read more  
than Latin or  
English.  
englissh.

Go now to any degre · and but if gyle be mayster,

And flaterere his felawe · vnder hym to fourmen,

Moche wonder me thynketh · amonges vs alle. 372

Doctoures of decres · and of diuinite Maistres,

þat schulde konne and knowe · alkynnes clergye, Masters of  
divinity know  
no logic.

And answeze to argumentz · and also to a *quodlibet*,

(I dar nouzt seggen it for shame) · if suche weren  
apposed, 376

þei schulde failen in her filosofye · and in phisyk  
bothe.

Wherfore I am afered · of folke of holikirke,

Lest þei ouerhuppen as other don · in offices & in Even churchmen,  
perhaps, skip the  
services.  
houres.

361. *Shepherd*] so in WO ; Shep-  
erdes L ; Schipherdes C ; Scheperdes  
R ; sheepperdis B.

362. *kunneth—knoweth*] kanne ne  
knaues C.

363. *Astrymyanes*] Astrimyanes R ;  
Astromyens B ; Astronomyens WCO.

364. *þe element*] þe elementz C ;  
þe elementis OB ; clement (*sic*) R.

365. *bigyleth*] bigles (*sic*) C.

366. *nerve*] now CB. *nymeth*] takes C.

367. *W omits. enditen*] endenten  
R.

368. *Ne nouzt*] Nauzt W ; Is not  
O.

369. *in (2)*] COB *om. or in*] and  
COB.

370. *if*] B *om. be*] me (!) C.

371. *flaterere*] flatre R.

372. *Moche*] And muche R.

374. *alkynnes*] alkynne R ; alle  
kynnes WCB ; alkyns OB.

377. *in (1)*] of WCOB. *in (2)*]  
in her O ; B *om.*

379. *ouerhuppen*] ouer-hippen RCB.  
*offices*] office W.

Ac if þei ouerhuppe, as I hope nouȝte · owre byleue  
suffiseth ; 380

Mere faith, they  
say, suffices.

As clerkes in *corpus-christi* feste · singen & reden,

þat *sola fides sufficit* · to saue with lewed peple.

¶ And so may sarasenes be sauod · scribes and iewes ;

Allas þanne ! but owre loresmen · lyuen as þei leren vs,

And, for her lyuyuge, þat lewed men · be þe lother god  
agulten.

Sarasens too  
believe in one  
God.

For sarasenes han somewhat · semynge to owre bileue,

For þei loue and bileue · in o persone almyȝty ;

And we, lered and lewede · in on god bileueth. 388

Ac one Makometh, a man · in mysbileue

Brouȝte sarasenes of Surre · and se in what manere.

[Fol. 67.]  
Mahomet went  
to Syria, and  
tamed a dove.

þis Makometh was a crystene man · and for he moste  
nouȝte be a pope,

In-to Surre he souȝte · and þorw his sotil wittes 392

Daunted a dowue · and day and nyȝte hir fedde ;

þe corne þat she cropped · he caste it in his ere.

And if he amonge þe poeple preched · or in places  
come,

The dove pecked  
at his ear for  
corn.

þanne wolde þe coluer come · to þe clerkes ere, 396

Menynge as after meet · þus Makometh hir enchaunted,

A[nd] dide folke þanne falle on knees · for he swore in  
his prechyng,

þat þe coluer þat come so · come fran god of heuene

380. *Ac if*] And if WC ; Ac þouȝ R.  
*ouerhuppe*] oue-hippe (*sic*) R ; *ouer-*  
*huppe* CB. *suffiseth*] suffice C ; suffi-  
eit R.

381. *singen—reden*] syngynge and  
redynge C.

383. *may*] many B.

384. *lyuen*] leuen CB.

385. *agulten*] agylte C ; to agulten  
O ; a-gilten B.

387. *a*] on R ; oo B.

388. *bileueth*] bileues C ; beleuen  
O ; almyȝty W ; Crowley *has* beleue.  
*Here* R *adds a line, which seems*  
*superfluous*—Cristene and vncristene ·  
on one god bileueth.

389. *Ac*] And WO ; An C. *in*  
of (1) O.

390. *Brouȝte*] *at the end of l.* 389  
*in* W.

391. *a*] RCOB *om.* *crystene*  
cristend C. *man*] WCOB *om.*

393. *Daunted*] He daunted W.

394. *ere*] here R.

395, 396. R *omits.*

395. *places*] place CB. *come*  
commue (*sic*) B.

396. *þe* (1)] C *om.* *to*] in-to O.

397. *as*] B *om.* *enchaunted*  
chaunted R.

398. *And* WCROB] A L.

399. *coluer*] culuer RB.

- As messenger to Makometh · men forto teche. 400  
 And þus þorw wyles of his witte · and a whyte dowue,  
 Makometh in mysbileue · men and wommen brouzte, Thus he misled  
many.  
 þat lered þere and lewed ȝit · lyuen on his lawes.  
 ¶ And sithth owre saueoure suffred · þe sarasenes so  
 bigiled, 404  
 þorw a crystene clerke · acursed in his soule ;  
 Ac for drede of þe deth · I dar nouzt telle treuthe, But Englishmen  
nourish a dove  
named Avarice.  
 How englissh clerkes a coluer feden · þat coueityse  
 hatte,  
 And ben manered after Makometh · þat no man vseth  
 treuth. 408  
 ¶ Ancres and hermytes · and monkes and freres  
 Peren to apostles · þorw her parfit lyuyng.  
 Wolde neuere þe faithful fader · þat his min[i]stres God's ministers  
should take no  
alms,  
 sholde 411  
 Of tyrauntz þat teneth trewe men · taken any almesse,  
 But done as Antony did · Dominik and Fraunceys, but liue like St  
Francis.  
 Benet & Bernarde · þe which hem firste tauzte  
 To lyue bi litel & in lowe houses · by lele mennes  
 almesse. 415  
 Grace sholde growe & be grene · þorw her good lyuyng,  
 And folkes sholde fynde · þat ben in dyuerse sykenesse,  
 þe better for her byddynges · in body and in soule.  
 Her preyeres and her penaunces · to pees shulde bryngo Their prayers  
should bestow  
peace;  
 Alle þat ben at debate · and bedemen were trewe ; 420

400. *As*] And R.401. *a*] B *om.*403. *lered—lewed*] lyued þo þere  
and lyue W. *þere*] CB *om.* *lyuen*]  
leuen RCO; leuen W; lieuen B. Cf.  
I, 576.404. *so*] þus B.406. *Ac*] *so in* R; And COB; W  
*om.*407. *hatte*] hiȝte W; hatteþ B.408. *vseth*] vsed C.410. *Peren*] Peeren W; Peres R.  
*to*] to þe W.411. *fader*] fadiþ B. *ministres*WC] mynystres O; mynystris B;  
minstres LR; Crowley *has* ministers.  
412. *teneth*] tenes C.413. *Antony*] domynyk O. *Do-  
minik*] antony O. *and*] or R.415. *ȝ*] O *om.* *almesse*] fyndyng  
R.416. *Grace*] Grasse R. *good*] lele  
R.417. *folkes*] folke RC. *fynde*] fare  
W (*which seems better, but lacks  
authority*); Crowley *has* find.419. *shulde*] schuld hem R.

Mat. vii. 7.

*Petite & accipietis, &c.*

Salt preserveth,

Salt saueth catel · seggen þis wyues ;

421

Mat. v. 13.

*Vos estis sal terre, &c.*

þe heuedes of holichereche · and þei holy were,

Cryst calleth hem salt · for crystene soules ;

*Et si sal euauerit, in quo salietur.*Unsalted flesh  
is unsavoury.

Ae fresshe flesshe other fissue · whan it salt failleth,

It is vnsauory, for soth · ysothe or ybake. 425

So is mannes soule sothly · þat seeth no good ensauple

Of hem of holycherche · þat þe heigh weye shulde teche,

And be gyde, and go bifore · as a good baneoure, 428

And hardy hem þat bihynde ben · and ȝiue hem good  
euydence.Eleven men  
converted the  
world; we have  
more preachers  
now.

¶ Elleuene holy men · al þe worlde torned

In-to lele byleue ; · þe liztloker, me thynketh,

Shulde al maner men · we han so manye Maistres, 432

Prestes and prechoures · and a pope aboue,

þat goddes salt shulde be · to saue mannes soule.

[Fol. 67 b.]

¶ Al was hethenesse some tyme · Ingelond and Wales,

Til Gregory gerte clerkes · to go here and preche. 436

St Augustine  
converted the  
king of Kent.

Austyn at Caunterbury · crystened þe kynge,

And þorw myrales, as men may rede · al þat marche  
he torned

To cryst and to crystendome · and crosse to honoure,

And fulled folke faste · and þe faith tauȝte 440

More þorw miracles · þan þorw moeche prechyng,

421. *catel*] þe catel WB. *seggen*  
saynge C.422. *heuedes*] heedis O.423. *crystene*] cristynes C; cristned  
B.424. *Ae*] For W; And C.425. *ysothe*] *so in* O; y-sothen B;  
ysoothe C; sothen R; ysoden W;  
Crowley *has* sodden. *ybake*] baken R.426. *seeth*] sayes C. *ensauple*]  
ensamples W; sauple B.428. *baneoure*] banner C; *but in*  
*margin of C is* baneour; Banyer W.429. *bihynde ben*] been bihynde O.430. *Elleuene*] Enleuene B.431. *liztloker*] liztliker O. *thynk-*  
*eth*] thynke C.435. *Ingelond*] Engelsond WC; Eng-  
lond O; englong B; england R.436. *gerte*] *so in* CO; garte W;  
and grete RB. *to—and*] to go and  
to RCO; gunnen go and B.437. *kynge*] kynge þere R.438. *may*] *so in* R; mowe C;  
mowen O; mown B; mow (*printed*  
now) W.440. *fulled*] follede W. *faste*] R  
*om.*

As wel þorw his werkes · as with his holy wordes,  
And seyde hem what fullynge · and faith was to mene.

¶ Cloth þat cometh fro þe weuyng · is nouȝt comly to Cloth new-woven  
is not fit for wear.  
were, 444

Tyl it is fulled vnder fote · or in fullyng stokkes,  
Wasshen wel with water · and with taseles cracched,  
Ytoked, and ytented · & vnder tailloures hande.

And so it fareth by a barne · þat borne is of wombe, A child new-born  
is not fit for  
heaven.  
Til it be crystened in crystes name · and confermed of  
þe bissshop, 449

It is hethene as to heueneward · and helpeles to þe  
soule.

¶ Hethene is to mene after heth · and vntiled erthe ; The word  
heathen is from  
heath.  
As in wilde wildernesse · wexeth wilde bestes, 452

Rude and vnresonable · rennenge with-out [croperes].

¶ ȝe [mynnen] wel how matheu seith · how a man  
made a feste ;

He fedde hem with no venysoun · ne fesauntes ybake,  
But with foules þat fram hym nolde · but folwed his  
whistellynge ; 456

*Ecce altilia mea & omnia parata sunt, &c. ;* Mat. xxii. 4.

And wyth calues flesshe he fedde · þe folke þat he  
loued.

þe calfe bytokeneth clennesse · in hem þat kepeth lawes. A calf betokens  
cleanness.

¶ For as þe cow þorw kynde mylke · þe calf norissheth  
til an oxe,

So loue and lewte · lele men susteyneth, 460

443. *what*] wat was B.

445. *is*] *so in R and Crowley* ; be  
WCOB. *fulled*] fouled (!) C.  
*stokkes*] stoke B.

446. *Wasshen*] I-waschen R.  
*taseles*] taselles C ; taslis B.

447. *Ytoked*] Ywalked C. *ytented*]  
*so in C* ; tented R ; y-teynted WOB.  
*hande*] handes R.

448. *And*] Riȝt W. *of*] of a W.

453. [*eroperes* C] *croperis* B ;  
*croperis* (and *croperis in margin*) O ;  
*croperis* W ; *keperes* R ; *miswritten*

*croperes in L* ; Crowley *has* *croperis*.

454. [*mynnen* W] *menen* O (and  
Crowley) ; *miswritten* *nymmen in L* ;  
*nemen* B ; take CR ; *observe the al-*  
*literation. how*] hede whate R.

455. *hem*] hem (*printed* him) W.

456. *folwed*] folowen C ; folwe B.  
*altilia*] volatilia B.

457. *And*] O om.

459. *norissheth*] norissh C.

460. *So*] So doth R. *and*] & and  
L (*by mistake*). *lele*] and lele R.  
*susteyneth*] sustened CB.

As a calf desires  
milk, so just men  
desire mercy.

And maydenes and mylde men · mercy desiren ;

Riȝt as þe cow-calf · coueyteth swete mylke,

So don riȝtful men · mercy & treuthe.

[And by þe hande-fedde foules · his folk vnderstonde,  
þat loth ben to louye · with-ouen lernynge of en-  
saamples. 465

As fowls come  
when whistled  
to, so rude men  
follow clerks.

Riȝt as capones in a court · cometh to mennes whist-  
lynge,

In menyngē after mete · folweth men þat whistlen,

Riȝt so rude men · þat litel reson cunneth, 468

Louen and by-leuen · by lettred mennes doynge,

And by here wordes and werkes · wenen and trowen.

And, as tho foules to fynde · fode after whistlynge,

So hope þei to haue · heuene þoruȝ her whistlynge. 472

The maker of the  
feast is God.

And by þe man þat made þe feste · þe mageste bymeneth ;  
þat is, god of his grace · gyueth al men blisse ;

With wederes and with wondres · he warneth vs with  
a whistlere,

Where þat his wille is · to worschipeu vs alle, 476

And feden vs and festen vs · for euere-more at ones.]

Parsons and  
priests will be  
wroth with me ;

¶ Ac who beth þat excuseth hem · þat aren persounes  
and prestes,

þat heuedes of holycherche ben · þat han her wille here,

With-oute trauaille, þe tithe del · þat trewemen

biswynkyn, 480

þei wil be wroth for I write þus · ac to witnesse I take

Bothe Mathew and Marke · and *Memento-domine-  
david* ;

but see Ps.  
cxxx. 1, 6  
(Vulg.).

[*Ecce audiimus eam in effrata, &c.*]

What Pope or prelate now · perfourneth þat cryst  
hiȝte,

462. *as*] so O. *swete mylke*] melk  
swete W.

464—477. *In R only. A very  
curious passage. Cf. l. 456 above.*

465. *louye*] written like *loupe*.

478. *Ac*] And C. *beth*] ben C.  
þat (2)] R om. *aren*] so in RC ; arn

OB ; ben W.

479. *heuedes*] hedes CB. *cherche*]  
cherches R.

481. *wil*] wol W ; wole R ; wolen  
O ; wiln B. *ac to*] ac OB ; and C.

482. [*Ecce—&c.*] in R only ; eam  
is miswritten cum ; see Pass. X. 68.

*Ite in vniuersum mundum & predicate, &c. ?*

Mark xvi. 15.

¶ Allas! þat men so longe · on Makometh shulde  
byleue, 484

So many prelates to preche · as þe Pope maketh,  
Of Nazareth, of Nynyue · of Neptalim, and damaske,  
þat þei ne went as cryst wisseth · sithen þei wil[ne] a  
name, See how many  
bishops the pope  
makes!

¶ To be pastours and preche · þe passioun of Ihesus, [Fol. 68.]

And as hym-self seyde · so to lyue and deye ; 489

*Bonus pastor animam suam ponit, &c. ;* John x. 11.

And seyde it in sauacioun · of sarasenes & other.

For crystene & vncristene · cryst seide to prechoures,

*Ite vos in vineam meam* Mat. xx. 4.

And sith þat þis sarasenes · scribes, & Iuwes 492

Han a lippe of owre byleue · þe liztloker, me thynketh,

þei shulde torne, who so trauaille wolde · to teche hem

of þe Trinite,

*Querite & inuenietis, &c.* Mat. vii. 7.

¶ It is reuth to rede · how riztwis men lyued,  
How þei defouled her flesh · forsoke her owne wille,  
Fer fro kith and fro kynne · yuel yclothed 3eden, 497  
Badly ybedded · no boke but conscience,  
Ne no richesse but þe Rode · to reioyse hem Inne;

*Abst nobis gloriari, nisi in crucedomini nostri, &c.* Gal. vi. 14.

¶ And þo was plente & pees · amonges pore & riche ;

And now is routhe to rede · how þe red noble 501

Is reuerenced or þe Rode · receyued for þe worthier  
The noble is  
preferred to the  
cross.

484. *shulde*] schullen R. *byleue*] so beleue O.

487. *wisseth*] wissed C. [*wilne a R*] wil a L; wille haue W; wol haue C; wolen haue OB; *but R is right*.

488, 489. *þe passioun—seyde*] retained in MS. W, but omitted in printed copy. so] W om. *deye*] to dye W. *ponit*] B om.

490. *it*] it is B.

491. *Ebr*] To R. *ð*] and to R.

492. *sith*] sithen R.

493. *Han*] Hand (!) C. *liztloker*] liztliker O; lightlier WC. *me thynketh*] it semeth R.

494. *trauaille wolde*] trauailed W. to] & R.

495—531. R omits.

496. *forsoke*] & forsoken B.

498. *Badly*] ful baddeli B.

501. *red*] reed C; rede B.

502. *or*] er WCOB. *receyued*] and receyued WB. *þe (2)*] W om.

- þan crystes crosse, þat ouer-cam · deþ and dedly synne.  
 ¶ And now is werre and wo · and who so why axeth,  
 For coueityse after crosse · þe crowne stant in golde.  
 Bothe riche and religious · þat Rode þei honoure, 506  
 þat in grotis is ygraue · and in golde nobles.  
 For coueityse of þat crosse · men of holykirke  
 Shul tourne as templeres did · þe tyme approacheth faste.  
 ¶ Wytte 3e nouzt, wyse men · how þo men honoured  
 More tresore þan treuthe ? · I dar nouzt telle þe sothe ;  
 Resoun & riztful dome · þo Religious demed. 512  
 Rizt so, 3e clerkes · for 3owre coueityse, ar longe,  
 Shal þei demen *dos ecclesie* · and 3owre pryde depose,  
 Luke i. 52. *Deposuit potentes de sede, &c.*  
 ¶ 3if knyzthod & kynde wytte · and comune con-  
 science  
 Togideres loue lelly · leueth it wel, 3e bisshopes, 516  
 þe lordship of londes · for euere shal 3e lese,  
 And lyuen as *leuitici* · as owre lorde 3ow techeth,  
*Per primicias & decimas.*  
 ¶ Whan costantyn of curteysye · holykirke dowed  
 With londes and ledes · lordeshipes and rentes, 520  
 An Angel men herde · an heigh at Rome crye,  
 ‘*Dos ecclesie* þis day · hath ydronke venym,  
 And þo þat han petres powere · arn apoysoned alle.’  
 A medecyne mote þer-to · þat may amende prelates,  
 [Fol. 68 b.] þat sholden preye for þe pees ; · possessioun hem letteth,  
 Take her landes, 3e lordes · and let hem lyue by dymes.
504. *axeth*] askeþ W.  
 505. *stant*] standes C.  
 507. *in* (2)] C om. *nobles*] nobiles  
 C.  
 509. *tourne*] ouerturne B.  
 510. *wyse*] ye wise WO. *In margin*  
*of L*—the fall of the church through  
 covitovsnes (*in a later hand*).  
 512. *þo*] þoo O ; þe W. *demed*]  
 damnedden B.  
 514. *þei*] *glossed* i. resoun &c. *in L*.  
 515. *comune*] þe commune by W ;  
 comune & B. Crowley *has*—& com-  
 mune by conscience.  
 517. *londes*] youre londes W. *shal*  
 3e] 3e schul O ; ye shul CB.  
 518. *lyuen*] leuen C. *3ow*] W om.  
*decimas*] diuicias CB.  
 521. *an heigh*] on hy3 O ; on heiz  
 B.  
 522. *In margin of O*—Hodie vene-  
 num est effusum in ecclesia domini.  
 524. *mote*] moot W ; mot C ; mo  
 B ; muste O.  
 526. *let hem*] leteth hym C. *dymes*]  
 dismes CB.

If possessioun be poyson · & inparfit hem make,  
 Good were to dischargen hem · for holichereche sake,  
 And purgen hem of poyson · or more perile falle. 529

It were well to  
 free churchmen  
 from such poison.

¶ Jif presthod were parfit · þe peple s[h]olde amende,  
 þat contrarien crystes lawe · and crystendome dispise.  
 For al paynym[es] prayeth · and parfitly bileueth 532  
 In þe holy grete god · and his grace þei asken,  
 And make her mone to makometh · her message to  
 shewe.

Paynyms pray  
 to God and  
 Mahomet,

þus in a faith lyueth þat folke · and in a false mene,  
 And þat is routhe for riȝtful men · þat in þe Rewme  
 wonyen, 536

And a peril to þe pope · and prelatis þat he maketh,  
 þat bere bisshopes names · of Bedleem & babiloigne ;  
 [¶ Whan þe heye kyng of heuene · sent his sone to  
 erthe,

which is a peril  
 to the pope.

Many miracles he wrouȝte · man for to turne ; 540  
 In ensauple þat men schulde se · þat by sadde resoun  
 Men miȝt nouȝt be saued · but þoruȝ merey and grace,  
 And thoruȝ penaunce and passion · and parfit byle[f] ;  
 And by-cam man of a mayde · and *metropolitanus*,  
 And baptised and [bishoped] · with þe blode of his  
 herte 545  
 Alle þat wilned, and [wolde] · with inne-wit by-leue it.

Christ wrought  
 many miracles,

baptized men,  
 and confirmed  
 them with his  
 blood.

527. *In margin of L (in a late hand)*—a medycyne to emende prelates, &c.

528. *were*] it were B. *cherche*] so in CB; churches WO.

529. *of*] of þat B. *or*] er WCOB.

530. *presthod*] prested C. *sholde*] solde L, but marked; schul C.

532. *paynymes*] so in WCOB; paynym L. *prayeth*] preire B. and *—bileueth*] to on persone to helpe R.

533. *In—god*] On o god þei greden R. *þei*] R om.

535. *in* (2)] B om.

536. *for*] for þe R.

537. *a*] in a CB; in O. *and* (2)] and to R.

538. *bere*] bereth R. *Bedleem*] Bethleem WRCOB. *ȝ*] and of RCOB.

539—556. *In R only. Properly, this passage belongs to the C-text, as, in the other MSS., l. 538 is closely joined to the line following it. Thus we find in L—of Bedleem & babiloigne, þat hippe aboute in Engelonde, &c. See l. 557.*

543. *bylef*] *miswritten* byle in R; cf. C-text.

545. *[bishoped]* *written* bischiued in R; cf. C-text.

546. *[wolde]* woled R; cf. C-text. *inne-wit*] a better spelling would be inwit.

- Many a seint sytthen · hath soffred to deye,  
 Al for to enforme þe faith · in fele contreyes deyeden,  
 In ynde and in alisaundre · in ermony and in Spayne,  
 In delfol deth deyeden · for there faith sake ; 550
- Saints suffered death in many countries.
- In sauacion of þe fayth · seynt thomas was ymartired,  
 Amonges vn-kende cristene · for cristes loue he deyede,  
 And for þe rizt of al þis reume · and al reumes cristene.  
 Holy cherche is honoured · heyzliche þoruþ his deynge,  
 He is a forbysene to alle bishopes · and a brizt myroure,  
 And souereyneliche to suche · þat of surrye bereth þe  
 name,] 556
- St Thomas died a martyr.
- He is a pattern to all bishops.
- þat hippe aboute in Engelonde · to halwe mennes  
 auteres,  
 And crepe amonges curatoures · [and] confessen ageyne  
 þe lawe,
- Nolite mittere fulcem in messem alienam, &c.*
- Cf. Deut. xxiii. 25.
- Many man for crystes loue · was martired in Romanye,  
 Er any crystendome was knowe þere · or any crosse  
 honoured. 560
- Bishops are bound to teach their people.
- ¶ Euery bisshop þat bereth crosse · by þat he is holden,  
 Thorw his prouynce to passe · and to his peple to shewe  
 hym,  
 Tellen hem and techen hem · on þe Trinite to bileue,  
 And feden hem with gostly fode · [and nedy folke to  
 fynden. 564
- Isaiah and Hosea [Malachii].
- Ac ysaie of ȝow speketh · and osyas bothe,  
 þat no man schuld be bischope · but if he hadde bothe,

551. *thomas*] nearly erased in R; cf. C-text.

557. *hippe*] huppe WO. in] O om. *Engelonde*] Englong B. In R the line is—And nauȝt to huppe aboute here in englande · for to halwe autres.

558. *crepe*] crepe in R. *curatoures*] creatouris (1) B. [and WR] LCOB om. *confessen*] confesse men R; confessionn B. *alienam*] R om.

559. *Many*] Many a R. in *Romanye*] in Romayne WCOB; in Ro-

maigne C; amonges romaynes R.

560. *Er*] Er ar LC (*by mistake*); Er W; Ar R; er þat B; Er þan O. *any*] R om. *was*] were R. *crosse*] cros þere R.

561. *he*] R om.

563. *techen*] schewen R. *on*] of OB.

564—567. [*and nedy—fode*] In R only. Not in C-text. Omitted in LWCBOB, probably owing to the repetition of gostly fode.

Bodily fode and gostly fode] · and gyue þere it nedeth ;

*In domo mea non est panis neque vestimentum,* Isa. iii. 7.  
*et ideo nolite constituere me regem.*

Ozias seith for such · þat syke ben and fieble, 568

*Inferte omnes decimas in oreum meum, ut [sit]* Malachi iii. 10.  
*cibus in domo mea.*

¶ Ac we crystene creatures · þat on þe crosse bylenen,  
Aren ferme as in þe faith · goddes forbode elles !

And han clerkes to kepen vs þer-Inne · and hem þat  
shal come after vs.

¶ And iewes lyuen in lele lawe · owre lorde wrote it Jews trust to  
hym-selne, 572 the law.

In stone, for it stydfast was · and stonde sholde eure—

*Dilige deum & proximum* · is parfit iewen lawe—

And toke it moyses to teche men · til Messye come ;

And on þat lawe þei [lyuen] 3it · and leten it þe beste.

¶ And 3it knewe þei cryst · þat crystendome tauzte, They knew Christ  
For a parfit prophete · þat moche peple saued 578 to be a prophet

Of selcouth sores · þei [seyen] it ofte,

Bothe of myrales & meruailles · and how he men by His many  
fested miracles.

With two fisshes an fyve loues · fyue thousande peple ;

And bi þat maungerye men mizte wel se · þat Messye  
he seme l. 582

And whan he luft vp lazar · þat layde was in graue, He raised  
Lazarus.

567. *and* (2) to R. *nedeth*] nedede R. *me*] me in CB. *After regem both L and R add—yz: meaning yzaias* (Isaiah). Cf. l. 565.

568. *oreum*] so in LCRB; orreum W. [*sit* O] LWCROB *om. me* i] CB *om.*

569. *Ac*] And C.

570. *ferme*] for me (!) R.

571. *vs* (2)] COB *om.*

572. *it*] OB *om.*

573. *was*] is COB. *sholde*] sehal O.

574. *proximum*] proximum tuum

O. *iewen*] Ines O.

575. *And*] And he C; Ac he B.

*men*] it hem R. *Messye*] messias B.

576. *on*] O *om. lyuen*] lyue WO; leuen CB; leue R. Cf. ll. 403, 576. *3it*] R *om.*

577. *knewe*] knowen O; knowe B; knaw C.

578. *For*] And for R.

579. [*seyen* RB] seyn C; seizen WO; seyne L (*but see* Pass. xvi, 116, 117).

580. *meruailles*] miruaille C. *3*] and of B. *he*] R *om.*

581. *an*] and WCROB.

582. *men*] þei R.

583. *luft*] lufte R; lifte WCOB.

And vnder stone ded & stanke · with styf voys hym  
called, 584

John xi. 43.

*Lazare, veni foras,*

[Fol. 69.]

Dede hym rise and rowme · riȝt bifor þe iuwes.

Ac þei seiden and sworn · with sorcerye he wrouȝte,

They sought to  
slay Him.

And studyeden to stroyen hym · and stroyden hem-  
self;

And þorw his pacyence her powere · to pure nouȝt he  
brouȝte, 588

*Pacientes vincunt.*

Cf. Dan. ix.  
24, 26.

¶ Danyel of her vndoynge · deuyned and seyde,

*Cum sanctus sanctorum veniat, cessabit vni-  
vestra.*

Jews still think  
Christ a false  
prophet.

And ȝet wenen þo wrecches · þat he were *pseudo-pro-  
pheta,* 590

And þat his lore be lesynges · and lakken it alle,

And hopen þat he be to come · þat shal hem releue,

Moyes eft, or Messye · here maisteres ȝet deuyneþ.

¶ Ac pharasesewes and sarasenes · Scribes & Grekis 594

Aren folke of on faith · þe fader god þei honouren ;

Since they know  
the first clause  
of the creed,

And sitthen þat þe sarasenes · and also þe iewes

Konne þe firste clause of owre bileue · *credo in deum  
patrem omnipotentem,*

Prelates of crystene prouynces · shulde preue, if þei  
myȝte, 598

they should be  
taught the  
second,

Lere hem litlum & lytlum · & *in ihesum christum  
filium,*

584. *ded—stanke*] stanke and dede  
R. *hym*] he COB.

586. *Ae*] And C.

587. *studyeden*] stoded C. *stroyen*] struyen WR. *hym*] C om. *stroyden*] struyden W ; struyden R.

589. *vndoynge*] vndirstondyng (!)  
B. *sanctus—vestra*] veniat sanctus  
*sanctorum*, &c. R.

590. *ȝet*] W om. *þo*] the CB.

591. CB om.

593. *here—ȝet*] ȝet here maystries

R.

594. *Ae.—sarasenes*] Ac farisewes  
and sarasines R ; And sarazens and  
pharaseses COB. *Grekis*] so in OB ;  
grekes CR ; Iewes W. Crowley has  
Grekes.

595. *of*] B om.

597. *Konne*] Kunnen R. *omnipotentem*] COB om.

598. *prouynces*] prouince R.

599. *Lere*] To lere WB. *filium*] filium eius, &c. COB.

Tyl þei couthe speke and spelle · *et in spiritum sanctum*, till they know  
 And rendren it & recorden it · with *remissionem* it all."  
*peccatorum*, 601  
*Carnis resurreccionem, et vitam eternam; amen."*

600. *et*] and R.

Crowley *has* reade. Yet rendren

601. *rendren*] reden WCROB; *seems right*.

## PASSUS XVI. (DO-BET I.)

*Passus xvj<sup>us</sup>, & primus de dobet.*

- "I thank you,"  
said I, "but what  
is Charity?"
- N**ow faire falle 3ow!" quod I þo · "for 3owre faire  
shewynge,  
For haukynnes loue þe actyf man · euere I shal 3ow  
louye ;  
Ac 3et I am in a were · what charite is to mene."
- "There is a tree  
named Patience,
- ¶ "It is a ful trye tree," quod he · "trewly to telle. 4  
Mercy is þe more þer-of · þe myddel stokke is reuthe,  
þe leues ben lele wordes · þe lawe of holycherche,  
þe blosmes beth boxome speche · and benygne lokynge ;  
Pacience hadde þe pure tre · and pore symple of herte, 8  
And so, þorw god and þorw good men · groweth þe  
frute charite."
- of which Charity  
is the fruit."
- ¶ "I wolde trauaille," quod I, "þis tree to se · twenty  
hundreth myle,  
And forto haue my fylle of þat frute · forsake al other  
<sup>edulium.</sup>  
saulee.
- "Where grows  
it?" said I.
- Lorde," quod I, "if any wize wyte · whider-oute it  
groweth?"

12

TITLE. *So in* LW; Passus xvius  
OC; Passus xvus de visione vt supra  
R; Passus septodecimus et secundus  
de dobet B.

4. *trye*] tried O. *trewly*] treuthe  
R.

5. *more*] moore O. *reuthe*] rycthe  
(sic) C.

8. *and pore*] *so in* R; and pouere

C; and pure WO; pore and B.

9. *þorw* (2)] RCB *om.* þe] þat B.  
*charite*] caritas B.

10. *wolde*] wole B.

11. *forto*] to CROB. *fylle*] fulle  
WB. *saulee*] *so in* C; saule OB; soule

R; saulees W. *In margin of* R—  
Agite penitenciam. Cf. Pass. xiii. 48.

12. *oute*] out þat R.

¶ “It groweth in [a] gardyne,” quod he · “þat god made  
hym-seluen,

“It grows,” said  
he, “in the heart,  
in land belonging  
to Piers the  
Plowman.”

Amyddes mannes body · þe more is of þat stokke ;

Herte hatte þe [h]erber · þat it in groweth,

And *liberum arbitrium* · hath þe londe to ferme, 16

Vnder Piers þe plowman · to pyken it and to weden it.”

“Piers þe plowman !” quod I þo · and al for pure ioye

þat I herde nempne his name · anone I swouued after,

And laye longe in a lone dreme · and atte laste me

þouzte,

Then dreant I  
that Piers shewed  
me the tree,  
supported on  
three props.

20

þat Pieres þe plowman · al þe place me shewed,

And bad me toten on þe tree · on toppe and on rote.

[Fol. 63 b.]

With þre pyles was it vnder-pizte · I perceyued it sone.

“Pieres,” quod I, “I preye þe · whi stonde þise piles

here ?”

24

¶ “For wyndes, wiltow wyte,” quod he · to witen it fram  
fallynge ;

*Cum ceciderit iustus, non collidetur ; quia domi-  
nus supponit manum suam ;*

Ps. xxxvi. 24  
(Vulg.).

And, in blowyng-tyme, abite þe floures · but if þis  
piles helpe.

þe worlde is a wykked wynde · to hem þat wolden  
treuthe,

“The world,”  
said Piers, “is a  
wind that blows  
against it.”

Coueityse cometh of þat wynde · and crepeth amonge

þe lues,

28

And forfret neigh þe frute · þorw many faire siztes.

þanne with þe firste pyle I palle hym down · þat is,

*potencia dei patris.*

The first prop is  
the Father's  
might.

13. [a WCROB] I om.

14. *more*] moore O.

15. *hatte*] hat B; highte W. *herber*

WCO] erber LR; herbergh B.

16. *to*] þe W.

17. *Vnder*] And vnder R. *to* (2)]

COB om.

18. *I*] he B.

20. *lone dreme*] loue derne C.

22. *me*] me to WC.

24. *I* (2)] R om. *piles*] pikes C.

25. *witen*] weten B; kepen R.

26. *piles*] floures (!) CB.

27, 28. *to hem — wynde*] R om.  
*hem*] hym C. *wolden*] willen WCOB.

29. *forfret*] fofrete (*sic*) C; for-  
fretþ WOB.

30. *þanne*] And R; That CB.  
*palle*] *so in* WR; puille COB; Crow-  
ley *has* pale. Cf. l. 51. *patris*] W  
om.

- The flesh is also  
a fell wind. þe flesshe is a fel wynde · and in flouryng-tyme  
þorw lykynge and lustes · so loude he gynneth blowe,  
þat it norissheth nice siztes · and some tyme wordes,  
And wikked werkes þer-of · wormes of synne, 34  
And forbiteth þe blosmes · rize to þe bare leues.
- The second prop  
is the Son, or the  
Father's Wisdom. ¶ þanne sette I to þe secounde pile · *sapientia dei patris*,  
þat is, þe passioun and þe power · of owre prynce  
Ihesu. 37  
þorw preyeres and þorw penaunces · and goddes passioun  
in mynde,  
I saue it til I se it rypen · & somdel y-fruited.
- The third enemy  
is the devil, And þanne fondeth þe fende · my fruit to destruye, 40  
With alle þe wyles þat he can · and waggeth þe rote,  
And easteth vp to þe croppe · vnkynde neighbors,  
Bakbiteres breke-cheste · brawleres and chideres,  
And leith a laddre þere-to · of lesynges aren þe ronges,  
And feccheth away my floures sumtyme · afor bothe  
who steals my  
flowers. myn eyhen. 45  
*Ac liberum arbitrium* · letteth hym some tyme,  
þat is lieutenant to loken it wel · by leue of my-selue ;  
Mat. xii. 32. *Videatis qui peccat in spiritum sanctum, nun-  
quam remittetur, &c. ;*  
*Hoc est idem, qui peccat per liberum arbitrium  
non repugnat.*
- Against the  
world, the flesh,  
and the devil, Ac whan þe fende and þe flesshe · forth with þe  
worlde 48  
Manasen byhynde me · my fruit for to fecche,  
þanne *liberum arbitrium* · laccheth þe thridde plante,
31. *fel*] feble B.  
32. *lykyng*] libyng C. *and*] of O.  
*loude he*] lowe be B.  
35. *forbiteth*] forbetes C.  
38. *þorw* (1)] With R. *þorw* (2)]  
COB *om.* *penaunces*] penaunce O.  
40. *þe*] R *om.* *feude*] fynde C.  
41. *waggeth*] wagged CO.  
43. *breke*] brewe R. *cheste*] þe  
cheste W; chestes C.  
44. *ronges*] longes (!) B.
45. *afor*] by-fore CR; to-fore B.  
46. *Ac*] And C. *letteth*] lacches  
C; lacchiþ B. *hym*] hem R.  
47. *repugnat*] *written* repug<sup>d</sup> or  
repug<sup>r</sup> in all the MSS. Crowley has  
repurgatur, which reading Mr Wright  
follows. See Critical Note.  
48. *Ac*] And C. *whan*] what R.  
50. *laccheth*] takes C. *thridde*]  
firste WCOB; but cf. ll. 30, 36 above.  
*plante*] planke R.

And palleth adown þe pouke · purelich þorw *grace* the third prop is  
the Holy Ghost."  
 And helpe of þe holy goste · and þus haue I þe  
 maystrie." 52

¶ "Now faire falle 3ow, Pieres," *quod* I · "so faire 3e  
 discryuen

þe powere of þis postes · and her propre myzte.

Ac I have þouztes a threve · of þis þre piles, "Tell me," said  
I, "where these  
props grew?"

In what wode thei woxen · and where þat þei growed ;

For alle ar þei aliche longe · none lasse þan other, 57

And to my mynde, as me þinketh · on o More þei  
 growed,

And of o gretnesse · and grene of greyne þei semen."

¶ "þat is soth," seide Pieres · "so it may bifalle ; 60

I shal telle þe as tite · what þis tree hatte.

þe grounde þere it groweth · goodnesse it hizte,

And I haue tolde þe what hizte þe tree · þe trinite it  
 meneth"— "They denote the  
Trinity."

And egrelich he loked on me · & þer-fore I spared 64

To asken hym any more ther-of · and badde hym ful  
 fayre [Fol. 70.]  
"What is the  
fruit?"

To discreue þe fruit · þat so faire hangeth.

¶ "Here now bineth," *quod* he þo · "if I nede hadde,

Matrymonye I may nyme · a moiste fruit with-alle. 68 "Beneath, is the  
fruit of  
Matrimony."

þanne contenance is nerre þe eroppe · as cal[e]wey

bastarde,

þanne bereth þe eroppe kynde fruite · and clemmeste of alle,

51. *purelich*] priuelich R.

54. *postes*] postles C. *myzte*] myztes  
W.

55. *Ac*] And CB. *þouztes*] toughes  
(!) B. *threve*] thrane (*for* thraue)  
R; trewe B.

56—91. CB *omit.* See Preface.  
*This passage is collated with MS. Y*  
(Mr Yates Thompson's MS.).

56. *woxen*] waxen O; wexen Y.  
*þat*] Y *om.* *growed*] groweden O.

57. *ar—longe*] yliche longe þei ben  
Y; yliche been þei longe O.

58. *growed*] groweth Y; growen O.

59. *of* (1)] R *om.* o] oon Y.  
*greyne*] oo greyn O.

60. *seide*] *quod* YWO. *so—may*]  
it myght so Y; so it myzte O; so  
may R.

61. *tite*] stit Y; tid W; tyt R;  
tyte O. *hatte*] highte W.

62. *hizte*] hatte W.

68. *may nyme*] myzte neuen Y.

69. *þanne*] That YO. *contenance*]  
continnance Y. *nerre*] neer W; ner  
Y; nere R. *calwey*] *so in* O; cay-  
lewey R; kaylewey W; calawey Y;  
calwey L.

- Maydenhode, angeles peres · and ratherst wole be ripe,  
 And swete with-out swellyng · soure worth it neuere.”
- I prayed him to pull down an apple. ¶ I prayed pieres to pulle adown · an apple, and he wolde, 73
- And suffre me to assaye · what sauoure it hadde.  
 ¶ And pieres caste to þe croppe · and þanne coinsed it to crye,  
 And waggged wydwehode · and it wepte after. 76
- A sad noise issued from the tree. And whan it meued Matrimoigne · it made a foule noyse,  
 þat I had reuth whan Piers rogged · it gradde so reufulliche.
- The devil gathered up all that fell, For euere as þei dropped adown · þe deucl was redy,  
 And gadred hem alle togideres · bothe grete and smale,  
 Adam & abraham · and ysay þe prophete, 81  
 Sampson and samuel · and seynt Iohan þe baptiste ;  
 Bar hem forth boldely · no body hym letted,  
 And made of holy men his horde · in *lymbo inferni*, 84  
 There is derkenesse and drede · and þe deucl Maister.  
 ¶ And Pieres for pure tene · þat o pile he lauȝte,  
 And hitte after hym · happe how it myȝte,  
 Piers strives to regain the fruit. *Filius*, bi þe fader wille · and frenesse of *spiritus sancti*, 88
- and placed his prey in *limbo*. To go robbe þat raggeman · and reue þe fruit fro hym.  
 ¶ And þanne spakke *spiritus sanctus* · in Gabrieles mouthe,  
 The Annunciation. To a mayde þat hiȝte Marye · a meke þinge with-alle,
71. *ratherst*] rapest Y. *wole*] wolde  
 O. 73. *pieres*] Piers fo W.  
 77. *it* (1)] he R. *noyse*] nose (!) Y.  
 78. *þat I*] And I W; þat R.  
*rogged*] rused R.  
 81. *abraham*] Eue Y. *ysay*] ysaae  
 O. 83. *boldely*] baldely R; bodily WY.  
*hym*] hem RY. *letted*] lette R.  
 84. *men*] O om.  
 85. *There—drede*] Ther as derk-  
 nesse & drede is Y.  
 86. *o*] oo O; oon Y. *þat—lauȝte*] of þat a pil he rauȝte W.  
 87. *And*] He W. *happe*] hitte W. *it*] he O; happe Y.  
 88. *fader*] faderes R. *spiritus sancti*] Y om. (*by mistake*).  
 89. *raggeman*] Rageman WRO; ragman Y. *reue*] reuend R.  
 90. *Gabrieles*] gabriel R.  
 91. *mayde*] maiden Y.

“ þat one Ihesus, a iustice sone · moste iouke in her  
chambre, 92 Gabriel's address  
to Mary.

Tyl *plenitudo temporis* · fully comen were,

þat Pieres fruit floured · and fel to be ripe.

And þanne shulde Ihesus iuste þere-fore · bi iuggement  
of armes,

Whether shulde [fonge] þe fruit · þe fende or hym-  
selue.” 96

¶ þe mayde mydeliche þo · þe messenger graunted, Mary assents.

And seyde hendelich to hym · “to me, his hande-  
mayden,

For to worchen his wille · with-uten any synne ;”

*Ecce ancilla domini ; fiat michi [secundum Luke i. 38.  
verbum tuum], &c.*

And in þe wombe of þat wenche · was he fourty wokes,

Tyl he wex a faunt þorw her flesshe · and of fiȝtyng The Incarnation.  
couthe, 101

To haue y-fouȝte with þe fende · ar ful tyme come.

And Pieres þe plowman · parceyued plener tyme,

And lered hym lechecrafte · his lyf for to saue, 104 Piers learns lech-  
craft,

þat þowgh he were wounded with his enemye · to  
warisshe hym-self ;

And did him assaye his surgerye · on hem þat syke essays to cure the  
sick,  
were,

Til he was parfit practisoure · [if] any peril [felle], [Fol. 70 b.]

And souȝte oute þe syke · and synful bothe, 108

92. OBS : Henceforward only a few readings are given from Y. See note to l. 56.

92. *instice*] Iustices WO. *iouke*] iouken R.

93. *fully comen*] tyme I-come R. In margin of O—Annis quingentis decies rursumque ducentis, vnus defuerat cum deus ortus erat.

95. *shulde*] schul C. *bi*] & by R.

96. [fonge WO] fonde LCRB; foonde Y. *þe fende*] the fynde C; to fynde B.

99. [secundum—tuum] in B only.

100. *wokes*] woukes W; wookes C; wekes R; wikes B.

101. *wca*] weex W.

102. *y-fouȝte*] fouȝten OB; foughte C.

103. *plener*] þe plener R.

104. *hym*] hym a B.

105. *þowgh*] þouȝt B. *his*] CB om. *warisshe*] warschen R; warsehe B.

106. *surgerye*] surgenrie WB.

107. [if WCROBY] of L. [felle CBY] fel O; fille W; fulle LR.

108. *oute*] out of CB. *and*] and þe O.

and heals many. And salued syke and synful · bothe blynde & crokede,

And comune wommen conuerted · and to good turned ;

Mat. ix. 12.

*Non est sanis opus medicus, set [infirmis], &c.*

Bothe meseles & mute · and in þe menysoun bloody,

Ofte he heled suche · he ne helde [it] for no maistrye, 112

He restores life to Lazarus ;

Sane þo he leched lazar · þat hadde yleye in graue,

*Quotriduanns* quelt ; · quykke did hym walke.

John xi. 55.

Ac as he made þe maistrye · *mestus cepit esse*,

And wepte water with his eyghen · þere seyen it manye. 116

Some þat þe siȝte [seyen] · saide þat tyme,

þat he was leche of lyf · and lorde of heigh heuene.

The Jews said He was a wizard.

Iewes iangeled þere-azeyne · and iugged lawes,

And seide he wrouȝte þorw wiccheecrafte · & with þe deneles miȝte, 120

John x. 20.

*Demonium habes, &c.*

¶ “þanne ar ȝe cherles,” *quod [ihesus]* · “and ȝowre children bothe,

Mat. xii. 27.

And sathan ȝowre saueoure · ȝow-selue now ȝe witenessen.

He reminds the Jews of His miracles.

For I haue saued ȝow-self,” seith cryst · “and ȝowre sones after,

ȝowre bodyes, ȝowre bestes · and blynde men holpen,

And fedde ȝow with fishes · and with fyue loues, 125

110. *And*] R om. [*infirmis*] so in O; LWCB have in.; R has m. h. See Critical Note.

111. *mute*] dome C.

112. *Ofte*] Of C. *he* (1)] W om. *heled*] heliþ B. *suche*] swiche W; swilke C. *ne*] nowth C. [*it* WROB] LC om.

113. *þo*] than C.

115. *Ac*] And C. *þe*] þat R.

116. *seyen*] seen C.

117. *Some*] And som CB. [*seyen* CB] seye R; seiȝen W; seyne L (*but see last line*). *saide*] sayed C.

119. *azeyne*] ayenis C; aȝenst B. *and*] þat R.

120. *þorw*] with COB. *with*] wit R. *habes*] habet W.

121. *cherles*] clerkis (!) B. [*ihesus*] only R has the right reading, viz. ihc; this is corrupted into ich in LWCY; B has I, partly erased; see l. 123.

122. *ȝow*] so in RY; ye W; youre COB. *ȝe*] O om.

123. *ȝow*] youre C. *self*] B om. *seith cryst*] R om.

125. *fishes*] two fishes W. *with* (2)] C om.

And left baskettes ful of broke mete · bere away who  
so wolde ;—”

And mysseide þe iewes manliche · and manaced hem to He threatens to  
beat them ;  
bete,

And knokked on hem with a corde · and caste adown John ii. 15.  
her stalles, 128

þat in cherche chaffareden · or chaungeden any  
moneye,

And seyde it in sizte of hem alle · so þat alle herden,  
“ I shal ouertourne þis temple · and adown throwe, John ii. 19.

And in thre dayes after · edifye it newe, 132

And make it as moche other more · in alle manere  
poyntes,

As euere it was, and as wyde · wherfore I hote þow,  
Of preyeres and of parfinesse · þis place þat 3e callen ;

*Domus mea domus oracionis vocabitur.*” Mat. xxi. 13.

Enuye and yuel wille · was in þe iewes ; 136 The Jews seek to  
slay Him.

Thei casten & contreueden · to kulle hym whan þei  
mihte,

Vche daye after other · þeire tyme þei awaited.

Til it bifel on a fryday · a litel bifor Paske,

þe þorsday byfore · þere he made his maundee, 140 On Maundy  
Thursday He says  
that He is  
betrayed.

Sittyng atte sopere · he seide þise wordes—

“ I am solde þorw one of þow · he shal þe tyme rewe

þat euere he his saueoure solde · for syluer or elles.”

¶ Iudas iangeled þere-aȝein · ac Ihesus hym tolde, 144

It was hym[-self] sothely · and seide, “ *tu dicis.*” Mat. xxvi. 25.

126. *broke mete*] broken brede CB ; the paske CB ; Pasqe W.  
breed broken O.

129. *þat*] And C.

130. *it*] O om.

131. *throwe*] þrowe it W.

132. CB omit.

133. *other*] ouþer W ; or B.

135. *þis*] the C.

136. *was*] aren R.

138. *þeire*] thair C ; O om. ; hir W ;  
here B. *awaited*] awaiteden W ;  
waited CB.

139. *it*] C om. *Paske*] pasche R ;

140. *þorsday*] thoresday CR ; þorus-  
day O ; þursday WB. *maundee*] cene  
R ; maunde COB.

141. *Sittyng*] Sittande R. *atte*] at  
þe WCROB.

142. *solde*] salde C. *one*] summe  
R.

143. *he*] R om. *solde*] salde C.

144. *ac*] and C.

145. *hym-self*] so in WCROB ; hym  
L.

Judas appoints  
the token,

þanne went forth þat wikked man · and with þe iewes  
mette,

And tolde hem a tokne · how to knowe with ihesus,  
And which tokne to þis day · to moche is y-vsed, 148

viz. a kiss.

þat is, kissing and faire contenaunce · & vnkynde  
wille ;

And so was with iudas þo · þat Ihesus bytrayed.

[Fol. 71.]  
Mat. xxvi. 49.

“*Aue raby,*” quod þat ribaude · and riȝt to hym he  
ȝede,

And kiste hym, to be cauȝt þere-by · and kulled of þe  
iewes. 152

¶ þanne Ihesus to Iudas · and to þe iewes seyde,

“ I find gull in  
thy laughter,”  
said Jesus.

“ Falsenesse I fynde · in þi faire speche,

And gyle in þi gladdre chere · and galle is in þi  
lawghynge.

þow shalt be myroure to manye · men to deceyue, 156

Ac þe wors and þi wikkednesse · shal worth vpon þi-  
selue ;

Mat. xviii. 7.

*Necesse est vt veniant scandala ; ve homini illi  
per quem scandalum venit !*

John xviii. 8.

þow I bi tresoun be ytake · at ȝowre owne wille,

Suffreth my postles in pays · & in pees gange.”

On a thoresday in thesternesesse · þus was he taken 160

þorw iudas and iewes · ihesus was his name ;

On the Friday  
He jousted in  
Jerusalem,

þat on þe fryday folwyng · for mankynde sake

Iusted in ierusalem · a ioye to vs alle.

146. *þe*] C om.  
147. *hem*] hym C. *knowe*] C om.  
148. *And*] þe R. *y-vsed*] vsed  
RO. *to—y-vsed*] is to myche vsed O.  
150. *And so*] As B ; And C. *þat*] he COB.  
151. *ribaude*] ribalde C. *ȝede*] ȝode R.  
152. *of*] þoruȝ R.  
154. *I*] ich R.  
156. *he*] be a OY. *manye · men*] many man · hem B.  
157. *Ac*] And C. *þi*] þe RO ; þi (*printed* the) W. *vpon*] on O.

*reniant*] venient B ; veniat C. *homi-  
ni*] B om. *scandalum venit*] COB  
om.

158. *þow*] þouȝt B. *ytake*] take WYRB ; taken CO. *at*] and R.

159. *Suffreth*] Suffyres C. *postles*] so in R ; Apostles W ; apostyles C ; apostelis O ; apostlis B. *pays*] so in RYO ; pais B ; pees WC. *pees*] so in RYCOB ; pays W.

160. *On*] In R. *in*] in þe O. *thestersnesse*] Mirkenesse C.

162. *mankynde*] mankyndes WO ; mankende R.

- On crosse vpon caluarye · cryst toke þe bataille, 164 and defeated  
 Aȝeines deth and þe deuēl · destroyed her botheres death on the  
 myȝtes, cross.
- Deyde, and deth fordid · and daye of nyȝte made.
- ¶ And I awaked þere-with · & wyped myne eyghen, Then I awoke,  
 And after piērs þe plowman · pryed and stared. 168 and sought  
 Estwarde and westwarde · I awayted after faste, everywhere for  
 And ȝede forth as an ydiote · in contre to aspye Piers.
- After Pieres þe plowman ; · many a place I souȝte.
- And þanne mette I with a man · a mydilent son- On Midlent  
 daye, 172 Sunday I met  
 Abraham, or  
 FAITH.
- As howe as an hawethorne · and Abraham he hiȝte.
- I frayned hym first · fram whennes he come,
- And of whennes he were · and whider þat he  
 þouȝte.
- ¶ “I am feith,” quod þat freke · “it falleth nouȝte to  
 lye, 176
- And of Abrahames hous · an heraud of armes.
- I seke after a segge · þat I seigh ones,
- A ful bolde bacheler · I knewe hym by his blasen.” Abraham is  
 “What bereth þat buirn?” quod I þo · “so blisse þe whose blazon is  
 bityde !” 180 the Trinity,
- ¶ “þre leodes in o lith · non lenger þan other,  
 Of one mochel & myȝte · in mesure and in lengthe ;  
 þat one doth, alle doth · & eche doth by his one.  
 þe firste hath miȝte and maiestee · maker of alle  
 þinges ; 184
164. *On*] On a CB.  
 165. *deth*] þe deþ O. *her*] þere R.  
*botheres*] so in W ; bother CYOB ;  
 beire R.  
 166. *deth*] deed W.  
 168. *þe*] CB *om.*  
 169. *I*] and CB. *awayted*] waited  
 WCROB.  
 171. O *omits.*  
 172. *a* (2)] on O.  
 173. *hore*] hoor W ; hoer R ; heor  
 B. *an*] any CB.  
 174. *frayned*] frain C.
175. *þouȝte*] so in CROBY ; souȝte  
 W.  
 176. *þat*] þis COB. *to*] me to R.  
 177. *an*] and CB.  
 178. *I* (1)] And W. *segge*] man C.  
 179. *kneve*] knawe C ; knowe O.  
 180. *bereth*] berþ W. *buirn*]  
 barne CB.  
 181. *in*] on RCOB.  
 182. *myȝte*] oo mageste O ; oon  
 myȝt and mageste CYB. *in* (2)]  
 CB *om.*  
 184. *þinges*] thyng RCOB.

- the Father, the Son,  
*Pater* is his propre name · a persone by hym-selue.  
 þe secounde of þat sire is · sothfastnesse, *filius*,  
 Wardeyne of þat witte hath · was euere with-cute  
 gynnynge.
- and the Holy Ghost.  
 þe þridde hatte þe holygoost · a persone by hym-selue,  
 þe liȝte of alle þat lyf hath · a londe & a watre, 189  
 Confortoure of creatures · of hym cometh al blisse.  
 So þre bilongeth for a lorde · þat lordeship claymeth,  
 Myȝte, and a mene · to knowe his owne myȝte, 192  
 Of hym & of his seruauant · and what þei suffre bothe.  
 So god þat gynnynge hadde neure · but þo hym good  
 þouȝte,
- [Fol. 71 b.] Sent forth his sone · as for seruauant þat tyme,  
 To occupien hym here · til issue were spronge, 196  
 þat is, children of charite · & holicherche þe moder.  
 Patriarkes & prophetes · and aposteles were þe chyldren,  
 And cryst and crystenedome · and crystene holy-  
 cherche.  
 In menyngge þat man moste · on o god bileue, 200  
 And þere hym lyked & loued · in þre persones hym  
 shewed.
- Wedlock, widowhood, and virginity denote the Trinity.  
 And þat it may be so & soth · manhode it sheweth,  
 Wedloke and widwehode · with virgynyte ynempned,  
 In toknyngge of þe Trinite · was taken oute of o man.  
 Adam owre aller fader · Eue was of hym-selue, 205  
 And þe issue þat þei hadde · it was of hem bothe,  
 And either is otheres ioye · in thre sondry persones,
185. *propre*] COB om.  
 186. *þat*] þa W. *of—is*] is of þat  
 sire COB. *sothfastnesse*] stedfastnesse  
 C; stefast (*sic*) B.  
 187. *of*] of al O.  
 188. *hatte*] highte W; has C; haþ  
 B; hat R.  
 189. *þe—hath*] þat alle þe liȝt of  
 þe lif R. a (1)] on B. a (2)] on  
 COB.  
 191. *þre*] ther C; þer B. *claymeth*]  
 laymes (!) C.
192. *a*] WCO om. *knowe*] R om.  
 193. *hym*] hym-selue R. *þei suffre*]  
 soffret hem R.  
 198. *chyldren*] barnes R.  
 199. *and* (3)] and alle R.  
 200. *on*] in R.  
 202. O omits.  
 204. *taken—man*] out of man taken  
 W. o] a COB.  
 205. *owre*] was oure W. *aller*]  
 alþer OB. *Eue*] and Eue W.  
 206. *þei*] he COB.

And in heuene & here · one syngulere name ; 208

And [þus] is mankynde or manhede · of matrimoigne  
yspronge,

And bitokneth þe Trinite · and trewe bileue.

¶ Miȝte is matrimoigne · þat multiplieth þe erthe,

Matrirony  
denotes the  
Father of all.

And bitokneth trewly · telle if I dorste, 212

[Hym] þat firste fourmed al · þe fader of heuene.

þe sone, if I it durst seye · resembleth wel þe wydwe,

The Son  
resembles a  
widow (Ps. xxi.  
1; Vulg.).

*Deus meus, deus meus, et quid dereliquisti me?*

þat is, creatour wex creature · to knowe what was  
bothe ; 215

As widwe with-oute wedloke · was neure ȝete yseye,

Na more myȝte god be man · but if he moder hadde ;

So wydwe with-oute wedloke · may nouȝte wel stande,

There can be no  
widow without  
wedlock.

Ne matrimoigne with-oute moillerye · is nouȝt moche to  
preyse ;

*Maledictus homo qui non reliquit semen in  
israel, &c.*

þus in þre persones · is perfetliche manhede, 220

þat is, man & his make · & moillere her children,

Man and his wife  
and children  
form a Trinity.

And is nouȝt but gendre of o generacioun · bifor Ihesu  
cryst in heuene,

So is þe fader forth with þe sone · and fre wille of

bothe ; 223

*Spiritus procedens a patre & filio ;*

Which is þe holygoste of alle · and alle is but o god.

þus in a somer I hym seigh · as I satte in my porche ;

I Abraham saw

208. *here*] in erþe O.

209. [þus WCOBY] þis L; þat R;  
*the line is marked for correction.*  
or] and W. yspronge] C om.

210. COBY omit.

211. *Miȝte*] so in R; Might COYB;  
Mighty W. *is*] is in R.

212. *if*] it if COBY.

213. [*Hym* WO] He LCRBY.

214. *if I it*] is if I CO; if y B.  
*resembleth—þe*] ressemblaunt to COB.  
*wydwe*] widwes B.

215. *wex*] weex W; wax R.

217. *Nu*] Ne na R.

219. *moillerye*] moillerie YB; moy-  
lere R; Muliere W; mulerie O; moil-  
liere C.

220. *manhede*] pur manhode R.

221. *man*] a man CB. *moillere*]  
moillerie Y; moilliere C; muliere  
W; moilre B; mulerer O. *her*] here  
R; WCOBY om.

222. *gendre*] gendred C. *a*] a WC;  
OB om. *Ihesu*] B om.

224. *holy*] O om.

225. *a*] O om.

- the three Persons  
(Gen. xviii. 2.) I ros vp and reuerenced hym · & rijt faire hym grette ;  
Thre men to my syzte · I made wel et ese, 227  
Wesche her feet & wyped hem · and afterward þei eten  
Calues flesshe & cakebrode · and knewe what I thougte ;  
Ful trewe tokenes bitwene vs is · to telle whan me  
lyketh.
- God asked me if  
I loved Him more  
than Isaac. Firste he fonded me · if I loued bettere 231  
Hym, or ysaak myn ayre · þe which he hijte me kulle.  
He wiste my wille by hym · he wil me it allowe,  
I am ful syker in soule þer-of · and my sone bothe.  
I circumeised my sone · sitthen for his sake ;  
My-self and my meyne · and alle þat male were 236  
Bleden blode for þat lordes loue · and hope to blisse  
þe tyme.
- God promised me  
an inheritance. Myn affiaunce & my faith · is ferme in þis bilieue ;  
For hym-self bilihte to me · and to myne issue bothe  
[Fol. 72.] Londe and lordship · And lyf with-uten ende ; 240  
To me and to myn issue · more zete he me graunted,  
Mercy for owre mysdedes · as many tyme as we asken ;
- Luke i. 55. *Quam olim abrahe promisisti, & semini eius.*  
And sith he sent me to seye · I sholde do sacrificise,  
And done hym worshiþe with bred · and with wyn  
bothe, 244  
And called me þe fote of his faith · his folke forto saue,  
And defende hem fro þe fende · folke þat on me  
leueden.
- Thus have I ever  
been God's  
herald. þus haue I ben his heraude · here and in helle,  
And confortd many a careful · þat after his comynge  
wayten. 248

226. *ros*] roos W; raas C; aros B; þis (*printed* his) W.  
arros O. 241. *zete*] if (!) B. *me*] men B;  
W om.  
228. *þ*] in R. *hem*] hes R. 242. *Mercy*] More CB.  
230. *is*] been O. *me*] we B. 245. *þe fote*] þe forþ O; stot CB.  
232. *he hijte*] het B. 246. *hem*] hym C. *leueden*] bileueden B.  
233. *he*] a R. 248. *a*] COB om. *wayten*] wait-  
235. *sitthen*] sith RO; siþe B. eden W.  
237. *loue*] sake O.  
238. *faith*] fay R. *þis*] his CB;

And þus I seke hym," he seide · "for I [herde] seyne  
late I seek Him  
whom John  
lately baptize,

Of a barne þat baptised hym · Iohan Baptiste was his  
name,

þat to patriarkes and to prophetes · and to other peple  
in derknesse

Seyde þat he seigh here · þat sholde saue vs alle ; 252 and of whom He  
prophesied" (Jo.  
i. 29).  
*Ecce agnus dei, &c.*"

¶ I hadde wonder of his wordes · and of his wyde  
clothes ;

For in his bosome he bar a thyng · þat he blissed  
euere.

And I loked on his lappe · a lazar lay þere-Inne I saw a leper in  
Abraham's lap,  
Amonges patriarkes and profetes · pleyande togyderes.

"What awaytestow?" quod he · "and what woldestow  
haue?" 257

"I wolde wyte," quod I þo · "what is in þowre lappe?" which I asked  
him to shew me.

¶ "Loo!" quod he, and lete me se · "lorde, mercy!"  
I seide,

"þis is [a] present of moche prys · what Prynce shal  
it haue?" 260

"It is a precieuse present," quod he · "ac þe pouke "The devil," said  
he, "has claimed  
this leper and  
me:  
it hath attached,

And me þere-myde," quod þat man · "may no wedde vs  
quite,

Ne no buyrn be owre borwgh · ne bryng vs fram his  
daungere ;

Oute of þe poukes pondfold · · no meynprise may vs no one can  
ransom us  
fecche, 264

249. [herde WCROB] L omits, but  
the line is marked.

251. to (2)] CB om. to (3)]  
COB om.

252. seigh] seyde R. here] hir C ;  
hym O. sholdic] shul C. rs] hem R.

254. For] And R. þat] and þat R.  
255. on] in W.

256. CB om. pleyande] pleyng  
WYO ; pleyede R.

257. awaytestow] art þou B.

258. is] is þis O.

260. [a WCROB] L om.

261. ac] and C.

262. þere-myde] þere-with RC. man]  
weye R.

263. buyrn] barne CO.

264. R omits. pondfolde] ponfold  
CY ; pynfold OB. no] ne no CB.  
may] O om.

till Christ comes, Tyl he come þat I carpe of · cryst is his name, 265  
 þat shal delyure vs some daye · out of þe deueles  
 powere,  
 And bettere wedde for vs legge · þan we ben alle  
 worthy,

and offers life for þat is, lyf for lyf · or ligge þus euere 268  
 life." Lollynge in my lappe · tyl such a lorde vs fecche."  
 ¶ "Allas!" I seyde, " þat synne · so longe shal lette  
 þe myzte of goddes mercy · þat myzt vs alle amende!"

Then I wept, but I wepte for his wordes · with þat sawe I an other 272  
 soon beheld Rapelich renne forth; · þe rihte waye he went.  
 another, I affrayned hym fyrste · fram whennes he come,

whose name I And what he hihte & whider he wolde · and wightlich  
 asked. he tolde. 275

266. *some daye*] O *om.*

270—273. R *has*—Allas, thouzte I  
 þo · þat is a longe a-bydyngge,  
 And sued hym · for he softe zede,  
 þat he toek vs as tit · ac, trewly

to telle.

274. *affrayned*] fraynede O.

275. *And*] R *om.* *wightlich*] whith-liche R.

## PASSUS XVII. (DO-BET II.)

*Passus xvij<sup>us</sup>, et secundus de do-bet.*

“ I am *spes*,” quod he, “ a spye · and spire after a knyȝte, “ I am HOPE,”  
said he, “ and  
bear a letter,

That toke me a maundement · vpon þe mounte of synay,  
To reule alle rewmes with ; · I bere þe writte here.”

“ Is it asseled ? ” I seyde · “ may men se þi *lettres* ? ” 4

“ Nay,” he sayde, “ I seke hym · þat hath þe sele to kepe ; and seek Him  
who shall seal  
it.”

¶ And þat is, crosse and crystenedome · And cryst þere-on to hange. [Fol. 72 b.]

And whan it is asseled so · I wote wel þe sothe,  
þat Lucyferes lordeship · laste shal no lenger.” 8

“ Late se þi *lettres*,” quod I · “ we miȝte þe lawe knowe.” “ Shew me,” said I.

¶ þanne plokked he forth a patent · a pece of an harde roche,

Wher-on [were] writen two wordes · on þis wyse y-glosed, Then he shewed  
me a stone,

TITLE. Passus xvijus OCYB ; Passus xvjus de visione vt supra R ; W *adds* — et ijus de Do-bet ; B *adds* — et tercius de dobet.

1. *quod*—*spye*] a spie, quod he R. and *spire*] spere R.

3. *with*] þere-with R. þe *writte*] it writen O ; it write Y.

4. *asseled*] enseled W. þi] the COB.

5. I] W *om.* þe *sele*] þeal (!) C.

7. *asseled*] enseled W. I—*sothe*] R *om.*

8. R *has*—Sathanas power schal last no lenger, And þus my *lette* meneth. See Critical Note.

9. þi *lettres*] þat *lette* R.

10. þanne—*he*] A plucked R. *patent*] pauntelet B.

11. [were] WCBY] weren O ; was LR.

whereon were the  
Commandments.

*Dilige deum & proximum tuum, &c.*

þis was þe tixte trewly · I toke ful gode ʒeme ; 12  
þe glose was gloriously writen · with a gilte penne,

Mat. xxii. 40.

*In hijs duobus mandatis tota lex pendet & propheta.*

¶ “[Ben] here alle þi lordes lawes?” quod I · “ʒe, leue  
me wel,” he seyde,

“He that doeth  
thus is safe.”

“And who so worcheth after þis writte · I wil vnder-  
taken, 15

Shal neuere deuel hym dere · ne deth in soule greue.  
For þough I seye it my-self · I haue saued with þis  
charme

Of men & of wommen · many score þousandes.”

“Yes,” said the  
herald; “behold  
here are Joshua,  
Judith, and  
others.”

¶ “He seith soth,” seyde þis heraud · “I haue yfounde  
it ofte ;

Lo here in my lappe · þat leued on þat charme, 20  
Iosue and Iudith · and Iudas Macabeus,  
ʒe, and sixty þousande bisyde forth · þat ben nouȝt  
seyen here.”

“Which of you  
must I believe?”  
said I.

¶ “ʒowre wordes aren wonderful,” quod I tho ·  
“which of ʒow is trewest,

And lelest to leue on · for lyf and for soule? 24  
Abraham seith þat he seigh · holy þe Trinite,  
Thre persones in parcelles · departable fro other,  
And alle þre but o god · þus Abraham me tauȝte,  
And hath saued þat bileued so · and sory for her  
synnes, 28

12. ʒeme] gome R.  
13. *writen*] I-write R. *mandatis*  
R om. *tota—pendet*] pendet tota  
lex R. *propheta*] prophete CB.  
14. [*Ben* WCBY] Been O ; Is LR.  
*leue*] lef R. *wel*] wille C ; R om.  
15. *And*] COB om. *þis writte*] my  
wit R.  
16. *deth*] dette COB ; deet Y.  
18. *of* (2)] CB om. *þousandes*  
]ousand W.  
19. *He seith*] Ye seien W. *seyde*

*þis*] sayed þe C ; seide þe B ; seiþ þe  
O. *yfounde*] founded CBY ; founden  
O.  
20. *on*] of R.  
22. ʒe] R om.  
23. *aren*] be C ; ben B ; been O.  
*tho*] CB om.  
24. *on*] so W.  
25. *holly*] hoolly W.  
26. *departable*] despartable B.  
28. *þat*] þat I CB. *bileued*] bi-  
leueth R. *synnes*] synne COB.

He can nouȝte segge þe somme · and some aren in his  
lape.

What neded it þanne · a newe lawe to bigynne,

“What need of a  
new law,

Sith þe fyrst sufficeth · to sauacioun & to blisse?

¶ And now cometh *spes*, and speketh · þat hath aspied  
þe lawe, 32

And telleth nouȝte of þe Trinitee · þat toke hym his  
*lettres*,

‘To byleue and louye · in o lorde almyȝty,

such as Hope  
now proclains?

And sitthe riȝt as my-self · so louye alle peple.’

¶ þe gome þat goth with o staf · he semeth in gretter  
hele 36

To walk with one  
staff is better  
than walking  
with two.

þan he þat goth with two staues · to syȝte of vs alle.

And riȝte so, by þe Rode! · resoun me sheweth,

It is lyȝter to lewed men · a lessoun to knowe,

þan for to techen hem two · and to harde to lerne þe  
leest! 40

It is ful harde for any man · on abraham bylene,

Hope's law is  
harder than  
Abraham's.

And welawey worse ȝit · for to loue a shrewe!

It is liȝter to leue · in þre louely persones

þan for to loue and leue · as wel lorelles as lele. 44

Go þi gate,” quod I to *spes* · “so me god helpe!

Go thy way,  
*Spes!*”

þo þat lerneth þi lawe · wil litel while vsen it!”

And as we wenten þus in þe weye · wordyng togyderes,

[Fol. 73.]

þanne seye we a samaritan · sittende on a mule, 48

Then we saw a  
Samaritan, riding  
on a mule,

Rydyng ful rapely · þe riȝt weye we ȝeden,

29. *He*] I O. *and some*] of þo þat  
B. *his*] my O.

30. *neded it*] nedip þee O; *nedes*  
it C; nedip it B. *bigynne*] bringe R.

32. *cometh*] bigynneþ OY; bi-  
cometh CB. *hath*] W om.

36—46. R omits.

36. *gome*] mane C. *goth*] gaes C.  
o] a COB. *in*] in a B.

37. *goth*] gos C.

39. *It*] That it W. *a*] o W. *knowe*]  
lere B.

40. *lerne*] lere C; here B. *þe*] þe

(printed to the) W.

42. *welawey*] waylawey C; wel  
away W; weiloway B.

43. *liȝter*] *written* liȝtor; cf. l. 39.

44. *leue*] leue or lene (uncertain  
in the MSS.) *lele*] lelles O; leles  
CB.

45. *I*] *erased* in B. *to*] COB om.

46. *wil*] wol W; wel B; O om.

47. *wenten*] wente vs B.

48. *sittende*] *so in* R; *sittyng*  
WCOB.

49. *Rydyng*] Ryden R.

coming from  
Jericho.

Comynge fro a cuntre · þat men called Ierico ;  
To a iustes in iherusalem · he chased away faste.

Faith, Hope, and  
the Samaritan  
find a wounded  
man (Lu. x. 33).

Bothe þe heraud and hope · and he mette at ones 52  
Where a man was wounded · and with þeues taken.

He myzte neither steppe ne stonde · ne stere fote ne  
handes,

Ne helpe hym-self sothely · for semiuyf he semed, 55  
And as naked as a nedle · and none helpe aboute hym.

Faith passes by  
him.

¶ Feith had first sizte of hym · ac he flegh on syde,  
And nolde nouzt neighen hym · by nyne londes  
lengthe.

Hope also passes  
by him.

¶ Hope cam hippyng after · þat hadde so ybosted,  
How he with Moyses maundement · hadde many men  
y-holpe ; 60

Ac whan he hadde sizte of þat segge · a-syde he gan  
hym drawe,

Dredfully, by þis day ! as duk · doth fram þe faucoun.

But the  
Samaritan  
alights,

¶ Ac so sone so þe samaritan · hadde sizte of þis lede,  
He lizte adown of lyard · and ladde hym in his hande,  
And to þe wye he went · his woundes to biholde, 65  
And parceyued bi his pous · he was in peril to deye,  
And but if he hadde recouere þe rather · þat rise  
shulde he neure ;

[And breyde to his boteles · and bothe he atamede ;] 68

and washes his  
wounds with  
wine and oil,

Wyth wyn & with oyle · his woundes he washed,  
Enbawmed hym and bonde his hed · & in his lappe  
hym layde,

50. *Comynge*] Com CB.

52. *þe*] CB *om.* and (2)] B *om.*  
*he*] glossed by i. xpc. (meaning id est  
Christus) in LWR.

53. *wounded*] I-wounded R.

54. *He*] A R. *stere*] stire C ;  
sterie B. *handes*] hand B.

56. *hym*] R *om.*

57. *of*] on R. *ae*] and C. *flegh*]  
fled C. *on*] a W.

58. *nolde*] walde C. *by*] B *om.*

59. *þat*] & O.

61. *segge*] grome C.

62. *Dredfully*] Dredful B. *duk*]  
doke WCRO ; a doke B.

64. *of*] B *om.* *ladde*] CB *om.*  
*hande*] handes R.

65. *to þe*] with þat R.

66. *bi*] in R.

67. *if*] 3if R ; WB *om.* *recouere*]  
recouerer WOY ; recovered B ; scour  
C. *rather*] rapelier W.

68. *In* R only ; but see C-text.

70. *hym* (2)] he CB.

- And ladde hym so forth on lyard · to *lex christi*, a  
 graunge, takes him to a  
 grange called  
*lex christi*,
- Wel six myle or seuene · biside þe newe market ; 72
- Herberwed hym at an hostrye · and to þe hostellere  
 called, and tells the  
 innkeeper to take  
 care of him,
- And sayde, “haue, kepe þis man · til I come fro þe  
 iustes,
- And lo here syluer,” he seyde · “for salue to his  
 woundes.”
- And he toke hym two pans · to lyflode as it were, 76 giving him two  
 pence for his  
 expenses.
- And seide, “what he speneth more · I make þe good  
 here-after ;
- For I may nouzt lette,” quod þat leode · & lyarde he  
 bistrydeth,
- And raped hym to-*herusalem*-ward · þe riȝte waye to Then he rides on  
 to Jerusalem.  
 ryde.
- ¶ Faith folweth after faste · and fonded to mete Faith and Hope  
 ride after him.  
 hym, 80
- And *spes* spaklich hym spedde · spede if he myȝte,
- To ouertake hym and talke to hym · ar þei to toun  
 come.
- ¶ And whan I seyȝ þis, I sojourned nouȝte · but shope Then ran I after  
 the kind  
 Samaritan, and  
 offered to serve  
 him.  
 me to renne, 84
- And suwed þat samaritan · þat was so ful of pite,
- And graunted hym to ben his grome · “gramercy,” he  
 seyde,
- “Ac þi frende and þi felawe,” quod he · “þow fyndest  
 me at nede.”
- ¶ And I thanked hym þo · and sith I hym tolde,

73. *hostrye*] ostrië COB. *to*] R om.  
*hostellere*] ostiler CB.

74. *haue*] *there is a point after  
 this word in C and O.*

76. *pans*] pens WCO.

77. *speneth*] spendeþ WB ; spendes  
 C.

78. *lette*] O om. (!) *bistrydeth*] bistroode C ; bistrode OB.

80. *folweth*] folwede WCOB.

81. *spaklich*] sparkliche R ;  
 scharpli B.

82. *to* (2)] til COB.

83. *to*] C om.

84. *þat* (1)] þe R. *pite*] pieto C.

85. *grome*] gome R. *gramercy*]

graunt mercy WCRO.

86. *quod he*] he saide CB ; O om.

- I told him what Faith and Hope had done. How þat feith fleigh away · and *spes* his felaw bothe,  
For sizte of þe sorweful man · þat robbed was with  
þeues. 89
- [Fol. 73 b.] “Haue hem excused,” quod he · “her help may litel  
auaille ;
- He told me that nothing could cure the wounded man but the blood of a child born of a virgin. May no medeyn on molde · þe man to hele brynge,  
Neither feith ne fyn hope · so festred ben his woundis,  
With-out þe blode of a barn · borne of a mayde. 93  
And be he bathed in þat blode · baptised, as it were,  
And þanne plastred with penaunce · and passioun of  
þat babi,  
He shulde stonde and steppe ; · ac stalworth worth he  
neure, 96  
Tyl he haue eten al þe barn · and his blode ydronke.
- “Nearly all,” said he, “who pass through that wilderness are robbed. For went neuere wy in þis worlde · þorw þat wilder-  
nesse,  
þat he ne was robbed or rifled · rode he þere or zede,  
Saue faith, & his felaw · *spes*, and my-selue, 100  
And þi-self now, and such · as suwen owre werkis.
- Outlaws lie in wait there. ¶ For outlawes in þe wode · and vnder banke lotyeth,  
And may vch man se · and gode merke take, 103  
Who is bihynde and who bifore · and who ben on hors,  
For he halt hym hardyer on horse · þan he þat is a fote.
- Their chief was afraid of me. For he seigh me, þat am samaritan · suwen feith & his  
felaw 106  
On my caple þat hatte *caro* · (of mankynde I toke it),

88. *fleigh*] fleed C ; flez R.89. *þe*] þat W.91. *ou*] vnder R.93. *mayde*] mayden O.94. *be he*] he be COB ; be he  
(printed he be) W. *he*] R *om*.95. *plastred*] pastrid B. *and*] and  
þe R.96—340. *Here MS. O has lost three  
leaves ; this portion is collated with  
MSS. C2 and Y.*96. *ac*] and CC2.97. *ydronke*] drūnkyn C2.99. *or* (1)] ne R.101. *as*] þat RC2.102. *outlawes*] outlawe is R. *loty-  
eth*] lowted C.103. *maw]* mowen W ; mowe C ;  
mown C2.104. *who* (2)] wo is B.105. *halt*] haldes C. *a*] on YBC2 ;  
at C ; W *om*.106. *seigh*] seith RC2. *feith*] forth  
Y.107. *hatte*] hattip B ; highte W.

He was vnhardy, þat harlot · and hudde hym *in in-ferno*. 108

Ac ar þis day þre dayes · I dar vndertaken,  
þat he worth fettred, þat feloune · fast with cheynes,  
And neure eft grene grome · þat goth þis ilke gate ;

[*O mors, ero mors tua, &c.*]

In three days' time he shall be bound.

Hosea xiii. 14.

¶ And þanne shal feith be forester here · and in þis  
fritth walke, 112

Then shall Faith be keeper of the forest here,

And kenne out *comune* men · þat knoweth nouȝt þe  
contre,

Which is þe weye þat ich went · and wherforth to  
iherusalem.

And hope þe hostelleres man shal be · þere þe man lith  
an helynge ;

and Hope shall be the innkeeper's man,

And alle þat fieble and faynt be · þat faith may nouȝt  
teche, 116

Hope shal lede hem forth with loue · as his *lettre*  
telleth,

And hostel hem and hele · þorw holicherche bileue,

and take care of the feeble ones.

Tyl I haue salue for alle syke · and þanne shal I re-  
tourne, 119

And come aȝein bi þis contree · and confort alle syke  
þat craueth it or coueiteth it · and cryeth þere-after.

For þe barne was born in bethleem · þat with his blode  
shal saue

The child born in Bethleem shall save all."

108. *vnhardy—harlot*] vn harlot (by mistake) R. *hudde*] hud R ; hidde WYC<sub>2</sub>B ; hid C.

109. *Ac*] And CC<sub>2</sub>. *þis—dayes*] þise daies þre B ; thise dayes thre dayes C.

111. *grome*] gome WRC<sub>2</sub>. [*O—tua*] in R only.

112—123. R omits.

112. *forester*] forster WCC<sub>2</sub>Y. *walke*] C om.

113. *out*] CC<sub>2</sub>BY om. *comune*] vn-kunnaude (miswritten un-kunnaude) B.

115. *an*] in Y ; to CC<sub>2</sub>B.

117. *telleth*] hem telles CB.

118. *hostel*] herber C. *hele*] hel hem C ; heele hem B. *holicherche*] holichirchis B.

119. *retourne*] turne W.

121. *it* (1)] C<sub>2</sub> om. *or*] and W. *and*] or W.

122, 123. For the barne was borne in Bethlem · of a elene mayde, That shal with his blood · saue alle þat lyuen in feith, And foloweth the techynge · of holpe þat is his felawe Y.

So also CC<sub>2</sub>B ; but C omits borne, C<sub>2</sub> omits the first his, C the second his, and all three rightly have hope for holpe. LW are alike, and better.

Alle þat lyueth in faith and folweth · his felawes tech-  
yngē.”

“Shall I believe  
in the Trinity,  
as Faith taught  
me?” said I,

¶ “A! swete syre!” I seyde þo · “wher [shal I]  
byleue, 124

As faith and his felawe · enfourmed me bothe?

In þre persones departable · þat perpetuel were enere,  
And alle þre but o god · þus abraham me tauzte;—

“or in the law of  
Love, as Hope  
taught me?”

And hope afterwarde · he bad me to louye 128

O god wyth al my good · and alle gomes after,  
Louye hem lyke my-selue · ac owre lorde aboute alle.”

¶ “After abraham,” quod he · “þat heraud of armes,  
Sette faste þi faith · and ferme bileue. 132

“Follow the  
teaching of both.  
[Fol. 74.]

And, as hope hizte þe · I hote þat þow louye

Thyn euene-crystene euermore · euene forth with þi-  
self.

And if conscience carpe þere-azein · or kynde witte  
oyther,

Shew to heretikes  
thy HAND.

Or heretykes with argumentz · þin honde þow [hem]  
shewe; 136

For god is after an hande · yhere now and knowe it.

The Father is  
like the folded  
FIST;

¶ þe fader was fyrst, as a fyst · with o fynger fold-  
yngē,

Tyl hym loued and lest · to vnlosen his fynger,

And profre it forth as with a paume · to what place it  
sholde. 140

the PALM  
betokens the  
Holy Ghost;

þe paume is purely þe hande · and profreth forth þe  
fyngres

To mynystre and to make · þat myzte of hande knoweth,

124. *I seyde*] seide I B. *wher*  
whether R. [*shal I* YCC2B] I shal  
LWR.

125. *enfourmed*] enformen CBYC2.

127. *þre*] this C; þis is B.

129. C2 *omits*.

130. *my-selue*] my-suluen R. *ac*  
and CC2.

132. *faste*] fully W.

133. *hizte*] bihizt R.

136. [*hem* WR] hym LCC2B.

138. *as*] CC2Y *om. a*] a CYB.  
*foldyngre*] folden R.

139. *loued*] leued R. *lest*] liste  
WCC2BY; luste R. *vnlosen*] vn-  
closen B.

140. *profre*] profered R.

141. *profreth*] profer C.

142. *mynystre*] minstre R; myns-  
tre Y.

- And bitokneth trewly · telle who so liketh,  
 þe holygost of heuene · he is as þe paume. 144
- þe fyngres þat fre ben · to folde and to serue,  
 Bitokneth sothly þe sone · þat sent was til erthe,  
 þat toched and tasted · atte techyng of þe paume  
 Seynt Marie a Mayde · and mankynde lauȝte ; 148
- Qui conceptus est de spiritu sancto, [natus,] &c.*  
 þe fader is þanne as a fust · with fynger to touche,  
*Quia omnia traham ad me ipsum, &c.,*  
 Al þat þe paume parceyueth · profitable to fele.  
 Thus ar þei alle but one · as it an hande were,  
 And þre sondry siztes · in one shewyng. 152
- þe paume, for he putteth forth fyngres · and þe fust  
 bothe, The palm puts forth both the fingers and the fist.
- Riȝt so redily · reson it sheweth,  
 How he þat is holygoste · sire & sone prœueth.  
 And as þe hande halt harde · and al þyng faste 156 The hand holds things by help of the fingers and palm.
- þorw foure fyngres and a thombe · forth with þe paume,  
 Riȝte so þe fader and þe sone · & seynt spirit þe  
 þridde
- Halt al þe wyde worlde · with-in hem thre,  
 Bothe welkne and þe wynde · water and erthe, 160
- Heuene & helle · and al þat þere is Inne.  
 þus it is, nedeth no man · to trowe non other,  
 That thre þinges bilonget<sup>1</sup> · in owre lorde of heuene,  
 And aren [serelepes] by hem-self · asondry were neure, The Trinity is a Unity.
143. *liketh*] it liketh Y ; it liked CB.  
 144. *he*] C2 om.  
 145—147. CB om.  
 146. *til*] to C2.  
 147. *atte*] and R.  
 148. [*natus* CBY] LWRC2 om.  
 149. *þanne*] pawme W. *a*] R om. *touche*] touche R.  
 151. *an hande*] a fust R.  
 152. *in one*] in oen in R.  
 153. *he*] it W. *he putteth*] þe paume put (!) R.  
 156. *halt*] haldes C.  
 157. *a*] B om.  
 159. *Halt*] Haldes C ; W om. *with-in*] with R. *thre*] þre holden W.  
 160. *welkne*] wolkne WR ; þe welkne B ; welken CC2.  
 161. *þere is Inne*] so in R ; is þer-Inne W ; ther-Inne is CYC2B.  
 162. *is*] RCB om. *nedeth*] it nedeth C2. *to*] WCB om.  
 164. [*serelepes*] so in Y ; serelepes W ; surlepes R ; sereples CC2B ; serelepes L (*but marked for correction*). *were*] were þei WCYC2B.

Namore þan myn hande may · meue with-outen  
fyngeres. 165

The folded fist is  
like God the  
Creator.

¶ And as my fust is ful honde · yfolde togideres,  
So is þe fader a ful god · formeour and shepper,

*Tu fabricator omnium, &c.,*

And al þe myzte myd hym is · in making of þynges. 168

The fingers are  
as the Son, who  
is the Skill or  
Science of the  
Father.

¶ The fyngeres fourmen a ful hande · to purtreye or  
peynten

Kerynge and compassynge · as crafte of þe fyngeres ;

Rizt so is þe sone · þe science of þe fader,

And ful god, as is þe fader · no febler ne no better. 172

þe paume is purelich þe hande · hath power bi hymselfe,

Otherwyse þan þe wrythen fuste · or werkmanship of  
fyngrer ;

The palm unfolds  
the fist, and  
[Fol. 74 b.]  
receives from the  
fingers,

For þe paume hath powere · to put oute alle þe ioyntes,

And to vnfolde þe folden fuste · [for hym it bilongeth ;

And receyue þat þe fyngrer recheth · and refuse bothe,  
Whan he feleth þe fust · and] þe fyngrer wille. 178

So is þe holygoste god · nother gretter ne lasse

þan is þe sire and þe sone · & in þe same myzte,

and fingers, fist,  
and palm are but  
one hand.

And alle ar þei but o god · as is myn hande & my  
fyngrer,

Vnfolden or folden · my fuste & myn paume, 182

Al is but an hande · how so I torne it.

165. *myn—may]* may an hand R. *fyngrer]* my fyngrer WCC<sub>2</sub>YB.

166. *And]* B *om.* *fust]* neef C. *yfolde]* y-holden W.

167. *shepper]* scheppere R ; shap-  
pere WC<sub>2</sub> ; chappere B ; shapeour Y ;  
schipper C.

168. *And]* CYC<sub>2</sub>B *om.* *myd]* with  
C. *of]* of alle CYC<sub>2</sub>B.

169. *or]* or to CC<sub>2</sub>B.

170. *and]* or R. *as]* is R. *crafte]*  
crist C.

173. *hath]* and haþ WC<sub>2</sub>.

174. *þe wrythen]* he writhes þe C ;  
he wriþeþ þe B ; þe wrien R.

175. *þe paume]* he W. *put]* pult  
R. *alle]* R *om.* *After* l. 175 B *in-*

*serts—*and to strecche out þe synwes ·  
and weynes boþe.

176—178. [*for—and]* in R *only* ;  
*but cf.* C-text.

176. *folden]* R *om.* *fuste]* Neue  
C.

178. *and]* atte L ; at WC<sub>2</sub> ; as  
CYB.

179. *So]* To (!) C.

180. *and]* or R.

181. *my]* C *om.*

183. *is]* is it R. *an]* so in WR ;  
on CC<sub>2</sub>B ; oon Y.

183, 184. *how so — þe hande]*  
WCC<sub>2</sub>YB *omit* ; retained in R and  
Crowley.

Ac who is herte in þe hande · euene in þe myddes, 184  
 He may receyue riȝt nouȝte · resoun it sheweth ;  
 For þe fynGRES, þat folde schulde · and þe fuste make,  
 For peyne of þe paume · powere hem failleth  
 To [cluche] or to clawe · to clyppe or to holde. 188

If he who is hurt in the palm fails in power over the fingers and the fist.

¶ Were þe myddel of myn honde · ymaymed or  
 ypersshed,

I schulde receyue riȝte nouȝte · of þat I reche myȝte.

Ac þough my thombe & my fynGRES · bothe were to-  
 shullen,

If the fingers only are hurt, the palm still retains power.

And þe myddel of myn hande · with-oute male ese, 192  
 In many kynnes maneres · I myȝte my-self helpe,  
 Bothe mene and amende · þough alle my fynGRES  
 oke.

Bi þis skil, me þynke[th] · I se an euydence,  
 þat who so synneth in þe seynt spirit · assoilled worth  
 he neure, 196

Likewise he who sins against the Holy Ghost is never forgiven,

Noither here ne elles-where · as I herde telle,

*Qui peccat in [spiritum sanctum, nunquam,] &c. ,*

For he prikketh god as in þe paume · þat *peccat in*  
*[spiritum sanctum].*

(Mk. iii. 29),

For god þe fader is as a fuste · þe sone is as a fynger,  
 The holy goste of heuene · is, as it were, þe pawme.

So who so synneth in seynt spirit · it semeth þat he  
 greueth 201

for he grieues the HAND in the PALM.

185. CC2YB omit.

186. *fuste*] Neene C.

187. *paume*] loofe C.

188. [*cluche* WY] *cluche* RC2 ;  
*cluche* CB ; *cliche* L. to (3)] or  
 CB.

189. *ymaymed*] *ymayheyed* (sic)  
 C. *ypersshed*] *ypersed* R ; I-  
*perished* Y ; *y-perished* WC ;  
*perished* C2B.

190. *of*] and of CB.

191. *Ac*] And C2 ; As C. *to-*  
*shullen*] *to-schiruerd* (sic) C ;  
*to-sholle* R.

192. *male ese*] *ma layse* (sic) B.

194. *meue*] *moene* CY ; *mene*  
 (printed *mene*) W ; *moue* C2. *oke*]

oken C2.

195. *þynketh*] *so in* WCC2YB ;  
*þynke* L ; *but see* l. 278. *skil*—*þynk-*  
*eth*] *kile* he seyde (sic) R.

196. *þe*] CC2YB om.

197. *herde*] here C2. [*spiritum*  
*sanctum*] *most* MSS. *have* *spiritu*  
*sancto* ; *but* C2 *has* *the* *right* *reading*  
*here, though not in the next line.*  
*[nunquam] in R only.*

198. *as*] C2 om.

198, 199. *as in—fader*] C om. *a*  
*fynger*] *the* *fynger* CC2YB.

200. *þe*] C2 om.

201. *so*] C2 om. *in*] *in* þe WCB ;  
*aȝeynes* þe R.

The Trinity is  
like a TORCH,  
having WAX,  
WICK, and FIRE.

God, þat he grypeth with · and wolde his grace quenche.  
¶ And to a torche or a tapre · þe trinitee is lykned ;  
As wex and a weke · were twyned togideres, 204  
And þanne a fyre flaumende · forth oute of bothe ;  
And as wex and weyke · and hote fyre togyderes  
Fostren forth a flaumbe · and a feyre leye,  
So doth þe sire & þe sone · & also *spiritus sanctus* 208  
Fostren forth amonges folke · loue & bileue,  
þat alkyn crystene · clenseth of synnes.

Like a smouldering  
torch without  
light,

so is the  
quenching of the  
Spirit.

Glowing coals  
give no light  
like a blazing  
torch does ;

And as þow seest some tyme · sodeynliche a torche,  
The blase þere-of yblowe out · zet brenneth þe weyke,  
With-oute leye or liȝte · þat þe macche brenneth, 213  
So is þe holygost god · & grace with-oute mercy  
To alle vnkynde creatures · þat coueite to destruye  
Lele loue other lyf · þat owre lorde shapte. 216

¶ And as glowande gledes · gladieth nouȝte þis werk-  
men,  
þat worehen & waken · in wyntres niȝtes,  
As doth a kex or a candel · þat cauȝte hath fyre &  
blaseth,

Namore doth sire ne sone · ne seynt spirit togyderes,  
Graunteth no grace · ne forȝifnesse of synnes, 221

[Fol. 75.]

the Spirit, blown  
upon by Love,  
flames like FIRE.

Til þe holi goste gynne · to glowe and to blase.  
So þat þe holygoste · gloweth but as a glede,  
Tyl þat lele loue · ligge on hym & blowe, 224  
And þanne flaumbeth he as fyre · on fader & on *jilius*,

203. *And*] For R. *or*] or to R.  
*lykned*] ylikned CYB.

205. *fyre*] fere R. *flaumende*] flawmende R; flawmynge WB; flaumyng CC2Y. *oute*] ouȝt R.

206. *hote fyre*] warme fere R.

207. *a* (2)] B *om.* *leye*] lowe C; light C2.

209. W *omits.* *Fostren*] Brynges C. *bileue*] loiale bileue C2.

210. *þat*] C2 *om.* *clenseth*] clensete R.

213. *leye*] lowe C. *macche*] smacche C2Y. *brenneth*] swellith

C2.

216. *other*] or W; eifer B. *shapte*] schupte R; 3af C2.

217—243. R *omits.*

217. *as*] as a CC2BY. *glowande*] glowyng WCC2B. *gledes*] glede CC2BY. *gladieth*] ne gladeth CC2BY.

219. *ker*] kyse C2; kixe B.

221. *Graunteth*] Graunte WCC2B.

223. *þat*] doth C2. *gloweth*] glowe B. *glede*] glade W.

225. *fader*] pater YC2.

And melteth her myzte in-to merey · as men may se in  
wyntre

Ysekeles in eueses · þorw hete of þe sonne,

Melteth in a mynut while · to myst & to watre ; 228

So grace of þe holygoste · þe grete myzte of þe trinite

Melteth in-to merey · to *mercyable*, & to non other.

And as wax with-uten more · on a warme glede

Wil brennen & blasen · be þei to-gyderes, 232

And solacen hem þat may se · þat sitten in derkenesse,

So wole þe fader forʒif · folke of mylde hertes

þat reufulliche repenten · & restitucioun make,

In as moche as þei mowen · amenden & payen. 236

And if it suffice nouzte for assetz · þat in suche a wille  
deyeth,

Mercy for his mekenesse · wil make good þe reme-  
naunte.

And as þe weyke and fyre · wil make a warme flaumbe

For to myrthe men with · þat in merke sitten, 240

So wil cryst of his curteisye · and men crye hym mercy,

Bothe forʒine & forʒete · & ʒet bidde for vs

To þe fader of heuene · forʒyuenesse to haue.

¶ Ac hew fyre at a flynte · fowre hundreth wyntre, 244

Bot þow haue towe to take it with · tondre or broches,

Al þi laboure is loste · and al þi longe trauaille ;

For may no fyre flaumbe make · faille it his kynde.

So is þe holy gost god · & grace with-uten mercy 248

To alle vnkynde creatures · cryst hym-self witnesseth,

*Amen dico vobis nescio vos, &c.*

As icicles are  
melted by the  
Sun's heat, so the  
Spirit inclines the  
Trinity to mercy.

AS WAX laid on  
an ember will  
blaze,

so the Father  
forgives  
penitents.

As a WICK, when  
lighted, burns,

so Christ forgives  
also.

But FIRE without  
tow or tinder will  
not be of service ;

so is the Spirit  
like Grace  
without Mercy  
(Mat. xxv. 12).

226. *in-to*] to C<sub>2</sub>YB ; o C.

227. *Ysekeles*] Iseyokels C. *in*]  
and W. *eueses*] euesynges WCC<sub>2</sub>B.  
þe] CB *om.*

228. *Melteth*] Melte W.

230. *in-to*] to WCC<sub>2</sub>BY. *non*] W  
*om.*

236. *In*] þi B.

237. *assetz*] assetth C ; aseth C<sub>2</sub> ;  
to a-seep B. *þat*] Y *om.* a] CC<sub>2</sub>BY

*om.*

238. *wil*] & Y.

239. *warme*] faire Y.

240. *myrthe*] norische B. *with*]  
myd W. *merke*] þe derke W.

244. *Ac*] And C ; But C<sub>2</sub>. *fyre*—  
a] fuyr and R.

245. *towe*] tacche R. *tondre*]  
tunder R.

247. *his*] is WC.

If thou art  
unkind,

¶ Be vnkynde to þin euene-eristene · and al þat þow  
canst bidden,

Delen & do penaunce · day & nyȝte euere, 251

then, for all the  
pardons thou  
canst buy, the  
Spirit hears thee  
not.

And purchace al þe parloun · of Pampiloun & Rome,  
And indulgences ynowe · & be *ingratus* to þi kynde,  
þe holy goste hereth þe nouȝt · ne helpe may þe by  
resoun ;

For vnkyndenesse quencheth hym · þat he can nouȝte  
shyne,

Ne brenne ne blase clere · for blowyng of vnkynde-  
nesse. 256

Poule þe apostle · preueth wher I lye,

1 Cor. xiii. 1.

*Si linguis hominum loquar, &c.*

Beware, ye wise  
men,

For-þy beth war, ȝe wyse men · þat with þe wo[r]lde  
deleth,

That riche ben & resoun knoweth · reuleth wel ȝowre  
soule.

of unkindness,

Beth nouȝte vnkynde, I conseille ȝow · to ȝowre euene-  
erystene. 260

Iest ye burn, but  
blaze not.

For many of ȝow riche men · bi my soule, men telleth,  
ȝe brenne, but ȝe blaseth nouȝte · þat is a blynde be-  
kene ;

Mat. vii. 21.

*Non omnis qui dicit domine, domine, intrabit, &c.*

¶ Diues deyed dampned · for his vnkyndenesse

[Fol. 75b.]

Of his mete & his moneye · to men that it neded. 264

Remember Diues.

Veh a riche I rede · rewarde at hym take,

And gyneth ȝowre good to þat god · þat grace of  
ariseth.

250. þat] C2B om. þow] þau B.

251. & (1)] or CC2BY. & (2)] or  
B.

252. Pampiloun] paemploen R.

253. ingratus] ingratiss CY ; in-  
grat R. kynde] kynre R.

255. quencheth hym] qwenche hem  
R.

256. for] but Y.

257. wher] wheiþer W. linguis]  
lingua B.

258. worlde] CWRC2YB ; miswrit-  
ten wolde L (but marked).

259. soule] soulis B ; self C2.

262. þat] & þat R. a blynde] an  
vukynde CB. intrabit] CC2BY om.

263. dampned] Idampned R.

264. his (2)] of his WC2 ; RY om.  
neded] neded C ; nedid B.

265. a riche] riche man B.

266. grace of ariseth] alle grace of  
riseth B.

For [þei] þat ben vnkynde to his · hope I none oþer,  
But þei dwelle þere *diues* is · dayes with-outen ende.

þus is vnkyndenesse þe contrarie · þat quenched, as it  
were, 269 Unkindness  
quenches the  
Holy Spirit,

þe grace of þe holy gooste · goddes owne kynde.

For þat kynde dothe, vnkynde fordoth · as þese cursed  
theues,

Vnkynde cristene men · for coueityse & enuye, 272 as thieves quench  
a man's life.

Sleeth a man for his moebles · wyth mouth or wyth  
handes.

For þat þe holygoste hath to kepe · þo harlotes de-  
stroyeth,

þe which is lyf & loue · þe leye of mannes bodye.

For euery manere good man · may be likned to a torche,  
Or elles to a tapre · to reuerence þe Trinitee ; 277 Every good man  
is like a torch ;

And who morthereþ a good man · me thynketh, by  
myn Inwyt, he who murders  
him, quenches  
the light.

He fordoth þe leuest lyzte · þat owre lorde loueth.

¶ Ac ȝut in many mo maneres · men offenden þe holy-  
goste, 280

Ac þis is þe worste wyse · þat any wizte myzte

Synnen aȝein þe seynt spirit · assenten to destruye,

For coueityse of any kynnes þinge · þat cryst dere  
bouzte. 283

How myzte he axe mercy · or any mercy hym helpe,  
þat wykkedlich & willefullich · wolde mercy anynte ? How shall the  
merciless expect  
mercy ?

Innocence is nexte god · & nyzte and day it crieth,

‘ Veniaunce, veniaunce · forȝiue be it neuere,

267. [þei WCC<sub>2</sub>BY] LR *om.*

268. [þei] thay schul CC<sub>2</sub>Y ; þat þei  
shal B.

269. *vnkyndenesse*] kyndenesse (!)  
B.

271. *dothe*] deth R. *cursed*] cor-  
sede W.

272. [ʒ] of C<sub>2</sub>.

274. [þo] þe WC<sub>2</sub>.

275. *lyf*] þe lif CB.

278. *who*] who-so CBC<sub>2</sub>Y ; ho-so R.

280. *Ac*] But C<sub>2</sub> ; And WC.

281. *Ac*] And C ; But C<sub>2</sub>.

282. *Synnen*] Syuegen R. [c]

CBYC<sub>2</sub> *om.*

283. *kynces*] CYC<sub>2</sub>B *om.*

284. *Also in* R ; WCYC<sub>2</sub>B *omit* :

*Crowley retains it.*

285. *anynte*] *so in* R ; aniente

WC ; anientice YC<sub>2</sub>B.

286. *nexte*] nex C.

That shent vs & shadde owre blode · forshapte vs, as  
it were ; 288

Rev. vi. 10.

*Vindica sanguinem iustorum!*

Even Love cries  
out for  
vengeance."

Thus 'veniaunce, veniaunce' · verrey charite asketh ;  
And sith holicherche & charite · chargeth þis so sore,  
Leue I neure that owre lorde wil loue · þat charite  
lakketh, 291

Ne haue pite for any preyere · þere þat he pleyneþ."

"But were I to  
pray for the  
Holy Ghost's  
forgiveness," said  
I, "should I be  
saved?"

¶ "I pose I hadde synned so · and shulde now deye,  
And now am sory, þat so · þe seint spirit agulte,  
Confesse me, & crye his grace · god, þat al made,  
And myldliche his mercy axe · myzte I nouzte be  
saued?" 296

"Thou mightest ;

¶ "ʒus," seide þe Samaritan · "so wel þow myzte  
repente,  
þat riȝtwisnesse þorw repentance · to reuthe myzte torne.  
Ac it is but selden yseye · þere sothenesse bereth wit-  
nesse,

yet how seldom is  
a condemned  
felon pardoned  
for his penitence!

Any creature þat is coupable · afor a kynges iustice,  
Be raunsoned for his repentaunce · þere alle resouu hym  
dampneth. 301

For þere þat partye pursueth · þe pele is so huge,  
þat þe kyng may do no mercy · til bothe men acorde,  
And eyther haue equite · as holy writ telleth ; 304

288. vs (1)] R om. *shadde*] shad  
CYB ; shedde WR ; schede Cz. *for-  
shapte*] for-schupte R. *were*] semed  
R. *Vindica*] Vindicta CB.

290. *sith*] sit C.

291. *lakketh*] hattes C ; hatip B.

293. *pose*] sopose Cz. *synned*] synged R. *now*] nouzt (!) C ; nouzth Cz ; nozt B ; nouz R.

294. *now*] nouzt (!) R. *am*] I am W. *so*] I so WCCzYB. *spirit*] Spirigt I R.

295. *grace*] mercy Cz.

296. *mercy*] grace Cz. *saued*] I-saued R.

297. *ʒus*] Thus (!) C ; þus B ; ʒis WYCz. *wel*] R om. *myzte*] miȝtest

R.

298. *þorw*] to R.

299. *Ac*] And C ; But ʒet Cz. *it is*] is it B. *yseye*] yseize W ; seyen CB ; seie CzY. *þere*] the CB ; that Y.

300. *þat is*] be R. *afor*] by-for R. *iustice*] Iustices C.

301. *repentaunce*] R om. (!). *dampneth*] dampned Y.

302. *pele*] peel R ; peple WCzYB ; pepile C ; Crowley *has* plee. *is*] his C.

304. *cyther*] neither (!) C. *donec*] in Y only ; the two words following are supplied from Pass. V. 279.

*Nunquam dimittitur peccatum, [donec restituatur ablatum.]*

þus it fareth bi suche folke · þat falsely al her lyues

Enel lyuen &amp; leten nouȝte · til lyf hem forsake ;

[Drede of desperacion · dryueth a-weye þanne grace,

þat mercy in her mynde · may nauȝt þanne falle ;] 308

Good hope, þat helpe shulde · to wanhope torneth—

Nouȝt of þe nounpowere of god · þat he ne is myȝtful

To amende al þat amys is · and his mercy grettere

þan alle owre wykked werkes · as holiwrit telleth, 312

*Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius—*Ac, ar his riȝtwisnesse to reuthe tourne · some restitu-  
cioun bihoueth ;

His sorwe is satisfaccioun · for hym þat may nouȝte paye.

¶ Thre þinges þere ben · þat doth a man by strengthe

Forto fleen his owne hous · as holywryt sheweth. 316

þat one is a wikked wyf · þat wil nouȝt be chasted,

Her fiere fleeth fro hyr · for fere of her tonge.

And if his hous be vnhiled · and reyne on his bedde,

He seketh and seketh · til he slepe drye. 320

And whan smoke &amp; smolder · smyt in his syȝte,

It doth hym worse þan his wyf · or wete to slepe.

For smoke &amp; smolder · smyteth [in] his eyen,

Til he be blere-nyed or blynde · and hors in þe throte,

Despair drives  
away grace.

[Fol. 76.]

It is not through  
God's lack of  
power,(Ps. cxliv. 9,  
Vulg.),  
but because some  
restitution is  
required.Three things  
drive a man out  
of his own house ;

a shrewish wife,

rain dripping  
through a leaky  
roof,and smoke that  
irritates his eyes.305. *lyues*] lyue R.306. *Enel lyuen*] I wulle leuen  
C2.307, 308. *In R only; but see C-text.*309. *þat helpe*] CB om. *torneth*  
turne B.310. *þe nounpowere*] noun power  
Y; þe nounper R.312. *eius* (1)] domini R.313. *Ac*] But C2; And C. *riȝt-  
wisnesse*] rightfulness CYC2B.

314. R omits.

315. *þere*] that C. *In the margin  
of L is*—Fumus, Mulier, & stillicidia  
Expellant hominem a domo pro[pria].316. *Forto*] C2 om. *hous*] W om.317. *chasted*] so in R; chastised

W; schastisid C2; chastied C.

318. *fiere*] so in C2B; feere WCY;  
fere R. *fleeth*] flien B. *fro*] R om.319. *his*] C om. *vnhiled*] vnhiiled  
CC2Y; vnheled RB. *on*] in CBY.320. *and seketh*] al aboute CC2BY.  
*slepe*] ligge CY; liggith C2; liegge B.321. *ȝ*] or CC2BY. *smyt*] smitte  
RC2. Y omits from smyt to smolder  
in l. 323.323. *smyteth*] smerteth R. [*in  
WC2YB*] LRC om. Cf. l. 341.324. *blere-nyed*] blereneyed R;  
blereighed WCC2Y; blerid B. *hors*]  
hoos CY; hos C2B; eowȝhe R. *þe*]  
his B.

Cougheth, and curseth · þat cryst gyf hem sorwe 325  
 þat sholde brynge in better wode · or blowe it til it  
 brende.

¶ þise thre þat I telle of · ben þus to vnderstonde.

The scolding wife  
 is the frailty of  
 our flesh;

The wyf is owre wikked flesshe · þat wil nouȝt be  
 chasted, 328

For kynde cleneth on hym euere · to contrarie þe soule.  
 And þowgh it falle, it fynt skiles · [þat] frelete it made,  
 And þat is liztly forȝeuen · and forȝeten bothe,  
 To man þat mercy asketh · and amende þenketh. 332

the dripping rain  
 is like sicknesses;

¶ The reyne þat reyneth · þere we reste sholde,  
 Ben sikenesses & sorwes · þat we suffren oft,  
 As Powle þe Apostle · to þe peple tauȝte,

2 Cor. xii. 9.

*Virtus in infirmitate perficitur, &c.*

And þowgh þat men make · moche deel in her angre,  
 And [ben] impacient in here penaunce · pure resouu  
 knoweth, 337

and impatiencie  
 under sickness is  
 pardonable.

þat þei han cause to contrarie · by kynde of her syke-  
 nesse.

And liztlich owre lorde · at her lyues ende,  
 Hath mercy on suche men · þat so uel may suffre. 340

But the smoke is  
 like unkindness,  
 quenching mercy.

¶ Ac þe smoke and þe smolder · þat smyt in owre  
 eyghen,

þat is coueityse and vnkyndenesse · þat quençeth  
 goddes mercy.

325. *Cougheth*] He kouȝeth R;  
 Coughes C; Coughed Y; Than  
 Cougheth he C2. þat] and bit B.  
 hem] hym CRC2Y.

326. *it* (1)] B om. *brende*] brenne  
 BC2Y.

327. *ben þus*] þus ben R. *to*] CR  
 om.

328. *The*] þre B. þat] R om.  
*chasted*] ehastised WB; sehastisid C2.

329. *cleueth*] elyueþ W.

330. [þat WCRC2BY] þe L. *it*]  
 is CC2Y.

332. *amende*] to amende hym B;  
 to amende C2.

334. *sikenesses*] siknesse WCC2Y.  
 §] and other R. *oft*] ouȝte R.

335. *in*] retained in MS. W. *per-  
 ficitur*] C om.

336. *deol*] doel WC2RY; dole C;  
 dol B. *her*] C om.

337. [ben W] be R; LCC2YB om.

338. *cause*] resouu R.

339. *liztlich*] ful liztli B.

340. *so*] CB om.

*Here collation with O recommenees,  
 and with C2 and Y ceases.*

341. *Ac*] And C. *smyt*] smitte R.

342. þat (1)] COB om. *is*] R om.  
 þat (2)] R om.

For vnkyndenesse is þe contrarie · of alkynnes resoun ;  
 For þere nys syke ne sori · ne non so moche wrecche, There is no man  
but can, if he will,  
 þat he ne may louye, & hym lyke · and lene of his  
 herte

Goed wille & good worde · bothe wisshen and willen

Alle manere men · mercy & forþifnesse, 347 love his  
neighbour as  
himself."

And louye hem liche hym-self · and his lyf amende.—

I may no lenger lette," quod he · and lyarde he pryked,

And went away as wynde · and þere-with I awaked. The dreamer  
awakes.

344. *moche*] yuele a O. *wrecche*] werche (l) C.

345. *lene*] lene or leue in the MSS.

346. *þ*] R om. *bothe*] and W. *willen*] wilnen R.

349. *lyarde—pryked*] harde priked CB; harde prikede forþ O.

350. *away*] O om. *awaked*] wakede

R; awakip B.

## PASSUS XVIII (DO-BET III).

*Passus xvij<sup>us</sup>, et tercius de dobet.*

[Fol. 76 b.]  
The dreamer  
wanders wearily,

and falls asleep.

He dreams about  
Palm Sunday  
and its events  
(Mat. xxi.; Mk.  
xi.).

The good  
Samaritan,  
or Piers Plow-  
man, comes  
riding onwards.

Wolleward and wete-shoed · went I forth after,  
As a reccheles renke · þat of no wo reccheth,  
And zede forth lyke a lorel · al my lyf tyme,  
Tyl I wex wery of þe worlde · and wylned eft to slepe,  
And lened me to a lenten · and longe tyme I slepte; 5  
And of crystes passioun and penaunce · þe peple þat  
of-rauȝte,  
[Reste] me þere, and rutte faste · tyl *ramis palmarum*;  
Of gerlis & of *gloria laus* · gretly me dremed, 8  
And how *osanna* by orgonye · olde folke songen.  
¶ One semblable to þe samaritan · & some del to  
Piers þe plowman,  
Barfote on an asse bakke · botelees cam pryk[y]e,  
Wyth-oute spores other spere · spakliche he loked, 12

TITLE. Passus decimus octauus  
CO; to which W adds—&c. et iijus  
de dobet, and B (wrongly) adds—et  
quartus de dobet; R has—Passus  
xvijus de visione, vt supra.

2. *As a*] And as a CB; And as O.  
*renke*] frek B. *wo*] Com. *reccheth*]  
rouhte WB.

4. *wylned*] wilnes C. *eft to*] eft  
R.

5. *slepte*] slepe B.

6. *þe*] þer B. *þat of-rauȝte*] þat  
of taughte C; ofte tauȝte O; þer-of  
tauȝte B. This line is perhaps mis-  
placed, and should follow l. 8.

7. [*Reste*] so in WCOY; I *reste*  
B; Rested LR; (but *reste* is the A.S.  
form).

8. *ȝ*] O om.

9. *osanna*] *Osanna* (printed ho-  
sanna) W. *orgonye*] *Organye* WC;  
orgene R; organ B. *folke*] *folkes* CB.

10. *þe* (2)] CB om.

11. *on*] and oon C; & on OB.  
*cam*] so in WR; gan COBY. *prykȝe*]  
*prikye* WO; *prekie* B; *pryke* LC;  
*prikyng* R.

12. *other*] or O. *spakliche*] *sprac-*  
*liche* R; *sharpliche* B.

As is þe kynde of a knyȝte · þat cometh to be dubbed,  
To geten hem gylte spores · or galoches ycouped.

¶ þanne was faith in a fenestre · and cryde "*a! fili*  
*dauid!*" Faith cries out,  
proclaiming the  
"Son of David."

As doth an Heraude of armes · whan [auntrous] cometh  
to iustes. 16

Olde iuwes of ierusalem · for ioye þei songen,

*Benedictus qui venit in nomine domini.* Mat. xxi. 9.

¶ þanne I frayned at faith · what al þat fare be-ment[e],  
And who sholde iouste in Iherusalem · "*Ihesus,*" he Faith says that  
Jesus is coming  
to joust,  
seyde,

"And fecche þat þe fende claymeth · Piers fruit þe  
plowman." 20

"Is Piers in þis place?" *quod* I · & he preynte  
on me,

"þis ihesus of his gentrice · wole iuste in piers armes, and will wear  
Piers' coat-  
armour.  
In his helme & in his haberiouu · *humana natura.*

þat cryst be nouȝt biknowe here · for *consu[m]matus*  
*deus,* 24

In Piers þaltok þe plowman · þis priker shal ryde ;  
For no dynte shal hym dere · as *in deitate patris.*"

"Who shal iuste with ihesus?" *quod* I · "iuwes or  
scribes?"

¶ "Nay," *quod* he, "þe foule fende · and fals dome &  
deth. 28 He will joust  
against the foul  
fiend, and against  
false doom and  
death.

Deth seith he shal fordo · and adown brynge

Al þat lyueth or loketh · in londe or in watere.

13. B omits. *be*] C om.

14. *geten*] *geute* B. *or*] and COB.

15. *cryde*] *erie* C. *a* (2)] B om.

16. [auntrous RO] aunterous C;  
Auntrous W; aduenturus B; aun-  
turos L.

18. þanne] That C. *be-mente*] *so in*  
RO; bymente WCB; bement L.

19. *sholde*] R om.

20. *fecche*] *feccheth* R; *fecche* out  
B.

21. þis] þat B. *I*] C om. *preynte*] *and*  
twynclid B; *prent* R.

22. þis] þus B. *gentrice*] *gentries*  
WC; *gentrie* RB.

23. *in his*] *hise* C; *his* B; O om.

24. *biknowe*] *yknowe* C; *yknowen*  
O; *knowe* B. *consummatus*] *so in*  
WROBY; *consumatus* LC. *Cf.* l. 57.  
*deus*] *est* COB. B *places* l. 24 *after*  
l. 25.

25. *priker*] *prikere* W.

28. *he*] *faith* R. *þe*] *but þe* R.  
*foule*] R om. & *deth*] *to deye* R.

30. *or* (1)] *and* WR. *or* (2)] *and*  
W.

- Life threatens to defeat Death, Lyf seyth þat he likth · and leyth his lif to wedde,  
 þat for al þat deth can do · with-in þre dayes, 32  
 To walke and fecche fro þe fende · piers fruite þe  
 plowman,  
 And legge it þere hym lyketh · and lucifer bynde,  
 for ever. And forbete and adown brynge · bale [&] deth for  
 euere :
- Hosea xiii. 14. *O mors, ero mors tua!*
- Pilate comes with much people (Mat. xxvii. 19.) ¶ þanne cam *pilatus* with moche peple · *sedens pro*  
*tribunali*, 36  
 To se how doughtilich deth sholde do · & deme her  
 botheres riȝte.  
 þe iuwes and þe iustice · aȝeine ihesu þei were,  
 And al her courte on hym cryde · *crucifige* sharpe.
- [Fol. 77.] Tho put hym forth a piloure · bifor pilat, & seyde, 40  
 One bears false witness against Jesus. “This ihesus of owre iewes temple · iaped & dispised,  
 To fordone it on o day · and in thre dayes after  
 Edefye it eft newe · (here he stant þat seyde it)  
 And ȝit maken it as moche · in al manere poyntes, 44  
 Bothe as longe and as large · bi loft & by grounde.”  
 ¶ “*Cru[ci]fige*,” quod a cacchepolle · “I warante hym  
 a wicche !”
- John xix. 15. “*Tolle, tolle!*” quod an other · and toke o[f] kene  
 þornes,  
 The crown of thorns. And bigan of kene thorne · a *gerelande* to make, 48
31. *he*] C *om.* *likth*] so in R; L really has likthe (but the e is not wanted); lieþ WCO; liȝeþ B.  
 34. *legge*] lede B.  
 35. *forbete*] forbite R; for to bete COB. *adown*] down R. [ȝ OY] of B; LWCR *om.*; but it seems necessary. *ero—tua*] mors tua ero R.  
 36. *moche*] COB *om.*  
 37. *her botheres*] here beither R; hir brotheres (!) CB. *riȝte*] myȝt O.  
 38. *þe*] B *om.* *iustice*] iustices COB.  
 39. *her*] here R; þe WCOB. *hym*] ihesu R.  
 40. *Tho*] to B.  
 41. *This*] þus B. *iewes*] R *om.* *temple*] peple CB. *iaped*] haþ iaped W. Here B adds the probably spurious line—and seide he wolde felle a-down þe temple · þat is so strong.  
 42. *To*] and B. *on o*] in a R; in o B.  
 43. *seyde it*] it seide B.  
 44. *ȝit*] ȝut to B.  
 45. *bi*] a R; on B.  
 46. *Crucifige*] miswritten *Crufige* L.  
 47. *of*] so in WCROB; o L; see next line.

And sette it sore on his hed · and seyde in envye,  
 “*Aue, rabby!*” quod þat Ribaude · and þrew redes at  
 hym,

Nailed hym with þre nailles · naked on þe Rode,  
 And poysoun on a pole · þei put vp to his lippes, 52  
 And bede hym drynke his deth-yuel · his dayes were  
 ydone.

Jesus is  
 crucified with  
 three nails,

“And ȝif þat þow sotil be · help now þi-seluen,  
 If þow be cryst, & kynges sone · come downe of þe  
 Rode ;

and bidden to  
 come down f om  
 the cross.

þanne shul we leue þat lyf þe loueth · and wil nouȝt  
 lete þe deye!” 56

¶ “*Consummatum est,*” quod cryst · & comsed forto  
 swowe,

“IT IS  
 FINISHED.”  
 John xix. 30.

Pitousliche and pale · as a prisoun þat deyeth ;  
 þe lorde of lyf & of liȝte · þo leyed his eyen togideres.  
 þe daye for drede with-drowe · and derke bicam þe  
 sonne, 60

The light of day  
 withdraws.

þe wal waggged and clef · and al þe worlde quaued.  
 Ded men for that dyne · come out of depe graues,  
 And tolde whi þat tempest · so longe tyme dured.

Dead bodies rise.

“For a bitter bataille” · þe ded bodye sayde ; 64  
 “Lyf and deth in þis derknesse · her one fordoth her  
 other ;

One of them tells  
 of the battle  
 be'tween life and  
 Death.

Shal no wiȝte wite witterly · who shal hau · þe  
 maystrye,  
 Er sondey aboute sonne rysynge” · & sank with þat til  
 erthe. 67

50. *þat Ribaude*] þe ribaudes R.  
 51. *Nailed*] þei nailid B. *þre*] thre (*with foure written in margin*) R. *ou*] vp-on R.

52. *ou*] vpon B. *vp*] R *om.*  
 53. *deth-yuel*] euyl deef B. *ydone*] doon C; done OB.

54. *þat*] CB *om.*  
 56. *shul*] shulde B.  
 57. *swowe*] *so in* OB; swowen C; swoune W; swowne R.

58. *Pitousliche*] Ful pitousliche B.  
 59. *The lorde*] Til lore R.  
 60. *bicam*] bigan O.  
 61. *wal*] wallis of þe temple B. *worlde*] word C. *quaued*] quakid B.  
 62. *dyne*] dene WR; deef B. *depe*] here R.  
 64. *bodye*] bodies B.  
 66. *wite*] wit C; witte R.  
 67. *sonne*] þe sunne OB. *til*] in-to B.

- Mat. xxvii. 54. Some seyde þat he was goddes sone · þat so faire deyde,  
*Vere filius dei erat iste, &c.*
- And somme saide he was a wicche · “good is þat we  
 assaye,  
 Where he be ded or nouȝte ded · down er he be taken.”
- The two thieves. ¶ Two thenes also · tholed deth þat tyme, 71  
 Vppon a crosse bisydes cryst · so was þe comune lawe.  
 A cacchepole cam forth · and craked bothe her legges,  
 And her armes after · of eyther of þo thenés.
- No one breaks the legs of Christ. Ac was no boy so bolde · goddes body to touche ;  
 For he was knyȝte & kynges sone · kynde forȝaf þat  
 tyme, 76  
 þat non harlot were so hardy · to leyne hande vppon  
 hym.
- But a blind knight, named Longeus, ¶ Ac þere cam forth a knyȝte · with a kene spere  
 ygrounde,  
 Hiȝte *longeus*, as þe *lettre* telleth · and longe had lore  
 his siȝte.
- Bifor pilat & other peple · in þe place he houed ; 80  
 Maugre his many tethe · he was made þat tyme
- jousts against Jesus, [Fol. 77 b.] To take þe spere in his honde · & iusten with ihesus ;  
 For alle þei were vnharly · þat houed on hors or stode,  
 To touche hym or to taste hym · or take hym down of  
 Rode. 84
- and pierces His heart. But þis blynde bacheler þanne · bar hym þerugh þe  
 herte ;
- The blood heals his blindness. þe blode spronge down by þe spere · & vnspereð þe  
 kniȝtes eyen.

69. *þat we*] R om.  
 70. *he* (1)] B om. *ded* (2)] B om.  
*down*] a-down B.  
 71. *deth*] dede R.  
 72. *a*] B om. *bisydes*] beside C.  
 73. *A*] Ac a R.  
 74. *her*] þe W. *of eyther*] B om.  
 þo] the C ; þo two B.  
 75. *was*] þer was B. *body*] body W.  
 76. *tyme*] throwe R.  
 77. *hande*] an hand R.
79. *Hiȝte*] þat hiȝte B.  
 81. *Maugre*] and magre B. *his*  
*many*] he (!) B.  
 83. *or*] & COB. *stode*] stede R.  
 84. *hym* (1)] R om. *or to*] or COB.  
*hym* (3)] W om. *of*] of þe B ;  
 on (!) C.  
 85. *þanne*] þat R ; WO om.  
 86. *þe* (1)] þat B. *spronge*] ran  
 B. *vnspereð*] opned R. *þe kniȝtes*]  
 hise CO ; his B.

þanne fel þe knyȝte vpon knees · and cryed hym  
mercy—

“Aȝeyne my wille it was, lorde · to wewnde ȝow so sore !” 88 Longeus cries  
mercy of Christ.

He seighed & sayde · “sore it me athynketh ;  
For þe dede þat I haue done · I do me in ȝowre grace ;  
Haue on me reuth, riȝtful ihesu !” · & riȝt with þat he  
wept.

¶ Thanne gan faith felly · þe fals iuwes dispise, 92 Then Faith  
reproves the Jews  
of cowardice,  
Called hem caytyues · acursed for euere,  
For þis foule vyleynye · “veniaunce to ȝow alle,  
To do þe blynde bete hym ybounde · it was a boyes  
conseille.

Cursed caytyue ! · kniȝthod was it neuere 96  
To mysdo a ded body · by day or by nyȝte.

þe gree ȝit hath he geten · for al his grete wounde.

¶ For ȝowre champioun chiualer · chief knyȝt of ȝow alle, 100 saying that their  
chief champion  
had yielded  
himself recreant.

ȝelt hym recreaunt rennyng · riȝt at ihesus wille. 100

For be þis derkenesse ydo · his deth worth avenged,  
And ȝe, lordeynes, han ylost · for lyf shal haue þe  
maistrye,

And ȝowre Fraunchise, þat fre was · fallen is in thral-  
dome,

And ȝe, cherles, & ȝowre children · chieue shal ȝe neuere, 105 “Ye shall never  
thrive except  
by usury.”  
Ne haue lordship in londe · ne no londe tylye,

But al bareyne be · & vsurye vsen,

87. *vpon*] *vppon* his B. *hym*] *ihesu* R. 100. *ȝelt*] *so in* RB ; *ȝelte* O ; *Yelde* C ; *ȝilt* W.

89. *He*] And he B ; How he C. 101. *þis*] C *om.* *his*] R *om.*  
*sore*] ful sore B. *avenged*] I-venkesched R.

93. *Called*] and kallid B. *for*] 102. *ȝe*] CB *om.* *lordeynes*] lur-  
hem for R. *daynes* W ; *lurdeynes* O.

94. *alle*] *falle* W.

95. *ybounde*] *bounden* O.

96. *caytyue*] *caytif* WC ; *caytyues* W *om.*

R ; *kaitifs* B ; *caytyues eastyng* O. 105. *Ne*] To W. *londe*] *honde* CO.

98. *þe*] *þre* (!) B. *gree—hath*] *no*] none R.

*grythe ye hase* (!) C.

Which is lyf þat owre lorde · in alle lawes acurseth.  
 Now þowre good dayes ar done · as Danyel prophecyed,  
 Whan cryst cam, [of] her kyngdom · þe crowne shulde  
 [cesse]; 109

Cf. Dan. ix. 24.

*Cum veniat sanctus sanctorum, cessabit vnicio  
 vestra."*

¶ What for fere of þis ferly · & of þe fals iuwes,  
 I drowe me in þat derkenesse · to *decendit ad inferna*.  
 And þere I sawe sothely · *secundum scripturas*, 112

From the West  
east approaches  
Mercy.

Out of þe west coste · a wenche, as me thouzte,  
 Cam walkyng in þe wey · to-helle-ward she loked.  
 Mercy hiȝt þat mayde · a meke þynge with-alle,  
 A ful benygne buirde · and boxome of speche. 116

From the East  
comes Truth.

¶ Her suster, as it semed · cam softly walkyng,  
 Euene out of þe est · and westward she loked.  
 A ful comely creature · treuth she hiȝte,  
 For þe vertue þat hir folwed · aferd was she neuere. 120

They wonder at  
the marvellous  
events.

¶ Whan þis maydenes mette · mercy and treuth,  
 Eyther axed other · of þis grete wonder,  
 Of þe dyne & of þe derkenesse · and how þe daye  
 rowed,

[Fol. 78.]

And which a liȝte and a leme · lay befor helle. 124  
 "Ich haue ferly of þis fare · in feith," seyde treuth,  
 "And am wending to wyte · what þis wonder meneth."  
 ¶ "Haue no merueille," *quod* mercy · "myrthe it  
 bytokneth.

"Mary the  
maiden,"

A mayden þat hatte marye · and moder with-out felyng

107. *lyf*] þe lif B. *acurseth*] a- þat R.  
 cursid B. 116. *buirde*] burde WR; birde C;  
 108. *ar*] arn W; aren C; be R; beerde O; berd B.  
 been O. 117. *softly*] softeli OB; softly C;  
 109. [*of* W] LRCOBY *om.*; *but* soffly R; soofly W.  
*the line is marked for correction in*  
*L. her*] þe R. þe] and COBY. [*cesse*  
 WCY] cece O; sesse B; lese R; L  
 119. *comely*] manli B; many (!) C.  
*has a blank space. cessabit—vestra*] 121. *Whan*] And whan R.  
 R *om.* 123. *dyne*] dene ROB. *of* (2)] CB  
 110. þe] þo R. *om.*  
 114. *walkyng*] wandryng B. þe] 126. *wonder*] wonde R.  
 highte W. 128. *hatte*] hat R; hattip B;

- Of any kynnes creature · conceyued þorw speche 129 said Mercy,  
 And grace of þe holygoste ; · wex grete with childe ;  
 With-uten wem · in-to þis worlde she brouzt hym ;  
 And þat my tale be trewe · I take god to wmesse. 132  
 Sith þis barn was bore · ben xxx<sup>ti</sup> wynter passed ; thirty years ago.  
 Which deyde & deth þoled · þis day aboute mydday.  
 And þat is cause of þis elips · þat closeth now þe His death causes  
 sonne, 135 this eclipse.
- In menyng þat man shal · fro merkenesse be drawe,  
 þe while þis lizte & þis leme · shal Lueyfer ablende.  
 For patriarkes & prophetes · han preched her-of  
 often,  
 þat man shal man saue · þorw a maydenes helpe,  
 And þat was tynt þorw tre · tree shal it wynde, 140 What was lost  
 And þat deth down brouzte · deth shal releue.” by a tree, a tree  
 shall win back.”
- ¶ “ þat þow tellest,” quod treuth · “ is but a tale of  
 waltrot ;  
 For Adam & Eue · & abraham with other  
 Patriarkes & prophetes · þat in peyne liggen, 144  
 Leue þow neuere þat þone lizte · hem alofte brynge,  
 Ne haue hem out of helle · holde þi tonge, mercy ! Truth refuses  
 It is but a trufle þat þow tellest · I, treuth, wote þe to believe what  
 sothe. Mercy says.
- For þat is ones in helle · out cometh it neuere ; 148  
 Iob þe prophete, patriarke · reproueth þi sawes,  
*Quia in inferno nulla est redemptio.* Cf. Job vii. 9.
- ¶ þanne mercy ful myldly · mouthed þise wordes,
129. any kynnes] any kende R ;  
 manns skynnes B.  
 130. And] þurgh B. wex] she  
 wex B.  
 131. wem] hemme B. hym] hym  
 forþ O.  
 133. Sith] Sit C. bore] so in R ;  
 ybore W ; born COB. xxx<sup>ti</sup>] thretty  
 C ; þrytti B.  
 134. deth] COB om.  
 136. be] is B.  
 137. þis (1)] þe B.  
 138. her-of] her-on O ; here B.
141. dou] adown W.  
 142. treuth] C om. is] it is CB.  
 tale of] C repeats these words, and  
 omits waltrot.  
 145. hem alofte] a-loft schal CB ;  
 a-lofte schal hem O.  
 146. hem] hym B. holde] helde L  
 (by a mere slip).  
 147. a] R om. trufle] tryfule C ;  
 tryfule B. I] R om.  
 148. þat] he þat W. it] he W.  
 149. patriarke] and patriark B.  
 þi] þise B.

"Venom," said  
Mercy, "destroys  
venom.

"Thorwexperience," quod she · "I hope þei shal be sauēd.  
For venym for-doth venym · & þat I proue by resoun.  
For of alle venymes · foulest is þe scorioun, 153

A dead scorpion  
heals the  
scorpion's sting.

May no medecyne helpe · þe place þere he styngeth,  
Tyl he be ded & do þer-to · þe yuel he destroyeth,  
þe fyrst venymouste · þorw venym of hym-self. 156  
So shal þis deth for-do · I dar my lyf legge,

This death shall  
destroy death."

Al þat deth [for]dyd furste · þorw þe deuelles en-  
tysynge ;

And riȝt as þorw gyle · man was bigyled,  
So shal grace þat bigan · make a good sleighte ; 160  
*Ars et artem fulleret."*

"See," said  
Truth, "here  
comes  
Righteousness  
from the North."

¶ "Now suffire we," seyde treuth · "I se, as me  
þinketh,

Out of þe nippe of þe north · nouȝt ful fer hennes,  
Riȝtwisnesse come rennyng · reste we þe while ;  
For he wote more þan we · he was er we bothe." 164

¶ "That is soth," seyde mercy · "And I se here bi  
southe,

[Fol. 78 b.]  
"And Peace from  
the South," said  
Mercy.

Where pees cometh playinge · in pacience yclothed ;  
Loue hath coueyted hir longe · leue I none other  
But he sent hir some *lettre* · what þis lizte bymeneth,  
þat ouer-houeth helle þus ; · she vs shal telle." 169

¶ Whan pees, in pacience yclothed · approached nere  
hem tweyne,

Righteousness  
greete Peace.

Riȝtwisnesse hir reuerenced · for her riche clothyng,  
And preyed pees to telle hir · to what place she wolde,

151. *she*] he R. *þei shal*] þow  
schalt R.

152. *I proue*] *so in* CR; *preue* I  
WO; *proue* B.

153. *venymes*] *venym* CB.

154. *he*] it O.

156. *venymouste*] *venym* is moost (!)  
O. *venym*] *vertue* R.

157. *for-do*] do R. *my*] y B.

158. *fordyd*] *fordide* W; LCROB  
*omit the prefix for-, which is wanted* ;  
*cf.* l. 343.

160. *sleighte*] *sighte* CB; *seep*  
(*altered to sighte*) O.

163. *come*] *cam* CO. *we þe*] *whe*  
a B.

166. *pees cometh*] *cometh* pes R.

167. *leue*] *leege* B.

169. *she*] he R.

170. *yclothed*] *clothed* RO; is y-  
cloþid B. *nere*] *neiȝ* CB; *nyȝ* O.  
*hem*] *hym* B.

171. *hir*] *hem* COB. *for*] by W.

172. *she*] he R.

And in her gay garnementz · whom she grete þouzte.

¶ “My wille is to wende,” quod she · “and welcome  
hem alle, 174

þat many day myzte I nouzte se · for merkenesse of  
synne, Peace says she  
is come to  
welcome all  
the redeemed  
souls.

Adam & Eue · & other moo in helle.

Moyses & many mo · mercy shal haue,

And I shal daunce þer-to · do þow so, sustre! 178

For ihesus iusted wel · ioye bygynneth dawe ;

*Ad vesperum demorabitur fletus, & ad matu- Ps. xxix. 6  
tinum leticia.* (Vulg.).

Loue, þat is my lemman · suche lettres me sente, “Mercy and  
Peace shall save  
mankind.”

That mercy, my sustre, & I · mankynde shulde saue,

And þat god hath forgyuen · & graunted me pees &  
mercy, 182

To be mannes meynþenoure · for euere-more after.

Lo ! here þe patent !” quod pees · “*in pace in idipsum—* Ps. iv. 9 (Vulg.).

And þat þis dede shal dure— *dormiam & requiescam.*”

¶ “What, rauestow ?” quod rihtwisnesse · “or þow art  
riht dronke ! 186 Righteousness  
rebukes her.

Leuestow þat zonde lizte · vnlouke myzte helle,

And saue mannes soule ? · sustre, wene it neure !

At þe bygynnyng, god · gaf þe dome hym-selue,

þat Adam & Eue · and alle þat hem suwed, 190 “Adam was to  
die if he ate of  
the fruit.”

Shulde deye doune rihte · and dwelle in pyne after,

If þat þei touched a tre · and þe fruite eten.

Adam afterward · azeimes his defence,

Frette of þat fruit · & forsoke, as it were, 194

173. *garnementz*] garmentz R. *she*] he R.

174. *is*] his C. *she*] he R.

175. *myzte*] nyzte B.

178. R *omits.* *And*] COB *om.*  
*so*] also B.

179. *dawe*] to dawe OB. *leticia*] *W.*  
B *om.*

180. *me*] he me R.

181. *my sustre*] R *om.*

185. *dure*] endure B.

186. *rauestow*] rauest þou OB.

187. *Leuestow*] Leuest þou O.

*zonde*] zonder OB.

188. *it*] þow it R.

189. *At—god*] For god þe bigyn-  
nere W.

190. *suwed*] sulked (!) C.

191. *Shulde*] Shul C.

193. *Adam*] And Adam B.

- þe lone of owre lorde · and his lore bothe, 195  
 And folwed þat þe fende tauzte · & his felawes wille,  
 Azeines resoun, I, rihtwisnesse · recorde þus with treuth,  
 þat her peyne be perpetual · & no preyere hem helpe.  
 For-þi late hem chewe as þei chose · & chyde we  
 nouzt, sustres,  
 For it is botelees bale · þe bite þat þei eten.” 200  
 ¶ “And [I] shal preue,” quod pees · “her peyne mote  
 haue ende,  
 And wo in-to wel · mowe wende atte laste ;  
 For had þei wist of no wo · wel had þei nouzte knowen.  
 For no wihte wote what wel is · þat neuere wo suffred,  
 Ne what is hote hunger · þat had neuere defaute. 205  
 If no nyzte ne were · no man, as I leue,  
 Shulde wite witterly · what day is to mene ;  
 Shulde neuere rihte riche man · þat lyueth in reste  
 & ese 208
- [Fol. 79.] Wyte what wo is · ne were þe deth of kynde.  
 So god þat bygan al · of his good wille  
 Bycam man of a mayde · mankynde to saue, 211  
 And suffred to be solde · to see þe sorwe of deyinge,  
 The which vnknitteth al kare · & comsynge is of reste.  
 For til *modicum* mete with vs · I may it wel avowe,  
 Wote no wihte, as I wene · what is ynough to mene.  
 ¶ For-þi god of his goodnesse · þe fyrste gome Adam,  
 Sette hym in solace · & in souereigne myrthe ; 217  
 And sith he suffred hym synne · sorwe to fele,
197. R omits. I] and WCOB. 207. wite] neuere wite W.  
*rihtwisnesse*] riht-fulnesse B. 209. is] is ne wel CB.  
 199. *sustres*] syster CO; fuster B. 211. *Bycam*] And bicam B.  
 201. [I WCOB] LR om.; but the 212. to (2)] and R.  
*line is marked for correction in L.* 214. *mete*] mette ROB; met C.  
*preue*] preie R. *ende*] an ende CB. *es*] hym O.  
 202. *wo*] from wo W. *more*] 215. *is ynough*] ynogh is W; is  
 schal B. nouzte R.  
 203. *had*] R om. þei (2)] þei 216. *of his*] his of B.  
 (printed the) W. 217. *myrthe*] ioye R.  
 205. *hote*] hoot WO; hot B. 218. *sith*] syne C. *synne*] synge  
 206. *as*] is as C. *leue*] wene B. R.
- His pain shall  
 be perpetual.”
- Peace proves  
 that there shall  
 be an end of the  
 pain.
- “For God became  
 man, to know  
 the sorrow of  
 death.
- God suffered  
 Adam to know  
 sorrow,

- To wite what wel was · kyndelich to knowe it.  
 And after god aunted hym-self · and toke Adames and afterwards  
took Adam's  
nature.  
 kynde, 220
- To wyte what he hath suffred · in þre sondri places,  
 Bothe in heuene, & in erthe · & now til helle he  
 þynketh,
- To wite what al wo is · þat wote of al ioye.
- ¶ So it shal fare bi þis folke ; · her foly & her synne Man's sin and  
folly shall teach  
him what bliss  
is."  
 Shall lere hem what langour is · & lisse with-uten ende.  
 Wote no wighte what werre is · þere þat pees regneth,  
 Ne what is witterly wel · til weyllowey hym teche."
- ¶ Thanne was þere a wiȝte · with two brode eyen, 228 Then appeared  
one named Book,  
 Boke hiȝte þat beupere · a bolde man of speche.  
 "By godes body," quod þis boke · "I wil bere witnessse,  
 þat þo þis barne was ybore · þere blased a sterre,  
 That alle þe wyse of þis worlde · in o witte acordeden,  
 That such a barne was borne · in bethleem Citee, 233  
 þat mannes soule sholde saue · & synne destroye.  
 And alle þe elementz," quod þe boke · "her-of bereth  
 witnessse.  
 þat he was god þat al wrouȝte · þe walkene firste The air showed  
God's power,  
when the comet  
shone at His  
birth.  
 shewed ; 236  
 þo þat weren in heuene · token *stella comata*,  
 And tendeden hir as a torche · to reuerence his birthe ;  
 þe lyȝte folwed þe lorle · in-to þe lowe erthe.  
 [þe] water witnessed þat he was god · for he went The water bare  
witness, when He  
walked upon it.  
 on it ; 240

219. *was*] is R. *to*] and W. *it*] *den*] acorden WCB.  
 CB *om.* 233. *borne*] y-bore W ; y-born R.  
 220. *aunted*] grauntid COB. *Citee*] þe Citee W ; þe cite R.  
 221. *hath*] hase C. *þre*] the C ; B 235. C *omits.*  
*om.* 236. *walkene*] *so in O* ; walkne R ;  
 223. *þat—of*] and what is W. wolkne W ; welkne C ; welkene B.  
*note*] woot CO ; wot B. 237. *comata*] cometa W.  
 225. *lisse*] blisse R. 238. *tendeden*] tenteden CB. *hir*]  
 229. *beupere*] bewpere R ; bewpeer it W. *as*] O *om.*  
 O ; beaupere W ; beaupere CB. 240. [*þe WRO*] þat LCB. *wit-*  
 231. *ybore*] born O. *nessed*] witness.þ ORB ; witnessse C.  
 232. *wyse of*] men in R. *acorde-*

- Peter þe apostel · parceyued his gate,  
 And as he went on þe water · wel hym knewe, & seyde,  
 Mat. xiv. 28. *Tube me venire ad te super aquas.*  
 And lo! how þe sonne gan louke · her liȝte in her-self,  
 And now the sun's light fails, *i. mare*  
 Whan she seye hym suffre · þat sonne & se made. 244  
 The erthe for heuynesse · that he wolde suffre,  
 The earth quakes. Quaked as quykke þinge · and al biquasht[e] þe roche.  
 Lo! helle miȝte nouȝte holde · but opened þo god  
 poled,  
 And lete oute symondes sones · to seen hym hange on  
 Rode. 248  
 And now shal lucifer leue it · thowgh hym loth þinke;  
 For *gygas* þe geaunt · with a gynne engnyed  
 To breke & to bete doune · þat ben azeines ihesus.  
 Jesus shall rise again!"  
 [Fol. 79b.] "And I, boke, wil be brent · but ihesus rise to lyue,  
 In alle myȝtes of man · & his moder gladye, 253  
 And conforte al his kynne · & out of care brynge,  
 And al þe iuwen ioye · vnoignen & vnlouken;  
 And but þei reuerencen his Rode · & his resurexioun,  
 And bileue on a newe lawe · be lost lyf & soule." 257  
 A spirit speaks to hell. ¶ "Suffre we," seide treuth · "I here & se bothe,  
 How a spirit speketh to helle · & bit vnspere þe ȝatis,  
 Ps. xxiii. 9 (Vulg.) *Attollite portas, &c.*"  
 A voice loude in þat liȝte · to lucifer cryeth, 260  
 "Prynces of þis place · vnpynmeth & vnlouketh!  
 For here cometh with crowne · þat kyng is of glorie."  
 Thanne sykeþ sathan · & seyde to hem alle,

242. *as*] C om. þe] þat R. *hym*] he hym B.  
 244. *se*] mone R.  
 245. *heuynesse*] buxomnesse CB.  
 246. *biquashte*] biquaschte O; biquasehe R; biquasshed WC; to-  
 relief B.  
 248. *sones*] sone W.  
 249. *leue*] R om. (!)  
 250, 251. R omits. *gynne*] gyn  
 haþ W. *doune*] a-doun WCOB.  
 253. *af*] of a R.

256. *reuerencen*] reuersen W.  
 257. *bileue*] leuen CB; leue O.  
*After this line COBY have the (pro-  
 bably spurious) line—Al this I book  
 wittenne · and yet mucche more;  
 where, for Al, OY have And.*  
 259. *How*] R om. *bit*] so in OB;  
 bitt R; biddeþ W; biddes C.  
 260. *cryeth*] cried CO.  
 261. *vnpynmeth*] oppeneþ O.  
 263. *syked*] siȝede R; siȝhede O.  
*hem alle*] helle R.

“ Suche a lyzte, azeines owre leue · Lazar it fette ; 264  
Care & combraunce · is comen to vs alle.

Satan advises  
the fiends to  
keep the gates  
barred.

If pis kyng come in · mankynde wil he fecche,  
And lede it þer hym lyketh · & lyztlych me bynde.

Patriarkes & prophetes · han parled her-of longe, 268  
þat such a lorle & a lyzte · shulde lede hem alle  
hennes.”

¶ “ Lysteneth,” quod Lucifer · “ for I pis lorde knowe,  
Bothe pis lorde & þis lizte ; · is longe ago I knewe  
hym.

Lucifer says that  
none can prevail  
against Jesus.

May no deth hym dere · ne no deueles queyntise, 272  
And where he wil, is his waye · ac war hym of þe  
periles ;

If he reue me my rizte · he robbeth me by maistrye.

“ We must  
appeal to His  
justice.

For by rizt & bi resoun · þo renkes þat ben here,  
Bodye & soule ben myne · bothe gode & ille. 276

For hym-self seyde · þat sire is of heuene,

ʒif Adam ete þe apple · alle shulde deye,  
And dwelle with vs deueles · þis þretynge he made ;

He said that  
Adam should  
die.”

And he þat sothenesse is · seyde þise wordes ; 280

And sitthen I seised · seuene hundreth wyntre,

I leue þat lawe nil nauzte · lete hym þe leest.”

¶ “ That is sothe,” seyde Sathan · “ but I me sore  
drede,

“ True,” said  
Satan, “ but thou  
didst win by  
guile.

For þow gete hem with gyle · & his gardyne breke, 284

264. *leue*] loue B. *it*] so in RCO  
Y ; is B ; out W.

265. *combraunce*] encombraunce W.

267. *lede*] do O. *it*] hem R.  
*hym lyketh*] lazar is R.

268. *louge*] loude B.

269. *a* (2)] W om. *shulde*] schal  
R ; shol C.

270. *Lysteneth*] listneþ now B.

271. *is*] it is B.

272. *hym*] þis lorde R.

273. *wil*—*his*] wolde his is B.  
*his*] R om. *ac*] and C.

274. *reue*] so in ROB ; reueþ W ;  
reuees C. *me* (1)] C om. *my*] of

my R. *he robbeth*] & robbe R.

275. *bi*] CB om. *þo*] þoo O ; þe  
WCRB. *renkes*] freikis B. *ben*  
*here*] ich haue O.

276. *ben*] been O ; beþ W.

277. COB om.

278. *ʒif*] þat ʒif R ; If WC. *þe*  
*apple*] R om.

280. *he*] R om.

281. *sitthen*] I sitthen R. *I seised*]  
so in W ; I sessed R ; he seised CB ;  
is ysesid O ; is yCeisd Y. *seuene*] þise  
seue R ; many OY.

282. *nil*] wole O ; wil B.

284. *gete*] gatist B. *hem*] hym C.

- And in semblaunce of a serpent · sat on þe appeltre,  
 And eggedest hem to ete · Eue by hir-selue,  
 And toldest hir a tale · of tresoun were þe wordes ;  
 And so þow haddest hem oute · & hider atte laste. 288  
 It is nouȝte graythely geten · þere gyle is þe Rote.”
- Goblin says their title is invalid. “For god wil nouȝt be bigiled” · quod Gobelyn, “ne  
 · bi-iaped ;  
 We haue no trewe title to hem · for þorwgh tresoun  
 were þei dampned.”
- Satan says “Certes, I drede me,” quod þe deuel · “leste treuth wil  
 hem fecche. 292  
 ¶ Þis þretty wynter, as I wene · hath he gone &  
 preched ;  
 I haue assailed hym with synne · & some tyme yasked  
 Where he were god or goddes sone ? · he gaf me shorte  
 answeere.  
 And þus hath he trolled forth · þis two & thretty  
 wynter, 296  
 And whan I scighe it was so · slepyng, I went,  
 To warne pilates wyf · what dones man was ihesus ;  
 For iuwes hateden hym · and han done hym to deth.  
 I wolde haue lengthed his lyf · for I leued, ȝif he  
 deuede, 300  
 That his soule wolde suffre · no synne in his syȝte.  
 For þe body, whil it on bones ȝede · aboute was euere,  
 To saue men fram synne · ȝif hem-self wolde.
- Thy words to Eve were false.”
- that he has tempted Jesus in vain, for 32 years.
- ["I warned Pilate's wife.  
 I would have lengthened His life.

285. *semblaunce*] semblaunt OB ;  
 liknees C. *serpent*] Nedder C. *sat*  
*ou]* sete vp-on W.

286. *eggedest*] eggest C. *ete*] ete  
 þer-of B.

288. *so*] al-so R. *hem*] hym B.

290. *Gobelyn*] goblyn O.

291. *title*] tilyle (l) R. *þorwgh*]  
 wiþ B.

292. *þe*] þis O. *After this line*  
 CBY *have the (probably spurious)*  
*line*—Oute of oure poustee · and leden  
 hem hennes.

293. *wene*] leue B. *hath—gone*]

he wente aboute R.

294. *assailed*] assoiled (!) C.  
*tyme*] R *om.*

295. *Where*] Wheiper W ; Were B.

296. *hath he*] he hath R. *trolled*]

tollid B. *two*] to R ; twa C.  
 297. *slepyng*] lepyng W ; sepyng  
 B.

298. *denes*] dones O ; done WR ;  
 doone Y ; doon C ; deue B.

300. *I* (1)] And I R. *lengthed*]  
 lenged C.

301. *suffre*] nauȝt suffre R.

- And now I se where a soule · cometh hiderward I see his soul  
 seylynge, sailing hither-  
 304 wards.
- With glorie & with gret liȝte · god it is, I wote wel.  
 I rede we flee," quod he · "faste alle hennes. Let us flee."
- For vs were better nouȝte be · þan biden his syȝte.  
 For þi lesynges, Lucifer · loste is al owre praye. 308
- Firste þorw þe we fellen · fro heuene so heighe ;  
 For we leued þi lesynges · [we loupen oute alle with þe ;  
 And now for thi last lesyng · ] ylore we haue Adam,  
 And al owre lordeship, I leue · a londe & a water ; 312
- Nunc princeps huius mundi eicietur foras.*" John xii. 31.
- ¶ Efte þe liȝte bad vnlouke · & Lucifer answered,  
 "What lorde artow?" quod lucifer · "quis est iste?" Ps. xxiii. 10  
 (Vulg.).
- "Rex glorie" · þe liȝte sone seide,  
 "And lorde of myȝte & of mayne · & al manere vertues ;  
*dominus virtutum ;* 316
- Dukes of pis dym place · anon vndo þis ȝates,  
 That cryst may come in · þe kynges sone of heuene." "Un-to these  
 gates."
- And with þat breth helle brake · with Beliales barres ; The gates of  
 For any wye or warde · wide opene þe ȝatis. 320 hell are broken.
- ¶ Patriarkes & prophetes · *populus in tenebris*, Mat. iv. 16.  
 Songen seynt Iohanes songe · *ecce agnus dei*. John i. 36.
- Lucyfer loke ne myȝte · so lyȝte hym ableynete. 323
- And þo þat owre [lorde] loued · in-to his liȝte he lauȝte,  
 And seyde to Sathan, "lo ! here · my soule to amendes Our Lord offers  
 For alle synneful soules · to saue þo þat ben worthy. soul for soul.

304. *seylynge*] sailyng RO.

305. *glorie*] Ioie C. *with* (2)] RO  
 om.

306. *we*] þat we W.

307. *biden*] to a-biden B.

309. *fellen*] fallen B.

310, 311. *leued*] louneden B. *þi*] on  
 þi W ; þise B. [*we—lesyng*] in R  
 only ; but cf. C-Text. *ylore*] y-lorn  
 W ; yloste C.

312. *a* (1)] on B. *a* (2)] on OB.  
*eicietur*] eicitur RB.

315, 316. *In one line in R, which  
 omits sone. And*] þe R ; And a B.

*of* (2)] O om. *mayne*] man WR  
 many B.

317. *Dukes*] Duk R.

318. *þe*] R om.

319. *brake*] braste R.

320. *opene*] *so in* B ; open CO ;  
 opned WR.

322. *Iohanes*] Iohan B.

323. *ableynete*] ablente WRO ; a-  
 blyndyde C ; a-blynde B.

324. [*lorde* RWCOBY] L om.  
*lauȝte*] tooke C.

325. *soule*] soulis B.

- Christ claims his  
own, say ing, Myne þei be & of me · I may þe bette hem clayme.  
Al-þough resoun recorde · & riȝt of my-self, 328  
That if þei ete þe apple · alle shulde deye,  
I bihyȝte hem nouȝt here · helle for euere.  
For þe dede þat þei dede · þi deceyte it made ;  
With gyle þow hem gete · agayne al resoun. 332
- “Thou, Satan,  
didst win man-  
kind by guile. For in my paleys, paradys · in persone of an addre,  
Falseliche þow fettest þere · þynge þat I loued.  
¶ Thus ylyke a luserde · with a lady visage,  
Theuelich þow me robbedest ; · þe olde lawe graunteth,  
þat gylours be bigiled · & þat is gode resoun ; 337
- Exod. xxi. 24. *Dentem pro dente, & oculum pro oculo.*  
I offer soul for  
soul, *Ergo,* soule shal soule quyte · & synne to synne wende,  
And al þat man hath mysdo · I, man, wyl amende.  
[Fol. 80 b.] Membre for membre · bi þe olde lawe was amendes,  
life for life, And lyf for lyf also · & by þat lawe I clayme it, 341  
Adam & al his issue · at my wille her-after.  
death for death. And þat deth in hem fordid · my deth shal releue,  
And bothe quykke & quyte · þat queynte was þorw  
synne ; 344  
And þat grace gyle destruye · good feith it asketh.  
So leue it nouȝte, lucifer · aȝeine þe lawe I fecche hem,  
But bi riȝt & by resoun · raunceoun here my lyges :
- Mat. v. 17. *Non ueni soluere legem, sed adimplere.*  
þow fettest myne in my place · aȝeines al resoun, 348

328. *Al-þough*] And þouȝ WB.  
329. *þei*] he W.  
331. *dede* (1)] dyede C. *dede* (2)]  
dide WCB; diden O.  
332. *gete*] gate C.  
333. *my*] O om. *paleys*] place OB.  
334. *fettest*] fecchest R. *þere*] WO om.  
336. *þe*] and þe W. *lawe*] lawe it B.  
337. *be*] þat ben B.  
338. *soule* (2)] B om. *to synne*] C om.  
339. *man wyl*] may wel O. *amende*] amende it R.  
340. *amendes*] amendid B.  
341. *þat*] þe O. *it*] R om.  
342. *al*] B om.  
343. *þat*] at R.  
344. *quykke*] quik R; quyke O; quyke C; quykye B; quykne W.  
345. *destruye*] distroyed CB.  
346. *it*] I WCOB. *nouȝte*] neuere R. *aȝeine*] þat aȝen B.  
347. *But*] And O. *by*] RCB om. *lyges*] lieges C; leges R; liegges B. *adimplere*] implere R.  
348. *fettest*] foched C. *myne*] hym B. *al*] R om.

Falseliche & felounelich ; · gode faith me it tauzte,  
To recoure hem thorw raunceoun · & bi no resoun elles,  
So þat with gyle þow gete · þorw grace it is ywone.

þow, Lucyfer, in lyknesse · of a luther addere, 352  
Getest by gyle · þo that god loued ;

Thou didst  
beguile man in  
likeness of an  
adder.

¶ And I, in lyknesse of a leode · þat lorde am of heuene,  
Graciousliche þi gyle haue quytte · go gyle azeine gyle !  
And as Adam & alle · þorw a tre deyden, 356

I requite thee,  
in likeness of a  
man.

Adam & alle þorwe a tree · shal torne azeine to lyue ;  
And gyle is bigyled · & in his gyle fallen :

Guile is beguiled.

*Et cecidit in foueam quam fecit.*

Ps. vii. 16  
(Vulg.).

Now bygynneth þi gyle · ageyne þe to tourne,  
And my grace to growe · ay gretter & wyder. 360

þe bitternesse þat þow hast browe · bronke it þi-seluen,  
þat art doctour of deth · drynke þat þow madest !

Drink that which  
thou hast brewed.

¶ For I, þat am lorde of lyf · loue is my drynke,  
And for þat drynke to-day · I deyde vpon erthe. 364

I fanzte so, me þrestes zet · for mannes soule sake ;  
May no drynke me moiste · ne my thruste slake,

I thirst still, but  
drink not yet.

Tyl þe vendage falle · in þe vale of iosephath,  
þat I drynke rihte ripe must · *resurreccio mortuorum*,

Joel iii. 12, 13.

And þanne shal I come as a kyng · crowned with  
angeles, 369

And han out of helle · alle mennes soules.

¶ Fendes and fendekynes · bifor me shulle stande,

349. *me it*] it me B.  
351. *with*] þoru; WCOB. *gete*] gate C. *it is*] is it C. *ywone*] wonne COB.

352. *þow*] þat B. *luther*] lither RCOB.

353. *Getest*] Gatest C; Gete R; Gat B. *þo*] þinge R.

354. *I*] CB om.

355. *quytte*] y-quyt B. *gyle* (2)] riht B.

356. *alle*] alle other CB.

357. *azeine*] R om.

359. *to*] C om.

360. *wyder*] widder WCO; grettere R.

361. *WO omit. hast*] CB om. *brouke*] now brouke R. *This line is found in Crowley.* Cf. Pass. xi, 117.  
365, 366. B *transposes these two lines.*

365. *þrestes*] þristeþ O; thyrste C; thurstes R; þursteþ WB.

366. *thruste*] þrist O; thyrst C; threst R; þurst WB.

367. *þe vendage*] vengeaunce B.

368. *must*] most R.

370. *han*] *so in* R; hane WCOB.

*mennes*] mannys O; manere CB.

371. *fendekynes*] fyndekynes WC; feendkyns O.

Fiends and  
fiendkins shall  
obey me.

And be at my biddynge · where so cure me lyketh. 372  
And to be merciabie to man · þanne my kynde it asketh,  
For we beth bretheren of blode · but nouzte in bap-  
tesme alle.

My brethren  
shall not be  
condemned.

Ac alle þat beth myne hole bretheren · in blode & in  
baptesme,  
Shal nouzte be dampned to þe deth · þat is with-outen  
ende ; 376

Ps. l. 6 (Vulg.).

*Tibi soli peccavi, &c.*

It is nouzt vsed in erthe · to hangen a feloun  
Ofter þan ones · þough he were a tretour.

A king can  
pardon a felon.

And ȝif þe Kyng of þat kyngedome · come in þat tyme,  
There þe feloun thole sholde · deth or otherwyse, 380  
Lawe wolde, he ȝeue hym lyf · if he loked on hym.

[Fol. 81.]  
I, the King of  
kings,

¶ And I, þat am kyng of kynges · shal come suche a  
tyme,

can pardon  
whom I will.

There dome to þe deth · dampneth al wikked ;  
And ȝif lawe wil I loke on hem · it lithe in my *grace*,  
Whether þei deye or deye nouzte · for þat þei deden  
ille. 385

Be it any þinge abouzte · þe boldenesse of her synnes,  
I may do mercy þorw riȝtwisnesse · & alle my wordes  
trewe.

No ill shall go  
unpunished,

And þough holiwrit wil þat I be wroke · of hem þat  
deden ille, 388

(Cf. Pass. iv. 143.)

*Nullum malum impunitum, &c.,*

Thei shul be clesned clereliche · & wasshen of her  
synnes

373. *And—be* Ac R. þanne—  
kynde] my kende þanne R. it] WO  
om.

377. *in*] on R.

380. þe] W om. thole sholde]  
sehulde þole O. or otherwyse] so in  
RCBY; ouþer oþer-wise O; or ouþer  
Iuwise W; other else in Crowley.

381. Lawe] þe lawe O. ȝeue]  
geue C; ȝaf R; ȝaue O. if] and R.

383. There] Where þe O; Where

B; Wher C. al] alle (printed alle  
the) W.

384. loke—hem] on hym loke O.

385. þei] O has he, the first time  
only.

386—388. CB omit.

386. it] O om. abouzte] O om. (!)

387. may] WOY om. trewe] been  
trewe O.

388. þat (1)] R om. Nullum] For  
nullun O.

In my prisoun purgatorie · til *parce* it hote,  
 And my mercy shal be shewed · to manye of my yet mercy shall  
be shewn.  
 bretheren. 391

For blode may suffre blode · bothe hungry & akale,  
 Ae blode may nouȝt se blode · blede, but hym rewe.”—  
*Audiui archana verba, que non licet homini* 2 Cor. xii. 4.  
*loqui.*—

“Ac my riȝtwisnesse & riȝt · shal reulen al helle,  
 And mercy al mankynde · bifor me in heuene. 395  
 For I were an vnkynde Kynge · but I my kynde holpe, I were unnatural  
not to help my  
own kin.  
 And namelich at such a nede · þer nedes helpe bi-  
 houeth;

*Non intres in iudicium cum seruo tuo, [domine.]* Ps. exlii. 2  
(Vulg.).  
I will release  
those that loved  
me.”  
 þus bi lave,” quod owre lorde · “lede I wil fro hennes  
 þo þat me loued · & leued in my comynge.  
 And for þi lesynge, lucifer · þat þow lowe til Eue, 400  
 Thow shalt abyte it bittre”— · & bonde hym with Christ binds  
Satan.  
 cheynes.

Astaroth and al þe route · hidden hem in hernes, Ashtaroth and  
others hide  
themselves.  
 They dorste nouȝte loke on owre lorde · þe boldest of  
 hem alle,  
 But leten hym lede forth what hym lyked · and lete  
 what hym liste. 404

¶ Many hundreth of angeles · harpeden & songen, The angels harp  
and sing.  
*Culpat caro, purgat caro; regnat deus dei caro.*

¶ Thanne piped pees · of poysye a note,  
 “*Clarior est solito post maxima nebula phebuis,*

392. *hungry*] *hungre* C; and *hungred* (*sic*) B. *akale*] *so in* R; a-calle WO; a-calde C; a-cold B.  
 393. *Ae*] And C. *se*] *se* his R. *hym*] it CB.  
 396. *kynde*] *kyn* R. *holpe*] *so in* R; *helpe* WCOB.  
 397. *namelich*] *mandlich* (!) C; *maliche* B. *sueh*] *silke* (!) C. *nedes*] *nede* B. [*domine*] *in* O *only*.  
 399. *me*] I R.  
 400. *love*] *so in* R; *leighe* WC;  
 ley; OB. *til*] to R.  
 401. *bittre*] *bitterli* O. *bonde*] *a-bond* B.  
 402. *Astaroth*] *Astarot* R; *Astroth* W; *Astoroth* C; *Astrot* B. *hem*] *thaym* C.  
 404. *what hym* (1)] *whom hym* W; *with hym who hym* C; *with hym alle þat hym* B. *what* (2)] *whom* W.  
 407. *solito*] *solitus* R. *nebula*] *so in the MSS.*

- Post inimicitias [clarior est et amor].* 408  
 The sun is brightest after sharp showers.  
 After sharpe shoures," quod pees · "moste shene is þe sonne ;  
 Is no weder warmer · þan after watery cloudes.
- Love is dearest after strife.  
 Ne no loue leuere · ne leuer frendes, 411  
 þan after werre & wo · whan loue & pees be maistres.  
 Was neuere werre in þis worlde · ne wykkednesse so kene,  
 þat ne loue, & hym luste · to laughynge ne brouzte,  
 And pees þorw pacience · alle perilles stopped."
- Truth and Peace embrace.  
 "Trewes," quod treuth · "þow tellest vs soth, bi ihesus !  
 Clippe we in couenaunt · & veh of vs cusse other." 417  
 "And lete no peple," quod pees · "perceyue þat we chydde,  
 For impossible is no þyng · to hym þat is almyzty."
- Righteousness and Peace kiss each other.  
 ¶ "Thow seist soth," seyde ryztwisesne · & reuerentlich hir kyste, 420  
 "Pees & pees here ! *per secula seculorum.*"
- Ps. lxxxiv. 11 (Vulg.).  
*Misericordia & veritas obuiauerunt sibi, iusticia & pax osculate sunt.*  
 Treuth tromped þo, & songe · *te deum laudamus ;*  
 And þanne luted loue · in a loude note,  
*Ecce quam bonum, & quam iocundum, &c.*
- [Fol. 81b.]  
 Ps. exxxii. 1 (Vulg.).  
 ¶ Tyl þe daye dawed · þis damaiseles dauned, 424  
 That men rongen to þe resurexioun · & riht with þat I waked,  
 And called kitte my wyf · and kalote my douzter —  
 "Ariseth & reuerenceth · goddes resurrexioun,
- and bids his wife Kytte and his daughter Kalote

408. [*clarior—amor*] LW omit ; RCOBY retain this half-line.

409. *sharpe*] scharpest R. *shene*] clene B.

411. Here R has lost eight leaves, down to Pass. XX. 27. This passage is collated with Y.

411. *leuer*] more better O.

414. *ne* (1)] CB om.

415. *stopped*] stoppeþ W.

416. *Trewes*] Trews O.

417. *cusse*] kisse COBY ; clippe W.

418. *lete*] latte O ; leteþ W. *chydde*] chide CY ; chiden O.

419. *impossible*] impossible OY.

423. *loue*] W om. *in*] in-to B.

425. *rongen*] range C ; rounge B. *waked*] a-wakid B.

426. *called*] y-called B.

427. *Ariseth—reuerenceth*] so in OBY ; Arises and reuerens C ; And bad hem rise and reuence W. *goddes*] cristis B.

And crepeth to þe crosse on knees · & kisseth it for a to revere and  
kiss the cross.  
iuwel! 428

For goddes blissed body · it bar for owre bote,  
And it afereth þe fende · for suche is þe myzte,  
May no grysly gost · glyde þere it shadweth!" 431

428. *crepeth*] crepe W. *kisseth*  
kisse W; kisses C.

431. *shadweth*] *so in* Y; shadwip  
B; schadwes C; schadewip O; walkep

429. *goddes blissed*] cristis owen B. W.

## PASSUS XIX (PROLOGUE TO DOBEST).

*Passus xix<sup>us</sup>; § explicit dobet, § incipit dobest.*

The poet awakes  
and writes his  
dream.

Thus I awaked & wrote · what I had dremed,  
And diȝte me derely · & dede me to cherehe,  
To here holy þe masse · & to be houseled after.  
In myddes of þe masse · þo men ȝede to offrynge, 4  
I fel eftsones a-slepe · & sodeynly me mette,  
That Pieres þe plowman · was paynted al bloody,  
And come in with a crosse · bifor þe comune peple,  
And riȝte lyke in alle lymes · to owre lorde ihesu; 8  
And þanne called I conscience · to kenne me þe  
sothe.

He again sleeps,  
and dreams of  
Piers the  
Plowman, holding  
a cross.

“Is this Jesus or  
Piers the  
Plowman?”

“Is þis ihesus þe iuster?” quod I · “þat iuwes did to  
deth?”

Or it is Pieres þe plowman! · who paynted hym so  
rede?”

“It is Christ  
wearing Piers’  
coat-armour.”

Quod conscience, & kneled þo · “þise aren Pieres armes,  
His coloures & his cote-armure · ac he þat cometh so  
bloody 13

Is cryst with his crosse · conqueroure of crystene.”

TITLE. Passus decimus nonus YO;  
to which B adds—et quintus de dobet.  
W agrees with L.

1. *dremed*] ydremed WC.

3. *holy þe*] þe holi B.

3, 4. *& to be—masse*] C’OBY om.

5. COBY omit.

6. *That*] þanne O.

8. *lymes*] þynges W.

9. *And*] CBY om.

10. *did*] diden B; diden hym O.

11. *it is*] so in WCOBY; is it in  
C’rowley.

13. *ac*] and C.

14. *Is*] Wiþ B.

¶ “Why calle 3e hym cryst?” *quod* I · “sithenes iuwes “Why call Him  
 calle hym ihesus? Christ?”

Patriarkes & prophetes · prophecyed bifore, 16

þat alkyn creatures · shulden knelen & bowen,

Anon as men nempned · þe name of god Ihesu.

His name is  
 Jesus.

*Ergo* is no name · to þe name of ihesus,

Ne none so nedeful to nempne · by nyȝte ne by daye.

For alle derke deuelles · aren adradde to heren it, 21

And synful aren solaced · & saued bi þat name.

And 3e callen hym cryst · for what cause, telleth me?

Is cryst more of myȝte · & more worthy name 24

Is Christ a  
 worthier name?”

þan ihesu or ihesus · þat al owre ioye come of?”

¶ “Thow knowest wel,” *quod* conscience · “and þow  
 konne resoun,

Conscience  
 replies,

That knyȝte, kyng, conqueroure · may be o persone.

“One man may  
 be both knight,  
 king, and  
 conqueror.

To be called a kniȝte is faire · for men shal knele to  
 hym ; 28

To be called a Kyng is fairer · for he may knyȝtes  
 make ;

Ac to be conquerour called · þat cometh of special  
*grace*,

To be called a  
 conqueror comes  
 of special grace.

And of hardynesse of herte · & of hendenesse [bothe],

To make lordes of laddes · of londe þat he wynneth, 32

And fre men foule thralles · þat folweth nouȝt his  
 lawes. [Fol. 82.]

¶ The iuwes, þat were gentil men · ihesu þei dispised,

The Jews  
 despised Jesus,  
 and are now  
 under tribnte.

Bothe his lore & his lawe · now ar þei lowe cherlis.

As wyde as þe worlde is · wonyeth þere none 36

But vnder tribut & taillage · as tykes & cherles.

And þo þat bicomc crysten · by conseilte of þe baptiste,

15. 3e] W om. calle (2)] called kyng] kyng and B. o] a B; of oo Y.  
 CBY; calleden O.

19. is] þer is B. þe] þat B. of]  
 CBY om.

23. 3c] thay C. callen] callid B.

25. come] comeþ B.

26. konne] canst O.

27. O puts kyng before knyȝte.

29. To] And to O. is] O om.

30. Ac] And CYB.

31. [bothe Coby] LW om.

36. As] Also B. wonyeth—none]  
 noon of hem þer wonyeth W.

38. baptiste] baptisme WCO; bap-  
 tesme Y; baptyne B.

- The Christians  
are free men. Aren frankeleynes, fre men · þorw fullyng þat þei toke,  
And gentel men with ihesu · for Ihesus was [yfulled],  
And vppon caluarye on crosse · yerouned kyngde of  
iewes. 41
- Jesus performed  
the duties of a  
king, ¶ It bicometh to a Kyngde · to kepe and to defende,  
And conquerour of conquest · his lawes & his large.  
And so [dide] Ihesus þe iewes · he iustified & tauȝte  
hem 44  
þe lawe of lyf · that last shal euere ;  
And fended fram foule yueles · feueres & fluxes,  
And fro fendes þat in hem [were] · & fals bileue.  
þo was he ihesus of iewes called · gentel prophete, 48
- and bare a crown  
of thorns. ¶ And kyngde of her kyngdome · & crowne bar of þornes.  
¶ And þo conquered he on crosse · as conquerour  
noble ;  
Myȝt no deth hym fordo · ne adown brynge,  
That he ne aros & regned · and rauysshed helle. 52  
And þo was he conquerour called · of quikke & of ded,  
For he ȝaf Adam & Eue · and other mo blisse,  
þat longe hadde leyne bifore · as lucyferes cherles.
- He gave his  
lieges places in  
Paradise. ¶ And sith he ȝaf largely · alle his lele lyges 56  
Places in paradys · at her partyngde hennes,  
He may wel be called conquerour · & þat is cryst  
mene.
- And now He  
cometh to teach  
us ¶ Ac þe cause þat he cometh þus · with crosse of his  
passioun,  
Is to wissen vs þere-wyth · þat whan þat we ben  
tempted, 60

39. *fre*] & *fre*: O. *fullyng*] þe WCYB] *werren* (*sic*) O; was L.  
fullyng B. *fals*] al fals O.  
40. [*yfulled* WCY] *yfullid* OB; 50. *crose*] þe crois B.  
*yfolled* L. 52. *ne aros*] *naroos* W; no roos O;  
42. *to* (2)] O *om.* aros CB.  
43. *And*] And a C. 53. *called*] *calle* C; B *om.*  
44. [*dide*] *so in* WCOBY; ded L. 55. *leyne*] *y-leyen* W. *lucyferes*]  
45. *lyf*] *longe lijf* O. lucifer Y.  
46. *fended*] *fende* hem O; fenden 56. *alle*] *to alle* B.  
Y; fendist B; defended W. 59. *he*] C *om.* *his*] CYB *om.*  
47. *fro*] O *om.* *in*] O *om.* [*were* 60. *þat* (2)] B *om.*

þer-with to fyȝte & fenden vs · fro fallyng in-to synne,

And se bi his sorwe · þat who so loueth ioye,

To penaunce & to pouerte · he moste putten hym-  
seluen,

that he who  
loveth joy must  
suffer wo.

And moche wo in þis worlde · willen & suffren. 64

¶ Ac to carpe more of cryst · And how he come to þat  
name,

Faithly forto speke · his firste name was ihesus.

His name was  
Jesus at first.

Tho he was borne in bethleem · as þe boke telleth,

And cam to take mankynde · kynges and aungeles 68

Reuerenced hym faire · with richesse of erthe.

Angeles out of heuene · come knelyng & songe,

*Gloria in excelsis deo, &c.*

Angels sung to  
him.  
Luke ii. 14.

¶ Kynges come after · kneled, & offred

Mire & moche golde · with-ouen mercy askyng, 72

Kings offered  
him their gifts.

Or any kynnes catel · but knowlechyng hym soe-  
uereigne

Bothe of sonde, sonne, & see · & sithenes þei went

[Fol. 82 b.]

In-to her kyngene kyth · by conseilte of angeles.

And there was þat worde fulfilled · þe which þow of  
speke, 76

*Omnia celestia, terrestria, flectantur in hoc no-  
mine Ihesu.* Phil. ii. 10.

For alle þe angeles of heuene · at his burth kneled,

And al þe witte of þe worlde · was in þo þre kynges ;

Resoun & [riȝtwisnesse] · & reuth þei offred,

These Magi  
offered Him  
reason,  
righteousness,  
and ruth ;

Wherfore & whi · wyse men þat tyme, 80

Maistres & lettred men · *Magy* hem called.

61. *fenden*] defenden W. *in-to*] to W. *synne*] C om. (!)

62. *se*] *se* (printed so) W. *so*] B om.

64. *wo*] who B ; O om. *willen*] to willen W.

65. *Ac*] As CB. *more*] B om. *name*] C om.

66. *Faithly*] Feiþ-fulli B.

69. *Reuerenced*] Reuerenseden B. *richesse*] riches W.

70. *out*] B om.

71. *come*] þat come W. *kneled*] knelyng OY ; and kneliden B.

72. *moche*] mylkyle (!) C.

74. *sonde*] lond W ; soule B ; sonde and COY. *see*] sehe O.

75. *her—kyth*] hir kyngenelech C ; hir kyngelith Y ; erþe kyngliche B. *angeles*] an angel B.

76. *worde*] world Y.

79. *[riȝtwisnesse WOY]* riȝtfulnesse LCB ; but see l. 84.

- denoted by  
incense, ¶ That o kyng cam with resoun · keured vnder sense.  
þe secoude kyng sitthe · sothliche offred  
Riȝtwisnesse vnder red golde · resouns felawe. 84
- gold, Golde is likned to leute · þat last shal euere,  
And resoun to riche golde · to riȝte & to treuthe.  
The þridde kyng þo cam · knelyng to ihesu, 87
- and myrrh. And presented hym with pitee · apierunge by myrre ;  
For mirre is merey to mene · & mylde speche of tonge.  
Thre yliche honest þinges · [were] offred þus at ones,  
þorw þre kynne kynges · knelynge to ihesu.
- Jesus was not yet  
a king or a  
conqueror. ¶ Ac for alle þise precieuse presentz · owre lorde prynce  
ihesus 92  
Was neyther kyng ne conquerour · til he gan to wexe  
In þe manere of a man · & þat by moche sleight ;
- Like a conqueror,  
He learnt many  
sleights. As it bicometh a conquerour · to konne many sleights,  
And many wyles & witte · þat wil ben a leder ; 96  
And so did ihesu in his dayes · who so had tyme to  
telle it.  
Sum tyme he suffred · & sum tyme he hydde hym ;  
And sum tyme he fauȝte faste · & fleigh otherwhile.  
And some tyme he gaf good · & graunted hele bothe,  
Lyf & lyme · as hym lyste, he wrought. 101
- He wrought  
miracles. As kynde is of a conquerour · so comsed ihesu,  
Tyl he had alle hem · þat he fore bledde.  
¶ In his iuente þis ihesus · atte iuwen feste, 104

82. o] of (1) Y; on B.

83. sitthe] ek CB; ech Y. soth-  
liche] soþli he B.84. Riȝtwisnesse] Riȝtfulnesse B.  
red] B om.85. Golde] For gold W. leute]  
beaute B. last] fast Y.

86. W omits.

87. þo] CB om.

88. presented] presente C. apier-  
yunge] apperynge WO; appaieryng Y;  
a pilgrym (1) B. by] to C.90, 91. Thre yliche] þise þree y-  
likne B. nere—kynges] CB omit.  
[were] WOY] was L.

92. prynee] kyng W.

94. þe] þise B. moche] muchel W.

95. sleightes] wilis B.

96. wyles—witte] sotile wittis B.

97. ihesu] Iohan B. had] holdiþ  
B. to] B om.

98. Sum] So þat B.

99. fleigh] fledd C; pleieþ B.

100. good] gold B. hele] hile B.

102. a] B om. so] and so Y.

103. had] badde C.

104. iuente] Iuentee WY; Inno-  
cence CB. atte] at WC; at þe Y.  
iuwen] Iewne C; Iuen O.

Water in-to wyn tourned · as holy writ telleth,  
 And þere bigan god · of his grace to dowel.  
 For wyn is lykned to lawe · & lyf of holynesse ;  
 And lawe lakked þo · for men loued nouȝt her enemys.  
 And cryst conseilleth þus · & comaundeth bothe, 109  
 Bothe to lered & to lewed · to louye owre enemys.  
 So atte feste firste · as I bifore tolde,  
 Bygan god, of his grace · & goodnesse, to dowel: 112  
 And þo was he cleped & called · nouȝt holy cryst, but  
 Ihesu,  
 A faunt fyn, ful of witte · *filius marie*.  
 ¶ For bifor his moder marie · made he þat wonder,  
 þat she furste & formest · ferme shulde bilieue, 116  
 That he þorw grace was gete · & of no gome elles.  
 He wrouȝt þat bi no witte · but þorw worde one,  
 After þe kynde þat he come of · þere comsed he  
 dowel.  
 And whan he was woxen more · in his moder absence,  
 He made lame to lepe · & ȝaue liȝte to blynde, 121  
 And fedde with two fisshes · & with fyue loues  
 Sore afyngred folke · mo þan fyue thousande.  
 þus he confortd carful · & cauȝte a gretter name, 124  
 þe whiche was dobet · where þat he went.  
 For defe þorw his doynge to here · & dombe speke he  
 made,  
 And alle he heled & halpe · þat hym of grace asked.  
 And þo was he called in contre · of þe comune peple,

He turned water  
 into wine, and  
 began to DO-  
 WELL,

at the feast in  
 Cana,

in the presence  
 of Mary.

[Pol. 83.]

Next He wrought  
 many miracles,

and caught a  
 greater name,  
 viz. DO-BET.

106. *to*] CYB *om.*  
 107. *of*] W *om.*  
 109. *þus*] vs COBY. *comaundeth*] comaunde C.  
 110. *Bothe*] W *om.*  
 111. *atte*] at þe COY; þat þe B; at þat (*printed* the) W.  
 113. *þo*] þoo O; þanne W. *cleped* &] W *om.* *cryst*] ehirehe CB. Crowley *has*—not only christ but Jesu.  
 117. *of*] CBY *om.*  
 119. *þere*] the Y. *comsed*] bygan C.  
 120. *was woxen*] woxen was W.  
 121. *lame*] lame men B.  
 123. *afyngred*] ahungerd C; and hungrid B. *fyue*] a CY. *mo—thou-* *saunde*] fyue þowsan and mo B.  
 124. *carful*] þe careful B. *a*] Y *om.* *gretter*] gret B.  
 126. *defe*] deef CY; deefe O; deue W; deefe men B. *þorw—doynge*] he made B. *speke—made*] speke made C; to speke B.  
 127. *he*] B *om.*

- Then was He called the Son of David.  
1 Sam. xviii. 7.
- None was so worthy as He to be king.
- The Jews then crucified Him,  
and watched His body,  
lest He should rise again.
- Angels sang at His resurrection.
- For þe dedes þat he did · *fili dauid, ihesus!* 129  
 For dauid was douȝtiest · of dedes in his tyme,  
 The berdes þo songe · *Saul interfecit mille, et dauid  
 decem milia* ;  
 For-þi þe contre þere ihesu cam · called hym *fili dauid*,  
 And nempned hym of nazereth · & no man so worthi  
 To be kaisere or kyng · of þe kyngedome of iuda, 134  
 Ne ouer iuwes iustice · as ihesus was, hem þouȝte.  
 ¶ Where-of caiphas hadde enuye · & other of þe  
 iewes,  
 And forto done hym to deth · day & nyȝte þei easten ;  
 Kulleden hym on-crosse-wyse · at caluarie on fryday,  
 And sithen buryden his body · & beden þat men  
 sholde  
 Kepen it fro niȝt-comeres · with knyȝtes y-armed, 140  
 For no frendes shulde hym fecche · for prophetes hem  
 tolde,  
 þat þat blessed body · of burieles shulde rise,  
 And gone in-to galile · and gladen his apostles,  
 And his moder Marie · þus men bifore demed. 144  
 ¶ The knyȝtes þat kepten it · biknewe it hem-seluen,  
 þat angeles & archangeles · ar þe day spronge,  
 Come knelynge to þe corps · & songen, *christus re-  
 surgens*  
 Verrey man bifor hem alle · & forth with hem he  
 ȝode. 148  
 ¶ The iewes preyed hem pees · & bisonȝte þe knyȝtes
129. *fili—ihesus*] ihesu fili dauid COBY.  
 130. *his*] B om.  
 131. *berdes*] burdes W ; birdes Y ; byrdes C ; burges B. *þa*] that COBY. *Saul*] Sal CB.  
 132. *For-þi*] For B.  
 134. *iuda*] Iude C ; Iudee B.  
 135. *Ne*] And be B. *iustice*] Iustices C. *ihesus*] B om.  
 137. *done*] done or donna L ; doon WOY ; don B ; do O ; cf. gone in l. 143.  
 138. *Kulleden*] And killiden B. *ou* (2)] on þe B.  
 140. *y-armed*] armed Y.  
 142. *blessed*] blisful C ; bisseful (sic) B. *shulde rise*] risen sholde W.  
 144. *men*] þei B.  
 145. *it* (1)] *so in W and Crowley* ; hym COBY. *hem-seluen*] hym-selue CB.  
 147. *Come*] Comen kynlyu (!) B. *corps*] cores C ; cors B.  
 148. *man*] men (sic) WO.  
 149. *pees*] be pees W.

- Telle þe comune þat þere cam · a compaignye of his  
aposteles,
- And bywicched hem as þei woke · & away stolen it.
- ¶ Ac Marie Magdeleyne · mette hym bi þe wey, 152  
Goynge toward galile · in godhed & manhed,  
And lyues & lokyng · & she aloude cryde,  
In eche a compaignye þere she cam · *christus resurgens!*  
þus cam it out þat cryst ouer-cam · rekeuered & lyued ;  
*Sic oportet christum pati, & intrare, &c. ;* Luke xxiv. 46.
- For [þat] þat wommen witeth · may nouȝte wel be con-  
seille ! 157 for what a woman  
knows is no  
secret.
- ¶ Peter perceyued al þis · & pursued after,  
Bothe iames & Iohan · Ihesu for to seke, [Fol. 8 : b.]  
Tadde & ten mo · with Thomas of ynde. 160
- And as alle þise wise wyes · weren togideres,  
In an hous al bishette · & her dore ybarred,  
Cryst cam in, & al closed · bothe dore & ȝates,  
To peter & to his aposteles · and seyde *pax vobis!* 164  
And toke Thomas by þe hande · and tauȝte hym to  
grope,  
And fele with his fynGRES · his flessshelich herte.  
¶ Thomas touched it · & with his tonge seyde,  
*'Deus meus & dominus meus.* John xx. 28.
- Thow art my lorde, I bileue · god, lorde ihesu ! 168  
þow deydest & deth þoledest · and deme shalt vs alle !  
And now art lyuyng · & lokyng · & laste shalt  
enere !'
150. *Telle*] to telle B. *þe comune*] *O om. cam*] coomen O.  
151. *as*] ar B. *it*] hym B.  
154. *lyues*] *so in W* ; on lyue O ; a lyue Y ; lymes CB. *she*] *so CBY*.  
155. C and B are corrupt here.  
157. [þat WCOBY] L. om. *witeth*] *witethes (!) C. conseille*] *counseille W* ; *counsil CYB* ; *counceyl O*.  
158. *perceyued*] *perceyues C*.  
160. *Tadde*] *so in COB* ; Thaddee W ; Thadde Y.  
161. *as*] B om. *wyes*] men B.  
162. *bishette*] *biset C* ; *bisette Y*.  
*ybarred*] *so in W* ; *ysperrede CY* ; *yspered O* ; *I-spord B* ; *Crowley has* barred.  
163. *&*] *so in W* ; *COBY om.* ; *but* ef. C-Text.  
164. *his*] *þise W* ; *þe B*.  
165. *grope*] *grappe C*.  
168. *god*] *my god W. god lorde*] *my lord god B*.  
169. *shalt*] *shal B*.  
170. *shalt*] *schalt þou O*.

- Christ blessed Thomas, ¶ Crist carped þanne · and curteislich seyde,  
 ‘Thomas, for þow trowest þis · & trewliche bileuest it,  
 Blessed mote þow be · & be shalt for euere. 173
- and those still more who believe without sight. And blessed mote þei alle be · in body & in soule,  
 That neuere shal se me in siȝte · as þow doste nouthē,  
 And lellich bileuen al þis · I loue hem & blesse hem ;
- John xx. 29. *Beati qui non viderunt, [et crediderunt,] &c.’*
- Then He taught DO-BEST. ¶ And whan þis dede was done · dobest he tauȝte,  
 And ȝaf Pieres power · and pardoun he graunted  
 To alle manere men · mercy & forȝyfnes, 179  
 Hym myȝte men to assoille · of alle manere synnes,  
 In couenant þat þei come · & knowleche to paye,  
 To pieres pardon þe plowman · *redde quod debes.*
- Mat. xviii. 28. ¶ Thus hath pieres powere · be his pardoun payed,  
 To bynde & to vnbynde · bothe here & elles-[where],  
 And assoille men of alle synnes · saue of dette one. 185
- He gave His apostles power to bind and unbind. ¶ Anone after an heigh · vp in-to heuene  
 He went, & wonyeth þere · & wil come atte laste,  
 And rewarde hym riȝte wel · þat *reddit quod debet*—  
 Payeth parfitly · as pure trewthē wolde. 189
- He ascende.l into heaven. ¶ And what persone payeth it nouȝt · punysshē he  
 pinketh,  
 And demen hem at domes daye · bothe quikke & ded,  
 þe gode to þe godhede · & to grete ioye, 192  
 And wikke to wonye · in wo with-outen ende.”

172. *bilueest*] leuest O.175. *shal se*] seien B.176. [*et crediderunt* COBY] LW  
om.178. *he*] hym B.179. *men*] of men C.180. *Hym—to*] His power myȝte  
men Y; He myȝt men B. (*These two  
readings are simpler, yet probably  
not genuine.*) *men*] W om.; O *places  
it after assoille.* *synnes*] synne W.181. *knowleche*] so in O; know-  
liche CY; knouleche B; *apparently  
miswritten* knewleche in L; knewe-  
liche W.183. *hath*] O om. *be*] by W; bi B.184. *to* (2)] WCOBY om. [*where  
WCOBY*] L omits, but the line is  
marked; els where in Crowley.185. *assoille*] soiled C. *alle*] CB  
om.186. *an heigh*] on heigh B; on  
hyȝ O. *in-to*] in-to þe Y; to the  
CB.187. *wil*] wo (*put for wol*) B.  
*atte*] at þe WOB; at CY.188. *And*] L has And wil; but wil  
*should be omitted, as in WCOBY.*189. *Payeth*] And payeþ O.191. *hem*] hym COB. *at*] a CY.193. *wikke*] wikkede WCOBY.

- þus conscience of crist · & of þe crosse carped,  
 And conseilled me to knele þer-to · & þanne come,  
 me þouȝte, 195
- One *spiritus paraclitus* · to pieres & to his felawes ;  
 In lyknesse of a liztynge · he lyzte on hem alle,  
 And made hem konne & knowe · alkyn langages.  
 I wondred what þat was · & wagged conscience,  
 And was afered of the lyzte · for in fyres lyknesse 200 [Fol. 84.]  
*Spiritus paraclitus* · ouer-spradde hem alle.
- ¶ Quod conscience, & kneled · “ þis is crystes messenger,  
 And cometh fro þe grete god · & grace is his name.  
 Knele now,” quod conscience · “ & if þow canst syng,  
 Welcome hym & worshiþe hym · with *veni, creator*  
*spiritus.*” 205
- ¶ Thanne songe I þat songe · and so did many  
 hundreth,  
 And cryden with conscience · “ help vs, god of grace !”  
 And þanne bigan grace · to go with piers plowman,  
 And conseilled hym & conscience · þe comune to  
 sompne, 209
- “ For I wil dele to-daye · & dyuyde grace,  
 To alkynnes creatures · þat [han] her fyue wittes,  
 Tresore to lyue by · to her lyues ende, 212  
 And wepne to fyzte with · þat wil neure faille.  
 For antecryst & his · al þe worlde shal greue,  
 And acombte þe, conscience · but if cryst þe helpe.  
 ¶ And fals prophetes fele · flatereres & glosers 216  
 Shullen come & be curatoures · ouer kynges & erlis,  
 And pryde shal be pope · prynce of holycherche,  
 Coueytise & vnkyndenesse · cardinales hym to lede.

The Spirit  
 descends on Piers  
 and his fellows.

“ This is Christ's  
 messenger,”  
 said Conscience.

Grace counsels  
 Piers,

bestowing gifts of  
 grace

against the power  
 of Antichrist.

For pride shall  
 be pope.

194. *þe*] O om.

195. *come*] cam WOY ; com CB.

200. *the*] þat CYB. *lyknesse*] light-  
 nesse W.

206. *and*] W om.

210. *dyuyde*] ȝyue diuine W.

211. [*han* WCOYB] kan L.

213—220. COBY omits, owing to

*repetition of* And wepne, &c. W and  
 Crowley retain this passage.

215. *þe* (2)] Crowley omits.

216. *fele*] fell in Crowley.

218. *prynce*] and prince in  
 Crowley.

219. *hym*] hem in Crowley.

- For þi," *quod grace*, "er I go · I wil gyue þow tresore,  
And wepne to fiȝte with · whan antecryst þow  
assailleth." 221
- The gifts of the Spirit; And gaf eche man a grace · to gye with hym schuen,  
That ydelnesse encombre hym nouȝt · envye ne pryde,
- 1 Cor. xii. 4. *Divisiones graciaram sunt, &c.*
- Wit and eloquence; ¶ Some he ȝaf wytte · with wordes to shewe, 224  
Witte to wynne her lyfode with · as þe worlde asketh,  
As prechoures & prestes · & prentyce[s] of lawe,  
þei lelly to lyue · by laboure of tonge,  
And bi witte to wissen other · as *grace* hem wolde  
teche. 228
- merchandise; ¶ And some he kenned crafte · & kunnyng of syȝte,  
With sell yng & buggyng · her bylyf to wynne,  
handicrafts; And some he lered to laboure · a lele lyf & a trewe,  
And *somme* he tauȝte to tilie · to dyche & to thecche,  
To wynne with her lyfode · by lore of his techyng.
- mathematics; And some to dyuyne & diuide · noumbres to kenne;  
painting; And some to compas craftily · & coloures to make;  
foreknowledge; And some to se & to saye · what shulde bifalle, 236  
Bothe of wel & of wo · telle it or it felle,  
astronomy; As Astronomyenes þorw astronomye · & philosophres  
wyse.
- strength to do justice; ¶ And some to ryde & to recoeure · þat vuriȝtfully was  
wonne;  
He wissed hem wynne it aȝeyne · þorw wightnesse of  
handes, 240
221. *antecryst*] any cristyne CB. (*altered to biline*) O; lifode B.  
222. *eche*] O *om.* *gye*] gide W;  
go COY; goo B; *but* Crowley *has*  
guide.  
224. *wordes*] is wordis B.  
225. *Witte*] Wiþ B. *her*] his Y.  
*worlde*] werk O.  
226. *prentyces*] Prentices WCOY;  
prineis B; *miswritten* prentyce in L.  
227. *by*] þoruȝ O; by a B.  
229. *he*] B *om.* *crafte*] craftis B.  
230. *buggyng*] byggyng CYB.  
*bylyf*] bilyue WC; bileue Y; bileue
231. *a* (2)] COB *om.*  
232. *thecche*] hegge COBY.  
234. *to* (1)] BY *om.* *noumbres*]  
membres C; menbris B.  
236. *ȝ*] and som C; & *summe* OB.  
*shulde*] shulle B.  
238. *ȝ*] on O.  
239. *ȝ*] & som YB. *vuriȝtfully*]  
wrongfully W.  
240. *wissed*] wissem (!) B. *wynne*]  
to wynne WB. *wightnesse*] wight-  
wisnesse Y; witnessse CB.

- ¶ And fecchen it fro fals men · with foluyles lawes. [Fol. 84 b.]  
 And some he lered to lyue · in longynge to ben hennes,  
 In pouerte & in penaunce · to preye for alle crystene.  
 And alle he lered to be lele · & eche a crafte loue  
 other, 244  
 And forbad hem alle debate · þat none were amonge  
 hem.  
 “Though some be clenner þan somme · 3e se wel,” “Let none be  
 quod grace, envious,” said  
 Grace.  
 “þat he þat vseth þe fairest crafte · to þe foulest I  
 couth haue put hym,  
 þinketh alle,” quod grace · “þat grace cometh of my  
 3ifte; 248  
 Loke þat none lakke other · but loueth alle as bre- “Let none blame  
 theren. others.  
 ¶ And who þat moste maistries can · be myldest of  
 berynge,  
 And crouneth conscience kyng · & maketh crafte Make conscience  
 3owre stuard, your king.  
 And after craftes conscille · clotheth 3ow & fede. 252  
 For I make pieres þe plowman · my procuratour & my  
 reve,  
 And Regystrere to receyue · *redde quod debes*.  
 My prowor & my plowman · Piers shal ben on erthe,  
 And for to tulye treuthe · a teme shal he haue.” 256 My plowman  
 shall be Piers.”  
 ¶ Grace gauē Piers a teme · foure gret oxen ; Grace gives Piers  
 four oxen,  
 þat on was Luke, a large beste · and a lowe-chered,

241. *foluyles*] *so in W*; *foluiles*  
 COY; *forluylis B*.

243. *for alle*] *fol (!) C*.

244. *lele*] *lee B*. *a crafte*] *craft*  
 to B.

245. *debate*] *debatis B*.

247. *I*] *B om*.

248. *CBY omit*.

249. *Loke*] *Lokeþ W*. *none*] *no*  
 Y; *no man W*. *loueth*] *loue C*; *Y om*.

250. *who*] *þei B*. *can*] *konne CY*;  
*kunne B*. *be myldest*] *beþ mylde B*.

251. *crouneth*] *crowned CBY*;  
*crowne O*. *maketh*] *maketh CB*; *make*  
 O.

252. *C omits*. *clotheth*] *cloþe B*.  
*fede*] *fedeþ O*.

255. *prowor*] *so in W*; *prowour*  
 Y; *prowyour O*; *plough B*; *plowght*  
 C; *purveour C2*; *Crowley has prouisor*.

256. *tulye*] *tilie WCOBY*.

257. *foure*] *of foure W*.

258. *a lowe-chered*] *of lowe chere*  
 B.

Matthew, Mark,  
Luke, and John;

And marke, & mathew þe þrydle · myghty bestes  
bothe, 259

And ioigned to hem one Iohan · most gentil of alle,  
þe prys nete of Piers plow · passyng alle other.

and four "stots,"

¶ And grace gaue pieres · of his goodnesse, foure  
stottis,

Al þat his oxen erylde · þey to harwe after. 263

Austin, Ambrose,  
Gregory, and  
Jerome;

On hyzte Austyne · & ambrose an-other,  
Gregori þe grete clerke · & Ierome þe gode;

þise foure, þe feithe to teche · folweth pieres teme,  
And harwed in an handwhile · al holy scripture, 267  
Wyth two harwes þat þei hadde · an okle & a newe,

*Id est, vetus testamentum & nouum.*

and also four  
seeds, viz. the  
cardinal virtues.

¶ And grace gaue greynes · þe cardynales vertues,  
And sewe [hem] in mannes soule · & sithen he tolde  
her names.

The first is the  
Spirit of  
Prudence;

*Spiritus prudencie* · þe firste seed hyzte,  
And who so eet þat · ymagyne he schulde, 272  
Ar he did any dede · deuysel wel þe ende;  
And lerned men a ladel bugge · with a longe stele,  
þat cast for to kepe a crokke · to saue þe fatte abouen.

the second, of  
Temperance;

¶ The secounde seed hyzte · *spiritus temperancie.* 276  
He þat ete of þat seed · hadde suche a kynde,  
Shulde neuere mete ne mochel drynke · make hym to  
swelle,

which protects  
men against all  
excesses;

Ne sholde no scorner ne scolde · oute of skyl hym  
brynge,

260. *most*] the most CBY.

262. *stottis*] grete stottes CB.

263. *þey*] hem O. *harwe*] harwen  
it B.

264. *ambrose an-other*] anoþer am-  
brose B.

265. *Ierome*] Ieromye Y.

267. *an*] Y om.

268. *an*] and B. *Id est*] COBY om.

269. *cardynales*] so in COY; car-  
dynals B; Cardynal W.

270. *sewe*] sewen Y; swee (*sie*) C.

[*hem* WC<sub>2</sub>] it LCOBY. *he*] COBY  
om.

273. *did—dede*] deide any deef  
W. *deuyse wel*] auyse hym wel of B.

274. *ladel*] lady (!) Y. *bugge*]  
bygge CB; to bigge O.

275. *þat*] To O; And W.

276—355. *Here the Oriol MS. has  
lost a leaf. This passage is collated  
with Cz.*

277. *hadde*] it had C<sub>2</sub>.

279. *sholde*] W om.

Ne wynnyng ne welthe · of wor[<sup>l</sup>]deliche ricchesse 280

Waste worde of ydelnesse · ne wykked speche meue ;

Shulde no curyous clothe · comen on hys ruggge,

Ne no mete in his mouth · þat maister Iohan spiced. [Fol. 85.]

¶ The thridde seed þat Pieres sewe · was *spiritus for-* the third, the  
*titudinis.* Spirit of  
284 Fortitude,

And who so eet of þat seed · hardy was eure.

To suffre al þat god sent · sykenesse & angres ;

Myzte no lesynge ne lyere · ne losse of worldly catel

Maken hym for any mournyng · þat he nas merye in  
soule, 288

And bolde & abydyng · bismeres to suffre,

And playeth al with pacyence · & *parce michi, domine,* which confers  
patience;

And couered hym vnder conseilie · of catoun þe wyse ;

*Esto forti animo, cum sis dampnatus inique.* 292 Dion. Cato; Dist.

¶ The fierthe seed þat pieres sewe · was *spiritus iusticie,* ii. 14.  
the fourth of  
Justice,

And he þat eet of þat seed · shulde be euere trewe

With god, & nouzt agast · but of gyle one.

For gyle goth so pryuely · þat good faith other-while

May nouzte ben aspyed · for *spiritus iusticie.* 297

¶ *Spiritus iusticie* · spareth nouzte to spille which punishes  
the guilty,

Hem þat ben gulty · & forto correcte

þe Kyngge, 3if he falle · in gylte or in trespasse. 300

For counteth he no kynges wratthe · whan he in courte  
sitteth

To demen as a domes man ; · adradde was he neure, and is afraid  
neither of duke  
nor of death.

Noither of duke ne of deth · þat he ne dede þe lawe,

For present or for preyere · or any prynces lettres ; 304

280. CCzBY om. *worldeliche*] see  
1. 287.

281. *Waste*] Wat B. *ne*] ne no  
CBY.

282. *ruggge*] rygge C ; rigge CzB.

285. *so*] W om. *was*] was he W ;  
he was B.

286. *sykenesse*] & siknesse Y.

287. *lesynge*] lesynges WCCzBY.  
*ne lyere*] no ber (!) C ; hym dere B.  
*worldely*] wordly C ; no B.

288. *nas*] ne was B.

291. *couered*] coueren CCzY ;  
couereþ B.

293. *fierthe*] *so* in CB ; ferþe  
WCzY.

294. *euere*] neuere B.

297. *aspyed*] espied W.

300. *in* (2)] in ony Cz.

301. *counteth*] a-counteþ B.

303. *þe*] WCCzBY om.

He dede equite to alle · enene forth his powere.

¶ Thise foure sedes pieres sewe · and sitthe he did hem  
harwe

The harrow is  
the law.

Wyth olde lawe and newe lawe · þat loue myȝte wexe  
Amonge þe foure vertues · and vices destroye. 308

Weeds are like  
vices.

¶ For comunelich in contrees · kammokes & wedes  
Fouleth þe fruite in þe felde · þere þei growe togyderes ;  
And so don vices · vertues worthy.

Quod Piers, “harweth alle þat kunneth kynde witte ·  
bi conseilte of þis doctours, 312

And tulyeth after her techyng · þe cardinale vertues.”

Grace bids Piers  
to build a barn.

¶ “Aȝeines þi greynes,” quod grace · “bigynneth for to  
ripe,

Ordeigne þe an hous, Piers · to herberwe in þi cornes.”

Piers asks for  
wood,

¶ “By god! grace,” quod Piers · “ȝe moten gyue  
tymbre, 316

And ordeyne þat hous · ar ȝe hennes wende.”

and receives the  
cross of Christ.

¶ And grace gauē hym þe crosse · with þe croune of  
þornes,

That cryst vpon caluarye · for mankynde on pyned,  
And of his baptesme & blode · þat he bledde on Rode  
He made a maner mortar · & merey it hiȝte. 321

And þere-with grace bigan · to make a good founde-  
ment,

[Fol. 85 b.]

And watted it and walled it · with his peynes & his  
passioun,

And of al holywrit · he made a rofe after, 324

He builds the  
house of Unity.

And called þat hous vuite · holichereche on englisshe.

308. þe] þo W.

309. *comunelich*] comunes Y. *kam-*  
*mokes*] calokes B.

312. *kunneth*] konneþ W; konne  
CCzY; kunne B. *kynde*] kyndly  
CCzBY.

313. *tulyeth*] tilieþ WCzYB; telles  
C. *her*] his C; þis Cz. þe] B om.

314. þi] þi (*printed thei in 2nd*  
*ed.*) W. *grace*] grace to Piers CBYCz.  
*bigynneth for to*] þat þi greyneþ B.

315. *Piers*] CBY om.; L *has quod*  
*Piers, where quod is wrongly repeated*  
*from l. 316. cornes*] *so in* WB; corne  
CCzY.

316. *god*] goddis (*wrongly*) B.  
*moten*] most CB.

317. *wende*] wente B.

323. *watted*] wattede W; watted  
CCzY; watrið B. *peynes*] peyne W.

324. *al*] Cz om.

325. *on*] in Cz.

And whan þis dede was done · grace deuised  
 A carte, hyȝte cristendome · to carye pieres sheues ;  
 And gaf hym caples to his carte · contricioun & *con-* Piers' horses are  
 fessioun, 328 *fession.*  
 And made presthode haywarde · þe while hym-self  
 went  
 As wyde as þe worlde is · with pieres to tulye treuthe.  
 ¶ Now is Piers to þe plow · & pruyde it aspyde,  
 And gadered hym a grete oest · to greuen he þinketh  
 Conscience and al crystene · and cardinale vertues,  
 Blowe hem doune & breke hem · & bite atwo þe  
 mores ; 334  
 And sente forth *surquydous* · his *seriaunt* of armes,  
 And his spye spille-loue · one speke-yuel-byhynde.  
 Þise two come to conscience · and to crystene peple,  
 And tolde hem tydynges · “ þat tyne þei shulde þe  
 sedes, 338  
 That Piers þere hadde ysowen · þe cardynal vertues ;  
 And Piers berne worth broke · & þei þat ben in vnite  
 Shulle come out, & conscience · & ȝowre two caples,  
 Confessioun & contricioun · and ȝowre carte þe byleue  
 Shal be coloured so queyntly · and keuered vnder owre  
 sophistrie, 343  
 þat [conscience] shal nouȝte · knowe by contricioun,  
 Ne by confessioun · who is cristene or hethen,  
 Ne no maner marchaunt · þat with moneye deleth,  
 Where he wyne wyth riȝte · with wronge, or with  
 vsure.

Pride sees Piers  
ploughing,  
and prepares to  
attack him.

He sends out  
Surquidous and  
Spill-love.

Pride's message  
to all Christians,

threatening to  
work them evil  
by sophistry.

326. *grace*] grace anon Cz.  
 329. *þe while*] while Y.  
 331. *it*] is B.  
 332. *to*] for to W ; hym to B.  
 333. CC<sub>2</sub>BY *omit.*  
 334. *Blowe*] Blew CB. *hem* (1)  
 hym B. *breke*] brak B. *bite*] bitte  
 Cz ; bot B.  
 338. *hem*] hym C.  
 339. *ysowen*] sowyn Cz. *cardynal*]  
 cardinals (*with s nearly erased*) C ;

Cardinalle or Cardinalles Cz.  
 340. *worth*] wroþ B. *broke*] y-  
 broke WB ; brokyn Cz. *worth broke*]  
 with brake C.  
 341. *ȝ* (1) of (*corrected to &*) Y ;  
 on B.  
 343. *owre*] W *om.*  
 344. [*conscience*] conscioun in L,  
*but marked for correction.*  
 347. *Where*] Wheiper W.

Pride and  
Lechery prepare  
to waste the  
world.

¶ With suche coloures & queyntise · cometh pryde  
y-armed, 348

With þe lorde þat lyueth after · þe luste of his body,  
To wasten, on welfare · and on wykked kepynge,  
Al þe worlde in a while · þorw owre witte," quod  
pruyde.

Conscience bids  
men to fly to  
Unity or Holy-  
Chureh.

¶ Quod conscience to alle crystene þo · "my conseille  
is to wende 352

Hastiliche in-to vnyte · & holde we vs þere,  
And preye we þat a pees were · in Piers berne þe plow-  
man.

For witterly I wote wel · we beth nouȝte of strengthe  
To gone agayne pryde · but grace were with vs." 356

Common Sense  
bids them dig a  
ditch about  
Unity,

¶ And þanne cam kynde wytte · conscience to teche,  
And cryde & comaunded · al crystene peple,  
For to deluen a dyche · depe a-boute vnite,  
That holy-cherche stode in vnite · as it a pyle [were].

to serve as a  
moat.

¶ Conscience comaunded þo · al crystene to delue, 361  
And make a muche mote · þat myȝte ben a strengthe,  
To helpe holycherche · & hem þat it kepeth,

[Fol. 86.]

¶ Thanne alkyn crystene · saue comune wommen, 364  
Repenteden & refused synne · saue they one ;  
And fals men, flat[er]eres · vsureres and theues,

A list of those  
who repented not.

Lyeres and questmongeres · þat were forsworen ofte,  
Wytynge and willefully · with þe false helden, 368  
And for syluer were forswore · sothely þei wist it.

¶ þere nas no crystene creature · þat kynde witte  
hadde,

348. *y-armed*] armed CC2B.  
349. *lyueth*] leueth Cz.  
350. *on (2)*] in W; Cz *om.* *ke-  
pyngge*] lyuynge W.  
353. *vs þere*] us welle þer Cz.  
354. *a*] C *om.* *were*] where Cz.  
356. *Here collation with O recom-  
mences.*  
357. *And*] CBY *om.*  
359. *a dyche*] and diche CY; &  
dichen O; and dike B.

360. *a pyle*] appil (!) B. [*were*  
COBY] weere W; were in Crowley; *L omits, but the line is marked for  
correction.*  
363. *hem*] he CB.  
365. *refused*] refuseden CB.  
366. *flatereres*] *miswritten* flateres  
in LY; flatereris WOB; flaterers  
C.  
368. *Wytyngge*] Wytyngli O.

- Saue schrewes one · suche as I spak of,  
 That he ne halpe a *quantite* · holynesse to wexe. 372 Many penitents  
 Somme þorw bedes-byddyng · and somme þorw pyl- assist the growth  
 grymage, of holiness.
- And other pryue penaunce · and some þorw penyes  
 delynge.
- ¶ And þanne welled water · for wikked werkes, Men weep for  
 Egerlich ernynge · out of mennes eyen. 376 their sins.
- Clennesse of þe *comune* · & clerkes clene luyng  
 Made vnite holicherche · in holynesse to stonde.
- “I care nouzte,” *quod* conscience · “þough pryde come Conscience bids  
 nouthe, 379 all Christians to  
 dine,
- þe lorde of luste shal be letted · al þis lente, I  
 hope.
- Comeþ,” *quod* conscience · “ze cristene, and dyneth,  
 þat han laboured lelly · al þis lente tyme.
- Here is bred yblessed · and goddes body þer-vnder. offering them the  
 Grace þorw goddes worde · gauē Pieres power, 384 Lord’s Supper  
 once a month.
- [And] myztes to maken it · & men to ete it after,  
 In helpe of her hele · onys in a moneth,  
 Or as ofte as þey hadden nede · þo þat hadde ypayed  
 To pieres pardoun þe plowman · *reddē quod debes.*”
- ¶ “How?” *quod* al þe *comune* · “þow consellest vs The commons  
 to zelde 389 wish to know if  
 they must make  
 restitution.
- Al þat we owen any wyzte · ar we go to housel?”
- ¶ “That is my conselle,” *quod* conscience · “& car-  
 dynale vertues,  
 þat vche man forzyue other · and þat wyl þe *pater-*  
*noster,* 392
371. *one*] O *om.* *suche*] and swich  
 YO.
372. *halpe*] hape Y.
373. *pylgrimage*] pilgrimages W.
374. *penaunce*] penaunces W.  
*penyes*] pens Y; pans B.
375. *for*] with C; þurgh B.
376. *ernynge*] zernynge B; ren-  
 nyng O.
377. *of þe*] out of W.
379. *þough*] þougt B.
380. *lente*] leaute (*by confusion*  
*with leute*) Y; cf. l. 382.
381. *Comeþ*] Comes C. *quod*] B  
*om.* *ze*] iche O; þe B.
385. [*And* W] LCOBY omit, but  
*it is found in* Crowley. *myztes*] so  
*in* WB; Mighte COY.
387. *þo*] þey Y. *hadde*] O *om.*

M.t. vi. 12.

*Et dimitte nobis debita nostra, &c.,*

And so to ben assoilled · &amp; sithen ben houseled.”

A brewer refuses  
to do so.¶ “Ȝe, bawe!” quod a brewere · “I wil nouȝt be  
reuled,Bi ihesu! for al ȝowre ianglynge · with *spiritus*  
*iusticie,*

Ne after conscience, by cryste · whil I can selle 396

He prefers  
selling dregs and  
draff.

Bothe dregges &amp; draffe · and drawe it at on hole,

ȝikke ale and ȝinne ale · for ȝat is my kynde,

And nouȝte hakke after holynesse; · holde ȝi tonge,  
conscience!Of *spiritus iusticie* · ȝow spekest moche an ydel!” 400Conscience warns  
the brewer.

¶ “Caytyue,” quod conscience · “cursed wrecche!

Vnblessed artow, brewere · but if ȝe god helpe;

But ȝow lyue by lore · of *spiritus iusticie,* 403

ȝe chief seed ȝat Pieres sewe · ysaued worstow neure.

But conscience ȝe comune fede · and cardynale vertues,

[Fol. 86 b.]

Leue it wel ȝei ben loste · bothe lyf &amp; soule.”

A vicar says,

¶ “Thanne is many man ylost” · quod a lewed vycory,  
“I am a curatour of holykyrke · and come neure in  
my tyme 408

Man to me ȝat me couth telle · of cardinale vertues,

Or ȝat acounted conscience · at a cokkes fether or an  
hennes!“I never knew  
cardinal but such  
as comes from  
the pope.

I knewe neure cardynal · ȝat he ne cam fro ȝe pope,

And we clerkes, whan ȝey come · for her comunēs  
payeth, 412For her pelure and her palfreyes mete · & piloures ȝat  
hem folweth.393. *sithen*] sithen to CY; siȝ to B.394. *bawe*] how CB; bow Y.395. *al*] C om.397. *dregges*] dragges Y. *it*] it outW. *on*] C om.398. *ȝikke*] Thilke C. *ale* (1)] alleB. *ale* (2)] alle boȝe B.400. *moche*] B om.402. *artow*] art ȝou OB.403. *lore*] ȝe lore B.404. *worstow*] worȝest ȝou O; worst  
ȝou B.405. *fede*] seed O.

406. Y omits.

407. *In margin of O*—Of cardy-  
nalis.410. *accounted*] counted COY.411. *cardynal*] Cardynale vertues B.412. *payeth*] payed C.413. *folweth*] folowed C; folwei B.



- for the traitor  
and the true man. And trauilleth & tulyeth · for a tretour also sore  
As for a trewe tydy man · al tymes ylyke. 436  
And worshiped be he þat wrouzte al · bothe good &  
wykke,  
And suffreth þat synful be · til some tyme þat þei re-  
pente.
- God amend the  
pope! And god amende þe pope · þat pileth holykirke,  
And cleymeth bifor þe kyng · to be keper ouer  
crystene, 440  
And counteth nouzt þough crystene · ben culled &  
robbed,
- The pope spills  
Christian blood. And fynt folke to fyzte · and cristene blode to spille,  
Aʒeyne þe olde lawe & newe lawe · as Luke þer-of  
witnesseth,
- Exod. xx. 13;  
Heb. x. 30. *Non occides : michi vindictam, &c.*  
It semeth, by so · hym-self hadd[e] his wille, 444  
That he ne reccheth riʒte nouzte · of al þe remenaunte.  
And cryst of his curteisye · þe cardinales saue,  
And tourne her witte to wisdom · & to wele of  
soule !
- The eommons  
care little about  
conscience. For þe comune," quod þis curatour · "counten ful litel  
þe conselle of conscience · or cardinale vertues, 449  
But if þei [seiʒe] as by syʒte · somewhat to wynnyng ·  
Of gyle ne of gabbyng · gyue þei neuere tale.  
For *spiritus prudencie* · amonge þe peple, is gyle, 452
- [Fol. 87.]
435. *tulyeth*] tilieþ WOB; tillies  
C. *tretour*] treytour Y; traitour  
CB.  
436. *tydy*] lyueng C.  
437. *wykke*] wikked C; ille O.  
438. *þat* (1)] þo þat B. *til—re-  
pente*] erased in W; supplied by Mr  
Wright from another MS.  
440. *keper*] O om. *ouer*] our C;  
on Y.  
441. *nouzt*] at nouzt O; Y om.  
*þough*] þouzt B. *culled*] killed  
WOB; kulled Y.  
442. *fynt*] fyndes C.  
443. *lawe* (2)] B om. *witnesseth*]  
witness C. *occides*] occides &c. O.  
*vindictam*] so in the MSS.  
444. *hym-self*] þat hymself B.  
*hadde*] so in WYB; *miswritten* hadd  
in L; had C. *wille*] owne wille O.  
445. *ne*] WCO om. *remenaunte*]  
toʒer remenaunt O; renaunt (!) B.  
447. *witte*] wittis B. *welc*] wel C;  
welþe W.  
448. *For*] B om. *counten*] ac-  
counteþ it B.  
449. *cardinale*] Cardynals B.  
450. [*seiʒe* W] seigh CC2; seie B;  
seen O; sight (*by mistake*) Y; I. has  
sowe; Crowley has se.  
451. *gyue*] gil Y; gif C.

And alle þo faire vertues · as vyces þei semeth ;  
 Eche man sotileth a sleight · synne forto hyde,  
 And coloureth it for a kunnyng · and a clene  
 lyuyngc.” 455

Each man  
 beguiles the  
 other.”

¶ Thanne loughe þere a lorde · & “ by þis liȝte,” sayde,  
 “ I halde it ryȝte & resoun · of my reue to take  
 Al þat myne auditour · or elles my stuarde  
 Conseilleth me by her acounte · & my clerkes wryt-  
 yngc. 459

A lord says that  
 he thinks it right  
 to take all that  
 his auditor says  
 is his.

¶ With *spiritus intellectus* · they seke þe reues rolles,  
 And with *spiritus fortitudinis* · fecche [it] I wole.”

¶ And þanne come þere a kyngc · & bi his croune  
 seyde,

A king says,

“ I am Kyngc with croune · þe comune to reule, 463  
 And holykirke & cleryge · fro cursed men to defende.  
 And if me lakketh to lyue by · þe lawe wil I take it,  
 þere I may hastlokest it haue · for I am hed of lawe ;  
 For ȝe ben but membres · & I aboue alle. 467

“ What I want, I  
 can lawfully take.

And sith I am ȝowre aller hed · I am ȝowre aller hele,  
 And holycherche chief help · & chiftaigne of þe  
 comune.

I am the head.

And what I take of ȝow two · I take it atte techyngc  
 Of *spiritus iusticie* · for I iugge ȝow alle ;  
 So I may baldely be houseled · for I borwe neuere, 472  
 Ne craue of my comune · but as my kynde asketh.”

I act by the  
 spirit of justice.”

453. B *omits.* þo] the COY. *semeth*] *semed* CY.

454. *sotileth*] *subtileþ* WOY ; *suttelde* C.

455. *coloureth*] *colourd* C ; *keuereþ* B. *for*] with COBY. *a* (2)] B *om.*

456. *loughe*] *louȝth* B. *þis*] C *om.*

457. *halde*] *holde* WCOBY. *reue*] *reme* B.

460. *they*] to CBY. *reues*] *Iewes* (!) B.

461. [it WCOBY] L *omits.*, but is marked for correction. I] Y *om.* *wole*] *wole* after W.

462. *þanne*] O *om.*

464. *to*] O *om.* *defende*] *fende* W.

466. *hastlokest*] *so in* OY ; *hastlokest* W ; *hastilekest* B ; *hastlyest* C.

467. *For*] And W. *ȝe*] *þei* B. *membres*] *menbris* B.

468. *sith*] *seiþ* B. *aller* (1)] *alþer* O ; *eldir* B. *aller* (2)] *alþer* OB.

469. *cherche*] *chirches* WO. *chiftaigne*] *cheuentayn* B ; *Chieftayn* WOY.

470. *atte*] at þe WCOBY.

472. *baldely*] *boldely* WCOBY ; *boldli* O.

473. *craue*] *care* B.

Conscience says  
he must reign by  
reason and truth.

¶ “In condicioun,” quod conscience · “þat þow konne  
defende

And rule þi rewme in resoun · riȝt wel, & in treuth,  
Take þow may in resoun · as þi lawe asketh ; 476  
*Omnia tua sunt ad defendendum, set non ad  
depredandum !*”

þe vyker hadde fer home · & faire toke his leue,

The poet awakes. And I awakned þere-with · & wrote as me mette.

475. *in* (1)] and CY; bi O. *In* deprecandum CBY.  
*the margin of* O—De pietate regis. 477. *vyker*] vicorie O. *his*] is C.

476. *may*] so in COBY; mayst W. 478. *awakned*] a-wakiþ B. *wrote*]  
þi] þe O. *depredandum*] deprehen- wroot WCY; wrouȝte O; wroȝt B.  
dendum (printed *depredandum*) W;

## PASSUS XX (DO-BEST I).

*Passus xx<sup>us</sup> de visione, & primus de dobest.*

Thanne as I went by þe way · whan I was þus awaked, The poet wanders  
about;  
 Heuy-chered I ʒede · and elyngē in herte ;  
 I ne wiste where to ete · ne at what place.  
 And it neighed nyeghe þe none · & with nede I mette, 4 and at noon meets  
with Need.  
 That afronted me foule · and faitour me called.  
 “ Coudestow nonʒte excuse þe · as dede þe Kyngē &  
 other,  
 þat þow toke to þi bylyf · to clothes and to sustenance,  
 As by techyngē & by tellyngē · of *spiritus temperancie*,  
 And þow nome namore · þan nede þe tauʒte, 9  
 And nede ne hath no lawe · ne neure shal falle in dette? “Need hath no  
law.  
 For þre thynges he taketh · his lyf forto saue,  
 That is mete, whan men hym werneth · & he no moneye A man may take  
food  
 weldeth, 12  
 ¶ Ne wyght none wil ben his borwe · ne wedde hath [Fol. 87 b.]  
 none to legge.

TITLE. *So in W.* CBY omit de visione. O has only Passus vicesimus.

1. þus] B om.

2. chered] chere (!) C. <sup>ʒ</sup> elyngē] reads As. by (2)] CB om.

4. nyeghe] nei; W; nere CY; neer O; ne B.

5. afronted] afronted WCBY; frontede O. foule] wel foule CBY. faitour] a faytour B.

6. Coudestor] Kanstow WCY; kanst þou O; kaut þou B. *In mar-*

*gin of O*—Necessitas.

7. bylyf] bilyue WO; bileue CBY.

8. As] And WOBY; but Crowley reads As. by (2)] CB om.

9. nome] take C.

10. ne (1)] O om.; ne (printed he) W.

11. thynges] kyngis (!) B.

12. werneth] warnen O; warnes C; warneþ YB.

13. none (1)] ne B. wedde] wede C. none (2)] ne non B.

And he cauȝte in þat cas · & come þere-to by sleighte,  
 He synneth nouȝte sothelich · þat so wynneth his fode.  
 or clothing, And pouȝh he come so to a clothe · and can no better  
 cheuysaunce, 16  
 Nede anon riȝte · nymeth hym vnder meynpryse.  
 or a drink of And if hym lyst for to lape · þe lawe of kynde wolde  
 water. That he dronke at eche dicke · ar he for thurste deyde.  
 So nede, at grete nede · may nymen as for his owne, 20  
 Wyth-oute conseilie of conscience · or cardynale vertues,  
 So þat he suwe & sane · *spiritus temperancie*.  
 Temperance is ¶ For is no vertue by fer · to *spiritus temperancie*,  
 greater than Neither *spiritus iusticie* · ne *spiritus fortitudinis* ; 24  
 Justice or Fortitude. For *spiritus fortitudinis* · forfaiteth ful oft,  
 He shal do more þan mesure · many tyme & ofte,  
 And bete men ouer bitter · and soume of hem to litel,  
 And greue men gretter · þan goode faith it wolde. 28  
 Justice sometimes ¶ And *spiritus iusticie* · shal iuggen, wolhe, nolhe,  
 fails. After þe kynges conseilie · & þe comune lyke.  
 Prudence may And *spiritus prudencie* · in many a poynte shal faille  
 also fail. Of þat he weneth wolde falle · if his wytte ne were. 32  
 Wenyng is no wysdome · ne wyse ymagynacioun,  
 Man proposes, *Homo proponit & deus disponit* · & gouerneth alle good  
 God disposes. vertues.  
 Ac nede is next hym · for anon he meketh, 35  
 And as low as a lombe · for lakkyng of þat hym nedeth.

16. *come*] *comeþ* B. *a*] B *om.*  
*cheuysaunce*] *che* (!) C.

17. *nymeth*] takes C.

18. *lyst*] *lif* (!) B. *for*] CBY *om.*

19. *dronke*] *drinke* O. *eche*] *ech* a  
 Y.

20. *at*] *at* (*printed* al) W.

22. *suwe*] *sewe* WC ; *sue* O ; *swe* Y.

23. *is*] *þer* is B.

24. *Neither*] Ne WO.

25. *forfaiteth*] *forfeteþ* WOYB ;  
*forfetes* C.

26. C *omits.* *more*] no more (!) B.

27. Here collation with Y ceases,  
 and with R recommences. *bete*] *bette*

C. *ouer bitter*] *ful bitterli* O ; *ouer-*  
*betterli* B. *of hem*] *body* R ; *but this*  
*is a C-text reading.*

28. *it*] COB *om.*

29. *wolhe nolhe*] *wol he nol he* R ;  
*wole he nel he* (*printed* *wol he nele*  
*he*) W ; *wole he or nyle he* O ; *wil he*  
*nyl he* B ; *wol wyl he nel he* (*sie*) C.

31. *a*] C *om.*

35. *Ae*] and R ; (*but* C has *Ae*).

36. *as* (1)] also B. *of*] R *om.*  
*After this line R has*—For nede  
*maketh nede · fele nedes lowh-heried.*  
*But this is a C-text line, and the*  
*second nede should be nedy.*

- Wyse men forsoke wele · for þey wolde be nedy,  
 And woneden in wildernesse · & wolde nouȝte be riche.  
 ¶ And god al his grete ioie · gostliche he left,  
 And cam & toke mankynde · and bycam nedy. 40  
 So nedy he was, as seyth þe boke · in many sondry  
 places,  
 þat he seyde in his sorwe · on þe selue Rode,  
 ‘Bothe fox & foule · may fleighe to hole & crepe,  
 And þe fisshe hath fyn · to flete with to reste, 44  
 þere nede hath ynome me · þat I mote nede abyde,  
 And suffre sorwes ful sowre · þat shal to ioie *tourne.*  
 For-þi be nouȝte abashed · to byd[de] and to be nedy ;  
 Syth he þat wrouȝte al þe worlde · was wilfullich nedy,  
 Ne neuer none so nedy · ne pouerere deyde.” 49  
 ¶ Whan nede had vndernome me þus · Anon I felle  
 aslepe,  
 And mette ful merueillously · þat, in mannes forme,  
 Antecryst cam þanne · and al þe crophe of treuthe 52  
 Torned it vp so doune · and ouertilte þe rote,  
 And [made] fals sprynge & sprede · & spede mennes  
 nedes ;  
 In eche a contre þere he cam · he cutte away treuthe,  
 And gert gyle growe þere · as he a god were. 56

37. *Wyse men*] Filsofres R (*as in* C-text). *forsoke*] forsoken OB. *wele*] welth R. C repeats this line.

38. *in wildernesse*] wel elengly R (*as in* C-text).

39. *god al*] þo god of B.

41. *nedy he was*] he was nedy R.

43. *foule*] foughel C ; gray B. *fleighe*] fle WRCO ; go B.

44. *to flete*] it fleet C ; þat it fletip B. *to* (2)] or to R.

46. *sowre*] sore B. *þat*] to B.

47. *bydde*] bidde RCOB ; bide W ; byde L.

49. *pouerere*] porere B ; also porer O.

50. *had*] haþ W. *me*] R om. I *felle*] I fel RC ; I fil W ; a fel B.

52. *al þe*] alle R ; al CB. *In margin of O*—Antecrist. *Ieronimus super illud Dan. 12. beatus qui expectat & peruenit vsque ad dies .1335. beatus, inquit, qui, interfecto antichristo, dies supra numerum prefinitum .45. pre-stolatur, quibus & dominus saluator in sua magestate venturus est.* [See S. Jerome on Dan. xii. 12.]

53. *it*] C om.

54. [*made* R] LWCOB om. *sprynge*] spronge O ; spryngeþ B. *sprede*] spredip B ; spredde O. *spede*] spedde COB.

55. *contre*] Court CB.

56. *gert*] syet or gyet (!) B. *growe*] grew B. *god*] god (*printed* Good) W.

- [Fol. 88.] Freres folwed þat fende · for he ȝaf hem copes,  
 Friars welcome Antichrist. And religiouse reuerenced hym · and rongen here belles,  
 And al þe couent forth cam · to welcome þat tyraunt,  
 And alle hise, as wel as hym · saue onlich folis ; 60  
 Only fools resist him. Which folis were wel leuer · to deye þan to lyue  
 [Lenger], sith [leute] · was so rebuked,  
 And a fals fende antecriste · ouer alle folke regned ;  
 And þat were mylde men & holy · þat no myschief  
 dredden, 64  
 Holy and true men are cursed by Antichrist's followers. Defyed al falsenesse · and folke þat it vsed,  
 And what Kynge þat hem confortet · knowynge hem  
 any while,  
 They cursed, and her conseille · were it clerke or lewed.  
 ¶ Antecriste hadde thus sone · hundredes at his  
 banere, 68  
 Pride bears Antichrist's banner. And Pryde it bare · boldely aboute,  
 With a lorde þat lyueth · after lykynge of body,  
 That cam aȝein conscience · þat kepere was & gyoure  
 Ouer kynde crystene · and cardynale vertues. 72  
 Conscience counsels the worldly-foolish to keep within the church. ¶ “ I conseille,” quod conscience þo · “ cometh with  
 me, ȝe folis,  
 In-to vnyte holy-cherche · and holde we vs there,  
 And crye we to kynde · þat he come & defende vs, 75  
 Foles, fro þis fendes lymes · for Piers loue þe plowman.  
 And crye we to alle þe comune · þat þei come to vnite,  
 And þere abide and bikere · aȝein beliales children.”  
 Nature hears Conscience, and ¶ Kynd conscience þo herde · and cam out of þe  
 planetes,

58. *religiouse*] religiouses R.  
 59. *forth*] R om. þat] a R.  
 60. *as* (1)] also B.  
 61. *wel leuer*] gladdere R.  
 62. [*Lenger* WCOB] Lengore LR,  
*sith*] þan O. [*leute*] leute or lente RB ;  
 lenten LWCO ; but cf. C-text, and see  
 l. 145. O has—Lenger þan lenten ·  
 to be so rebuked, *whieh agrees with*  
 Crowley. *rebuked*] robbid and reued  
 B.

63. *a*] as a W.  
 64. *And*] Saue W. *were*] we R.  
*myschief*] mesch of (!) B.  
 66. *any while*] gyle R.  
 69. *boldely*] ful buldli B.  
 70. *after*] after · lust & O.  
 71. *gyoure*] gwior R.  
 72. *cardynale*] cardinales R.  
 73. *cometh*] comes C.  
 76. *þis*] þe O. *fendes*] feend C.  
 77. *to* (1)] on R.

- And sent forth his foreiours · feures & fluxes, 80 sends forth his  
 Coughes, and cardiacles · crampes, and tothaches, messengers,  
 Rewmes, & radegoundes · and roynouse scalles,  
 Byles, and bocches · and brennyng agues ;  
 Frenesyas, & foule yueles · forageres of kynde, 84 viz. diseases,  
 Hadde yprykked and prayed · polles of peple,  
 þat largelich a legioun · lese her lyf sone. so that many die.  
 ¶ There was—"harrow and help! · here cometh  
 kynde,  
 With deth þat is dredful · to vndone vs alle!" 88  
 ¶ The lorde that lyued after lust · tho alowde cryde Lechery cries  
 After conforte, a knyghte · to come and bere his banere. after Comfort.  
 "Al-arme ! alarme !" quod þat lorde · "eche lyf kepe  
 his owne."  
 ¶ And þanne mette þis men · ar mynstralles myzte  
 pipe, 92  
 And ar heraudes of armes · hadden descreued lordes.  
 ¶ Elde þe hore · he was in þe vauntwarde, Eld (Old-age)  
 And bare þe banere bifor deth · by rihte he it claymed. bears Death's  
 Kynde come after · with many kene sores, 96 banner.  
 As pokkes and pestilences · and moche poeple shente ;  
 So kynde þorw corrupciouns · kulled ful manye. [Fol. 88 b.]  
 ¶ Deth cam dryuende after · and al to doust passhed Death dashes  
 Kynges & knyptes · kayseres and popes ; 100 kings and popes  
 Lered ne lewed · he let no man stonde, to dust.  
 That he hitte euene · þat euere stired after.

80. *foreiours*] forreyours W; forreouris O; forreores R.

82. *roynouse*] ronyouse C; ruy-nouse O. *scalles*] scabbes W.

85. *yprykked*] priked O. *of*] of the COB.

86. *þat*] R om. *lese*] lose R; loste W; loren CO; lorn B.

88. *vndone*] vndoen R; vndon CB; vndo WO.

90. *conforte a*] R om.

91. *Al-arme*] Alarme COB; A larme WR. *alarme*] a larme W.

92. *And*] R om.

94, 95. COB omit.

94. *hore*] horel R. *he*] þat W. *þe*] R om.

96. *come after*] cam after hym R.

97. *and*] þat O.

98. *kulled*] killede OB; kilde W.

99. *dryuende*] driuende R; dry-uyng WCOB. *doust*] duste WR; dust COB. *passhed*] paschte (*altered to daschte*) R; passid B.

101. *ne*] and W. *let*] leet WC; left R.

102. *hitte*] ne hitte O. *euere stired*] stirred neuer CB.

Many a louely lady · and lemmanes of knyghtes  
Swouned and swelted · for sorwe of dethes dyntes. 104

Conscience begs  
Nature to cease  
his plagues.

¶ Conscience of his curteisye · to kynde he bisouzte,  
To cesse & suffre · and see where þei wolde  
Leue pryde pryuely · and be parfite cristene.

¶ And kynde cessed tho · to se þe peple amende. 108

Then Fortune  
flatters the  
survivors.

Fortune gan flateren thenne · þo fewe þat wère alyue,  
And byhight hem longe lyf · and lecherye he sent,  
Amonges al manere men · wedded & vwedded,  
And gadered a gret hoste · al agayne conscience. 112

Lecherye arms  
himselȝ;

¶ This lecherye leyde on · with a laughyng chiere,  
And with pryue speche · and peynted wordes,  
And armed hym in ydelnesse · and in hiegh berynge.  
He bare a bowe in his hande · and manye bloody arwes,  
Weren fethered with faire biheste · and many a false  
truthe. 117

his arrows are  
feathered with  
false promisea.

Wit[h] his vntydy tales · he tened ful ofte  
Conscience and his compaignye · of holicherche þe  
techeres.

Avarice attacks  
Conscience.

¶ Thanne cam coueityse · and caste how he myzte 120  
Ouercome conscience · and cardynal vertues,  
And armed hym in auaryce · and hungriliche lyued.  
His wepne was al wiles · to wynnen & to hyden ;  
With glosynges and with gabbynges · he gyled þe  
peple. 124

Simony sends  
him to beguile  
men.

Symonye hym sent[e] · to assaille conscience,  
And preched to þe peple · and prelates þei hem maden,  
To holden with antecryste · her temperaltes to saue ;

103. *lady*] R *om.* of] R *om.*

104. *Swouned*] Swowed B. *dethes*  
dethe C ; hise W.

106. *cesse* &] se and to C ; see and  
B.

109. *alyue*] on lyue OB.

113. *a*] R *om.* *laughyng*] lawh-  
yng R ; lawyng O ; langlyng W.

116. *bloody*] brode W.

118. *With*] so in WCROB ; Wit  
L. *his*] R *om.*

121. *cardynal*] cardinales R.

122. *And*] B *om.* *hungriliche*] vngri-  
seliche R ; vngreliche C.

123. *wiles*] whyles O. *wynnen*] wy-  
nyng B. *hyden*] holden B.

124. *with* (2)] RCOB *om.* *he gyled*] to bigyle O.

125. *sent*] so in WCOB ; sent L ;  
sende R.

126. *þei*] CB *om.*

- And come to þe kynges conseilie · as a kene baroun,  
 And kneled to conscience · in courte afor hem alle,  
 And gart gode feith flee · and fals to abide, 130 He corrupts  
 And boldeliche bar adown · with many a briȝte Justice,  
 noble  
 Moche of þe witte and wisdomē · of westmynster both in West-  
 halle. minster Hall  
 He iugged til a iustice · and iusted in his ere, 133  
 And ouertilte al his treuthe · with “take þis vp amende-  
 ment.”  
 And to þe arches in haste · he ȝede anone after, and in the Court  
 And torned Ciuile in-to Symonye · and sitthe he toke of Arches.  
 þe official ; 136  
 For a [mantel] of menyuerē · he made lele matrimonye He contrives  
 Departen ar deth cam · & deuo[r]s shupte. divorces.  
 ¶ “Allas !” quod conscience, & cried þo · “wolde Conscience  
 criste, of his grace, 139 wishes Avarice  
 That coueityse were cristene · þat is so kene a fiȝter, would become a  
 And bolde and bidyng · while his bagge lasteth.” Christian.  
 ¶ And þanne lowgh lyf · and leet dagge his clothes, [Fol. 89.]  
 And armed hym in haste · in harlotes wordes, Life laughs,  
 And helde holynesse a iape · and hendenesse a  
 wastour, 144  
 And lete leute a cherle · and lyer a fre man ;  
 Conscience and conseilie · he counted it a folye. and counts  
 ¶ Thus relyed lyf · for a litel fortune, Conscience as  
 folly.
128. *come*] cam W ; coomen O.  
 129. *kneled*] kneleden O. *afor*] bifore C ; bi-forin B.  
 131. *a*] CB *om.* *briȝte*] rede R. noble] noblis B.  
 133. *iugged*] Iogged W. *til*] to WO.  
 134. *with*] B *om.* *vp*] vpon B.  
 135. *to*] into R.  
 136. *Ciuile in-to*] B *om.*  
 137. [*mantel* WCROB] mentel L. *mantel*—*menyuere*] menyuerē mantel R. *he*] and W. *lele*] an vnleele B ; a lele C.  
 138. *deuors*] deuos L ; a deuos R ; deuors W ; diuorce COB. *shupte*] schupte R ; shapte WC ; schapte O ; shappe B.  
 139. *his*] R *om.*  
 140. *a fiȝter*] to fiȝte R.  
 141. *bidyng*] abydyngē ROB. *while*] þe while R. *bagge*] bake C.  
 143. *in* (1)] an W. *in* (2)] wiþ W.  
 145. *leute*] leautee W ; leaute C.  
 146. *and*] and his W. *a*] RCOB *om.* *it—folye*] at a flye W.

And pryked forth with pryde · preyseth he no vertue,  
[Ne] careth nouzte how kynde slow · and shal come  
atte laste, 149

And culle alle erthely creature[s] · saue conscience  
oue.

Lyf leep asyde · and lauhte hym a lemman,  
“Heel & I,” quod he · “and hieghnesse of herte 152

Life takes  
Fortune for his  
mate,

Shal do þe nouzte drede · noyther deth ne elde,  
And to forzete sorwe · and 3yue nouzte of synne.”

and is the father  
of Sloth.

¶ This lyked lyf · and his lemman fortune,  
And geten in her glorie · a gadelyng atte laste, 156

Sloth marries  
Despair.

One þat moche wo wrouzte · sleuthe was his name.  
Sleuthe wex wonder 3erne · and sone was of age,

And wedded one wanhope · a wenche of þe stuwes.  
Her syre was a sysour · þat neure swore treuthe, 160

Sloth uses his  
sling against  
Conscience.

One Thomme two-tonge · ateynte at vch a queste.

¶ This sleuthe was war of werre · and a slynge made,  
And threwe drede of dyspayre · a dozein myle aboute.

For care conscience þo · cryed vpon elde, 164  
And bad hym fonde to fyzte · and afere wanhope.

¶ And elde hent good hope · and hastilich he shifte  
hym,

Eld fights against  
Life.

And wayued away wanhope · and with lyf he fyzteth,  
And lyf fleigh for fere · to fysyke after helpe, 168

Life flees to  
physicians.

And bisouzte hym of socoure · and of his salue hadde,  
And gaf hym golde, good woon · þat gladded his herte,  
And þei gyuen hym agayne · a glasen houue.

148. *pryked*] prikeþ W.

149. [*Ne WR*] He CO : And B ; A  
(= he) L. *slow*] slawe C. *slow—  
come*] shal come · and sle hym B.

150. *culle*] kille WCOB ; calle R.  
*creatures*] so in WCOB ; creature  
LR.

151. *leep*] lep CB ; lepte W. *leep  
asyde*] seith *occide* (!) R.

154. *And*] But O.

157. *wo*] R om.

159. *stoures*] stif-hous B.

161. *two-tonge*] two-tonges B. a

*queste*] enqueste W.

162. *was*] wex COB. *war—nerre*]  
werre & werre O.

163. *threwe*] drow B. *of*] & O.

165. *hym*] R om.

166. *elde*] helpe B. *he*] O om.

*shifte*] chifte B.

167. *fyzteth*] foughted CB.

169. *hadde*] he hadde W.

170. *And*] He W. *golde*] goel R.

*his herte*] here hertes R.

171. *gyuen*] gafyn B. *houue*] howue  
WCOB ; houe R.

Lyf leued þat lechecraftē · lette shulde elde, 172  
 And dryuen away deth · with dyas and dragges.

¶ And elde aunted hym on lyf · and atte laste he hitte Eld kills a  
physician.  
 A Fisciē with a forred hood · þat he fel in a palsye,  
 And þere deyed þat doctour · ar thre dayes after. 176

“ Now I see,” seyde lyf · “ þat surgerye ne Fisyke Life is careless,  
and rides to  
Revel.  
 May nouȝte a myte auaille · to medle aȝein elde ;”  
 And in hope of his hele · gode herte he hente,  
 And rode so to reuel · a ryche place and a merye, 180

The companye of confortē · men cleped it sumtyme. [Fol. 89 b.]  
 And elde anone after me · and ouer myne heed ȝede, Eld attacked me,  
and made me bald.  
 And made me balled bifore · and bare on þe crowne,  
 So harde he ȝede ouer myn hed · it wil be seen eure.

¶ “ Sire euel-ytauȝte elde,” quod I · “ vnhende go with I reproved him.  
 the ! 185

Sith whanne was þe way · ouer [mennes] hedes ?  
 Haddestow be hende,” quod I · “ þow woldest haue  
 asked leue !”

¶ “ Ȝe ! leue lordeyne,” quod he · and leyde on me with  
 age, 188

And hitte me vnder þe ere · vnethe may ich here ; Then he made  
me deaf,  
beat out my teeth,  
and lamed me  
with gout.  
 He buffeted me aboute þe mouthe · & bett[e] out my tethe,  
 And gyued me in goutes · I may nouȝte go at large.  
 And of þe wo þat I was in · my wyf had reuthe, 192  
 And wissed ful witterly · þat I were in heuene.

173. *dryuen*] to-driue R. *dyas*] *so*  
*in* W; *dias* CO; *dayes* R; *diagrag-*  
*mator* (!) B. *dragges*] *drogges* W.

174. *auntred*] *aduenturid* B. *hitte*] *hette* B.

175. *a* (3)] the CB; O *om.*

177. *surgerye*] *surgiens* CB.

178. *a*] oo B. *medle*] *medele* CO;  
*mede* W.

179. *herte*] hope O. *he*] RB *om.*

180. *so*] forþ W. *reuel*] a *reuel*  
 W.

181. *conforte*] court CO; court of  
 (!) B. *men*] B *om.*

182. *me*] hym R. *ȝede*] he ȝede O.

183. *on*] vppon B.

184. *eure*] *euene* B.

186. *þe*] þi O. [*mennes*] *so in*  
 WCROB; men L; cf. l. 286.

188. *lordeyne*] *so in* R; *lurdeyn*  
 W; *lordyng* COB.

189. *may*] *myȝte* W; *but see* l. 191.

190. *me*] me so W. *bette* WCO]  
*bett* L; bet RB. *out my*] me on the  
 COB. *tethe*] wange-tethe R. *ȝ-*  
*tethe*] þat out my teetþ he *bette* W.

191. *gyued*] *gyede* O.

192. *had*] hadde (*printed* hande)  
 W.

193. *ful*] *wel* R.

For þe lyme þat she loued me fore · and leef was to fele,  
 On nyȝtes namely · whan we naked were,  
 I ne myght in no manere · maken it at hir wille, 196  
 So elde and she sothly · hadden it forbeten.

Death drew nigh  
 me, and I begged  
 Nature to release  
 me.

¶ And as I seet in þis sorwe · I say how kynde passed,  
 And deth drowgh niegh me · for drede gan I quake,  
 And cried to kynde · out of care me brynge. 200  
 “Loo! elde þe hoore · hath me biseye,  
 Awreke me, if ȝowre wille be · for I wolde ben  
 hennes.”

He bade me dwell  
 in Unity,

¶ “ȝif þow wilt ben ywroken · wende in-to vnite,  
 And holde þe þere eure · tyl I sende for þe, 204  
 And loke þow conne *somme* crafte · ar þow come þennes.”  
 “Conseille me, kynde,” quod I · “what crafte is best to  
 lerne?”

and learn to love,

¶ “Lerne to loue,” quod kynde · “& leue of alle  
 othre.”

¶ “How shal I come to catel so · to clothe me and to  
 fede?” 208

and then I should  
 lack nothing.

“And þow loue lelly,” quod he · “lakke shal þe neure  
 Mete ne wor[l]dly wede · whil þi lyf lasteth.”

¶ And þere, by conseilte of kynde · I comsed to rowme  
 Thorw contricioun & confessioun · tyl I cam to vnite ;  
 And þere was conscience constable · cristene to saue,  
 And biseged sothly · with seuene grete gyauntz, 214  
 þat with Antecrist helden · hard aȝein conscience.

I found Unity  
 besieged by seven  
 giants and Anti-  
 christ.

194. *lyme*] leeme B.  
 195. *we*] sehe O.  
 196. *at*] B om.  
 197. *she—forbeten*] hee it hadde  
 forbete R. *forbeten*] for-boden B.  
 198. *as*] was (!) R. *sect*] so in  
 WR; sat CB; satte O. *say*] so in  
 R; seyȝ O; seigh C; sauȝ WB.  
 201. *me biseye*] my lif seye R.  
 203. *ȝwroken*] I-wreke R; wroken  
 W; wroke B.  
 204. *holde*] halde R.  
 205. *conne*] cunne OB; cune R.  
*ar*] er WB; or CO.

206. *Conseille*] Conseileth R. *is*  
 be R.  
 207. *leue*] lief C; leef W. *of*] R  
 om.  
 209. *quod he*] quod I B; R om.  
 210. *Mete*] Wede R. *worldly*  
 WROB] worldly LC; but cf. P. xix.  
 287. *wede*] mete R.  
 211. *I*] R om. *rowme*] roome O;  
 rome WCRB.  
 213. *conscience*] R om. *to*] for to  
 O.  
 214. *gyauntz*] geauntz W; geauntes  
 RCO; giauntes B.

- ¶ Sleuth with his slyuge · an hard saut he made, 216 Sloth led the assault,  
Proude prestes come with hym · moo þan a thousand, with Avarice.  
In paltokes & pyked shoes · & pisseres longe knyues,  
Comen aȝein conscience ; · with coueityse þei helden.
- ¶ “By Marie,” quod a mansed preste · of þe marche of [Fol. 90.]  
yrlonde, 220 An Irish priest  
despises Con-  
science.
- “I counte namore conscience · bi so I cacche syluer,  
Than I do to drynke · a drauȝte of good ale !”
- And so seide sixty · of þe same contreye, 223
- And shoten aȝein with shotte · many a shef of othes, Oaths are shot  
And brode hoked arwes · goddes herte, & his nayles, against Con-  
And hadden almost vnyte · and holynesse adowne. science.
- ¶ Conscience cryed, “helpe · clergye, or ellis I falle  
Thorw inparfit prestes · and prelates of holieherche.” Conscience  
cries for help.
- Freres herden hym crye · and comen hym to helpe, The friars offer  
Ac for þei couth nouȝte wel her craft · conscience for- him aid.  
soke hem. 230
- ¶ Nede neghed tho nere · and conscience he tolde  
That þei come for coueityse · to haue cure of soules— Need warns  
Conscience  
against the friars.
- “And for þei arn poure, par auenture · for patrimoigne  
hem failleth, 233
- Thei wil flatre, to fare wel · folke þat ben riche ;  
And sithen þei chosen chele · and [cheytif] pouerte,  
Lat hem chewe as þei chese · and charge hem with no  
cure ! 236 “Let them chew  
as they choose !”

216. *an*] and (!) CB. *saut*] saute R; assault WCOB. *he*] COB om.

217. *moo—thousand*] passynge a hundreth R; a correction made by the author; see C-Text.

218. *pisseres*] pissaris WB; pissers CO.

219. *helden*] holde B.

220. *Marie*] þe marie R. *mansed*] mased CB. *of*] was of R. *yrlonde*] erland R; Irlande CB; irloond O; Walys W.

221. *namore*] no more bi OB. I (2)] þat y B.

224. *aȝein*] aȝein hym COB. *many—shef*] with many schef COB. *of*

*othes*] arwes B.

225. *nayles*] bones B.

229. *and*] B om.

230. *Ac*] And COB.

231. *tho*] to C. *nere*] þere B.

232. *for*] for no (!) R.

233. *hem failleth*] þei faille W.

234. *to*] and W. *folke*] wip folk W.

235. *sithen*] seyn CB. [*cheytif*] cheitif C; chaytif O; cheytfite LR; cheitifite W (*which must be a slip*). *cheytif pouerte*] pore cheitifite B.

236. *chese*] so in R; chose W; chosen COB.

- i sepius*
- For lomer he lyeth · þat lyflode mote begge,  
 þan he þat laboureth for lyflode · & leneth it beggeres.  
 And sithen Freres forsokē · þe felicite of erthe,  
 Lat hem be as beggeres · or lyue by angeles fode!" 240
- ¶ Conscience of þis conseille þo · comsed forto laughe,  
 And curtei[s]lich confortēd hem · and called in alle  
 freres,  
 And seide, "sires, sothly · welcome be ȝe alle  
 To vnite and holicherche · ac on thyng I ȝow preye,  
 Holdeth ȝow in vnite · and haueth none envye 245  
 To lered ne to lewed · but lyueth after ȝowre rewle.
- And I wil be ȝowre borghe · ȝe shal haue bred and  
 clothes,  
 And other necessaries [I-nowe] · ȝow shal no thyng  
 faille, 248
- With þat ȝe leue logyk · and lerneth for to louye.  
 For loue laft þei lordship · bothe londe and scole,  
 Frere Fraunceys and Dominyk · for loue to ben holy.  
 ¶ And if ȝe coueyteth cure · kynde wil ȝow teche, 252  
 That in mesure god made · alle manere thynges,  
 And sette [hem] at a certeyne · and at a syker noumbre,  
 And nempned names newe · and noumbred þe sterres ;  
 Qui numerat multitudinem stellarum, & omnibus  
 eis [nomina vocat], &c.
- ¶ Kynges & knyghtes · þat kepen and defenden, 256  
 Han officers vnder hem · and vch of hem certeyne ;
- 237, 238. R omits. *begge*] bigge O.  
*it*] it to O.  
 239. *And sithen*] For sith R. *þe*] R om.  
 241. *þo*] R om. *laughe*] lauzte (!)  
 B.  
 242. *curteislich*] curteilich (marked  
 for correction) L.  
 244. *and*] and to C. *ac*] and C.  
 247. *shal*] shullen B.  
 248. [I-nowe R] I-now C; ynowe  
 WOB; better than anowe L. *ȝow  
 shal*] þow schalt R. *faille*] lakke R.  
 250. *laft*] fer-of lofte B.
251. *Frere*] Freres COB.  
 252. *coueyteth*] coueites C; coueite  
 WOR. *teche*] telle R.  
 253. *thynges*] þynge B.  
 254. [*hem* W] it LCROB. at (2).  
 WO om. a (2) C om.  
 255. *names — noumbred*] hem  
 names · and neue nombre R. *sterres*]  
 prestes (!) COB. *Qui*] Quis R. &—  
*eis*] RO om. [nomina CB] LWRO  
 om. [*vocat*] not in the MSS.  
 256. *kepen*] kepten R.  
 257. *hem* (1)] hym RB. *vch*] of  
 iche O. *certeyne*] a certein WOB.
- Let friars be  
 beggars."
- But Conscience  
 welcomes the  
 friars,
- and offers to find  
 them food,
- if they will learn  
 to love.
- God made all  
 things of a certain  
 number.
- Ps. cxlvi. 4  
 (Vulg.).
- Kings have  
 all their soldiers  
 numbered.

And if þei wage men to werre · þei write hem in  
noubre,

[Or] wil no tresorerer hem paye · trauaille þei neure so  
sore.

Alle other in bataille · ben yholde bribours, 260  
Pilours and pykehernois · in eche a place yeursed. [Fol. 90 b.]

¶ Monkes and monyals · and alle men of Religioun Monks have  
Her ordre and her reule wil · to han a certeyne fixed numbers  
noubre. in their houses.

Of lewed and of lered · þe lawe wol and axeth 264  
A certeyn for a certeyne · saue onelich of freres. Only friars are  
unnumbered.

For-þi," quod conscience, "by cryst · kynde witte me  
telleth,

It is wikked to wage 3ow · 3e wexeth out of noumbre!  
Heuene hath euene noumbre · and helle is with-out  
noubre ; 268  
Hell is without  
number.

For-þi I wolde witterly · þat 3e were in þe Registre,  
And 3owre noumbre vndre notarie[s] sygne · & noyther  
mo ne lasse !"

¶ Enuye herd þis · and heet freres to go to scole, 271 Envy bids the  
friars learn logic,  
And lerne logyk and lawe · and eke contemplacioun,  
And preche men of plato · and preue it by Seneca,

þat alle þinges vnder heuene · ouzte to ben in comune. to prove that all  
things should be  
in comun.

¶ And 3it he lyeth, as I leue · þat to þe lewed so  
precheth, 275

259. [Or] LWCROB omit; but it  
is necessary to the sense, and may be  
found in Crowley; WOB surmount the  
difficulty by placing l. 259 after l.  
261; the C-text inserts an additional  
line. Or wil] And þer-fore wolen  
men B. tresorerer] so in R; tresour-  
er O; tresore CB; man tresore W.  
hem paye] taken hym wages R. so  
sore] C om.

260. bataille] batililis (!) B. bri-  
bours] brokouris O.

261. a] CB om. place] parische  
R. yeursed] acursed ROB; a-corsed  
C.

263. Her ordre and] Heraude (!)

R.

264. wol] it wole O.

265. onelich] holiche B.

267. out of] of on R.

268. Heuene] Euene O.

269. þe] O om.

270. notaries] so in WCOB; notarie  
L; notari R. sygne] signes CB.

271. heet] heit R; het B; leete O.  
to (1)] RB om.; and perhaps it is  
better omitted.

272. contemplacioun] constellation  
(!) O.

274. alle] CB om. to] O om.

275. And 3it] R om.

- For god made to men a lawe · and Moyses it tauȝte,  
 Exod. xx. 17. *Non concupisces rem proximi tui.*  
 And euele is þis yholde · in parishes of engelonde,  
 In England, the parish-priests should confess men;  
 For persones and parishprestes · þat shulde þe peple  
 shryue, 278  
 Ben curatoures called · to knowe and to hele,  
 Alle þat ben her parissiens · penaunce to enioigne,  
 And shulden be ashamed in her shrifte; · ac shame  
 maketh hem wende, 281  
 And fleen to þe freres · as fals folke to westmynstre,  
 but men flee to the friars,  
 That borweth and bereth it þider · and þanne biddeth  
 frendes  
 ȝerne of forȝifnesse · or lenger ȝeres [lone]; 284  
 ¶ Ac whil he is in westmynstre · he wil be bifore,  
 like cheats who flee to Westminster.  
 And make hym merye · with other mennes goodis.  
 And so it fareth with moche folke · þat to þe freres  
 shryueth,  
 As sysours and excecutoours · þei wil [ȝyue þe]  
 freres 288  
 A parcel to preye for hem · & make hem-self myrye  
 With þe residue and þe remenaunt · þat other men  
 biswonke,  
 And suffre þe ded in dette · to þe day of dome.  
 Envy hates Conscience.  
 ¶ Enuye herfore · hated conscience, 292  
 And freres to filosofye · he fonde hem to scole,

276. *god made*] made god B.  
 277. *is*] is (*printed in*) W. *yholde*] golden B. *engelonde*] englonde R; englund OB.  
 278. *shulde*] shullen B.  
 279. *to* (2)] B *om.*  
 280. *penaunce*] penaunces R. *to*] hem to B; and C; R *om.*  
 281. *shulden*] shullen B; R *om.* *her*] hir (*printed his*) W. *ac*] and C.  
 282. *And*] To CB. *as*] and B. *westmynstre*] Westmynyster O.  
 283. *it*] COB *om.*  
 284. [*lone* O] loone WC; of lone

B; leue or lene LR.  
 285. *westmynstre*] Westmynyster OB.  
 286. *mennes*] men R.  
 287. *þe*] R *om.* *shryueth*] hem shryueþ WO.  
 288. *wil*] schul R. [*ȝyue þe* WRO] ȝeue þe B; geue þe C; L *has þe*, *with ue written above*, but the line is marked for correction.  
 289. *hem-self*] hem R.  
 290. *þe* (1)] R *om.* *þe* (2)] R *om.*  
 292. *herfore*] here-fore CR.  
 293. *philosofye*] philosophires C. *hem*] þanne W; O *om.*

The while coueytise and vnkyndenesse · conscience as-  
sailed.

In vnite holycherche · conscience helde hym,

And made pees porter · to pynne þe zates

296 Conscience bids  
Peace, his porter,  
to bar the gates of  
Unity.

Of alle taletellers · and tyterers in ydel.

Ypocryse and he · an hard saut þei made.

Ypocrysie atte zate · hard gan fize,

And wounded wel wykkedly · many [a] wise techer,

Hypocrisy harms  
many.

þat with conscience acorded · and cardinale vertues.

Conscience called a leche · þat coude wel shryue,

302 [Fol. 91.]

“Go salue þo þat syke ben · [and] þorw synne  
ywounded.”

Shrifte shope sharpe salue · and made men do penaunce

Shrift salves them  
with penance.

For her mysdedes · þat þei wrouzte hadden,

305

And þat piers were payed · *redde quod debes.*

Mat. xviii. 28.

¶ Somme lyked nouzte þis leche · and lettres þei sent,

They like not  
Shrift's plasters.

þif any surgien were [in] þe sege · þat softer couth  
plastre.

308

Sire lief-to-lyue-in-leecherye · lay þere and groned ;

For fastyng of a fryday · he ferde as he wolde deye.

“ Ther is a surgiene in þis sege · þat soft[e] can handle,

They ask for  
another leech, one  
Flatterer, a friar.

And more of phisyke bi fer · and fairer he plastreth,

One frere flaterere · is plisiciene and surgiene.”

313

Quod contricioun to conscience · “ do hym come to  
vnyte,

294. *conscience*] B om.

296. *pynne*] penne B.

297. *Of*] For O. *tyterers*] so in  
O; *tytereres* RB; *titeleris* W; *tuteleris*  
C. *in*] an R.

298. *an hard*] and haid (!) B.  
*saut*] sawte R; *saute* O; *assaut* WCB.

299. W *omits. atte*] at þe RCOB.  
*fize*] to fize OB.

300. [*a WRB*] LCO om. *techer*] *techeris* O.

301. *cardinale*] *cardinales* R.

302. *coude wcl*] wel kouthe COB.

303. *Go*] To go W; To CB. *ben*] *were* R. [*and WR*] LCOB om.

*ywounded*] & *woundid* O.

304. *shope*] *shoop* W; *shuppte* R;  
*shep* B. *men*] B om.

306. *piers*] *Pieris* þe ploughman  
B; *piers* þe (!) C. *payed*] *y-payed*  
W.

308. [*in* R] LWCOB om.; *but see*  
l. 311. *þe sege*] B om. *sege*] so in R;  
*segge* WCO. *couth*] *koude* WR.

309. *licf*] *lif* R; *leef* WCO.

310. *Fbr*] For þe B. *a*] o R.

311. *soft[e]*] so in WRCOB; *soft* L.

312. *more*] can more B.

314. *Quod*] *Quatz* R.

For here is many a man · herte þow ypoerisie.”

Conscience says  
the parish-priest  
is the right  
confessor;

¶ “ We han no nede,” quod conscience · “ I wote no  
better leche 316

Than persoun or parissch prest · penytauncere or bisshop,  
Saue Piers þe plowman · þat hath powere ouer hem alle,  
And indulgence may do · but if dette lette it. 319

but Flatterer may  
be sent for.

I may wel suffre,” seyde conscience · “ syn ze desiren,  
That frere flaterer be fette · and phisike 3ow syke.”

The friar gets a  
licence to hear  
confessions.

¶ The Frere her-of herde · and hyed faste  
To a lorde for a *lettre* · leue to haue to curen,  
As a curatour he were · and cam with his *lettres* 324

Baldly to þe bisshop · & his brief hadde,  
In contrees þere he come in · confessiouns to here,  
And cam þere conscience was · and knocked atte 3ate.

Peace, the  
porter of Unity,  
parleys with  
Flatterer.

¶ Pees vnpynned it · was porter of vnyte, 328  
And in haste asked · “ what his wille were ?”

“ In faith,” quod þis frere · “ for profit and for helthe  
Carpe I wolde with contricioun · & þefore come I  
hider.” 331

Flatterer says he  
can make salves,  
and his com-  
panion tells his  
name.

¶ “ He is sike,” seide pees · “ and so ar many other,  
Ypoerisie hath herte hem · ful harde is if þei keure.”

“ I am a surgien,” seide þe segge · “ and salues can make ;  
Conscience knoweth me wel · and what I can do bothe.”

“ I preye þe,” quod pees þo · “ ar þow passe ferther,  
What hattestow, I preye þe ? · hele nouzte þi name.”

2 Tim. iii. 6.

¶ “ Certes,” seyde his felow · “ sire *penetrans-domos*.”

317. *penytancere*] penitauncer WC  
OB; penauncer R; *resembles* peny-  
tancere in L.

318. *hath*] haueth R. *hem*] R om.

320. *syn*] synnes R; sith C; siþe  
B.

321. *syke*] seke R.

322. *hyed*] hized hym B.

323. *to euren*] curen C; cure OB.

324. *As*] And as CB. *lettres*] let-  
tere R.

325. *Baldly*] Boldely WCRB;  
Booldli O.

326. *come*] cam RCB; come WO.

*in*] Inne COB; WR om. *confes-  
siouns*] confessioun O. *to here*] R  
om.

327. *atte*] at þe WCROB.

328. *Pees*] Pieris B.

330. *frere*] freris B. *helthe*] hele  
O.

333. *is*] it is B.

334. *seide*] y (!) B. *segge*] frere  
R.

337. *hattestow*] hattest þou OB.

338. *Certes*] Sire B. *seyde—felow*]  
felow seyde he O; saide he felawe C.

“Ȝe, go þi gate,” quod pees · “bi god, for al þi phisyk,  
But þow conne somme crafte · þow comest nouȝt her-  
Inne ! 340

Peace refuses to admit him.

I knewe such one ones · nouȝte eighte wynter passed,  
Come in þus ycoped · at a courte þere I dwelt,  
And was my lordes leche · & my ladyes bothe.  
And at þe last þis limitour · þo my lorde was out, 344  
He salued so owre wommen · til somme were with  
childe !”

[Fol. 91 b.]

Hende-speche het pees · opene þe ȝates—  
“Late in þe frere and his felawe · and make hem faire  
chere.

Fair-Speech prays  
Peace to open the  
gates.

He may se and here · so it may bifalle, 348  
That lyf þorw his lore · shal leue coueityse,  
And be adradde of deth · and with-drawe hym fram  
pryde,  
And acorde with conscience · and kisse her either  
other.”

Thus thorw hende-speche · entred þe frere, 352  
And cam in-to conscience · and curteisly hym grette,  
“þow art welcome,” quod conscience · “canstow hele  
þe syke ?

Thus the friar  
gains admission.

Here is contricioun,” quod conscience · “my cosyng,  
ywounded,  
Conforte hym,” quod conscience · “and take kepe to  
his sores ; 356

Conscience asks  
the friar to heal  
Contrition.

The plastres of þe persoun · and poudres biten to  
sore,

339. *pees*] piers CB. *þi* (2)] B om. vpon B.

340. *somme*] any R ; som ooper W.  
*her-Inne*] he Inne (*sic*) R ; ther-Inne  
CB.

341. *passed*] hennes W.

342. *Come*] And cam B. *I*] þat  
y B. *dwelt*] dwelde W.

343. *lordes*] ladyes CB ; lady O.  
*ladyes*] lordes C ; lordis OB.

346. *het*] heet WRC ; heete O.  
*pees*] pees bo R. *opene*] to opene O ;

347. *þe*] R om.

348. *here*] here her R. *it*] R om.

351. *her*] B om.

353. *grette*] grete C.

354. *canstow*] canst þou OB. *þe*]  
R om.

356. *and*] O om.

357. *plastres*] plastre B. *biten*]  
bitten C ; ben R.

He lat hem ligge ouerlonge · and loth is to chaunge  
hem ;

Fro lenten to lenten · he lat his plastres bite."

¶ "That is ouerlonge," quod this limitour · "I leue I  
shal amende it ;"— 360

The friar gives  
Contrition a  
plaster called  
Privy-payment.

And goth and gropeth contricioun · and gaf hym a  
plastre

Of "a pryue payement · and I shal praye for 3ow,  
For alle þat 3e ben holde to · al my lyf tyme,  
And make 3ow, my lady · in masse and in matynes,  
As freres of owre fraternite · for a litel syluer." 365

He soon causes  
Contrition to  
cease weeping for  
his sins.

¶ Thus he goth and gadereth · and gloseth þere he  
shryueth,

Tyl contricioun hadde elene forȝeten · to crye & to wepe,  
And wake for his wykked werkes · as he was wont to  
done. 368

For confort of his confessour · contricioun he lafte,  
þat is þe souereynest salue · for alkyn synnes.

Sloth and Pride  
again assault  
Conscience.

¶ Sleuth seigh þat · and so did pryde,  
And come with a kene wille · conscience to assaille.  
Conscience cryde eft · and bad clergye help hym, 373  
And also contricioun · forto kepe þe 3ate.

Peace says  
Contrition is  
asleep.

"He lith and dremeth," seyde pees · "and so do many  
other ;

The Frere with his phisik · þis folke hath enchaunted,  
And plastred hem so esyly · þei drede no synne." 377

Conscience says  
he will become a  
pilgrim,

¶ "Bi cryste," quod conscience þo · "I wil bicome a  
pilgryme,

358. *He*] And R. *lat*] leet C ;  
leete O ; lett B. *hem* (1)] hym C.

359. *lenten*] lente R (*twice*). *lat*] latte O ; lette R ; letip B. *bite*] bitte R.

360. *That*] This C.

361. *and* (2)] R om.

363. *For*] And for COB.

365. *freres*] frere WO.

366. *goth*] goop WO ; goos C.  
*gadereth*] gadderes C.

368. *wake*] awake C ; a-wakid B.  
*was wont*] was woned B ; woned R.

369. *lafte*] lefte R.

370. *for*] of O. *alkyn*] alle kynne  
WROB ; alkynne C.

371. *seigh*] seye R ; see C ; sei B ;  
þanne saw O. *so*] also O.

373. *hym*] COB om.

375. *dremeth*] dreint (!) B.

376. *hath*] hath so R.

377. *esyly*] hesily RB. *þei*] the C.

And walken as wyde · as al þe [worlde] lasteth,  
 To seke Piers þe plowman · þat pryde may destruye, and seek Piers  
the Plowman.  
 And þat freres hadde a fyndyng · þat for nede flateren.  
 And contrepleteth me, conscience ; · now kynde me  
 auenge, 382  
 And sende me happe and hele · til I haue piers þe  
 plowman ! ”  
 And sitthe he gradde after grace · til I gan awake. The dreamer  
awakes.

*Explicit hic dialogus petri plowman.*

379. *as* (1)] *al* so B. *a]* alle R ; 382. *contrepleteth*] conterpledes C.  
 WO *om.* [*worlde* R] world WCOB ; COLOPHON. *So in* WCO ; *Explicit*  
 wordle L. hic B ; *Passus ihus de Do-best* R ; O  
 380. *seke*] *seche* B. *may*] *myȝte* R. *adds*—*Lauderis* *Christe* · *quia* *finitur*  
 381. *And*] B *om.* *liber iste.*

CRITICAL NOTES, ETC.

## CRITICAL NOTES.

[In the following notes, further information is given about the various readings of the MSS., &c. The chief results of a collation of the text with Crowley's printed text of 1550 (*first* edition, unless the number 2 or 3 is added) are also given here; except where it agrees with MS. W (the Trinity MS. printed by Mr Wright.)]

PROLOGUE. The word *Prologus* I have found in only one MS., viz. in MS. Rawl. Poet. 137. Most MSS. have no title here. In MS. Land the words "Incipit liber de Petro Plowman" are written in red letters, but are so nearly obliterated as hardly to be distinguished except in a strong light.

An examination of Crowley's text shows that it must have been taken from an excellent MS., which has frequently, however, been misread, and sometimes misprinted even when rightly understood. Sometimes the MS. itself may have been at fault. Owing to all these three sources of error, very little reliance can be placed upon the readings, and I have therefore selected some of the most noteworthy, omitting to notice all the misprints and false readings, such as *reuke* for *renke* in l. 192 of the Prologue, and the like. Readings from Crowley's first edition are given below, and are distinguished by the absence of any letter or number after them, as in notes to lines 1, 2, &c. But some readings from his other editions are also worth giving. His *second* issue is denoted by (2), his *third* issue by (3). Thus in l. 1, his *first* issue has *sette*, his *second* has *set*.

1. *soft*] *sette*; *set* (2).

2. *shroudes*] *shroubes*.

5. *Ac*] *And*. This reading is very common in Crowley; so also in MS. C we find *Ac* almost always replaced by *And*.

7. *forwanded*] of *wandrynge*.

10. *sweyued*] *swy;cd*.

12. *wist I*] *I wyste*.

18. *of*] *Cr. omits* in (2); but the *first* edition retains it. Slight variations of this kind I shall not in future notice; nor shall I, in general, give those readings in which Crowley's text agrees with MS. W, as it has already been observed that there is a great similarity between Crowley's MS. and the Trinity one. By way of examples of which, it may be noted that in l. 27 we find in Crowley the words *to haue after*; in l. 29 we find *carien*; in l. 31, *cheueden*; all of which are found in the footnotes as occurring in W.

24. *comen*] *comenly*.

34. *synneles*. Certainly *gittles*, as in Rogers's edition, is a better reading, because it preserves the alliteration; but *synneles* has been retained as being the usual reading of the MSS.; and moreover, Crowley has *synles*, or *sintles*. In the A-text, *gittles* occurs in MS. T only.

35. In the margin of MS. Oriel are numerous sidenotes, such as "Minystralis" opposite l. 33, "Pilgrimys" opposite l. 46, &c. So in Crowley's text we find "Common Iestars" opposite the present line, "Pylgrims" opposite l. 46, &c. Further notice of them, except in a few instances, is unnecessary.

38. The text referred to is probably 2 Thess. iii. 10; *si quis non vult operari, nec manducet*. This is shewn by the words in the margin of the Oriel MS. (see footnote). The quotation in l. 39 is not from the Bible, but is intended to assign a reason for *not* mentioning St Paul's words.

39. *hyne*] *knaue* (2). Crowley's first edition merely has *turpiloquium*, &c.

41. *bely* is the usual reading, but perhaps *belies* (W) is better, and is supported by *bealies* in Crowley. Crowley also has *bagges*.

43. *lij*. So written; *ij* stands for *y*.

50. The obelus (†) in the sidenote points out *new matter, not found in Text A*

69. *wilh*] *with* many.

71. See Critical Note to l. 68, Text A.

74. *bonched*] *bouchid*. But we must read *bonched* (as in Text A), as shewn by the word *bunchede* in MS. O.

75. *rynges*] both *ringes*.

77. *leueth*] *leueth* it to. But most MSS. omit *it* and *to*, and then we should rather suppose *leueth* = *believe*, as in l. 72.

82. The chief-letter of the alliteration is wanting.

95. *seruantz*. The MS. has "seruantz," but we may consider *z* to represent *z* at the end of plural nouns, as in the present case and in the words *diamantz*, *seriantz*, &c. In Crowley the line ends with *to lordes and to ladyes*.

97. *messe*] *masses*.

110. *letterare*] *lecture*; *lecture* (2). Probably from misreading *letterure*.

115. *comune*] *communes*; *commons* (2).

122. The chief-letter is wanting. Without doubt we should read *lif*, *not man*; for Langland often uses *lif* in place of *man*. See, e. g., Pass. xx. 91.

126. *leue*; so in Crowley. Mr Wright prints *lene*, but *lene* = *grant*, *give*, in the sense of bestowing a present, and is a variation of the verb *lend*. On the other hand, *leue* = *grant* in the sense of to permit, allow. The former answers to the German *leihen*, the latter to the German *erlauben*, and the two should not be confounded, as they often have been in many passages in Chaucer, &c. In Text A, Pass. V. last line, *lene* should have been printed

*leue*, both in the text and footnote. See my note on *lene* and *leue* in Notes and Queries, 4 S. ii. 126.

140. Crowley has *answered*, and begins the next line with *Dun*.

150. *lauzfe*] caught. This destroys the alliteration.

154. Crowley has—Scratchyng vs & clawyng vs, & in hys clawes hold.

165. *beiz*] bight.

169. *a colere*] hys collar.

170. Crowley *retains* this line, though MS. *W* omits it.

174. *him wrattheth*] he wrath.

178. *haue ybounden*] bynd.

179. Crowley inserts *it* after *hang*.

185. *culled þe*] kyl thys.

186. *cracchy*] catch. *croupe*] crep.

187. Crowley's later impressions omit this line, but the *first* impression retains it.

190. *þere*] Where. *kitoun*] kylling (*sic*); kitling (2).

191. Crowley has this curious sidenote. "Omnium doctissimorum suffragio, dicuntur hec de lassius, fatuis, aut ineptis principibus, non de etate tenellis. Quasi dicat, vbi rex puerilis est." This is evidently said out of respect to the reigning king, Edward VI. Crowley is, however, certainly wrong in his assertion. The author's intention was, to warn the English against Richard; and Tyrwhitt is nearly right in saying that this fable must have been written in the latter part of A.D. 1376, when, after the death of the Black Prince, his son Richard had become the heir. More probably, it was written just after Richard's accession.

197. MSS. L and R have the curious spelling "mannus." A more usual reading is "mannes."

199. *3ow*] vs.

200. *3e*] you; in both places. This must be an instance where Crowley has taken a liberty, for *you* would not be used in the nominative in an early MS., of the end of the fourteenth or beginning of the fifteenth century. In l. 209, Crowley prints *Diuine ye*, probably because the imperative mood is there used; for the use of *ye* with this mood still survives.

211, 212. Crowley has the present tenses, *scruen*, *Plcten*.

213. *vnlese*] vnclösen. But this spoils the alliteration.

215. After this line Crowley's later copies insert the six lines following:—

I sawe bishops bolde, and bachilers of diuine  
 Become clarkes of accountes, the kyng for to serue  
 Areke deakens and deanes, that dignities haue  
 To preache to the people, and pore men to fede  
 Ben ilope to London, by leauc of her bishop  
 And ben clarkes of the kinges benche, the contrye to shend

But these lines were erroneously inserted in his second impression. They

answer to ll. 90—95 of the Prologue in Text A, which are replaced in the B-text by lines 87—94, which see. To insert them again here is to use unnecessary repetition.

216. *burgeis* seems to be a plural form; it occurs in LRC. Crowley has *burgeses*.

PASSUS I. 14. *fourmed*] and former of.

34. *delitable*] delectable.

36. Crowley wrongly omits *gode*, and has *for* instead of *to*.

37, 38. Crowley omits l. 37, but gives l. 38 correctly—

Leefe not thy lykam, for a lyer hym techeth.

39. Omitted by Rogers; retained by Crowley.

41. *sueth*] seeth. *seith*] seeth. But both these readings are meaningless.

42. *wisse*] wyshe. This is one of the instances where Crowley has probably misunderstood his copy; to *wisse* is to *teach, instruct*.

52. *bifalleth*] belongeth.

74. *witterli*] wysely. *wissed*] wyshed. See note to l. 42.

81. *kenne* is also the reading in Crowley's text.

89. *wilneth*] wyllleth.

93. *clamep*; so spelt also in MS. C.

101. *tucchyng*] lackyng. This gives a different sense.

103. *swerde*; Crowley also has *swerd*, the singular form.

105. Crowley has —

But Christe kyng of kyngis, made knyghtes ten.

107. *muryer*] merier.

121. *garte*] garde. *stekye*] stycke.

125. *pult*; so in Crowley.

131. *troneth*] troweth. Probably misread as *troueth*.

134. *Lereth it þis*] Lerne on thys.

138. *doted*] dotest.

139. *litel*; misprinted *tel* in Crowley.

140. *he*; so in Crowley. Here *he* is to be considered as another spelling of *heo*, the A.S. form for *she*.

145. Crowley omits this line.

146. *of heuene*] for sinne.

149. Cr. has And lerned it Moses, for y<sup>e</sup> leuiest thing of all.

150. *plente*] plant. It would seem that *plant* (also spelt *playnte, plaunte, plaunte, ploute*) is the reading in Text A, and *plente* may be considered as a variation of that word. The spelling *plentee* (= plenty, fulness) is probably wrong. Love is likened to a plant descending from heaven, growing upon earth, and shooting up again heavenwards, an allegory representing the Incarnation and Resurrection.

152. *yeten his fylle*] *yoten it selue*.

157. *folke*] *folke*; *loue* (2).

177. *wynne*] *wyn*; *woreh* (2).

192. Omitted in Crowley's latest issue, but retained in the preceding ones. This is an easy test for distinguishing his *third* issue from his *second*. It nearly agrees with l. 186.

203. *graith*; omitted in Crowley's *third* issue only. This furnishes another test. See last note.

PASSUS II. l. 27. *manered*] *maried*. Obviously wrong.

33. *leef*] *life*. 35. *lappe*] *lyppe*. 39. *mansed*] *māzed*; *manzed* (2), *mauzed* (3). 47. *worth*] *worke*. But see Prol. l. 187.

54. *boden*] *bouden*. 72. *feffement*] *feoffemente*.

74. *Carta* is here written in the margin of the Oriel MS. The sidenote in Crowley runs thus:—"Maritagium prauum eum feoffemento in malo feodo, et de peruersa tenura."

87. *borghe*] *borough*. This gives the right sense.

91. Crowley has the same, with *þ* *the* instead of *and*. In MS. Laud the line is written, "There as wille wolde · and wermanship failleth," which has been corrected by the insertion of *ne* before *wolde*, and the expunction of the word *and*. But the old reading seems more correct; for the author is speaking of desires and idle thoughts, such as are indulged by those whose appetite is strong, though they are otherwise impotent.

100. Crowley has—For they liuen by luste, that is hir laste ende.

116. *weddynge*] *weddings*. In most cases where MS. Laud contains false readings, the line is marked at the side with a small cross by a corrector (probably the author) who read over the poem after the scribe had written it out. The present line is so marked, on account of the false reading *wendynge*. These marks have been of great service, and are of course of authority. Another marked line is l. 227 of this *passus*, where *r* has been omitted in *mystralles*. See the description of the Laud MS. in the Preface.

118. *engendred*; so in Crowley, and clearly right.

121. This is the right place to explain the nature of the text furnished by the three MSS. named Bodley 814, Brit. Mus. Additional 10574, and Cotton Caligula A 11. Of these, the first two are so nearly alike that one is merely a *duplicate* of the other. They resemble each other in general appearance, and are almost certainly *by the same scribe*, and of the same date. They agree word for word, and almost letter for letter, though they often differ considerably from other MSS. They omit the same lines, such omissions being rather frequent, and they exhibit similar peculiarities of spelling. The third MS. is of later date, but is probably copied from one of the two former, as it exhibits precisely the same text. So close is the resemblance between the three that I have found it quite unnecessary to collate them all through-

out, and have therefore selected MS. Bodley S14 for collation, and the readings given from it (marked B) may be considered to represent the readings of all three. As they may thus be referred to a common origin, the peculiarities of the text they exhibit are the less remarkable. This text is somewhat of a jumble, and the variations in it are in some places of a spurious character. It begins like Text C, which it follows throughout the Prologue, Passus I., and the first 120 lines of Passus II. From that point it begins to follow the B-text, but its variations are numerous throughout the rest of this Passus, and in the beginning of Passus III. These variations seem due to the influence of an A-text; see note to l. 172. It then gradually approaches the text of our Laud MS., and in some places follows it very closely. I now give a quotation, corresponding to lines 114—123, which will shew how the junction of the C- and B-texts has been effected.

*From MS. Bodley S14, fol. 8.*

þanne tenede hym theologie · whan he<sup>1</sup> þise talis herde,  
 And seyde to Symonye · “now sorwe mote þou haue  
 Such a weddyng to worche · þat wraþfe myȝtte treuþe;  
 And er þis weddyng be wrouȝt · woo þe<sup>2</sup> bitide! 4  
 For mede is moilere · amendes was hire dame,  
 Al-þouȝ fals were hire fadir · and fikil<sup>3</sup> touȝe hire belsire.  
 Amendis was hire modir · by trewe mennys lokyng,  
 And wiþ-oute hire modir amendis · mede may not be weddid. 8  
 For treuþe plyȝt hire trewþe · to wedde on of hire doughters,  
 And god graunte hit were so · so no gile were.  
 And þou hast gyuen hire as gyle tauȝte · now god ȝeue þe sorwe!  
 For Cyuyle and þy silue<sup>4</sup> · seldom fulfilliþ 12  
 That god wolde were ydo · wiþ-oute sum disceyt.  
 þe tixtis telliþ not so · treuþe wot þe soþe,  
*Dignus est operarius mercede sua;*  
 Worþi is þe werkman · his mede to haue,  
 And þou hast fastnede wiþ fals · fy on þy lawes!” 16

Here lines 1—13 agree with the C-text very closely; see Whitaker's edition, p. 30. Lines 14—16, on the contrary, belong to the B-text (see ll. 121—123 of Pass. II.), and, with the exception of the last, are entirely different from the C-text, which gives in this place an account of the martyrdom of St Lawrence.

124. MS. B (Bodley S14) has—For al is falsnesse and lesyngis · and lecherie þat þou werkis.

The readings of B throughout the rest of this Passus are not worth giving, being almost invariably inferior, and often corrupt. I may instance

<sup>1</sup> MS. Calig. has *she*.

<sup>2</sup> MS. Addit. has *ye*.

<sup>3</sup> MS. Addit. has *fikik*.

<sup>4</sup> MS. Calig. has *and syluer*.

as examples the following; *þat sore anoien* for *noyeth* in l. 126; *feynt of* for *fikel in*, in l. 129; *handlid* for *yshewed*, in l. 134; *be sette to* for *bisitte*, in l. 140; *al-so bonde-men* for *bad hem alle be bowen*, in l. 159, &c. Of these, the reading *handlid* is borrowed from Text A.

140. Here *soure* must mean *sourly, bitterly*; cf. *shal abie it bittere*; Pass. iii. 249. Crowley has *sore*.  
 143. *floreynes*] *floreneces*.  
 149. *faire*] *fyre*; great (2) and (3).  
 172. Here MS. B has—

Alle þe officiales and denes · as destreris hem diȝte,  
 For þei shulden bere þe bischopis · and brynge hem at reste.  
 Paulynes peple · for pleyntis in þe constorie, &c.

This is evidently borrowed from Text A, Pass. ii. 150—152; and indeed, the rest of this Passus in B belongs rather to the A-text than the B-text, which accounts for the insertion after l. 204 of the two lines—

Symouye and Cyuyle · y sende hem to warne,  
 þat holichirche for hem · worþ harmed for cuemore.

(See A. ii. 178.)

185. *tome*] *tyme*. But *tome*, meaning *leisure*, is the right reading.  
 187. *gyed*] *guyded*. This is rather a gloss than a true reading.  
 198. *come*] *can*. Probably misprinted for *cam*.  
 208. Crowley has in the margin of the second impression—*Drede maketh the gilty flee*—which well expresses the drift of this passage.  
 215. A good test-line for the three issues by Crowley. The *first* has—*leped away than*; the *second*—*leaped away than*; the *third*—*leaped, and away ranne*. Rogers has—*leaped, and away ranne*.  
 222. *gaf*] *gaue hym*. But the sense is rather, that they gave men pardon by his means.

PASSUS III. The variations in MS. B are at first rather numerous, and of less value. Throughout lines 1—86 the most important have been selected, and are given in the footnotes. It omits l. 18, in common with Text A, but after this it is little influenced by that text, and approaches MS. Laud more closely. The less important variations in lines 1—86 are given here.

1. *and namo*] *nomen* B. Cf. Text A.
3. *a*] *to hym a* B. *can I nouȝt*] *y can not telle* B.
5. *shal*] *wole* B.
6. *hire*] *to hire* B.
7. B omits this line.
12. *They*] B omits. *in*] at B.
13. *Gentilliche*] *Ful gentily* B. *somme*] Crowley has *came*.

15. *To confortē*] And confortēþ B.

17. *wil wisse*] will wishe. Cf. note to Pass. i. 42.

18. *leue*] leefe.

21. B has—Of here goodis · and here grete ȝiftis.

22. *Coupes*] Copes. *coppis*] Copes; Cups (2) and (3).

25. *lauȝte þei*] toke þei here B. *at*] of B.

26. B has—Tho come þise clerkis · to confortē hire þanne.

27. *be blithe*] bliþe to be B.

28. *þe—laste*] the while we mounē laste.

29. Ful hendely þanne · she hiȝte hem þe same B.

30. *ȝow*] hem. If we read *ȝow*, we must suppose this line to form part of Meed's speech. Most MSS. have *ȝowre* in l. 31, though Crowley has *her*, (like W).

Obs. Between ll. 30 and 31, Crowley has an extra line—

To begge hem benifices, pluralities to haue.

The alliteration of this is defective.

32. *leode*] clerke. But this spoils the alliteration.

34. *clokke*] eloke.

36. *mellud*; Crowley has the same spelling.

39. *yfolwed*] Ifolowed; yfouloed (2); yfouled (3).

48. *wyndowe*] widow (3). Crowley's *first* impression omits *ful*.

50. *siker*] Full sikir B.

51—63. The four lines in MS. R. are evidently imitated from Text A, which see. In the margin of Crowley's text (*second* impression) we find—"The fruites of Popishe penaunce."

53. While þe loue of lordis · leecherie hauntiþ B.

55. *a—of*] frailenes of the.

58. Crowley also inserts *the* before *seuen*.

61. *glasen*] glasen; do glasen (2). 62. *Do*] And B.

63. *segge—seyn*] man shal siegge B.

68. *ouȝte*] anȝte B.

69. *For-þi I lere*] Therefore I lerne.

71. *ȝe*] þei B.

72. For *ȝe* B has *þei*, and for *ȝowre* reads *here*, but preserves *ȝowre*, which is contradictory. *heuenē*] heuen (1) and (2); hauen (3).

75. *bit*] beddith; biddeth (2). *Bit* is the contracted form of *biddeth*.

81, 83. *buggen*] byghe. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—"What harme yll vitillers do, & what abuse is in regrating."

86. *be ȝe*] bi þe B (which is clearly wrong). If the reader will turn to the specimens of MSS. given in the "Parallel Extracts" (E. E. T. S. 1866) he will see how closely MSS. Bodley 814 (numbered 3) and Addit. 10574 (numbered 4) agree. Both have the curious spelling *bieggen* in l. 83, and the false

reading *bi þe ful certeyne* in l. 86. The latter is copied in MS. Calig. A. xi (numbered 8).

Obs. From this point MS. B agrees with our text closely in general, and its variations are given in the footnotes.

97. *brenne* is also Crowley's reading.

98. Crowley inserts *that*. Its omission in MS. Laud is an obvious error, and the line is marked as incorrect.

101. *ofsent*] sent for.

104. Here, as in l. 36, Mr Wright prints *meueþ* for *menep*. In MS. W, the word may be read either way; but see *Mene* in Halliwell.

107. Crowley rightly inserts *the*.

112. *lat*; omitted in Crowley's later impressions.

120. *Ar*] Or. All three forms *ar*, *er*, *or*, were in use.

125. *lereth*] lerneth. 'To learn often means to teach.

127. All the MSS. (except L) retain *þ* or *and*. Crowley has *and*.

145. *As*] As maye.

153. Crowley also has *fouleth*.

156. *haue his forth*] be of force. *go so þikke*] fli so thick; fly to thick (2); fly to think (3). Rogers has—fly to thicke.

161. After this line Crowley's later copies have an extra line—

"Bi good reson yat is gret ruth, reherse men what hem liketh."

It is not in his first edition, nor is it clear where he found it.

180. *myne half · elleuene*] me halfe a leuen. Upon this Dr Whitaker remarks—"Thou hast hanged on my hals, i. e. neck, which Crowley, in his ignorance of the language of his author, read thus—Thou hast hanged on *me halfe* a leuen times." Nevertheless, Crowley is right in printing *halfe*, though he should also have printed *my*, not *me*. *My halfe* = my side, and I have been utterly unable to find any MS. of the B-type with the reading *hals*. My note to A. iii. 174 contains therefore, I fear, a misstatement as to this matter.

187. Crowley retains *it*.

193. *homeward*] vpward.

210. *alienes*] alicentes.

213. *renne*] runne; go (2). Crowley also has *giftes* for *ziftes*, as if the alliteration depended on the initials of *giftes*, *zonge*, and *go*. But we know from Text A that *renne* is correct. The alliteration follows a rule, according to which each half-line is alliterative within itself.

217. *of—maistre*] for her maistris.

221. *of hem*] after. This accounts for the reading *aftir mede* in the next line, in Crowley's *third* issue *only*, where *aftir* is an erroneous repetition.

224. *prentis*] prentises. But *prentis* is also a plural form, like *burgeys* in l. 162.

227. The curious spelling *Quat*; sometimes occurs in MS. R, but as the line is marked for correction in L, I have inserted the more usual form *Quod*, which occurs in Crowley.

232. *ben*] be; liuen (2). But this makes the line halt.

240. *pursueth*] preserueth. To the quotation Crowley adds *non accipit*; which should have been *non accepit*.

244. *a*] her. This seems a better reading. Perhaps *a* is a corrupt pronunciation of *her*.

247. *seith*] sayth; speaketh (2). This makes the line halt.

252. The common reading of the MSS. is *recipiebant*, as in Crowley. But the Oriel MS. is right.

275. The spelling *sheenfullich* shews that the *d* was obscurely pronounced after *n*. Crowley has *shamefully*, which is a translation of it.

278. Crowley has—The colour of thys case, ue kepe I not to tell.

281. *hem sothes*] sothe.

284. *happe shul somme*] happe shal come. Crowley (*second* impression) adds a sidenote—"This is no prophecy, but a resonable gathering."

293. Crowley has—Shal no sergeant for his seruice, weare no silke hode.

301. Crowley has—"Moses & Messia;" and in the sidenote (*second* impression)—"Thys is no propheeye, but a truth gathered of the scriptures."

304. Crowley has—"Axe, or yet hacht."

307. *pykoys*] pykeaxe.

331, 332. The occurrence of *victorie* in ll. 331, 348, makes it desirable to give the quotation from the Proverbs in full. It is—"Victoriam et honorem adquiret qui dat munera: animam autem aufert accipientium." The last four words are "þe taille of þe tixte," and are quoted below, in l. 346.

335. *herte*] well. In l. 336, Crowley omits *lyue*, and in the two next lines reads *she loked*, *She shuld*.

PASSUS IV. l. 2. *sauztae*] sangtle (*sic*).

9. *my*] the. After this line the MSS. seem to have lost a line (l. 10 of the A-text), which Crowley, in his *second* impression, retains—"Of Mede and of other, and what man shal hir wedde"—where *other* should be *other mo*.

11. *þe lered and þe lewede*] the learned & the lewd.

13. *rouneth*] roundeth. Probably *round* is a corruption of *rown*, as *sound* is of *soun*.

23. *kaieth*; cf. Prol. l. 29. Crowley has *caried* in his *second* impression, but *carieth* in his *first*.

27. *for þei*] for they.

28. *þe cheker*] the Eschecker.

34. *wyane*] get.

57. *bereth*] steleth. 62. *luft*] luske.

67. *wan*] wende; went (2); but note that MS. R has *wan*.

73. *his*] *hyr*.

94. *menen*] *meuen* (*misprinted for menen*).

108. *rest*] *rest*; *sit* (2). 118. *hyne*] *hyne*; *hynde* (2).

124. *baiardes*] *barns*. But *baiardes* is right; the expense of them should go towards building houses for the poor, and so should the expenses of the *hawks* and *hounds*, mentioned in the line following.

131. *fynt hym*] *fynde it*.

144. *badde*] *badde that*.

146. *wedde*] *wed*; *dare wed* (2).

151. *of—soule*] of *y<sup>e</sup> pore common*, *ne kings soule*.

156. *falle in*] *faile*. This variation is due to the *faile* following. It reverses the sense, for Waryn only failed in speech when florins were given to bribe him to do so.

160. *mansed*] *manzed*.

174. *almoste—it*] *had it nere shext*.

175. Crowley's sidenote (*second impression*) is—"The lawiers kepe the kinge from hys right."

177. *3if I regne any while*. This is an excellent instance of the anachronisms that sometimes appear in this version of the poem, owing to its having been composed at different periods. In l. 45 of this Passus, the king and his son are mentioned, i.e. Edward and the Black Prince; and that line was composed about A.D. 1362, as it appears in Text A. We now come to a line, however, in which the king says what he will do, *if he reigns any while*; and this was therefore written at the time of the accession of Richard II., which took place in June, 1377. It will be observed, accordingly, that this line does *not* appear in Text A.

189. Crowley's text (resembling MS. W as usual) has—"By my counceel *commune*." But this is an inferior reading.

193. This line, which is retained by Crowley, is omitted by Rogers.

PASSUS V, l. 13 *were*, not *was*, in Crowley's text.

28. *Stowue*] *Stownc*. 29. *wyuen*] *wyncn*; see Crit. Note to A. v. 29.

45. *leren*] *learne*.

46. Crowley's sidenote (*second impression*) is—"The suppression of Abbayes. Good counsell."

49. *þe comune*] *hys commons*. 50. *triacle*] *treacle*.

52. *gyue*] *geue*; *gauc* (2).

67, 68. Crowley's *first impression* omits l. 67; the later issues insert it *after* l. 68, with the false spelling *affayulen*.

73. Crowley's sidenote (*second impression*)—"The olde satisfacion"—is a little obscure; it probably means that the Reformation did not favour prayers to our Lady or penance.

75. *doke*] *day*. But "to drink with the duck" is to drink water.

85. *he ȝede*] Crowley *omits*.
90. Retained by Crowley, though omitted in MS. W.
108. *baren*] bare. 110. *Elcyne*] Elen.
112. *liketh myn herte*] lyketh mine hert; mine herte aketh (2).
124. *ho-so schrape*] shraping of. This is a good reading.
125. *ȝus redili*] Yes redily; This I reade (2).
126. *of*] for. 138. *listres*] listers; Legisters (2).
139. *low*] smal; smoth (2). This shews that *low* is used to imply *whispered* flatteries and insinuations.
143. This can only mean—"And now that parsons have perceived that friars partake of their fees." Crowley has—"And persons haue," &c.—which puts *haue* in its right place; but *now* should not have been omitted. The reading given in the text is supported by Lord Ashburnham's MS. No. 129. See the description of that MS. in the Preface.
144. *possessioneres*] possessours.
146. *That*] And. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—"A good scholemaster."
148. Crowley has—"Thus thei speken of mi spiritualtie, & despise eeh other."
154. *were*] had. *suffre*] suffer.
160. *worth*] was.
162. *I-made*] made. Here the *I-* can be nothing but a prefix, which is occasionally found with the past tense at this period. It was probably introduced here *metri gratia*, as it improves the flow of the verse. Observe that it is retained in MSS. L, R, and O, but omitted in W, C, and B.
167. *ordeigned*] provided. This seems a better reading, as it preserves the alliteration.
168. Observe that Crowley has *two lines* in place of this one, and that they differ from *all* the MSS. which I have collated. If ever the MS. used by Crowley is recovered, it may be known by this test, and by the extra line after iii. 30. He reads—
- Lest happeli they had had no grace to hold harlatri in,  
For they are ticle of her tonges, & must al secretes tell
- Crowley adds (in his *second* impression) the sidenote—Gregory wold not suffer womanne to hear confession.
169. *I shonye*] I shamen; which is almost certainly wrong.
177. *vnthende*] vnhende; cf. reading of O.
- 186, 187. *me*] hym (in both places). *my*] his. And surely Crowley's MS. has here a better reading than any of the rest.
189. *sire—loked*] so sterely hym loked; so sternely he loked (2). I prefer *Heruy* to *Henry*, because it is authorized by all the MSS. of the A-class. *Heruy* also occurs in C2.

193. *chined*] sheuered (i. e. shivered). *elde*] olde.
199. *welthe*] welth; welte (2). In MS. L it may be read either as "welche" or "welthe," but the spelling "welpe" in W decides this point.
212. *plaited*] plitte; plyt (2); splyt (3).
215. *webbe*] webster. Though *-ster* is properly the *feminine* termination, the distinction was at this period rapidly being lost.
221. *hymselfe*] it selfe. This curious variation seems to indicate that *hymselfe* refers, not to *laboreres*, but to *peny ale* and *podynge ale*; cf. next line.
225. *my wyf*] she.
228. *so the ik*] sothelick; which is probably an ingenious (yet wrong) correction by Crowley himself.
238. *I—were*] I toke rifling for. *lerned—boke*] neuer red boke.
244. *pe crosse*] the crosse; crese (2).
249. *I dele*] I delc; Idle (2) (an obvious misprint).
259. Crowley has—That kilth hem if he *can hem* catch, for couet of her skins.
263. *lene*] leue. This is always a very difficult point; *lene* = Germ. *leihen*, and is *transitive*, but *leue* = Germ. *erlauben*, and can only be followed by a dependent clause, not by an accusative. In nine cases out of ten, when the word in question is preceded by *god*, we should read *leue*; but in *this* instance the use of the accusative *grace* decides us in favour of *lene*. Cf. note to Prol. 126.
267. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—Ill gotten goodes must be ill spent.
271. *peize—leues*] bryght golde if it were.
273. Crowley's *second* impression has—Or els that I could know it by any kinde wyt. But the *first* impression omits the line; and perhaps it is spurious.
283. *where*] whether. And such is here the meaning.
289. Crowley omits the Latin quotation.
296. *zeldest*] paist. Both readings spoil the alliteration. Surely Langland wrote *lenest* or *lenst* (= *lendest*).
312. *she*] he; (and so in l. 310). The *brewsters* were females. The Laud MS. has the correct reading in l. 310, shewing that *he* is here a mere slip.
319. *cokkeslane*. The modern name is Cock Lane, Smithfield.
320. *Dawe*] Dawe; Daue (2). The names are equivalent.
331. *chaffare*] chaffer; ware (2).
337. *noumpere*] vmper. This spoils the alliteration.
338. Crowley's *second* impression has—For to trye this chaffer, betwexte hem there. But the first edition omits this line, and it is probably spurious, like l. 273.
346. *y-globbed*] ygolped.

351. *wexed*] *wyped*. Cf. Text A, and the Critical Note.

357. *stumbled*] *stombled*. The line in L is marked for correction. It may be that *all* the copies are wrong, and that the right word is *pompelde*, as in the Vernon MS., Text A.

367. *zede*] *went*. Cf. MS. O.

370. *wif*] *wife*; *wit* (2). The latter is an error, due to the recurrence of the syllable *wite* in *edwite*. The A-class MSS. have *wyf*.

388. Crowley inserts *to*, and has (in the *second* impression) the sidenote—*Prety vowes*.

398. *roxed*] *raskled*. 399. *renke*] *reuk*.

403. *But of our lorde or our lady, I lerne nothyng at all.*—Cr.

413. Crowley omits *of souteres*.

434. Crowley inserts “*y<sup>e</sup>*,” and for *rede* has “*make*.”

439. *þere ligge auzte*] ought be; if ought be (2).

440. *fernyere*] *ferther*. It is clear that Crowley's MS. had *fernyer*, which he mistook for *ferþer*.

441. *Sixty*] *Syxe*. *forzete*] *forgotten*.

442. *of speche*] of *spence*. This reading (where *spence* = *expenche*) certainly gives better sense.

446. *lerne*] *learning*.

452. *wolde*] *wyl*.

476. *owe* is glossed by *debeo* in L; Crowley has *knowe*, as in R.

494. *mudest*] *makest*.

495, 498. *Sute* and *Secte* seem to be the same word. *Secte* is the Latin form, *Sute* the French. See *Sect* in Wedgwood, where *secta* is shewn to be the Latin for a *suit* of clothes, and for a *suit* or action at law. Crowley has *suite* in the first place, *sect* in the second, and *sute* again in l. 504.

514. Crowley has the word *nos*.

520. Crowley omits *wyzte*; and in the next line has *blusterynge*.

525. *witheyndes*] *wythe wandes*.

540. *dwelleth*] *wornith*. And again in l. 561.

542. *pike*] *poke*. A *poke* is a pouch, and therefore much the same as *scrippe*.

547. *suren hym*] *suren hym*; *sweren* (2). In the margin of the *second* impression Crowley has—The plowman is *Trutthes seruaunt*.

559. *hewe*] *helk*. In the black-letter, *lk* is strikingly like an MS. *w*; *helk* is doubtless due to a MS. reading *hew*.

587. *halfe*] *hande*. *Halfe* means *side*. Cf. note to iii. 180.

589. *berghe*] *berch*. What a *berch* is, I know not. *Berghe* means *hill*; the A-text has *brok*, i. e. a brook.

590. *fees*] *foes*. The spelling *foes* is misleading, and therefore *fees* may be preferred. Yet *foes* may stand for *feos*, as *poepel* does for *people*; cf. Pass. i. 7

612. Crowley, in his *second* impression, has *Paradisi porta* before *per*

*Euum* : at any rate, *porta* must be understood. The word *iterum* is inserted from R; strictly speaking, R has *iterum*, &c., omitting *patefacta est*. But see Political, Religious, and Love Poems, ed. Furnivall, 1866; p. 230.

614. *go in*] come; contrary to the alliteration.

620. *pukketth*] poketh; paketh (3). But in l. 643, Crowley has *pokid*.

627. The reading *zyftes* in R can be explained. The scribe was no doubt thinking of the *seven gifts* of the Spirit.

636. *seuene*] systers seuen.

649. Two lines in Crowley—

I wyll go feeche my boxe, with my brenets [*sic*] al  
And also a bull, wyth a Byshops letters.

The second issue of the *second* impression (i. e. the *third* edition) has *brenets*, which in *both* the preceding issues is printed *brenets*. It also has the strange spelling *bocke*.

651. *bicome*] be gon; be gonme (2).

PASSUS VI. 1. *who so*] if we.

2. Crowley has—That wold wende with vs ech a fotc, & ye wei tel.

6. Crowley has—I *woulde* wend, &c.

10. Crowley has—And ye *se* louely ladies, &c., in his *second* impression. But his *first* impression omits *se*.

32. *pe*] the. The reading *pe* is better than *pi*, in my opinion. I take it to be the dat. case of *pou*. *Affuite pe* = tame for thyself.

49. Crowley (in his *second* impression) has—

Than thou, but thou do bet, and liue as thou shoulde  
Amice, ascende superius.

And in the margin—Luke xiiii. But the *first* impression omits l. 49, and I fear it is spurious.

68. *lese*] *gleue*. This is probably a gloss of Crowley's own; it is correct in as far as it rightly explains *lese* by *gleue*. In the next line, Crowley has *maugre* who so *bigrudge* it; where *bigrudge* is his substitution for the old form *bigrucche*.

73. *denote*] Benot (3).

96. *haue*] mind.

118. *how*] hey. Crowley has (in his *third* issue *only*) the sidenote—Jolyc workmen.

133, 139. For *he*, Crowley has *ye*, in both places, and similarly *you* for *hym* in l. 140.

151. *posteles*] apostles. *powere of pe bisschop*] bishops power.

156. *abosted*] abofsted; and bofeted (2).

163. For the reading *wolf skynnes*, cf. note to l. 175 of Pass. II. (A-text); see vol. i. p. 141.

174. *houped*] *whooped*. In this place, *houped* = *whooped*.

196. Crowley has—For bread *baken* for *baierds*, &c.

201. *aforth*] *ford*. We now say *afford*.

203. *erde*] *yard*; *yarth* (3).

206. *be to*] *to be*. But *be to* is correct, *to done* being the gerund.

222. *fals*] *false*; *falty* (3). This last alteration is probably due to Crowley, who may have missed the construction. It means—"or that any manner of wicked men (have harmed)."

223. *hem* is also Crowley's reading, in his *second* impression; his *first* has *him*, but see the next line.

228. I retain *vindictam*, as it is the reading of all the copies, Crowley's included. It should be *vindicta*. In the next line, Crowley has *wilt*.

230. *biloue*] *biloue*. *Biloue þe* seems to mean *make thyself beloved*. *Bilow* would mean *humble thyself*. But Langland seems to wish to translate *Facite vobis amicos*.

239. *bete*] *bate*. To *bete* is to *remedy*; to *bate* is to *abate*.

269. *afyngred*] a *hungred*. Cf. A.S. *of-hingrian*.

272. *calabre*] *Calabrye*. This is nearer to the Latin form *Calabria*.

274. *londe*] *hond*. To "labour with land" is to till the soil.

307. Crowley also has the spelling *halpeny*, but only in the *third* impression.

308. *borghe*] *burth*; *borough* (3).

320. Crowley has—While *hunger gafe hem hier*, not one of *hem* wold *chide*.

328. Crowley has this side-note, in the *third* impression—This is no prophecy but a pronostication. I fear this will not quite clear up the difficulty. For *eight* (l. 329) he has *hight*, and for *dawe* (l. 331) he has *Dawie* (cf. V. 320) in his later impressions; but the *first* impression has *eight* and *Dawe*.

PASSUS VII. 7. *myster*] *mistry*. It has no connection with *mystery*, being from the O. Fr. *mestier*.

42. *an helpe*] in *helth*. But *an helpe* (= and help them) is right.

62. *lybbyng*] *lyuyng*. *lyuen*] *liuiden*; *libben* (2).

68. *or bit*] one *byt*. An ingenious, but unnecessary, alteration. *Bit* = *biddeth*, *begs*.

128, 129. In the first of these lines, for *fynt*, Crowley has *findes*; in the second, he has *fedes*. *Fynt* is the contracted form of *findeth*.

130. *perkin*] *Parkin* (3). Both are forms of *Peterkin*.

137. *Eice* is the usual spelling of *Ejice* in MSS. of the fourteenth century. Crowley has *Ecce* by mistake, and the same error occurs in most of the MSS.

152. *deuyned*] *dimned*; *demed* (3). So also in l. 157.

172. Crowley's side-note, in his *second* impression, is—Note howe he scorneth the auctority of Popes.

179. *triennales*] *trentals* (3). In l. 182, Crowley has *trientales* in the later impressions. The *first* edition has *triennales* in both places.

193. *doublefolde*. Crowley has strengthened this by printing "an .C. fold," regardless of alliteration. In his *first* impression, this line is omitted altogether.

196. Obviously distasteful to Crowley, as he deliberately altered it so as to stand thus :—

And make Christe our meane, that hath made emends.

COLOPHON. See note to l. 187 of Pass. VIII. of Text A ; vol. i. p. 148. In order to mark the distinction between the two poems—of "Piers the Plowman," and "Dowel, Dobet, and Dobest"—the more clearly, I have introduced the leaf with the title of the second poem. Crowley's heading to the next Passus is—Passus octauus de visione. Et hic incipit inquisitio prima de dowell.

I may here observe that the titles to the Passus in MS. L are generally written twice over ; once by the scribe, in a very fine small hand in the margin, and once by the rubricator in red letters, in the usual place. In the present case, the title of Passus VIII. stands, in the rubric—Passus octauus de visione, & primus de dowel. But in the margin is the following note by the scribe, which is of more authority—Ps viij<sup>us</sup> de visione, & hic explicit. & in[cipit] inquisicio prima de dowel—where the conclusion of the word *incipit* has been cut off by the binder. See the foot-note to the title of Passus VIII.

PASSUS VIII. 49. *but—wole*] but if thou wylt thy selfe.

52. *to zereszyue*] two yeresyftis ; two yeresgifts (2). But the correction is needless, and against authority. *To zereszyue* = for a year's gift ; i. e. as a present or gift. The *gift* is but one, the *wil* and *free-will* being but one and the same thing.

64. Crowley also has *brought me on slepe*, as most of the MSS. But, as the poet does not fall asleep till l. 67, the correction supplied by MS. R is by all means to be accepted.

65. *vppon a launde*] on a land.

72. *þat þow*] thou y'.

82. *tailende*] tayland ; taylyng, as in MS. O (2).

96. *pulte*] pul.

100. *or*] and. *did*] dyd ; arne (2).

102. *to*] Cr. omits.

125. Crowley has—man or woman. Either reading gives sense, nor can we decide from the alliteration. If we read *no man*, the word *man* satisfies the alliteration by its treble occurrence ; if we read *womman*, the alliteration

is satisfied by the words *whether*, *womman*, and *wolde*. Neither the A-text nor C-text helps us.

PASSUS IX.—TITLE. Crowley has—Passus nonus de visione. Et primus de dowel.

3. *medled*] medlid; mingled (2).

16. *lerynge*] lerneing.

20. *hende*] end (2); ende (3), *wrongly*.

29. *lysse*] blis (an unnecessary change, which spoils the alliteration).

31. *schafte*] shape (a more modern form).

33. Crowley *has*—And made Adam lykest to hym selfe one.

38. *Rizle*] Eucn. *hym*] he.

40. *lettres* in the plural form has a singular sense; it is evidently copied from the Latin use. In Barbour the two forms are used indifferently.

“ And amang *othir*, *lettres* ar gayn  
To *the* byschop off Androwis towne,  
That tauld how slayn wes *that* baroun.  
The *lettir* tauld hym all *the* deid; &c.”

*The Bruce*; Bk. II. l. 80.

47. *his*] our. But *his* is right, as proved by the A-text.

54. *he*] she. Here *he* is feminine, answering to the A.S. *heo*, and signifies *she*. The reference is to *anima*, as in the A-text, l. 44. Cf. Pass. V. 312.

56. *he*] Cr. *omits*. Here *he* is masculine.

57. *lat*] ledyth; leadith (2); leadeth (3). *Lat* is here probably a contracted form of *ledeth*.

61. *her soule*] there souls. But *soule* is probably used as a translation of *anima*, and so used in the singular, as in the next line, where Crowley, however, has *hir soules*.

67. Shulde fynde hem that faute, &c. (Crowley). In the margin of Crowley (*second* impression) is the note—Wo be to you y' turn the tithes to priuate vse.

73. *And*] Cr. *omits*. *lere*] lerne.

80. In the margin of Crowley (*second* impression)—Bestowe your tythes as you are bounde to do.

86. *nel we*] wil we not; wyl not we (2).

90. *a iaper*] a Iaper; Iapers (2).

91. Crowley has *minus*. The word is so plainly written in the MSS. that we must hesitate to accept Mr Wright's ingenious suggestion, viz. *mimis*.

92. *pus*] so. *drat*] dredeth (*the fuller form*); see l. 94.

97. Crowley has *vno*, as in James ii. 10.

100. *spyre*] enspired (*wrongly*).

111. *o*] one. Referring to Adam.

115. *two*] Cr. *omits*.

117. *pe-is*] & in heuen. This reading seems better, though the general authority of the MSS. is against it.

124. *wedded*] wedded; ioyned (2). In the margin of Crowley (*second* impression)—Learn to chose the a wyfe.

139. Crowley also has *forth*; cf. A-text.

140. *eche*] euey.

150. The Vulgate has—Numquid colligunt de spinis uvas, aut de tribulis ficus?

152. *wedlokes*] wedlocke (2). His *first* impression omits the whole line.

177. *continue*] contynue; conteyne (2).

179. *lykyng*] lykyng; lokyng (2).

181. *wylt* is Crowley's reading. The latter part of the line varies in the C-text.

182. Cf. Political Poems, ed. Wright, vol. i. p. 159.

“Dedita gens scortis morietur fulmine sortis,  
Scribitur in portis, meretrix est janua mortis.”

190. Crowley also has *liketh*.

201. *and to zemen*] vnto menne.

PASSUS X. 12. *pe-perre*] precious Pirre; precious Pearles (2).

21. *to-clepid*] is oft cleped to counsell.

23. *witnesseth*] wytnesseth; greatly wytnesseth (2). Cf. C-text.

27. *letterure*] lecture.

29. *to*] be to.

34. *pilat*] Pilate falsely. In margin of Crowley (*second* impression)—Only diuinitie hath no reward.

42. *Lickne*] Lyken.

47. *zeresziue*] yeres gyfte; newyeres gyfte (3).

48. *nowthe*] nought. But *nouthe* means *now*.

52. *Atte mete*] At the meat; And they meet (2), *wrongly*.

61. The remark in the foot-note—that this line is marked for correction in L—is wrong.

70. Crowley inserts *hym*.

78. *is-gwar*] is none ware; are none ware (2).

83. *welt-ricchesse*] wexeth welthy in ryches. *Welt = weldeth*; cf. l. 88.

89. *dure*] endure (*the modern form*).

93. Crowley has *houses*.

97. Crowley has *parler*. The word is miswritten *paloure* in L.

114. *in*] in; to (3). But the MSS. have *in*.

129. *hanelounes*] hanylones; hanylowes (2).

137. Crowley has *as*.

138. *pe grounde*] therth (*put for the erth*).

141. In margin of Crowley (*second impression*)—The maner of them y<sup>t</sup> be in office.

165. *symplete*] simplicitee.

166. *in*] in; in his (2). *pe*] Cr. omits.

169. Crowley has *gret* or *grete*. Yet the Vernon MS. (A-text) has *grette*, the past tense.

172. Crowley has—And all the vnisons in musicke, &c. *Vnisons* arose from reading *musouns* as *unisons*.

178. *carpentrie*] carpentre; carpenters (3), as in A-text.

180. *ten*] ten; seuen (2). But observe the alliteration.

183. Crowley omits this line.

184. *lethy*] lethy; the A-text has *lewed*.

189. *seigh*] sawe.

190. Crowley has *nee*, as in Cato. For *fac simile* another reading in Cato is *fac similes*.

192. Crowley also has *go me to*.

195. *zene*] them; hede (2), as in MSS. T and V (A-text).

198. *hem nedeth*] they nede (a modernized idiom).

208. *geomesye*] geomansye; cf. A-text. *is giful*] so gylfull.

211. *fybiches*] fybiches; febichers (2); cf. A-text.

212. *alkeamy*] alkinamic; cf. A-text.

214. *sciences*; so in Crowley and A-text.

221. *grette*] grete; grate (2); both here and in l. 218.

244. Crowley omits the Latin quotation.

246. *pus it*] this. *willen*] wold.

247. *fyne wytte*] fyue witte; fyue wits (2).

250. *boke*] boke; holy boke (2).

266. *bosarde*] bosarde; bussarde (2).

276. *Marke*] marke; Mathew (2). This correction was therefore made by Crowley; *Marke* is the author's own mistake.

279. *mansed*] mauzed. Mr Wright prints *mausede* here, but corrects it to *mansede* in the note on p. 537.

281. *Byttere aboute*] Bytter aboute; Bytterly bought (2).

285. *made*] y<sup>t</sup> made.

287. *Cunes*] caues; Canes muti (2), as in the Vulgate.

288. *And—worde*] And to lacke you w<sup>t</sup> a word, &c.

289. *And*] But.

291—303. This is one of those passages for the preservation of which we are much indebted to the Rawlinson MS., which represents the B-text with all its latest additions, as it stood just before it was re-cast so as to become the C-text. This passage, originally forming a portion of the A-text (Pass. xi. 201—207) was at first cut out; but, on second thoughts, the poet decided to retain it. Hence it appears again (slightly varied) in the C-text, but is there transferred to quite a different part of the poem, so as to form a

part of Reason's sermon, which in the B-text begins at Pass. v. 13. See p. 57 of this volume. Cf. Whitaker, p. 83.

306. Crowley's marginal note is—"Reade thys."

317. Crowley's marginal note (*second impression*) is—"The suppression of Abbayes."

325. *han yuel*] had it; had il (2); had Ill (3).

333. *nauz*] naught; ought (2), which spoils the alliteration.

336. Crowley inserts *to* before *haue*.

342. *preyseden*] praise.

356. The words *leue* and *lene* cannot be distinguished in the MSS. Here *leue* = believe; cf. l. 359.

361. *It* is also Crowley's reading

362. *bakkes*] backs (1) *and* (2); bocks (3).

368. It is clear that *non necaberis* is the author's own mistake, as it is in nearly all the MSS., both here and in the A-text, xi. 247. See note to that line in vol. i. p. 153. In the same way *vindictam* in the quotation below ought to be *vindicta*; yet it is written *vindictam* both in the A-text, and in the B-text elsewhere (l. 204 above).

369. *Is*] Is; I (2).

377. *wytnesseth*] manaceth.

378. *on no letterure*] no letter.

388. *now*] Cr. *omits*.

398. *cathedram*] *so in* Crowley, the A-text, and the Vulgate.

401. Cr. *has*—No wight y<sup>t</sup> wrought theron<sup>n</sup> was sal<sup>f</sup>, ne any workman<sup>n</sup> els.

408. *adreynten*] he drowned.

409. *curatoures*] curates; curate (2).

411—413. Here again the Rawlinson MS. gives us a passage which reappears, with alterations, in the C-text (Whitaker, p. 197).

416. Crowley has—And for he bekened to (*second impression* beknew on) y<sup>e</sup> crosse, &c.; the latter reading is better than Wright's text here.

425. *kylle*] put; *which* spoils the alliteration.

426. Cr. retains *now*, and has *ȝ* for *wyth* (*second impression*).

431. *wel libbynge*] wel learned (*which seems better*).

435. *lyther*] yl; *against alliteral'on*.

441. *po he seyde*] Cr. *omits*.

452. *pe trinitee*] the Trinitie; diunitie (2).

PASSUS XI. The first line answers to l. 12 of Pass. xii. of the A-text (p. 137\*). It will be seen that all resemblance between the A and B-texts ceases here. Yet it may be observed that the phrase *Audici archana*, &c., (A-text, xii. 22) is quoted also in the B-text (xviii. 393). Again, the words *caban* and *crepte* (A. xii. 35) are found near together in B. iii. 190. The quotation *Omnia probate* (A. xii. 50) is introduced in B. iii. 335. The line

*Many ferlys, &c.* (A. xii. 58) occurs elsewhere in both texts (A. prol. 62; B. prol. 65). As Hunger is described carrying scraps of bread (A. xii. 68), in a similar manner is Patience described (B. xiii. 216). There is much likeness between the lines A. xii. 66, 67 and A. v. 5, 6; between A. xii. 88 and B. xiii. 50; and also some resemblance between A. xii. 90 and A. viii. 12; and between A. xii. 91 and B. xviii. 324. The poet's encounter with Hunger (A. xii. 60) answers to his subsequent encounter with Need (B. xx. 4).

It will be seen from the notes in the ten foregoing Passus that the collation of our text with Crowley's edition yields few results of much interest, and I shall therefore, from this point onward, only notice such few variations as really seem worth remarking.

4. It might seem that the word *wratth* is wrongly repeated in this line; but the MSS. fully support it; it means sorrowful vexation rather than anger, such pettishness as causes sleepiness, and can therefore be qualified by the epithet "wynkyng."

20. For *wil* Crowley has *wylie wyse*.

35. Cr. *has*—*whau* shal tinc the erowue; *which is nonsense*.

46. Cr. *has*—and a fiftre more; but in the *second* impression—or fifty and more. This latter reading is certainly corrupt, and arose from not understanding the true reading *fifte*, which means *fifth*. *And a fyfte more* = and a fifth besides; so that here we have the *first* reference to the poet's being *forty-five* years old, the other referenee being in Pass. xii. 3.

71. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—Friers did not seke y<sup>e</sup> bodi but the monie.

77. *catekumelynges*] catekinlinges; catechisinges (2); words clearly coined by Crowley himself.

126, 127. The alliteration shows that MS. R is right; the recurrence of the words *with hym* before the metrical pause in both lines caused the omission of the words between.

128. Crowley rightly retains *him*.

130. *wol*] *wyll* (*rightly*).

139. Cr. rightly retains *ne*; it is necessary to the sense.

146. *lernynge*] *learnynge*; *leadynge* (2).

154—164. Not found anywhere else.

173. The MSS. make no distinction between *lene* (to give) and *leue* (to believe); but the context decides it; see, in particular, l. 190. Crowley rightly has *lene* in his *third* impression only; he also prints *leue* or *lene* instead of *laughe vp* in l. 203.

208. Crowley, not perceiving that Langland uses *lyf* as equivalent to *person* or *man* in many passages, alters it to—*Therfore lacke no others life, &c.* Cf. note to prol. 122.

253. *kynde*] *lyfe*. This preserves the sense, but not the alliteration.

258. The alliteration shows that *segge* is certainly right; Cr. has *man*.

283. *take*] *pai*. This preserves the sense, but not the alliteration.

293. Cr. has—Cure than for kennyng, or knowen for elene beryng; which is altered in the *second* impression. His sidenote (*second* impression) is—Priesting was an occupation to lyue by.

309. *hap—lepe*] I am leapt.

311. *Ac* in MS. W has a large illuminated initial.

319. Crowley rightly has *makes*.

339. *leye*] layeth.

372. *mys*] amise; amisse (2).

399. *I wote—is*] do I ken dowel.

404. Cr. has—Then hadst y<sup>n</sup> kende y<sup>t</sup> clergi came (*second* impression can), & kend more bi reson.

PASSUS XII. 21. *Seide*] Sayd; I saide (2).

57—59. Not in Crowley.

87. I suspect Crowley wished to make this line more suitable for his Protestant readers; for he prints—For bread of gods body myght not be without eleargy.

104. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—"The holy gost is the autour of bokes."

105. It is to be regretted that this line is absent from MS. W (and therefore from Mr Wright's edition); the lack of it ruins the sense. Neither is it found in Crowley.

118—127. This passage is better on the whole than the corresponding one in Whitaker's edition, p. 232. It has three lines more, viz. ll. 120—122. On the other hand Whitaker has an additional line after l. 127, viz.

And do we as David techeth · for doute of Gods veniaunce,  
*Nolite tangere, &c.*

The passage is not in Crowley.

133. *þe selkouthes*] Seldome; Selden (2); *corruptly*.

139. Cr. rightly has *was*, but wrongly substitutes "cou<sup>n</sup>sell" for "wisdomes." The singular verb substantive with the plural noun is in Langland's usual mode.

148. Crowley has *ei*, as in MS. W.

155. I regard the line interpolated after this line in C as spurious, yet it fulfils the alliteration better than the miserable lines quoted in the footnotes to Pass. xviii. 257 and 292.

162. Cr. rightly has *sikerer*.

182. Cr. has—And repenteth not before shrift, & than can he litle tell.

192, 193. The first of these lines is undoubtedly too long, and the reading of MS. W. must be adopted in order to preserve the alliteration, and, indeed, in order to make sense. It is probable that it originally ran—

Was, for he ȝelte hym creaunt · to cryst on the crosse  
And grace axed of god · & knewleched hym gulty—

and that the poet afterwards substituted for the last four words the ending —“pat to graunten it is redy”—before proceeding, but omitted to strike out the words rendered superfluous. I believe the right reading to be as in the text, only the words *ȝ. knewleched hym gulty* should be struck out, and the metrical pause in l. 193 placed after *creaunt*. Crowley has a different and very unsatisfactory reading—

Was for he knew Christ on y<sup>e</sup> cros · & knowlegid his sinne,  
And grace asked of god, & he is euer ready  
That buxomyche byddeth it, & ben in wyl to amend hem.

In the C-text the passage is somewhat varied, and has a patched-up appearance.

253. *chiteryng*] chattering. This is doubtless the word wanted. The line is not in the C-text.

257. Cr. has *posele* or *pofole*, evidently misprinted for *po feet*.

277. Cr. has—Ne creture of Christis likenes, worth salf vchristezid.

PASSUS XIII. 10. *shulde helpe quyte*] quite part of.

13. *curatoures*] creatures (*wrongly*).

32. *wye*] wyght (*which is probably a later substitution for wye*).

49. MS. W retains this line, as explained in the footnote;<sup>1</sup> Crowley has—And sythe he brought vs dryneke, diapersueraunce. For *may dure* in l. 50 Cr. has *man endure*, and for *propre* in l. 51 he has *preti*.

54, 55. I arrange these lines as in the MSS. Mr Wright regards each long line as a short line (or half-line); and, indeed, it is only by laying a stress upon *disshe*, *derne*, and *dixi* that we get alliteration. The lines are unsatisfactory, and were, probably for that reason, omitted in the C-text.

57. As far as scansion goes, the line ends with *orbit*; the words following are a sort of tag, to be read as prose.

74. *glosynge*] glosyngs; lesings (2); leasyngs (3). The sense is much the same.

88. *godele*] gottilen. Cf. Pass. v. 347.

92. Crowley rightly has *ne*; the reading *no* in L is probably a mere slip for *ne*.

107. Cr. has “morsel.” The spelling “mussel” indicates a provincial pronunciation of the word.

115. *do*] is do. This word *is* certainly seems required, but LWCROB all omit it.

118 Crowley’s sidenote (*second* impression) is—Cleargye hath seuen sonnes, y<sup>t</sup> is the .vii. sciences. He is certainly right. In the text, insert

<sup>1</sup> This line also occurs in the C-text.

marks of quotation after l. 118 and before l. 119, and for "Conscience" in the sidenote, read "Clergy."

131. *azein—speken*] gaine saie holi writ.

146. *laughe* is so spelt in l. 228 below.

147. *worthe*] be. But *worthe* means rather to *become*.

152—156. These lines, probably meant to be mysterious, are omitted in the C-text. The solution of the riddle is clearly Charity or Love, exercised with Patience, as appears from the curious passage below (ll. 164—171) preserved in MS. R only. The C-text, as printed by Whitaker, has the following passage as answering to ll. 164—171:

"Ther nis wyght in þis worlde · þat wolde þe lette  
To have alle londe at þy lykyng · & þe here lord make,  
And maister of alle here meeble · and of here moneye after,  
The kyng and alle þe comune · and clergie to þe a-lowte  
As for here lord and ledere · and lyven as þou techest." (p. 251.)

I understand l. 170 to mean—"will give thee all that they can give, as considering thee to be the best guardian (or keeper) of it."

190. Cr. has the reading I have adopted, viz.—the wyll of folke here.

221. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—A loiterers lyfe.

259. Here, I doubt not, Crowley has deliberately altered the text, so as to get rid of allusion to the *mass*. He reads—There may no man make peace, &c.

270. The right reading is *thretty*, as in the text, for two reasons. Firstly, it preserves the alliteration; and secondly, John Chichester was mayor from October, 1369, to October, 1370, and *at no other time*. Crowley's MS. agrees with the Trinity MS. here, as usual; and therefore has the reading *twenty*.

283, 284. Cr. has but one line—And none so singuler by hym-selfe, nor so pope holye. The word *pope-holy* is illustrated by Mr Dyce, in his notes to Skelton, who employs it. Halliwell cites *pop-holy*, used by Lydgate as a *substantive*, but it was certainly originally an adjective.

293—299. The preservation of this passage, and of the passage in ll. 400—409, in the Rawlinson MS. is of much interest. It shews that the poet's first idea was to elaborate the description of Haukyn's faults by these additions, so that the Rawlinson MS. represents, as I have said elsewhere, a copy of the B-text with all the latest additions. But in adding thus to the description of Haukyn, the poet made it too long, and he afterwards perceived that he had excellent material here for improving his portraits of the seven deadly sins. He therefore, in the C-text, transferred much of this portion of the B-text to the Passus concerning the Deadly Sins, putting each passage into its right place with due care.

In Whitaker's edition (p. 89) we find the following five lines, answering to the first of these two passages, and forming part of the confession of Pride:

And konny[n]gest of my craft · clerkes oþer oþere,  
 And strengest up-on my stede · and styvest under gurdell,  
 And lovelokest to loken on · and lykyngest a-bedde,  
 And lykyng of such a lif · þat no lawe preyseþ,  
 Prout of my faire fetours · and for ich songe shrille.

In like manner the second of these two passages (ll. 400—409) was made the groundwork of an exteusion of the confession of Gluttony. I copy the corresponding passage from Whitaker's edition, pp. 108, 109.<sup>1</sup>

To þe, God, ich Gloton · gulty ich me yelde  
 Of my trespas with tunge · ich can nauht telle how ofte,  
 Sworen “þy saule and sydes” · and “so help me, God al-myghty,”  
 W[h]en þat no nud was · meny tyme falsliche,  
 And over-soped at my soper · and som tyme at nones,  
*More þan my kynde · myghte well desye,*  
 And as an hounde þat ete gras · so gan ich to brake,  
 And spilde þat ich spelide myghte · ich can nouht speke for shame  
 The vylenye of my foule mouþe · and of my foule mawe.

It will be seen that the line italicized (which does not occur in Pass. v. 374—380 above) answers to our l. 404.

374. The insertion of *I* in this line, and in l. 385, is justified by the C-text. Cf. Whitaker, p. 101.

400. See note to l. 293 above.

411. Cr. follows MS. W. Whitaker (p. 113) has—

Ys wanne a man mourneþ nat · for hūs mysdedes.

I should prefer to read—Whanne he morneth, &c.; but there is nothing to support it.

437—454. Cf. Whitaker, p. 115. Here Whitaker agrees with the Rawlinson MS. nearly word for word, but in l. 447 has *feste* for *storge*, and in l. 452 *loreþ* for *lythed*, both of which variations are certainly for the worse. In MS. R, l. 454 is defective, as it omits the words within brackets. Whitaker has—

In a wele good hope for he wroghte so · among worthy seyntes.

457. The word *lady* in MS. W is a singular error, especially as Crowley correctly has *laye*.

PASSUS XIV. 1. Cr. has *hole* for *hool*.

18. Cr. retains *shal*, which is necessary.

89. Cr. omits *inliche* in his *second* impression; his *first* has *lik*. The misreading *iliche* probably arose from omitting the stroke in *iliche* (= *inliche*).

120. *wrotherhele*] ouermuch wo (2). Cf. MS. O.

131. The quotation is inexact; it should end with—in civitate tua ima-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Pass. v. 374—380, in the present volume.

ginem ipsorum ad nihilum redigcs. The word *eorum* in R is due to the *ipsorum* of the Vulgate.

139. *disalowyngē*] *disanulling*.

185. Cr. retains *if*.

188. The misreading *Pope* (also in Cr.) is most extraordinary. There can be no doubt about *pouke* being the right reading; for otherwise the whole passage is nonsense. The sense is—Confession amends us; but if the Devil (*þe pouke*) pleads against this, and would punish us, then *He* (sc. Christ, or *dominus*) will show the acquittance of our sins to the Evil One (*þe qued*), and so put off the Devil. This acquittance is obtained *per passionem domini*. The whole of this passage is illustrated by the actual dispute between our Lord and Satan concerning the souls of men, as told afterwards in Pass. xviii. 324—400. This misreading, *pope*, is the worst flaw in the Laud MS. The reading of R is supported by MS. Corpus 201, which has *pouke*.

197. Cr. has *wyl*; which is clearly right.

210. Cr. has—& right ofte him y<sup>t</sup> walketh

The hye way to heuenward, ryches hym letteth.

But this is inferior. *For* in l. 210 means *because*.

227—237. This is again a valuable contribution from MS. R. It agrees with Whitaker (p. 264), with the following exceptions. In l. 227, for *loulich* and *loueliche* Whitaker has *loueliche* and *louh*. L. 228 runs—"That mete oþer moneye · of straunge men mote begge." In l. 230, Whitaker omits *ne* and *no*. In l. 231, for *to gode* Whitaker has *of good*. In l. 234, for *schetes*, Whitaker has *whitel*. And ll. 236 and 237 form in Whitaker but one line—

So is he nevere more ful murye · so meschief hym folweþ.

270. *a persone*] *parson*. And such is, I suppose, the meaning of *persone* here.

286. Cr. has *syt* in his *first*, *syttheth* in his *second* impression. *Sit* is the contracted form.

305. I need hardly say that Juvenal wrote *Cantabit vacuus*. Nearly all the MSS. (and Crowley) read *paupertas*. I adopt *pauper* from MS. O, because it scans, and because it comes nearer to the true reading *vacuus*.

316. Cr. has *busines ladde*, as in MS. W. This error arose from not perceiving the sense. The words *Seynt austyn* merely give the name of the *lettred man* parenthetically. Line 316 then means—Poverty is a blessed life, free from business (*absque solitudine*). It is, however, obscure, and so the poet, in the C-text, put it more clearly thus. I quote from Whitaker, p. 271.

Thus leryde me a lercde man · for oure Lordes love, Seint Austyn,

That pure poverte and patience · was a louh lyyngē in erthe,

A blessid lyf whit-oute busynesse · bote oncliche for þe soule;

*Absque solitudine felicitas.*

322. Mr Wright need not have inserted *no* after *to do*. It is not author-

ized by any MS. All depends on the sense of *harde*, which here means *miserable, wretched*. To live and to continue to sin is both wretched and perilous; and yet, while we live, we are sure to sin; for "synne suweth vs euere."

PASSUS XV. 5. Cr. retains *me*.

54. Cr. also has *opprimitur*; but the Vulgate has *opprimitur*.

71. Cr. has—Better beleue where many; *altered to* leaue were many *in the second impression*. The word *byleue* in the text must be taken to mean *leave alone*.

73. *burgeouneth*] *budde*. This is an ingenious modernization, as it preserves the sense and metre.

111. *whittlymed*] *whittimed (sie)*; *whitlimed w'out (2)*.

113. *bele paroles*] *Belopolis*; *Belperolis (2)*; *Belperopis (3)*.

151. *Lene* and *leue* are alike in the MSS. The sense is—*lend* where they *believe, &c.*

171. Crowley omits the latter half of this line, and the former half of the next, owing to the repetition of the word *ricchesse*.

176. For *aucs*, a word which Crowley doubtless objected to, he ingeniously substitutes *Pitie*, thus adding a fourth initial *p*, contrary to Langland's usual custom.

183. *speke*] *speake*. Perhaps *speke* means to speak to, address; but I greatly prefer the reading *seche* of the Rawlinson MS., which is supported by the C-text, of which several MSS. read *secheth*.

264. "The Legend of sayntes, beleue it if ye luste;" Crowley's sidenote, *second impression*.

302. "A lessoꝝ for them that take benefices at wicked men handes;" Crowley's sidenote, *second impression*.

329. *Robeth* = give robes to. The commoner reading *robbeth* makes nonsense of the passage.

339. Cr. has—And mani prisoner by his praier, he pulith from paine. *Prisone* in Old English frequently means a *prisoner*, as well as a *prison*.

356. "All is out of frame;" Crowley's sidenote, *second impression*.

364. Cr. reads "thclement." It will be noted that the reading in R—*clement*—satisfies the alliteration. But who was *Clement*? Whitaker has *pe clymat*, which is surely better.

367. Not in Crowley; but found in C-text MSS.

373. *decres*] *degrees*. But the MSS. have *decres* or *decrees*.

387. *in o persone*] one god.

403. Cr. corruptly has—That liued tho there and liueꝝ yet, leuing on his lawes.

428. Cr. has *rauenour* for *baneoure*, which is of course wrong.

449. Cr. has the sidenote, in his *second impression*,—Tyll the child be instructed in Christ it is but as a wilde beaste.

464—477. For this curious passage (not in Crowley) we are indebted solely to MS. R. I suspect that *whistlyng* is wrongly repeated in l. 472, and I propose to read *techyng*.

482. I have no doubt that the quotation "*Ecce*," &c., is rightly introduced here; it occurs in the Psalm commencing *Memento, domine, David*.

483. After *predicate* Crowley adds *euangelium*.

487. *Willen*, to wish for, does not generally take an accusative after it; the transitive form is *wilnen* (A. S. *wilnian*).

505. *stant*] standes. Crowley's sidenote is—How oenetise (*second impression* couetise) of y<sup>e</sup> cleargy wyll destroy the church.

507. *golde*] Cr. omits, in his *third* issue only.

526. *dymes*] demes; decimis (2), probably misprinted for *decimas*.

539—556. Not in Crowley. The passage occurs in Whitaker, p. 300, with only slight variations. Lines 539—546 are nearly the same in Whitaker; the rest runs thus—

Meny seint sitthe · suffrede deþ al-soo,  
 For to enferme þe faithe · ful wyde-where<sup>1</sup> deydyn,  
 In Inde and in Alisaundrie · in Ermanye, in Spayne,  
 And fro mysbyleve · meny man turnede.  
 In savacion of mannys saule · Seynt Thomas of Cauntelbury  
 Among unkynde cristene · in holy churche was sleye,  
 And alle holy churche · honourede for þat deyng.  
 He is a forbusen<sup>2</sup> to alle buss hopes · and a bryzthe myroure,  
 And sovereynliche to alle suche · þat of Surrye bereþ name, &c.

559. *Romanye*] Rome.

564—567. *and nedy—gostly fode*. I believe the MSS. ought all to have retained this passage, and that the omission of it was by a clerical error, owing to the repetition of the words *gostly fode*. In l. 564, *folke* preserves the alliteration, whilst in l. 567, *gyue* is alliterated with *gostly*.

568. For *Ozias*, Crowley boldly substitutes *Malachias* in his *second* impression, thus correcting the author's mistake. See l. 565.

572. Cr. has—And Iewes liuex in lelli lone, &c.

576. Cr. has—And on that lawe they leue yet. In both these places, *lyuen* is another spelling of *leuen*, and signifies *believe*, not *live*.

PASSUS XVI. 11. *saulee*] *salue*. In MS. L, it looks like *soule*, altered to *saulee*. See *Sowel* in Halliwell.

15. *herber*] herbor. It is the Lat. *herbarium*, not the English *harbour*.

44. *ronges*] roundes.

47. I think the mark over the *u* in many MSS. shows *repugnat* to be the word meant. The word *repurgatur* could not be cut down to the form given in the MSS. The sense seems to be that he who sins with the consent of his

<sup>1</sup> Misprinted *fulwyde where*.

<sup>2</sup> Misprinted *forbusur*, and explained by *furbisher* (!).

own free will does not strive against sin as he should. Cf. "Nondum enim usque ad sanguinem restitistis, adversus peccatum *repugnantes*;" Heb. xii. 4.

56—91. Omitted not only in C and B, but in MSS. Addit. 10574, and Calig. A xi., as explained in the Preface.

69. Crowley has *cayleway*.

86, 87. Cr. has—of that apple he caught; He hit oft at him, hit if it might. This is a very corrupt rendering of the passage.

95. Crowley has *song or fonge*. *Fonde* is absurdly wrong, and the occurrence of such a reading is probably due to the use of *fondeth* in l. 40 above.

107. Cr. has—if any daunger fell (3); where *daunger* should, of course, be *peril*, as in his former issues.

110. The MSS. have *medicus, medici, medico*. I prefer *medicus*, as in the Vulgate. The reading *infirmis* is justified by MSS. O and C<sub>2</sub>; also LWCB have *in*, obviously intended for *infirmis*. In MS. R, we find *m. h.*, i. e. *male habentibus*, as in the Vulgate.

112. Crowley retains *it*.

121. Crowley has—quod I. This is obviously an error, as seen by the context, and due to confusion of *ihc* with *ich*.

125. *fisses*] two fishes; as in MS. W.

157. *wors*] work; woreke (2).

205. *aller*] olde. Probably Crowley's MS. had *alder*.

211. Cr. has *Mighty*. This seems at first a better reading, but the meaning probably is—Matrimony, that multiplies the earth, is (or signifies) *might*; i. e. the *Might* of the Trinity, as exemplified in the Person of the Father; see ll. 184, 192. Thus, the Father is Matrimony or Might, the Son is Widowhood or Sothfastness (l. 186).

270—273. The C-text agrees with the Laud MS. here rather than with MS. R.

PASSUS XVII. 7, 8. MS. R has—

And when it is aseled so · Sathanas power schal last no lenger,  
And þus my *lettre* meneth.

This is evidently wrongly arranged; l. 7 should (according to this version) end with *power*, and the rest of the sentence should form l. 8.

10. *a patent*] Cr. omits, in his *second* impression.

14. *Ben*; Cr. reads *Be*. It is not certain that the reading *Is* is wrong; for Langland often uses the singular verb substantive with plural nouns. Thus, in l. 11, the two best MSS. read *was*.

29. *He*] He; I (2). *his*] his; mi (2). Cf. MS. O.

74. The point after *haue* in MSS. C and O intimates a pause, such as we now denote by a comma.

77. Cr. has—And said who so spend more, I make it good hereaftir.

83. Cr. has the sidenote (*second* impression)—Pierce profereth Christ to

become his *seruant*. This is again an instance of the common mistake which identifies Piers with the author. "Pierce" is Christ himself.

96. *worth*] Cr. omits, in his *third* issue.

102. *outlawes*] an outlaw (2). *lotyeth*] loutith.

117. *lettre telleth*] lore teacheth. Crowley's MS. probably had "lre," which he took to be an error for *lore*.

122, 123. Crowley agrees with the text.

124. Crowley also reads—whether shal I.

159. Cr. has—Wythin hem thre, the wyde worlde holden.

169. *fourmen*] formen; framen (2).

176—178. Cr. omits the passage preserved in MS. R, and reads—And to vnfold the folden fiste, at the fingers wyll. The line following l. 175 in MS. B is certainly spurious.

184. *herte*] hurte. This spelling looks better, as it at once suggests the right sense.

188. In MS. L the second word is written like *elicche*, but the *i* has no stroke above, and it is more probably the first stroke of a *u*, the second stroke being accidentally omitted. Cr. has *cratche*.

189. *ypershed* means *pierced*; Crowley has *perished* in the *first*, but *pershed* in the later issues; the reading *y-perished* is corrupt, and does not make good sense.

191. *to-schullen*] to shullen; to swolen (2).

198. Cr. rightly has *in spiritum sanctum*.

230. Cr. rightly has—and to no other; thus preserving the word *no*, which MS. W omits.

258. Cr. has *world*.

294. Cr. has—And am sory that I so the saynt spirite agylt.

323. Cr. retains *in*.

330. Cr. has—y<sup>t</sup> freilty is made, in his *second* impression. The right reading is *it made* (as in his *first* impression), which signifies *caused it*, as in many other passages.

337. Cr. retains *ben*, printed "bē."

347. Cr. wrongly has—All maner of merey, and of forginnes.

PASSUS XVIII. 6. *of-rauzte*] of raught; of taught (2). The curious reading in the text is supported by MSS. W, R, and others.

35. Cr. has—And forbeat and downe bringe, bale death for euer.

41. If the scribe of MS. B had not falsely written *peple* instead of *temple*, he would not have had to make up and insert the additional line here cited.

58. *prisoun*] prisoner doth. Crowley probably did not know that *prisoun* in Old English meant a *prisoner* as well as a *prison*. He might have spared his correction.

79. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression) is—He ciith a lye out of the Legend auri.

86. Cr. has—& vnsparrid his cine.
109. Cr. has—Whan Christ come of her kingdom y<sup>e</sup> crowne shuld sease; *afterwards altered to*—Whan Christ come, her kingdome & crowne shuld cease. This latter is also a good reading. In the C-text, the line is altered.
117. *softly*] worthely.
122. *wonder*] meruell.
123. *roced*] rauded; reuned (2). The word *roced* is in LWCOBY. Cf. C-text.
149. *reproueth*] repugneth; repungneth (3).
158. *fordyd*] did. The line is altered in the C-text.
189. Here Crowley differs from MS. W, and has the same reading as in the text.
228. Crowley's pertinent sidenote (*second* impression) is—Bokes be bolde.
238. *tendeden*] tindeden.
246. *al biquashte*] al to quassed.
281. *I seiset*] he seased.
282. *lete*] leauc.
293. Here Cr. adds, in his later issues only—Out of our postye, and leden hem hence. This line is not in the C-text, and does not seem to be alliterative.
298. *done*] done.
- 310, 311. The two half-lines rightly retained in R were probably accidentally omitted in other MSS. owing to confusion between the words *lesynges* and *lesynges*.
361. *brove · bronke*] brewed, brouke; brewed, broke (2); brued, broke (3).
407. *nebula*: so in Crowley and in all the MSS. I have consulted. It is certainly the author's mistake. Perhaps he meant *nubila*.
423. Cr. retains "Loue," omitted in MS. W.
426. *kalote*] Collet.

PASSUS XIX. This Passus and the next stand very much the same in both B- and C-texts.

11. The reading should certainly be *is it*, as in Crowley's *second* impression and the C-text.
18. Cr. has—Anon as men named, this highe name of Iesus.
38. *baptiste* is the right reading, as in the C-text. Line 40 explains that the allusion is to the baptism of Christ by John. Cr. has *baptime*.
47. Cr. also has *were*.
72. *mercy*] mede (*which is wrong*).
79. *rihtwisesse*] rightousnes. *reuth*] Truthe.
90. Cr. has *were*; but Whitaker has *was*. Either reading may be adopted, as there are numerous instances of *was* with the plural noun in the MSS.
107. Cr. retains *of*, which MS. W omits.
148. Cr. has *man*, though MS. W has *men*.

163. The insertion of *ȝ* seems awkward, but it is probably the genuine reading. Cr. has *and all closed*; Whitaker has *and al was closed*.

211. It is probable that *kan* (as in L) is the right reading; Whitaker has *can*, and the alliteration is thus better kept up. Yet MSS. Ff. 5. 35 (Cambridge) and Cotton Vesp. B. 16 (B. M.) read *hane* and *han* respectively.

230. *bylyff*] lyuelod; liuelodes (3). Probab'y Crowley's own gloss.

232. *theche*] thetche; hegge (2); hedge (?).

235. Cr. omits this line.

241. *folayles*] foule iuels; foule eyyll (3); *corruptly*.

270. *hem*] it. Most MSS. have *it*; but *hem* is also found in MS. Ff. 5. 35 (Cambridge), and certainly seems better.

312. The words *Quod Piers* form no part of the line, as far as the scansion is concerned.

360. Whitaker has—as hit were a pile.

366. Crowley's sidenote (*second* impression)—Who thei be that neuer repent.

385. *And myztes*] And might.

394. Crowley's sidenote—What lucre may do (2).

408. Crowley's sidenote—A blynde curate (2).

415. Crowley's sarcastic sidenote—The praise of cardinals (2).

428. *pursueth*. This reading better preserves the alliteration, and is probably right. Cf. C-text.

437. *wykke*] wikid; yll (2).

442. *blode*] folke. But *folke* is probably thus repeated by accident.

443. *Lake*] Paule (2). This is therefore Crowley's correction of the author's mistake. The alliteration proves this.

466. *hastlokest*] moost hastily.

469. *chiflaigne*] chefest am.

475. *riȝt—treuth*] as riȝt wyll & truth.

PASSUS XX. 13. *none*] y'. *ne wedde hath*] & hath no wed.

27. Crowley has *of them*; certainly *body* suits the alliteration, but this correction is reserved for the C-text.

35. *meketh*] meketh him. But *him* is not in the best MSS. of either text.

50. *endernome*] vudone. But *endernome* means *reproved*.

54. *made fals sprynge*] false spring; false sprang (2); but cf. C-text.

71. *gyoure*] gydour. This is probably Crowley's modernization.

92, 93. *ar*] their. *ar*] their. Wrongly in both places.

94. *Elde*] Age. So also in ll. 164 and 166; but Cr. retains "Elde" in l. 153.

102. *but—after*] he neuer stode after.

110. *he*] she. It must be remembered that *he* is sometimes used for *she* in Early English, for *fortune* is *feminine* in Pass. xi. 60.

133. *iuged*] iustled.

134. Cr. has—will take this *apou* amendment;—wel take this on amend-  
mente (3).

135. Cr. omits *in haste* (3).

147. *relyed*] leled; relyed (2); rayled (3).

152. *hieghnesse*] heaunynes. Evidently corrupt.

201. *biseye*] byseye; besette (2). The latter is therefore Crowley's own  
emendation. Cf. C-text.

221. Crowley's sidenote—Woulde god there were no such priestes in  
englande (2).

233. Crowley's sidenote—Curates oughte to haue a competent lyuyng  
certayne (2).

259. Cr. has—Or they wil no treasure hem pay, trauaile they neuer so  
sore.

271. *heel*] bad. Evidently Crowley's own gloss.

283. Crowley's sidenote—Thei that went to y<sup>e</sup> Fryers to shrift wer like  
santuary men (2).

288. Cr. has—gyue the fryers. In MS. L the word *zeue* was at first  
omitted. Afterwards the word *pe* was altered to *peue*, which is clearly in-  
tended for *yeue*, owing to the similarity of *peue* and *yeue*. There is no doubt  
about the reading.

297. *Of*] To. *tyterers in*] tutelers in; tutelers (2).

308. Crowley retains *in* before *the sege*.

322. Crowley's sidenote—Nother patrou nor bishop regardeth his  
duty (2).

365. Crowley's sidenote—The olde maner of eares shrifte made sinners  
negligent (2).

368. Cr. omits *vykked*.

381. *nede*] no nede. But *no* should clearly be omitted.

## Appendix.

## A SHORT GLOSSARY TO "PIERS THE PLOWMAN."

[MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Ll. 4. 14 ; fol. 170a.<sup>1</sup>]

	Freyne . . . . .	Aske
	Rape . . . . .	hie. wente spedly.
	Lo	
4	Carpe . . . . .	talke.
	Clutche . . . . .	scratche
	Preynte	
	Quaue . . . . .	shake. or tremble quake
8	Thole . . . . .	suffre
	Hoved . . . . .	stode abode
	Cheve . . . . .	Thryve
	Tyne [ <i>read Tynt</i> ] . . . . .	loste
12	Fordo . . . . .	distroye
	Wyn or Wen . . . . .	Goo
	Frete . . . . .	Taste
	Tynde . . . . .	light
16	Louke . . . . .	wit/draw. lose
	þole . . . . .	Opeñ. entre. suffre
	Besquatt . . . . .	broke
	Affrounte . . . . .	
20	Auntre . . . . .	Ventre

<sup>1</sup> This is a glossary to the particular copy of the B-text which is contained in the same MS., viz. No. XIX in my list.

	Rome . . . . .	goo. passe
	Swynke . . . . .	Labour
	Rytte	
24	Lake . . . . .	playe
	Courbe . . . . .	knele downe
	Appende . . . . .	appertaigne
	Steke . . . . .	Shytt
28	Thyrle . . . . .	perceed
	Comsid . . . . .	spake
	Fonge . . . . .	take
	Vnderfonge . . . . .	vndertake
32	Latch . . . . .	catch or take
	Nymme . . . . .	take
	Wysse . . . . .	tell or teache
	Yeme . . . . .	guyde or rule
36	Worthe . . . . .	is worthy. com happen or befall to
	Lythe . . . . .	here
	Byd . . . . .	praye. aske
	Bekenne . . . . .	
40	Broke . . . . .	
	Hote . . . . .	
	Hale . . . . .	drawe
	Pylte . . . . .	thruste or caste
44	Nempne . . . . .	call or name
	Shende . . . . .	blame
	Welde	
	Segge . . . . .	Man
48	Blasen	
	Mechell . . . . .	bygnes
	Alther . . . . .	Elder
	lollynge . . . . .	
52	Rapeliche . . . . .	quickly
	Wightliche . . . . .	
	3eme . . . . .	heede
	Lorell . . . . .	lyers
56	Liode . . . . .	persone

	Sparliche . . . . .	
	Stalworthe	
	Skyll . . . . .	Reason
60	Loyall	
	Smache	
	Glede	
	Glowynge	
64	Kyse	
	Merke . . . . .	Darknes
	Smolder . . . . .	smoke
	Doel or doule . . .	Sorowe
68	Paleot	
	Bale . . . . .	sorow
	Kene . . . . .	sharpe
	Witterly . . . . .	well
72	Felly . . . . .	
	Ferly . . . . .	mervaile
	Leeme . . . . .	brightnes
	Merkenes . . . . .	darkenes
76	Maynpernour . . .	
	Queyntyse . . . . .	craft. soteltie
	Gobelyñ . . . . .	deule
	Lusarde . . . . .	
80	Thralle . . . . .	bonde
	Crokke . . . . .	pott
	Yerne . . . . .	
	Shene . . . . .	bright. clere
84	Gresly . . . . .	ferefull
	Boorne . . . . .	Ryver. water
	Tofte . . . . .	a hyll. mountayne
	Loby . . . . .	
88	Renable . . . . .	
	Bie . . . . .	a coler or cheyne
	Hals . . . . .	Hele
	Hoove . . . . .	Robe. Coyfe
92	Lere . . . . .	Countenaunce. chere.

[also on fol. 169b, we find]

Rapely . . . . . quickly

Endaunte . . . . .

[and on fol. 170b]

95 Lewte.

The following index, in which these words are referred to by the numbers, will shew on what pages of the MS. the words occur, where they are to be found in this edition, and in what instances the explanations are incorrect. It will be seen that the seventeenth and eighteenth Passus especially attracted the glossarist. 1. Fol. 5; i. 58. 2. In the first sense, fol. 16; iv. 7. In the second sense, fol. 84b; xvii. 79; where the MS. has *rapede*. 3. Probably with reference to fol. 83b; xvii. 20. 4. Fol. 85b; xvii. 135. 5. Fol. 86; xvii. 188. The explanation is wrong; it merely means to *clutch*. 6. Fol. 89; xviii. 21. It means *winked*. 7. Fol. 89b; xviii. 61. 8. Fol. 89b; xviii. 71. 9. Fol. 90; xviii. 83. 10. Fol. 90; xviii. 104. 11. MS. has *tynt*, fol. 90b; xviii. 140. 12. Fol. 91; xviii. 157. 13. Probably an erroneous allusion to *wynde*, fol. 91; xviii. 174. 14. Fol. 91b; xviii. 194. It means *ate*. 15. An allusion to *tentedyn*, fol. 92; xviii. 238. 16. Fol. 92b; xviii. 243. It means *lock up, hide*. 17. Fol. 92b; xviii. 247. The meaning *suffer* is right; the other two are wrong. 18. Fol. 92b; xviii. 246. *Be-squate* is the reading of this MS., and is corrupt. 19. Fol. 102; xx. 5. It means to *accost rudely*. 20. Fol. 104; xx. 174. 21. Fol. 104b; xx. 211. 22. Fol. 1b; prol. 55. 23. Fol. 3; prol. 171. A better spelling is *rit*; it is a contracted form of *rideth*. 24. Fol. 3; prol. 172. 25. Fol. 5; i. 79. 26. Fol. 5b; i. 98. 27. Fol. 6; i. 121. The MS. wrongly has *stekfe*, miswritten for *stekye*. It means to stick fast, remain closed. The explanation *shytt*, i. e. to shut, is not far wrong. 28. Fol. 6b; i. 172. The MS. has *pirlid*, i. e. pierced; this accounts for the explanation given. 29. Fol. 12; iii. 103. *Comsid* means *commenced, began*; but the phrase *comsid to telle* is equivalent to *spake*, as explained. 30. Fol. 27; v. 566. 31. Fol. 5; i. 76. The MS. has *vndirffonge*, i. e. undertook. 32. Fol. 29b; vi. 68 (see the footnote). 33. Fol. 42b; x. 60. 34. Fol. 4b; i. 42. 35. Fol. 37b; viii. 52. More strictly, to take care of, govern. 36. In the first sense, fol. 42; x. 17; in the second sense, fol. 43b; x. 128. 37. Fol. 37b; viii. 66. 38. Occurs often. 39. Fol. 37b; viii. 59. It means *commend to*. 40. Fol. 38; viii. 87. Here *broke* is part of the word *to-broke*, meaning *broken in pieces*. 41. Fol. 38; viii. 93; it means to *command*. 42. Fol. 38; viii. 95. 43. Fol. 38; viii. 96. 44. Fol. 4b; i. 21 (and elsewhere). 45. Occurs often. 46. Fol. 42; x. 29. where the MS. has *welden*, i. e.

wield, possess. Also fol. 43; x. 83, where the MS. has *well*, over which the glossarist has written *weldeth*. 47. Fol. 81*b*; xvi. 178. 48. Fol. 82; xvi. 179. It means *blazon* or device. 49. Fol. 82; xvi. 182, where the MS. has *mechell* (i. e. greatness) with a stroke through the *ll*. 50. Fol. 82; xvi. 205. The MS. has *alper*, another form of *aller*, meaning *of all*. 51. Fol. 83; xvi. 269. It means *lying about lazily*. 52. Fol. 83; xvi. 273. 53. Fol. 83; xvi. 275. It means *nimbly*, hence *quickly*. 54. Fol. 83*b*; xvii. 12. 55. Fol. 84; xvii. 44, where the MS. has *as well lorellis as lelles*; but *lorellis* means *vagabonds* or untrustworthy persons. 56. Fol. 84; xvii. 63. 57. Fol. 84*b*; xvii. 81. The MS. actually has *sparliche*, an error for *spaeliche*, i. e. quickly. 58. Fol. 84*b*; xvii. 96. It means *vigorous*. 59. Fol. 86; xvii. 195. 60. Fol. 86*b*; xvii. 209 (see the footnote). 61. Fol. 86*b*; xvii. 213 (see the footnote). 62, 63. Fol. 86*b*; xvii. 217; where the MS. has *glowynge glede*, i. e. a glowing ember. 64. Fol. 86*b*; xvii. 219 (see the footnote). 65. Fol. 87; xvii. 240. 66. Fol. 88; xvii. 323. 67. Fol. 88*b*; xvii. 336. The MS. has *doell*, with stroke through *ll*. 68. Fol. 89; xviii. 25. The MS. actually has *Palcot*, a mistake for *Paltoe* or *Paltock*, a kind of doublet. 69. Fol. 89; xviii. 35. 70. Fol. 89; xviii. 47. 71. Fol. 89*b*; xviii. 66. It means rather *truly, certainly*. 72. Fol. 90; xviii. 92. It means *fiercely*. 73. Fol. 90; xviii. 110. 74. Fol. 90*b*; xviii. 124. 75. Fol. 90*b*; xviii. 136. 76. Fol. 91*b*; xviii. 183. It means a *surety*. 77. Fol. 92*b*; xviii. 272. 78. Fol. 93; xviii. 290. 79. Fol. 93*b*; xviii. 335. The old spelling of *lizard*. 80. Fol. 95*b*; xix. 33. 81. Fol. 99; xix. 275. 82. Fol. 104; xx. 158. It means *eager, full of desire*. 83. Fol. 94*b*; xviii. 409. 84. Fol. 95; xviii. 431. 85. Fol. 1; prol. 8. 86. Fol. 1; prol. 14. It rather means a cleared space on a rising ground. 87. Fol. 1*b*; prol. 55. It means a *looby*, a lubberly fellow. 88. Fol. 3; prol. 158. A contracted form of *reasonable*, talkative. 89. Fol. 3; prol. 161. The MS. has *byes*. 90. Fol. 3; prol. 170. It means *neck*. The interpretation *hele* (heel) is erroneous. 91. Fol. 4; prol. 210. The MS. has the pl. *hooves*. 92. Fol. 4; i. 3. 93. Fol. 84; xvii. 49; cf. no. 52. 94. *Not found*. 95. Fol. 51; xi. 140. It means *loyalty, fidelity, faithful observance of the law*.

I have only to add that, in making these references, I have been guided by the lines drawn under the harder words in the MS. Many more words are underlined than are here enumerated; and as words are underlined nearly throughout the poem, it is clear that the glossarist carefully read it through. It may be observed further that some of these words occur in *groups*, and the order of these shews that he read the latter part and the prologue at least *twice*. Thus the group of words 3 to 21 belong to the *last four* Passus; the group

22 to 28 to the Prologue and Passus I. The group 37 to 43 belong to the latter part of Passus VIII. Then again, the group 47 to 84 belong to the *last five* Passus ; but the group 85 to 92 to the Prologue and Passus I., like the second group. The handwriting of these glosses is of about the date of the reign of Henry the Eighth ; and hence it is even possible that they were written by no other than ROBERT CROWLEY.

## TEMPORARY NOTICE.

THIS second volume contains the poem in its *second* shape, and does not greatly differ from the text as printed by Mr Wright, but is printed from a different MS. and contains more than 170 additional lines. The variations of Mr Wright's text from the present one are denoted in the footnotes by the letter W. The old text printed by Crowley also exhibits the poem in this second form.

Numerous notes and a full glossary to the first seven Passus in this volume will be found in my smaller edition of "Piers the Plowman," lately published in the Clarendon Press Series.

For notes and a glossary to the whole poem, consult Mr Wright's edition.

Vol. III. will contain the poem in its latest form, and Vol. IV. will contain notes and a glossary to all three texts.

The pages numbered 137\* to 144\* belong to Vol. I., and should be inserted between pages 136 and 137 of that volume.

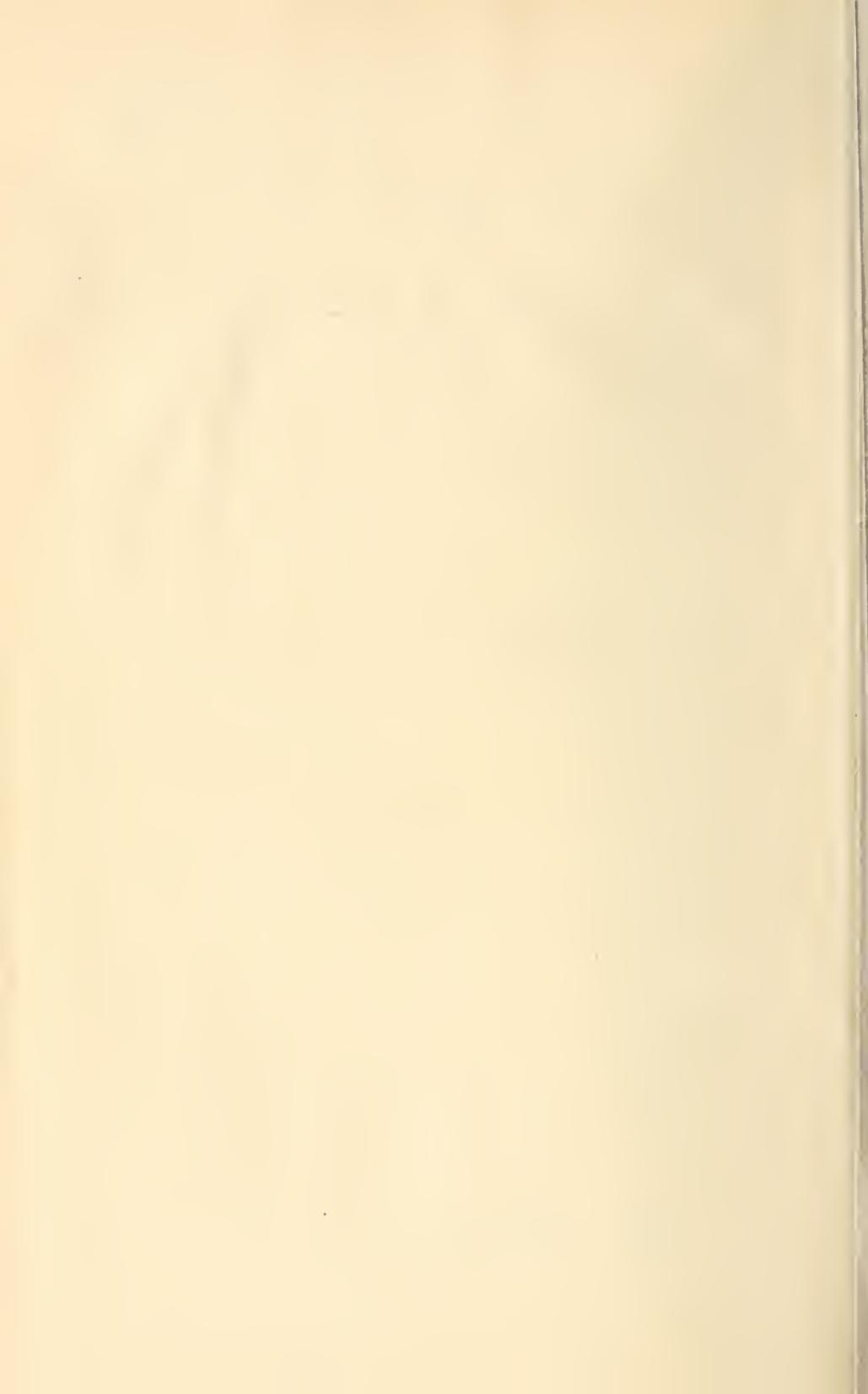
W. W. S.

*Cambridge ; Nov. 15, 1869.*

3478

4







University  
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY  
305 De Neve Drive - Parking Lot 17 • Box 951388  
LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA 90095-1388

Return this material to the library from which it was borrowed.

3 1158 00248 514

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



AA 000 346 917 8

